

28
25
22
20

10
01

their manifest superiority in numbers, and their regularity in point of military government, might keep them perfectly in awe; for, when they were permitted to come on board; every man of them seemed extremely afraid of fire-arms. When they saw the centinels mounting guard round the ship, they all hastily paddled towards the shore, and could not without much difficulty, be prevailed on to return.

Jack, the new ship-mate, was now found very useful: he constantly represented the Europeans in the most formidable point of view to all his countrymen, magnifying their powers, and augmenting their numbers; protesting that they were not traders, like many which they had been accustomed to see, but that they were all mighty warriors belonging to king George. Hence it may easily be conjectured that his countrymen became much intimidated; and as this little display could be productive of no ill consequences, Jack was permitted to proceed in his encomiums.

Having been abundantly supplied with every thing but water at Otaheite, Captain Vancouver thought it expedient to procure a sufficiency of that valuable fluid; for this purpose, attended by two armed boats, and a guard of seven marines, accompanied by messrs. Mudge, Whidbey, and Menzies, the captain landed, and they were received by the natives in a very orderly manner. Two men, armed with sticks, kept the spectators at a proper distance; for which they were rewarded with some presents. On their enquiring for water, they were informed that some brackish ponds could supply them near the beach, but very excellent water might be had at a little distance, to which they readily undertook to conduct them. As these natives appeared friendly and pacific, the boats were left in charge of Mr. Swaine and Mr. Manby, and the party proceeded, with their guard, to obtain the promised supply. They followed their guides through a village to a handsome causeway, of the breadth of about twelve feet, with a ditch on each side.

This opened to their view a spacious plain, appearing like the open common fields in England, but, on advancing, it appeared that a considerable part of it was divided into fields, which were separated from each other by low stone walls, and in a flourishing state of cultivation. Having proceeded about a mile from the beach, they arrived at the rivulet they were in quest of; it was about five or six feet wide, and two or three feet

deep. The water it contained was excellent, but as the road was too rough and hard to admit of rolling the casks over it to so great a distance, a number of the inhabitants undertook to carry what was required in gourds, on a promise of being properly rewarded for their trouble. The civility of the natives induced the party to extend their walk through the plantations, which they found extremely pleasant. In this excursion they beheld the land in a high state of cultivation principally under immediate crops of *taro*, and abounding with a variety of wild fowl.

Nature, in her dispensations of vegetable food seems almost to have confined the inhabitants of Woahoo to the *taro* plant, the raising of which is attended with care, labour, and ingenuity. In many of the progressive operations of cultivating this plant, whether planting, weeding, or gathering, the inhabitants must be continually up to their middle in mud, and exposed to the rays of a vertical sun: but on the plains of Otaheite the surface teems, almost spontaneously, with the most abundant produce of esculent vegetables, and without the assistance of aqueducts, which these people are obliged to construct with great labour and ingenuity, to encourage them even to hope for a crop.

It is not only in the vegetable kingdom that nature seems to have shown her partiality: the human species, though originally of the same nation, differ extremely. It seems evident too that the comparative benevolence of the Otaheiteans and these people was proportioned to the fertility of the soil in which they respectively existed. When the Europeans landed at Otaheite, the effusions of kindness and hospitality were conspicuous in the countenance of every one they met. Every one endeavoured to anticipate their wishes by the most fascinating attention, and strove to be foremost in performing any little service they might require; entreating them to accept of refreshments at every house they approached, displaying all that suavity and kindness that could be expected among the most polished nations. At Woahoo they were regarded with coolness and austerity, and their requests were heard with apathy or indifference. These people exhibited no assiduity to please, nor appeared in the least afraid of offending: they offered no refreshments, nor invited any one to their houses. Their general behaviour was decently civil, perhaps to give them a chance of

deriving some acquisition
able by any other
knew that the
their guard to si
however, requires th
favourably mentio
and vegetables
ment of the p
was ready; v
to partake of
to accept of t
mitted their intend
The guides w
knowledge; and
supply from the
be furnished the
land.
About midnight t
moored near the Dis
Captain Vancouver
night had been
parted, and not
very at day-light,
of the island,
where he found an eli
natives near the
themselves civilly a
duced so small a
Whits bay is formed
the south point of
of the compass in the s
not convenient anchori
brought their roun
plagues distant. The
and it, extending about
right in the evening, V
The Chatham be
lost sight of. The
to the astonishment o
rowl by half past four
bore away along the
where they anchor
being anchored, they
who were very or
About noon on
not anchor till co
on which the Discove
The afternoon bein
apprehending no
existed, proceeded a
by Mr. Menzie
ary, it appeared, w
plant, culdral I a
the cause of luxuriant
they proceeded, the
particular visit, whic
Vol. I. No. XX.

some acquisitions, which would be unobtainable by any other mode of conduct. They knew that the Europeans were too much under their guard to suffer any indignity: Justice, however, requires that their two guides should be favourably mentioned, who had each caused some of the provisions and vegetables to be prepared for the entertainment of the party: on their return the dinner was ready, when they were much inclined to partake of it, but it was too late for them to accept of their civility, though they permitted their intended repast to be put into the store. The guides were then presented with an acknowledgment; and after renewing the request for a supply from the brook, which was promised to be furnished the next day, they returned on board.

About midnight the Chatham arrived, and anchored near the Discovery; when it appeared, Captain Vancouver had suggested, that Mr. Broughton had been becalmed the evening they parted, and not being able to see the Discovery at day-light, she steered to the southern end of the island, standing towards Mowee, where he found an eligible anchoring place. The natives near the neighbourhood conducted themselves civilly and submissively, but they produced so small a quantity of water in the

Whits Bay is formed by the land retreating a little at the south point of Woahoo; and though open about the compass in the southern quarters, is certainly the most convenient anchoring place in the island. A fine bay brought them round the south-west part of Woahoo, a league distant. The point is low flat land with a reef and it, extending about a quarter of a mile from the shore. Right in the evening, Woahoo bore north, three leagues distant. The Chatham being under the land becalmed, was out of sight of. The Discovery continued her course, to the astonishment of the captain, came within sight of the island by half past four the next morning. At day-break she bore away along the south side of Attowai for Whyman Bay, where they anchored about nine.

Being anchored, they were visited by several of the natives, who were very orderly, submissive, and well proportioned. About noon on the 9th the Chatham arrived, but did not anchor till sun-set, when she moored near the point which the Discovery had taken.

The afternoon being remarkably pleasant, and the natives apprehending no interruption to the harmony that existed, proceeded along the river-side towards the sea, accompanied by Mr. Menzies, Jack, and Reehooa. The low country, it appeared, was principally occupied with the plant, cultivated as at Woahoo; interspersed with some of luxurious growth, and some sweet potatoes. They proceeded, their attention was directed towards a particular cliff, which now presented itself, and which

course of the next day, that Mr. Broughton saw he had no probability of being supplied through their means, and resolved to proceed to Attowai; he therefore weighed anchor, and steered to the southward.

The boats, guard, &c. of the Discovery being in readiness, Captain Vancouver was accompanied in the yawl by Mr. Menzies; Mr. Puget followed with the cutter and launch: the surf was high, but did not prevent their landing with safety, and they were received by the few natives present with that distant civility, which they experienced at Woahoo. A man named Reehooa engaged to preserve decorum, who, knowing they intended to remain some days, caused two good houses to be tabooed for their service; one for the officers; and the other for those who were to labour, as well as those who composed the guard, consisting of a serjeant and six marines. An allotment of a great space of ground was also appointed, for the sole use and accommodation of the Europeans, which was preserved unmolested by two natives of authority. Those natives who were not permitted to come within the lines, were employed in rolling the water-casks to and from the boats; for which service they thought themselves amply rewarded with a few beads, and nails †.

Intelligence had been gathered, both here and

would have stopped their further progress into the country, had not a well-constructed wall served as a pass, and formed an aqueduct to convey the water brought thither from a considerable distance, which furnished an abundant supply for watering their plantations. This wall, which does equal credit to the projector and the builder, terminated the extent of their walk; from whence they returned through the plantation, which was so highly cultivated as to impress the beholders with a favourable opinion of the industry and ingenuity of the inhabitants. On the arrival of this small party at the beach, and the captain finding every thing in good order, he left Mr. Puget in charge of them, and returned on board.

The reception of the Europeans at Attowai was not of that friendly nature they had experienced from their southern friends; but the eagerness with which the men assisted in promoting the prostitution of the women, and the willingness of the whole sex, without the least exception, to surrender their persons to the men without importunity, incurred aversion, and disgust. Though much obscenity has been attributed to the inhabitants of Otaheite and the Society Islands, Captain Vancouver says—"No indecency that ever came under my observation, could be compared with the excessive wantonness presented in this excursion." He adds, however, that he supposes this excess of licentiousness is a new acquirement, taught them by the different civilised voluptuaries, who for several years past have been their constant visitors.

at Woahoo, that some Englishmen were resident in this island. One of them, a youth about seventeen years of age, whose name was Rowbottom, came on board here on the 10th of March in a large double canoe, who said he was a native of Derbyshire; that he had sailed from England five years before that period in an Indianan to China, and had quitted that ship that he might engage himself in some of the vessels in the fur trade between North-West America and China, and that he had ever since been in the American service. He informed Captain Vancouver that John Williams a Welchman, and James Coleman an Irishman, had been left at Ouehow, for the purpose of returning to this island, to collect sandal-wood and pearls for John Kendrick, an American, commanding the brig Lady Washington; in whose service they now continued at the wages of eight dollars per month. Rowbottom was accompanied by two chiefs, one named *Nu-ma-tee-he-tee*, the other *Too*; both of whom, he said, would be found useful at Attowai and Ouehow. On making each of these chiefs a present, with which they seemed highly pleased, they said they were ordered by the prince *Ta-moo-ere* (a boy who is the eldest son of *Tato*, the sovereign of this and the neighbouring islands) to say that *Enemoh*, the regent, and *Tumooere* would see Captain Vancouver in a day or two. A messenger was instantly dispatched to request that no circumstance might long deprive him of the honour of his company, and as a pledge of his friendly disposition, a large axe was sent him as a present.

The young Englishman observed that it was highly important to watch the conduct of these peoples; for though their force was so great as to deter them from attempting any hostile measures, it could not be determined how far their ambitious views might lead them; as since their success in taking a schooner at Owhyhee, they had even attempted to take a brig at Mowee. *Nomatechee* and *Too*, with several other natives, acknowledged the truth of this intelligence, and highly reprobated the inhuman murder of the crew;

Mr. Broughton then attended the captain on shore, with the two chiefs and the young Englishman, who was found very useful as an interpreter. The navigators, with proper attendants, went to examine a river; after which they landed, and considered themselves about three miles from the sea-side, to which they returned by a path near the foot

who were all put to death: excepting one *Tiamna* was accused of having projected, and even perpetrated the horrible massacre; and was generally understood that, if he had accompanied them from Owhyhee, he would have been put to death the moment he had landed. The reports, and the observations of the natives, induced Captain Vancouver to believe, that *Tiamna* intentions of accompanying him, which he afterwards thought proper to decline, were not dictated by the most friendly and disinterested motives.

Nomatechee returned with them to dine. *Too* continued with *Rehooa* to assist the party on shore. The caulkers having now finished the quarter deck of the *Discovery*, they were dispatched on board the *Chatham* to perform similar service. Another of the party left by the *Lady Washington* now made his appearance: his name was Coleman, who had been declared Irishman by Rowbottom; but he positively denied that assertion, and asserted that he was American, born at New York. In many respects he had adopted the customs of the natives, particularly in their dress, or rather in the nakedness. Excepting the *maro*, which he did not wear with much delicacy, he was perfectly naked, and the colour of his skin was not much whiter than the fairest of these people. When being asked what he had done with his former clothes, he sneeringly replied, he had hung them up in the house to excite the admiration of the natives—seemingly exulting in having degenerated into a savage mode of life. He asked Captain Vancouver, at the command of the prince, how long he intended to stay. The captain began his highness might be informed that he should depart as soon as he had procured a supply of water, and that he wished to have an interview with *Enemoh*, but that he could not be detained on that account; as a further pledge of his favourable disposition, he also sent the prince a piece of scarlet cloth. With this embassy he departed, after assuring the captain that the prince, regent, with several other chiefs, would attend him the following day.

A supply of water was procured from the foot of a mountain. Here they were, if possible, more surprised and disgusted with the obscene overtures of the natives than they were on their former excursion. A pleasant afternoon invited Captain Vancouver to make an excursion along the beach; and on returning saw the hills to the eastward to be on fire. He was

A supply of water was procured from the foot of a mountain. Here they were, if possible, more surprised and disgusted with the obscene overtures of the natives than they were on their former excursion. A pleasant afternoon invited Captain Vancouver to make an excursion along the beach; and on returning saw the hills to the eastward to be on fire. He was

On the 13th Mr. Broughton attended the captain on shore to obtain the names of the chiefs, and to improve their friendly disposition towards the ships. In the forenoon, and commenced the following party landing. He was greeted by *Enemoh*, a little distance the young man's lap, to whom presents, and was with the presents delivered.

Several articles had been entrusted to *Nomatechee* the previous day, and his credit was

Mr. Puget informed the captain that he had no objection that the chiefs and women of great consequence be left with them, and were honoured with

from being pleased were generally reported to assemble the distant islands to be carried in this extensive conflagration. The difference

A supply of water being completed on the 12th, and the fresh supply of hogs and vegetables received from the shore, it was the captain's intention to sail the next day for Onehow; as the re-appearance of the fires on the hills, and the absence of the prince and regent, indicated a possibility that the natives might have resolved to discontinue their former services and good behaviour. To effect the embarkation, Mr. Puget had procured a double canoe, which was stowed and swamped the first trip, but every person had fortunately been saved: by this accident two muskets, a cross cut-saw, three axes, and a set of accoutrements, went to the bottom, but one of the muskets had been recovered. These, and other circumstances, created much anxiety in the captain's breast; but at day-break he was agreeably relieved by a message, informing him that the prince and regent were arrived at Whymea.

On the 13th Mr. Puget was dispatched to the shore to obtain the articles which had been left behind, and to impress the prince and regent with their friendly disposition, and prevail on them to visit the ships. In these respects he fortunately succeeded, and communicated to Captain Vancouver the following particulars of his reception.—On landing, he was graciously and ceremoniously received by *Enemoh*, who is an elderly chief; at a little distance the young prince was seated on a woman's lap, to whom Mr. Puget instantly paid his respects, and was well pleased that he approved of the presents delivered to him on this occasion.

Several articles belonging to the officers had been entrusted to the care of Williams and Nomateche the preceding evening, which, to their infinite credit, was now faithfully restored.

Mr. Puget informed *Enemoh*, that he was ready to attend them on board. *Enemoh* replied, that he had no objection with respect to himself; but the chiefs who were present, and some women of great consequence, required a hostage to be left with them on shore, while those on board were honoured with the company of the prince,

and another illustrious personage named *Tipoone*, who was his principal companion. This intimation was immediately attended to, and Mr. Manby and Mr. Sheriff were ordered to stay behind. This point being adjusted, a general approbation was expressed, and the regent with some attendants embarked; declaring, that, on his return, the young prince should go on board, observing that the island could not be left either without the prince or the regent.

A dozen hogs, with a quantity of mats and cloth, being presented by *Enemoh*, Captain Vancouver made a suitable return, with which, however, he did not appear satisfied: an explanation ensued, when it was acknowledged by *Enemoh* that the present made him was a liberal one; but he would gladly resign the whole for a musket or a pistol. These engines of destruction had been ardently solicited by every native of consequence with whom he had any transactions; and he had been frequently perplexed how to avoid complying with their importunities, without giving offence, and encouraging the practice of inhumanity. But, as a plausible excuse for his repeated inattention to these sort of requests, he informed *Enemoh* that the ship, and every thing she contained, belonged to King George, who had tabooed muskets, pistols, and several other particulars. Gunpowder and balls were then earnestly solicited; but being informed that those articles were equally restricted, he became silent and contemplative. Finding, at length, that he had no prospect of success in procuring his favourite weapons, he suddenly grew cheerful, and shook the captain heartily by the hand; declaring the presents he had received were very ample, and only lamented that the arms and ammunition had been tabooed. His importance was afterwards highly gratified on being saluted with four guns on his departure, and he took leave with every appearance of being perfectly satisfied.

Mr. Puget attended the venerable chief and his suite on board the *Chatham*, to pay their respects to Mr. Broughton, and, having received some

so unusual an appearance was not very satisfactory, but the captain did not think it prudent to manifest his apprehensions by a hasty retreat. He desired, however, that Mr. Puget would be vigilantly on his guard; and measures were so effectually taken that little danger could be apprehended. The night, however, passed without the least molestation, and in the morning the natives were trading, as usual.

presents

presents from that gentleman, they proceeded on shore. Mr. Puget was greatly delighted with the idea of the intended visit, but he was afterwards extremely disappointed on being informed that the embarkation of the prince and his companion would not take place. On his searching for the cause, *Enemoh*, with some hesitation, declared, that the two gentlemen, who had been left as hostages were seen on the beach, near the boats, and were supposed to be going on board without waiting the return of the prince to the shore. Mr. Puget, however, removed their apprehensions, and all objections ceased: when the young prince and his young companion got eagerly into the boat, which immediately put off, leaving the hostages in their former situation*.

Dinner being now ready, his young friend did not fail to partake of the repast, but the prince was infinitely more entertained with the objects that surrounded him, and would have returned perfectly satisfied with his visit, had nothing more been offered him. When dinner was ended, Captain Vancouver presented *Tamooere* with several very valuable articles, among which some of them particularly attracted his attention. As an additional testimony of his approbation of their conduct, the captain assured them that, if they would remain on board till it was dark, they should be entertained with a display of fire-works. *Tamooere* was well satisfied that the intentions of the Europeans were pacific and friendly; and though perfectly reconciled to his situation on board, he entreated permission to go on shore; and if *Enemoh* had no objection, he would return. He intreated them to remain a few days, to give him an opportunity of making some return for their civilities in hogs and vegetables; but as the navigators had accomplished all their necessary business, and wished to obtain from Onehow a stock of yams (which could not then be had at Attowai) he informed the prince that he should

* The young prince was about twelve years of age, and seemed to exhibit much cheerfulness and affability: his features resembled those of an European, being free from that natural ferocity which generally characterize these islanders, and which were so conspicuous in the persons about him. At first he was considerably agitated, which was manifested not only by the sensibility of his countenance, but also by his actions, in clinging close to the captain, and often saluting him, according to their custom, by touching noses. Some trifling presents, however, soon dissipated his fears, and gave him confidence to visit every part of the ship: his en-

depart for Onehow in the course of the night, the wind should prove favourable.

After attending the prince on a visit to the Chatham, he returned with him to the shore where the party was very favourably received. The prince was conveyed on a man's shoulder and seated in the house which was occupied by the officers belonging to the navigators; when he was joined by *Enemoh*, with a train of attendants, who unanimously expressed their gratitude for the many favours they had received. Hearing nothing respecting the promised supply of provisions, Mr. Puget took his leave and went on board; and the young prince, conceiving the fire-works might be conveniently seen from the beach, requested to be indulged in that particular.

As the young sovereign was anxiously waiting with multitudes of his countrymen, in expectation of something new, Captain Vancouver ordered some sky and water-rockets to be displayed. *Nimatechete*, and *Too*; with many of the natives who had begged a passage to Onehow, then beheld the rockets with infinite astonishment and admiration; and the vast concourse of people assembled on shore, enjoyed the wonderful spectacle, which they emphatically proved by their repeated bursts of acclamations.

That the natives have sometimes been unfairly dealt with, is evident from the prince demanding a hostage; and transgressions may have been committed by the natives as well as by strangers, which may have produced mutual misunderstandings; mutual aggressions may also have arisen from the want of a perfect knowledge of each others language: but that they are capable of being taught by proper examples, how to respect the property of others, is evident by their exercising those principles of rectitude which directed the honourable restoration of the muskets and tools recovered from the sea †.

Early in the morning of the 14th, the inquiries and observations were pertinent and sensible, beyond what could be expected from a youth of his tender age. In every particular he surpassed his friend *Typoon*.

† No particular marks of external respect were now shewn to the royal party, either from the subordinate chiefs or common people; but when Mr. Vancouver was at these islands with Captain Cook, prostration was usually required, even by the subordinate chiefs. On this occasion, the prince's superior rank was only proclaimed by a guard consisting of about thirty men, armed with iron pahoos, who attended the royal personages in their excursions.

copy

of the night, every sailed with a fine northerly breeze for Onehow, in order to procure a sufficiency of provisions and other vegetables, while the decks of the Chatham were caulking and putting in order. On her arrival at Onehow, she anchored in the south of the island. *Nimateetee* expressed a wish that she had proceeded further west, as a more convenient situation to procure refreshments. The station which had been taken was not very improperly chosen, for in the afternoon of the 16th, a very ample supply had been purchased, and the Chatham's deck being now in a state of perfection, the ships proceeded together towards the coast of America. On their departure, the two Englishmen, with other friends, took their leave, having first been rewarded for their services far beyond their expectations.

The Sandwich Islands*, it must be acknowledged, afforded the navigators but a scanty supply of provisions; but scarcity was not solely the cause, for abundance of every kind might have been readily procured, had they been willing to purchase them with arms and ammunition. The great avidity of the natives for becoming possessed of these destructive weapons, has doubtless been increased by the success of *Tianna*, who owes his present exaltation to fire-arms; some of which were imported from China, and others he afterwards obtained from different traders. His example has created in every chief an inordinate thirst for power, and a spirit of enterprize and ambition seems generally diffused among them.

The apparent alteration in the several governments of these islands, since their first discovery by Captain Cook, has arisen from incessant war, which the commerce for European arms and ammunition must encourage to a most destructive and deplorable extent. If a decision may be allowed from a comparative view of the first visits of the *Resolution* and *Discovery*, and the numerous throngs which then appeared, and the few which now make their appearance here, the mortality must have been very considerable. It may, however, be objected, that such visitors are no longer a novelty, and the curiosity of the natives is less excited.

Captain Vancouver had occasion to observe, that at Whyteete, though the town was extensive, and the habitations numerous, few inhabitants were to be seen; and many of the houses were almost abandoned. Whymea, a village, has lost two thirds of its size since 1779: the places on which houses were most numerous on his former visits, are now occupied by grass and weeds. That wars and commotions had caused this devastation appeared from the result of his enquiries off Owhyhee; when it was proved that none of the chiefs, with whom he had formerly been acquainted, were now living, except *Tamaahmah*; and that few of them had died a natural death: most of them having been slain in these lamentable contests.

SECTION V.

Message from the Sandwich Islands to the Coast of Africa—See the Land of New Albion—Arrive in Port Discovery—Proceed along its Coast—Fall in with an American Vessel—Enter the supposed Straits of De Fuca—Proceed up the Straits—Coast of New Albion—Boat Excursion—Quit Port Discovery—Description of Port Discovery, and the adjacent Country.

On the morning of the 18th of March the navigators took their departure from the Sandwich

islands. Nothing particular occurred till the 7th of April, when they found themselves in the midst

The Sandwich Isles appear to have been first discovered by Captain Cook. The people of the Sandwich Islands are of deep olive complexion, muscular, and well proportioned; their productions differ little from those of Otaheite, but are little further to the north of the equator, than the Society Islands are to the south. There is one considerable bay. Vol. I. No. XXXII.

island, about two hundred and eighty British miles in circumference, called Owhyhee, where Captain Cook was unfortunately slain by the natives, February 1779. The best eulogy of this great man will be found, dispersed through this and other Geographical productions, which from him acquire a great accession of knowledge. These islands were

midst of immense numbers of the sea blubber of the species of the *Medusa Villilia*; the surface of the ocean, as far as the eye could reach, was so completely covered with these animals, that hardly a pea could be dropped clear of them. The largest did not exceed four inches in circumference; a beautiful blue worm, much resembling a caterpillar, was found adhering to them. This worm, or caterpillar, was considered by Mr. Menzies as a new genus. In the afternoon they saw a bird, supposed to be of the duck or hawk kind, flying to the north-west, but at too great a distance to discover its character. Since their leaving the land they had daily been visited by one or two large birds, which were sometimes taken for the *quebrantahuesos*, and sometimes for an albatross. On the 8th, however, this point was determined by Mr. Menzies, who fortunately killed a brown albatross, strongly resembling those which swarm about *Tierra del Fuego*, vulgarly denominated *Mother Carey's Geese*. This albatross had a white mark extending from the corner of the eye towards the neck. From tip to tip of each wing it measured seven feet, and from the extremity of the beak, to that of the tail, three feet*.

In the morning of the 16th, the wind blew with such violence as to make it necessary that the topsails should be close reefed; the squalls were very heavy, seeming to portend an approaching storm. No soundings could be had with a hundred and twenty fathoms of line: at ten the wind veered, and blew a moderate gale. The necessary signals made to the *Chatham* not having been answered, and not seeing her at day-break

so named in gratitude to the Earl of Sandwich, a minister who had warmly promoted his measures. Captain King represents them as a mild and affectionate people, free from the Otaheitan levity, and the proud gravity of those of the Friendly Isles. The climate appears to be more temperate than that of the West Indies; and in *Owhyhee* the mountains arrest the clouds, and produce rain inland, while there is sun-shine on the shore. The winds seem generally easterly, and there is a regular land and sea breeze.

* The weather continued pleasant with light variable breezes till the 10 h. In case of an unavoidable separation, Captain Vancouver appointed the next rendezvous in *Berkley's* sound; yet while they were so fortunate, as to keep together, he was determined to fall in with the coast of *New Albion*, as far southward of that station as circumstances would admit. Several small whales and grampuses had lately surrounded the ship; and this afternoon, about twenty whales of the spermaceæ kind were playing in the water. The immense number of the medusa, with which

on the 17th, the *Discovery* abandoned her course to go in search of her: about five she was seen from the mast-head, when the latter bore down to her, and having joined company, they again directed their route to the eastward.

About twelve they passed great quantities of drift wood, sea-weed, grass, &c. Plenty of ducks, shags, puffins, and other aquatic birds were seen flying around. Other circumstances also indicated the vicinity of land, though the eye could not penetrate farther than three or four miles distant, the weather becoming thick and rainy. At four in the afternoon they reached soundings at the depth of fifty three fathoms, and the land was discovered at the distance of about two leagues. After proceeding along the coast of *New Albion* till the 24th, they were under the necessity of coming to an anchor in thirty nine fathoms water; the northernmost extremity of the main land, which formed by low land projecting from the high rocky coast a considerable way into the sea. The Captain *Vancouver* distinguished by the name *CAPE ORFORD*, in honour of his much respected friend, *George Earl of Orford*.

They had not long anchored before a canoe was perceived paddling towards the ship: without invitation or encouragement venturing immediately alongside. In the course of the afternoon, two others visited the *Discovery*, and some repaired to the *Chatham*. The deportment of these people was pleasing and insinuating, their countenances exhibiting nothing ferocious, their features are of the general European cast, and their colour is a light olive. They are

this region abounds, may probably draw these animals in pursuit of food. Advancing very pleasantly towards the east, they gradually lost sight of the medusa villilia, which had attended them over seven degrees of longitude.

The coast of *New Albion* seems to be chiefly Alpine; the most remarkable mountain, seems to be that called *Elias* by the Russian navigators; and which it has been affirmed to be visible at sea at no less a distance than six leagues. *La Perouse* observes that the primitive mountains of granite or slate rise from the sea, yet the summits are covered with perpetual snow, and immense glaciers surround the cavities. The natives he has minutely described, and says that he has always found savages, barbarous, crafty, and wicked. Their most singular practice is sitting and distending the underlip, so as to beautify females with two mouths. The lofty mountains, which *Perouse* computes at more than ten thousand feet in height terminate at *Cross Sound*; but the Alpine ridges probably extend, with few interruptions, as far as *California*.

done her countenance was so pale, and she was so thin, that she gave the impression of being a skeleton. Her hair was black, and her eyes were small and dark. She had a few small scars on her face, but no other marks. She was dressed in a simple, dark, one-piece garment, which she wore with a belt. She had a few small ornaments, but no other articles of clothing. She was very much surprised to see the ship, and she came forward to meet them. She was very much surprised to see the ship, and she came forward to meet them. She was very much surprised to see the ship, and she came forward to meet them.

The navigators remained in this situation till midnight, when they weighed and stood to sail. They did not see land till day-light on the 25th. Noon on the 26th brought them within sight of land, which was supposed to be that denominated Destruction Island. This island is by far the largest detached

piece of land that has yet been observed on the coast. It is about a league in circumference, low, and almost flat on the top, presenting a very barren prospect, having only one or two dwarf-trees at each end: one or two canoes were seen paddling near it. To the astonishment of our navigators, no inhabitants were seen, excepting to the southward of Cape Orford and this place; nor were any circumstances noticed that indicated probability of the country being inhabited.

At four o'clock on the 29th a sail was discovered to the westward standing in shore; which was thought a very great novelty; no vessel having been seen but the Chatham, during the last eight months. She hoisted American colours, and fired a gun to leeward. At six the Discovery spoke to her, when she proved to be the ship Columbia,

They had but a few trifling articles to barter; in exchange for which they solicited iron and beads. They were remarkably honest in their dealings, and had not the least idea of accepting presents; for when Captain Vancouver gave them iron, beads, medals, &c. they instantly presented their garments in return; seeming much astonished and dissatisfied that he should decline taking them: the first man, in particular, could hardly be persuaded to retain both the shirt and his garment.

The most remarkable mountain that had been seen on the coast of New Albion now presented itself. Its summit, clothed eternally with snow, elegantly divided into a double fork, and rose from a base of lofty mountains covered with a similar mantle, which descended gradually to hills of a moderate height, and terminated in low cliffs falling perpendicularly on a sandy beach: off which variety of rocks and rocky islets were scattered of different figures and dimensions. This is generally supposed to be the Mount Olympus of Mr. Meares, though it was not confirmed by its latitude. It was, however, the only conspicuous mountain observed by our navigators on the part of the coast they had visited.

commanded by Mr. Robert Gray of Boston, whence she had been absent nineteen months. Supposing this person to be the same that had formerly commanded the sloop Washington, Captain Vancouver desired he would bring to, and sent on board to acquire such information as might assist him in his future operations.

It was remarkable, that on their approach to the entrance of the inland sea, they should meet with the identical person who, it has been said, sailed through it: but his account differed very materially from a relation of it published in England. Mr. Gray was much astonished on being informed that his authority had been quoted, and the track ascertained that he had been said to have made in the sloop Washington. In contradiction to which he declared to the officers, that he had penetrated but fifty miles into the straits in question: that he found the passage five leagues wide; and that the natives informed him that the opening extended a considerable distance to the northward: that he received no further information respecting this inland sea, and that he returned to the ocean by the way he had entered.

Satisfied with this information, our navigators pursued their route which was directed along the coast to the northward. It continued to increase in height as they advanced, with many detached rocky islets: passing the outermost of these rocks at the distance of about a mile, they distinguished the south point of entrance into De Fuca's straits. Thick rainy weather prevented their seeing much of the country, but they were enabled to ascertain that this coast was firm and compact, without any opening into the Mediterranean sea.

Several villages were seen scattered along the shore: the wind blew a fresh gale, but as it was favourable for entering a certain inlet, they embraced the opportunity it presented, and shortened sail to give the Chatham the lead. About noon they reached its south entrance, which the natives distinguish by the name of Classet. It is a pro-

jecting

jecting promontory: the Pinnacle rock, as represented by Mr. Meares and Mr. Dalrymple, was not perceived. The Discovery followed the Chatham between Tatooche's island and the rock: this rock, which appears just above the surface of the water, and over which the surface breaks with great violence, Captain Vancouver named Rock DUNCAN, to commemorate that gentleman's discovery. The island of Tatooche is of an oblong shape, about half a league in circuit, having a verdant and fertile appearance, but being without any trees. Several canoes were observed on the beach, which would probably have visited the Europeans, had they thought proper to shorten sail.

The 29th of April brought our navigators to an anchor, about eight miles within the entrance of the supposed straits of de Fuca. They advanced further up this inlet than Mr. Gray, or to their knowledge, any other person from the civilized world. The 31st of May brought them to an anchor under New Dungeness. Their May-day was ushered in by a delightful morning, affording them, from the broken appearance of the coast below them, the prospect of speedily reaching a commodious harbour. The huts they now beheld plainly stated to them that they could be only temporary habitations, being composed of nothing more than a few mats thrown over cross-sticks. The inhabitants seemed to view the Europeans with the most perfect unconcern, continuing to fish before their huts with as much composure, as if such vessels had been familiar to them. On the low land of New Dungeness, a number of tall straight poles were erected, resembling beacons, supported from the ground by spurs. They were probably intended to answer some particular purpose;

* As they proceeded along the shore, they passed the village of Classet, which appears to be populous and extensive. The fresh southwesterly wind being moderated by the intervention of high land, the natives visited them without difficulty, having civilly requested permission before they presumed to enter the ship. Having received some presents, and assurances of friendship, they earnestly solicited the Europeans to stop at their village: but on due consideration, Captain Vancouver declined their pressing invitation, and directed his course up the inlet, expecting that he should soon be enabled to get accommodated with a more advantageous station. The few natives who came off resembled, in many respects, the people of Nootka: their persons, dress, and behaviour, are very similar, but their ornaments were different; especially those worn at the nose. Instead of the crescent, adopted by the inhabitants of Nootka, straight pieces of iron had the preference among these. Their arms,

but whether of a religious, civil, or military nature cannot at present be ascertained.

Mr. Whidbey landed at the upper part of the bay, but could find no water, nor did he see any along the shore near the habitations of the Indians who remained, as before, deliberately fishing on the water, without paying any more attention to the cutter, than if she had been a canoe belonging to themselves. On receiving this report, the Chatham's cutter, with the Discovery's yawl and cutter, were ordered to be armed and supplied with provisions for a day; with which they proceeded to examine the two apparent openings nearest to themselves. They found the sea almost covered with aquatic birds of different kinds, but all of them so extremely shy that they eluded the endeavours of the sportsmen. The first opening was a compact shore, off which extended a flat. From hence they made the best of their way to what seemed to be an island, off the other supposed opening. Landing on the west side of the supposed island, and ascending its eminence, which was nearly a perpendicular cliff, their attention was instantly called to a landscape as beautiful and elegant as any of the highest finished grounds in Europe.

They proceeded to the examination of the inlet now before them, and perceived that its entrance was about a league wide, having regular good soundings, and no apparent danger from rocks or shoals. Fresh water, however, seemed a scarce commodity; but, at length they unexpectedly fell in with a stream which was very excellent, and thus accomplished the design of the excursion. A pleasant breeze springing up, they weighed anchor on the 2d of May. The delightful serenity of the weather aided the beautiful

implements, and canoes were exactly the same: Their language was also the same.

† The summit of this island presented almost a horizontal surface, interspersed with some inequalities of ground, which produced a beautiful variety on a large lawn covered with luxuriant grass, and diversified with a profusion of flowers. The north-west view presented a copple of pine trees and shrubs of various sorts, that seemed intended as a protection of this delightful meadow from the north-west wind; but the most ingenious designer of pleasure grounds would have been puzzled to arrange them more agreeably. While they stopped to contemplate these beauties of nature, in a pleasant and unexpected prospect, they gathered some gooseberries and roses in a very forward state. Directing their eye along the shore, it appeared to be much broken, and seemingly to form many navigable inlets.

The natives of this island were found to be of the same race as those of Nootka.

every that
before them
ould bestow
ould not su
bmitted to
they could
country
they pass
habitation
which gave
mission mig
They had
ough for
rdiously si
the tents, o
of marines,
while th
to captain
; but n
station. I
village, c
ndred inh
Nootka
lately visi
bitations v
d a small s
ve been o
eds, amon
were c
On the 3d
ard and c
mils, co
ing the pe
d many
ties. The
eatly accel
labours.
d now res
ants, few
eir attent
re engage
Proceedin
y found the
sh deck
miles with
ed by Cas
moored, i
our is fore
side, fro
tion of nat
ld not have
the port, n
mpts of an
denominat
Vol. I.

any that was now beheld, and the country before them exhibited all that bounteous nature would bestow in a single point of view. As they could not suppose that this country had ever been subjected to the hand of man for its decorations; they could not possibly believe that any uncultivated country had ever exhibited so rich a picture. As they passed along the shore, near one of these charming spots, the tracks of deer were observed, which gave hopes that such refreshments as venison might be procured for the table*. They had no difficulty in clearing a space large enough for their encampment, which was commandingly situated on the north side of the brook. The tents, observatory, &c. guarded by a party of marines, were conveyed on shore after dinner; and while they were arranging in proper order, the captain made a short excursion up the harbour; but nothing of importance demanded his attention. Before he returned he found a deserted village, capable of accommodating about one hundred inhabitants. The houses were built in the Nootka taste, but did not appear to have lately the residence of the Indians. The habitations were in a decayed state; their inside, and a small surrounding space, which appeared to have been once inhabited, were over run with weeds, among which several human skulls and bones were carelessly and promiscuously scattered. On the 3d all persons proceeded to business on board and on shore; the sail makers repairing the sails, coopers examining the casks, gunners weighing the powder, and parties procuring water, and many others performing their necessary duties. The serenity of the climate and season greatly accelerated the completion of their different labours. And as the part of the country they had now reached was almost destitute of inhabitants, few circumstances occurred to divert their attention from the pursuits in which they were engaged. On Sunday the 6th the people

Proceeding without any obstruction in their progress, they found themselves abreast, about noon, of the stream which discharges its water from the western shore, about five miles within the entrance of the harbour, which was named by Captain Vancouver *PORT DISCOVERY*. There they anchored, in thirty-four fathoms. The entrance of this bay is formed by low projecting points, extending, on each side, from the high woodland cliffs. Had this position of nature been designed by an expert engineer, it could not have been more happily placed for the protection of the port, not only from the north winds, but against all attacks of an enemy, when properly fortified. Hence it was denominated *PROTECTION ISLAND*.

Vol. I. No. XXXIII.

were indulged with a holiday, that they might take some recreation and exercise on shore: a few of the natives in two or three canoes favoured them with their company, laden with fish and venison for sale: the latter was extremely good and highly acceptable; as they never could procure any before, though they had seen many tracks which announced the existence of deer in that neighbourhood†.

As the employments on board the *Discovery* would require some time before they could be completed, the captain wished to obtain some further knowledge of this inlet; for which purpose he directed the *Discovery's* yawl and launch, with the *Chatham's* cutter, properly armed, to be in readiness. He committed to Mr. Broughton the charge of the ships, and that of the *Observatory*. Mr. Menzies, with two of the young gentlemen, accompanied him in the yawl; Mr. Puget commanded the launch, and Mr. Johnstone the *Chatham's* cutter. With this arrangement, they took their departure on the 7th, at five in the morning, for the purpose of getting more intimately acquainted in the region in which they had so unexpectedly arrived. As they proceeded towards the western corner of an isthmus, Mr. Johnstone saw a deserted Indian village, in a very declining state, and no signs of inhabitants were discernible. The survey of an inlet, pointed out by Mr. Johnstone, having been accomplished by the joining of the boats, it proved to be a safe and more commodious harbour than *Port Discovery*; and rendered much pleasanter by the high land being at a greater distance from the water-side. Its soundings give it an additional advantage of being very regular from side to side; but, with respect to fresh water, it appeared to be very deficient. This port was denominated *PORT TOWNSEND*, by Captain Vancouver, in honour of the noble marquis of that name.

In their passage they found on one of the low

† In their persons, arms, &c. these people resembled the inhabitants of Nootka, though less defiled with paint, and less filthy in their external appearance: their ears were embellished with ornaments, but not their noses. Some of them could converse a little in the Nootka language: they were clothed in the skins of deer, or some other animal, but principally in a woollen garment of their own manufacture. They bartered their bows and implements for knives, copper, trinkets, &c. and they even offered for sale two children, each about the age of six or seven years: being shewn some copper, they were anxious to close the bargain, but Captain Vancouver expressed the utmost horror at such traffic, and peremptorily forbade it.

5 E

pointe

points projecting from the eastern shore, two upright poles fixed in the ground, about fifteen feet in height; on the top of each a human head was stuck. It must have been recently placed there, as their hair and flesh were nearly perfect. Fury or revenge were evidently displayed in these heads, by the stakes having been driven through the throat to the cranium. Between the stakes a fire had been made, and near it some calcined bones were observed. Many of these poles were seen; but though an opportunity was given for examining them, the adventurers could not discover for what purpose they were intended: they were, in general, perfectly straight, and about six inches in diameter at the bottom: the tallest of them were about one hundred feet high, the shortest from eighty-five to ninety: between some of them large holes had been dug in the ground, containing several stones that had been burnt*.

The weather clearing up on the 10th, they again embarked, and had not been long out of Oak Cove, when they observed some Indians, paddling slowly, apparently intending to wait for their approach. In this they were speedily gratified, and courteously offered them such things as they possessed; and cordially accepted some medals, knives, beads, and trinkets which the Europeans presented to them, and with which they seemed to be extremely well pleased. Having taken in supplies for only five days, our navigators had nearly exhausted their provisions, and were threatened with short allowance. Their sportsmen were unable to assist the stock; and a supply from the natives could not be relied upon: the region they had lately passed seemed almost destitute of human beings; and even the brute creation had deserted the shores. Animated nature was almost exhausted, and her awful silence was seldom interrupted but by the croaking of a raven, the scream of an eagle, or the

* A round snowy mountain now presented itself very conspicuously, which, after his friend rear-admiral Rainier, the captain gave the appellation of MOUNT RAINIER. In the morning of the 9th, the adventurers found themselves in a very fine cove, affording good anchorage from ten to twenty-five fathoms, sufficiently capacious to accommodate many vessels. They traversed its northern shores, but could find no water, except such as dripped in small quantities from the rocks. While they were detained by unfavourable weather, some of the young gentlemen found some oak-trees in their excursions, of which they exhibited specimens; but asserted that they had not seen any that exceeded three or four feet in circumference. In consequence

breathing of a seal. The solemn stillness was so prevalent as to create ridiculous suspicions in the seamen of hearing rattle snakes, and other hideous monsters, in the wilderness†.

Near the dwellings of their new friends, they found the purest stream of fresh water they had ever before seen: from its size, transparency, and rapidity, little doubt could be entertained of its source in perpetual springs. Near it were seen two miserable huts with mats thrown carelessly over them. These good people conducted themselves in a very friendly manner: they had little to dispose of, except their bows and arrows, which they bartered for other articles without the least hesitation; together with some small fish, cockles, and clams; of the latter the navigators purchased a considerable quantity, which was very acceptable in the impaired condition of their stock. Directed by these natives, the Europeans repaired to a cove in the south-east where, as they had been taught to expect, they beheld a number of the natives, who were under the least apprehensions on their approach. They all sat quietly on the grass, except two or three, who seemed to have been appointed to give them a hearty welcome to their country: these presented the adventurers with some fish and received in return a variety of trinkets, which delighted them exceedingly. These natives attended the Europeans to their companions, amounting to about sixty, including the women and children; when they were very cordially received, and treated with evident marks of friendship and hospitality. The residence of the people here was probably of a temporary nature: few of them had ever taken the trouble of erecting their miserable huts; contenting themselves perhaps for a certain period, with a lodging on the ground.

A cloak of sea-otter skins was brought down

of this discovery, the place obtained the name of Oak Cove.

† Having pleasant weather, and a favourably breeze, they proceeded, and passed several runs of fresh water. A canoe, with three men, went alongside the launch, and bartered a few trifles for iron, copper, and beads, but declined every invitation from them to come on shore. They appeared to be very honest in their dealings, and used the utmost endeavours to prevail on the party in the launch to attend them home; for which they set off after dinner agreeably to their very civil invitation. A smoke was perceived near the supposed place of their residence, imagined to have been intended for the purpose of directing the Europeans to their habitations.

which Captain V...
...of copper;...
...he would remain...
...quality should be...
...principal object...
...proposed task, he d...
...discovery, from w...
...greatly miles distan...
...about two miles from...
...followed them...
...noted themselves a...
...were their different...
...retired, and noth...
...of them.

Early on the 13th...
...directing their route...
...captain named Ho...
...and Hood. After...
...weather for a consid...
...and the Discovery...
...afternoon, much...
...series, great anxie...
...their safety, in c...

But before any far...
...some description...
...of the adjacent country...
...the territory of New...
...which entitled to noth...
...ent harbour. If any...
...in great depth of water...
...experience on that...
...ing ground, and freed...
...tion Island from a me...
...in length, on its...
...nel into Port Discove...
...this port is in gener...
...ended on the west side...
...which a pleasing divers...
...principally consists o...
...decayed vegetables...
...no great variety wa...
...was generally found...
...some specimens, appea...
...common flint, with son...
...argillaceous earths, v...
...ally found.

Only an imperfect...
...kingdom: the ski...
...such as are common...
...sea-coasts under the...
...only living quadrup...
...a black bear, two...
...reels, rats, and mice...
...ured, though, on the...
...very numerous: bu...

which Captain Vancouver purchased for a small quantity of copper; when the natives informed him that he would remain there, many more of a superior quality should be produced; but as that was not his principal object, and he had completed his proposed task, he directed his course back to Port Discovery, from which they were then about twenty miles distant. The approach of night obliged the Europeans to take up their abode about two miles from the Indians, some of whom followed them till they had landed; and posted themselves at a convenient distance to observe their different employments. At night they all retired, and nothing more was seen or heard of them.

Early on the 18th, the navigators embarked, directing their route down the inlet which the captain named *Hood's Channel*, in honour of Lord Hood. After combating with adverse weather for a considerable time, they arrived on board the *Discovery* on the 15th, about four in the afternoon, much to the satisfaction of all parties, great anxiety having been experienced for their safety, in consequence of their long absence.

But before any farther particulars of the voyage in this remote country may be required of Port Discovery, the adjacent country. Among other particulars respecting the territory of New Abilhon, Port Discovery is particularly entitled to notice, as a perfectly safe and convenient harbour. If any disadvantage attends it, it is that in great depth of water, though our navigators found no inconvenience on that account, as the bottom was good lying ground, and free from rocks. The shores of Port Discovery form a most excellent roadstead, about two miles in length, on its south side, and an uninterrupted channel into Port Discovery. The country in the environs of this port is in general of a moderate height, though bounded on the west side by mountains covered with snow, which a pleasing diversity of hills gradually ascend. The soil principally consists of a sandy loam, abundantly mixed with decayed vegetables. Respecting its mineral productions, no great variety was observed; iron ore in its various forms was generally found, and, from the magnetic qualities some specimens, appeared tolerably rich. Quartz, agate, common flint, with some variety of calcareous magnesian, argillaceous earths, were the mineral productions generally found.

Only an imperfect knowledge was acquired of the animal kingdom: the skins of sea-otters, and other animals, such as are commonly found among the inhabitants on the sea-coasts under the same parallel, and towards Noetka, the only living quadrupeds that made their appearance, were a black bear, two or three wild dogs, a few rabbits, weasels, rats, and mice. Few of the feathered tribe were secured, though, on their first arrival, the aquatic birds were very numerous; but they were so extremely shy that

so much attention had been paid to the operations concerning the ships, since the captain had left them, that he had the satisfaction to find, on his return, every thing had been accomplished. He now determined to depart as soon as the weather should break up, which did not happen till the 17th; when every thing was got in readiness for sailing the subsequent morning. A light air from the south-east encouraged their departure.

The parts of the vegetable kingdom, applicable to useful purposes grew very luxuriantly, consisting of the Canadian poplar, arbor-vitæ, American ash, sycamore, common yew, common hazel, black and common dwarf oak: these, with the Canadian alder, the small-fruited crab, and Canadian cherry trees, principally constituted the forests, which seemed to be encumbered with underwood. Of esculent vegetables but few were observed; the dead nettle, and samphire, were the most common: the wild orache, two or three sorts of wild peas, and the common hedge mustard, were frequently met with.

A scarcity of fresh water is a serious disadvantage in this country: the streams, however,

they eluded the approaches of man, and, being fired at, they disappeared. About the shores, and on the rocks, were observed species of the tern, the sea pigeon of Newfoundland, the common gull, curlews, sand-larks, shags, and the black sea pye, like those in New Holland and New Zealand. The woods were not fully inhabited by the feathered race; a small number of partridges had been seen, and a little variety of small birds. On the borders of the woods, and near the water-side, the white headed and brown eagle might be seen; ravens, carrion, crows, and a very beautiful wood-pucker, were plentiful. They frequently saw a bird with which they were wholly unacquainted, though they suppose it to be a species of the heron: their eggs were of a bluish cast, considerably larger than those of a turkey, and well tasted. Their legs and necks were remarkably long, and their bodies exceeded in size a very large turkey; their plumage is of a light brown, and, when erect, their height could not be less than four feet. Herons of the common size, were also seen; some of which were blue, and others nearly white.

The sea was not more bountiful to them of its animal productions, than they had found its shores. They were not only scantily supplied with fish, but they were in general unable to procure any but what were of the common sorts: as small bot-fish, sea-bream, sea-perch, and a large coarse sort of scalpin. These, with a few trout, and a small greenish eel, were the fishes most generally caught. The only creatures of the reptile tribe that they observed, was a small common black snake, a few lizards and frogs, and a variety of common insects; none of which could be considered as very troublesome.

which

which our navigators met with, furnished a sufficiency to answer all domestic purposes to a numerous body of inhabitants; and, were the country cleared and searched, many eligible situations might probably be found for establishments, where, with proper exertions, wholesome water might be procured.

A few words on the character of the inhabitants of this country may be expected, but the knowledge our navigators have acquired of them, their manners, and customs is very limited. Those inhabitants who came within their notice so nearly resembled those of Nootka, that the best delineation is a reference to a description so ably given to the public*. The only difference observed was, that they were less filthy; for though these people adorn their persons with the same sort of paint, they are not smeared with it so abundantly, nor do they load their hair with that immoderate quantity of oil and colour, which is so customary among the inhabitants of Nootka. In their weapons, canoes, and dress, they vary very little. Their spears, arrows, and fish-gigs, were shaped like those of Nootka, but none of them were pointed with copper, or with muscle-shell.

The few skeletons, carefully deposited in the canoes, were probably the chief, priests, or leaders of respectable tribes, whose followers still retain the highest respect for their memory and remains. Baskets were also seen, suspended on high trees, each containing the skeleton of an infant. On a low point, south of the encampment, where the gunners were airing the powder, they saw several holes, in which human bodies were interred,

slightly covered over, in different states of decay, some of which appeared to have been recently deposited. About half a mile to the northward of their tents, a canoe was found suspended between two trees, in which were three human skeletons; and near it a cleared space of ground of about forty yards in circumference, where its vegetable productions seemed lately to have been consumed by fire, among the ashes of which were found the skulls, and other bones, of about twenty persons in different stages of calcination. But the fire had not reached the suspended canoe, nor is it supposed that such an intention was even in contemplation †.

With the causes that have operated to produce these effects, men are totally unacquainted. The character and deportment of the few inhabitants our navigators had seen, did not countenance the idea of their having been occasioned by recent wars; they were naturally civil and friendly, and their appearance indicated no inclination to hostility. Many of their stoutest men were seen perfectly naked, with their skins unblemished with scars, except such as the small pox seemed to have occasioned; a disease which is supposed to have been very fatal among them. It is difficult to draw any just conclusions on the true cause of this havoc of the human race. Perhaps the present depopulation may have arisen from the inhabitants of this interior part having quitted their former abode, to approach the coast; for the convenience of obtaining, at an easier and cheaper rate, those valuable articles which have been brought to the sea coasts by the commercial adventurers of Europe and America.

SECTION VI.

Enter Admiralty Inlet—Port Orchard—Visit an Indian Village—Boat Excursions—Restoration Point—Quit Admiralty Inlet—Meet two Spanish Vessels.

ON the 8th of May, about noon, the Discovery and Chatham directed their course

* Vide Captain Cook's last voyage.

† In their different excursions, especially in the neighbourhood of Port Discovery, the skull, limbs, ribs, back bones, or some other vestiges of the human body, were found in many places, promiscuously scattered about the beach. Similar relics were frequently seen by the officers in their perambulations. Such appearances presented themselves so repeatedly, and in such abundance, that they supposed the environs of Port Discovery had been a general cemetery for the whole of the surrounding country. These,

towards the objects of their respective pursuit agreeably to the proposed destination of each

and other circumstances, have given birth to an opinion that, at no very remote period, this country had been more populous than at present. Some of the human bones were found disposed of in a very whimsical manner. Canoes were suspended between trees, twelve feet from the ground, in which the skeletons of two or three persons were deposited: others of larger dimensions were hauled up the skirts of woods, containing from four to seven skeletons covered with a plank. In some of these, broken bows and arrows were found.

On one of the beautiful lawns, nearly a league within the entrance of an inlet, which Captain Vancouver had seen before when he accompanied a party in a boat, thirty of the natives came from the surrounding woods, and attentively surveyed our Europeans as they sailed along. Their habitations were visible near them, nor were their canoes discernible. They endeavoured, in vain, to invite these good people on board; and, after advancing about four leagues up the inlet, a pleasant gale ceased to attend them, and they were compelled to anchor for the night, in eighteen fathoms water, about a mile from the western shore. The beauties of this region are enchanting: the serenity of the climate, the variety of pleasing landscapes, and the abundant fertility of the soil, which nature, unassisted by art, pours forth, requires only the industry of man, with villages and improvements, to render it the loveliest country that can be imagined; whilst the labour of the inhabitants would be liberally rewarded in the bounties which nature is ever ready to bestow on cultivation.

Continuing their course up the main inlet, about eight leagues from their last night's station, they arrived off a projecting point of land: on its western border, near the woods, they saw an Indian village, consisting of temporary habitations. Several of the natives assembled to take a survey of the ship as she passed; but none of them attempted to come on board, though several canoes were seen upon the beach. Here the inlet divided into two extensive branches, one taking a south-eastwardly, the other a south-western direction. Near this place was the appointed rendezvous with the Chatham; a situation under a small island was fixed upon as the most eligible spot, in which they might, with security, wait

her arrival; but on due examination, the depth of water was no where less than sixty fathoms, within a cable's length of the shore. Turning up towards the village point, however, they found a commodious roadstead, and anchored about a mile from the shore in thirty-eight fathoms water*.

These people did not essentially vary from the natives which were seen when the Europeans first entered the straits; they much resembled them in form, and were as much besmeared with oil and paint. Their ornaments, however, were more numerous, and consisted principally of copper, which was in the highest estimation among them. They were not deficient in acts of friendship and hospitality. When they joined the new visiting party, they presented them with what they had to dispose of; and procured some roots and shell-fish for their refreshment, which were found very palatable. Two of the natives who seemed most assiduous to please, and who were probably selected as the most important persons of the party, were presented with some trifles, which they received very thankfully. On the captain's returning towards the boat, they intimated that they should speedily return the visit on board the ship†.

In the morning of the 21st, a few showers of rain descended, but not so copiously as to retard the business on shore, or to prevent the Indians from visiting the ships. Convinced of the friendly disposition of the Europeans, all the inhabitants, men, women, and children, gratified their curiosity by paddling round the ship; for the ladies and children would not venture themselves on board. The generality of the men, indeed, adopted the same line of conduct, con-

* They had no sooner anchored than a canoe, with two men, paddled round the ship. Declining to accept an invitation to come on board, after having satisfied their curiosity by looking at the Europeans, they hastily returned to the shore. On the 20th many of the natives were seen coming about the village; but only one canoe approached the ship, from which was thrown the skin of some animal, and the canoe immediately returned. Towards noon the Europeans went on shore to the village point, to observe the latitude; and also visited the village, if it deserved that appellation: the best of the huts were poor and miserable, and some of them appearing to be constructed for protecting themselves against the heat, or the inclemency of the weather. They were hung up, to be cured by the smoke of the fire which was kept continually burning, of clams, muscles, and other fish, intended for the winter's provision.

† This promised visit was made with no small degree of

ceremony. Besides the canoes which were appropriated to the two superior people, five others attended, as if belonging to the train of these chiefs. They would not repair immediately on board, but advanced within about two hundred yards of the ship, and while they rested on their paddles a conference was held, followed by a song, by one person, several others joining in a chorus at certain periods; and several in each canoe kept time with the handles of their paddles, by striking them against the gunwale. This performance continued while they were paddling slowly round the ship, and on its conclusion they came along-side with the most perfect confidence. The two chiefs required a little more intreaty before they ventured on board. The captain then presented them with some valuables, and several trinkets; but they had no sooner quitted the cabin, than they bartered every article, excepting those fabricated of copper, for others of infinitely less value or utility.

tentedly remaining in their canoes, honestly bartering their bows and arrows, woollen, and skins, for copper, buttons, and trinkets. Their merchandize would have been much more acceptable, had it consisted of eatables, such as venison, wild fowl, or fish, as the European sportsmen had little success in those pursuits. As the natives had uniformly offered such articles as composed their dress, arms, &c. rather than any kind of refreshments, they must either be supposed not to have a superabundance of food, or that the Europeans must be more curious than hungry.

Intelligence of these proceedings having been conveyed from the village to the opposite shore, not only their former friends, but several large canoes, containing about eighty persons, came alongside, and conducted themselves with great propriety. These principally belonged to the other side of the inlet, and were much more cleanly than their neighbours: their canoes were also of a different form. The commodities they offered for sale were such trifles as those brought by the other society; and, in all other respects, they resembled the generality of the inhabitants of the country, with whom the Europeans had become acquainted.

On the 23d, Captain Vancouver, in consequence of some information he had received from several of his officers, accompanied Mr. Baker in the yawl to a cove that some of them had seen; the examination of which occupied them the whole day; and he there discovered a situation, which constituted a complete and excellent port. In this excursion he saw a few straggling Indians, whose condition seemed extremely miserable. This harbour, from the gentleman who discovered it, was named **PORT ORCHARD***.

About four in the afternoon, as Captain Vancouver expected, the Chatham was seen from the mast head, and about sun-set she arrived and anchored near the Discovery; when Mr. Broughton informed the captain, that the part of the

coast he had been directed to explore, consisted of an archipelago of islands.

The main arm of the inlet extending to Mount Rainier was yet unexplored; Captain Vancouver therefore thought it expedient that Mr. Johnstone, in the Chatham's cutter, should accompany him in the morning, in the Discovery's yawl, that they might be enabled to examine it. On the 29th they departed. They directed their route along the western shore of the main inlet, which is about a league in width; and observed the smoke of several fires on the eastern shore: further on they found the course of the inlet take a south-westerly inclination which they pursued about six miles: still further on it terminated in an extensive circular bay, whose waters washed the base of Mount Rainier, though its summit was a considerable distance from the shore. The trees, and the several shades of verdure that covered the hills gradually decreased till they became invisible, when the perpetual clothing of snow commenced, which formed a horizontal line from north to south along this range of rugged mountains, from whose summit Mount Rainier rose conspicuously the whole producing a picturesque effect.

Proceeding to the north-west, in which direction the inlet from hence extended, they saw reason to suppose that it communicated with the intended to be surveyed by the other party, which was corroborated by the information of a few Indians who very civilly attended them. About a dozen of these friendly people had been present at their dinner; two of them, at the particular request, sat down by the Europeans and ate of the bread and fish without hesitation, but on being offered some of the venison, they could not be prevailed on to taste it. They beheld it with disgust, supposing it to have been human flesh. After much difficulty, however, they were happily convinced of their mistake, by showing them a haunch they had in the boat, which they partook of the remainder of the party with a good appetite†.

* On his return to the ship he found that few of the friendly neighbours had visited it. The dogs belonging to this tribe of Indians were numerous, and resembled those of Pomerania, though they appeared somewhat larger. In the course of the forenoon of the 25th, some Indians brought our navigators a whole deer, which was the first entire animal that had been offered to them. This, and another deer, had cost these good people almost a day's

labour; yet they thought themselves amply rewarded for their exertions by a small piece of copper about a square. This was gladly accepted as a full compensation for their venison; so highly is this metal regarded!

† The great abhorrence that was manifested by the people at the idea of eating human flesh, led the navigators to conclude, that the character given of the natives of North-West America does not attach to every tribe. B

Advanci

Advanci
the advent
their temp
nothing to
course w
they were
only from
challenged with
very coolly
regard to th
the breakfas
of the south
Mr. Pug
ate respect
atched on,
Vancouver
behaviour o
the evening
two canoes
people wou
about a hun
the tents wer
discharged.
without any
go! after c
they saw a
rested on th
canoe sudd
ould induc
out. To
forget faste
piece of wo
and they, su
stance, ve
they do not
emies, or k
their banquet,
against them;
neral failing
being taken
anner of eatin
it, on his bel
cern or sha
These peopl
or miserable
had for be
le terms, fo
dities.
Whilst th
gles, a doe
murier fired
very fine bu
meal.
Good on
ers began

explored, considered

ending to Mount

Captain Van

expedient that

's cutter, should

ing, in the Dis

t be enabled to

departed. The

western shore

league in width

several fires on

ound the coun

terly inclination

les: still further

ive circular be

f Mount Raini

siderable distan

the several shad

ills gradually d

sible, when the

mmenced, whic

a north to sou

mountains, from

se conspicuous

que effect.

in which dire

tended, they sa

unicated with the

the other part

information of

y attended the

y people had be

of them, at the

y the European

without hesitat

the venison, the

le it. They beh

to have been hum

y, however, the

mistake, by sh

in the boat, wh

of the party w

Advancing progressively, early on the 28th, the adventurers saw a few miserable Indians in their temporary habitations, who either had nothing to dispose of, or declined having any intercourse with them. It is possible, indeed, that they were offended at having been disturbed so early from their rest: they were, however, indulged with a few presents, which they accepted very coolly. Having satisfied themselves with regard to this direction of the inlet, they returned to breakfast about two miles within the entrance of the south-west branch*.

Mr. Puget had hardly any thing to communicate respecting the expedition he had been dispatched on, but what had fallen under Captain Vancouver's observation, excepting the daring behaviour of an Indian tribe. About eight in the evening, attended by some of the natives in two canoes, they landed for the night. These people would not come nearer to the party than about a hundred yards, where they remained till the tents were pitched, and some loaded muskets discharged. They heard the report of the latter without any apparent surprize, and exclaimed after every discharge. The next morning they saw a canoe making towards them, and waited on their oars to wait its approach: The canoe suddenly stopped, but no friendly overtures could induce the Indians to venture near the boat. To remove their apprehensions, Mr. Puget fastened some medals and trinkets to a piece of wood, and left it floating on the water; and they, supposing the boat to be at a sufficient distance, ventured to pick it up. The whole of

they do not inhumanly devour the flesh of their conquered enemies, or keep slaves for the sole purpose of enriching their banquet, crimes which have been frequently alledged against them; it is certain that they are not free from the moral failing attendant on a savage life. One of them, having taken a knife and fork to imitate the European manner of eating, secretly conveyed them under his garment; but, on his being detected, he resigned his plunder without concern or shame.

These people accompanied the adventurers to three or four miserable huts, during which they exchanged what they had for bows, arrows, and spears, on fair and honourable terms, for buttons, beads, and other useless commodities.

Whilst the captain was on shore to take the necessary things, a deer came down to the beach, which Mr. Le premier fired at, and fortunately killed. It proved to be a very fine buck, and furnished the people with a good meal.

Good order being thus seemingly established, the men began to dine on an elevated spot near the water-

their conduct betrayed much suspicion and distrust.

About noon the party landed to dine; and whilst they were getting ready to haul the seine before a brook of fresh water, six canoes paddled hastily round the point of the cove they were in, towards the boats. Their suspicious behaviour, had put the party upon their guard, and a line on the beach was drawn, to separate the two parties. They submitted to this regulation, and divided their numbers into two sets: one on the shore, with their bows and quivers: the other repaired to their canoes†.

Mr. Puget, supposing it would answer a good purpose, caused a swivel to be fired; and though they expressed no astonishment at the report of the gun, or the distant effect of the shot, the measure was instantly attended with beneficial consequences: their bows were immediately unstrung; and, instead of menacing a combat with their weapons, they were offered in traffic with their other trifles, for buttons, knives, beads, copper, and other ornaments: this intercourse continued till near the evening, when they peaceably took their leave, and retired. Mr. Puget remarked, upon this occasion, that among the several tribes of Indians from whom they had before received visits, they had uniformly behaved civil, courteous and friendly; but as these assumed a conduct diametrically opposite to that which had hitherto been adopted, without the least provocation; he considered this circumstance too mysterious to be accounted for.

The scarcity of water has been mentioned as

side; and the crews in their respective boats were ordered to be ready in case of alarm. A seventh canoe joining the Indian party, those on the beach immediately embarked; and the whole number, amounting to twenty-four, by their menacing gestures and consultations, created strong suspicions that their inclinations were not friendly. But as the party were ready to act immediately on the defensive, they finished their repast with great composure, without indicating any distrust or apprehension by a precipitate retreat. Towards the conclusion of their conference, an eighth canoe joined the party; when they all paddled to the beach, and strung their bows. This might be considered as a declaration of hostility. A man who seemed the leader of the party, advanced towards the station of the officers, with an arrow across his bow, in readiness for use; and others of the party seemed in the act of preparation. But such measures were prudently resorted to, as obliged them all to retreat to the line of separation. Still, however, they were much inclined, though irresolute, to attempt hostilities.

the

the greatest disadvantage in the interior country, but a plentiful supply of that valuable fluid was procured; the country has also been said to be nearly uninhabited; but this account was found to be erroneous, for the party accidentally fell in with nearly one hundred and fifty Indians, and saw several deserted villages. The point near the present situation forming the north of the bay, hitherto named the Village Point, was now distinguished by the appellation of RESTORATION POINT, that memorable event having been celebrated whilst at anchor under it.

With a pleasant southerly breeze on the 30th, they directed their course to the opening which had been committed to the examination of Mr. Broughton. Having advanced about three miles within the entrance, and seeing no appearance of the Chatham, a gun was fired, which was answered from behind a point of land on the starboard, where they soon afterwards saw the Chatham, bearing a light at her mast-head, for their guidance; and, though within two miles, it was almost midnight when they anchored in thirty-two fathoms water, about a cable's length from her.

Nothing memorable occurred in several boat excursions; but on the 1st of June, a signal was made for the Chatham to bring up; when, after a few minutes, she was discovered to be aground, and had made the signal for assistance. On this the Discovery stood towards her, and anchored about a mile from her in twenty fathoms water. The Discovery's boats were instantly sent to her relief, but there was little probability of her re-

* Mr. Whidbey, whose orders and inclinations were to endeavour to prevent the possibility of any misunderstanding, avoided landing in the presence of many persons; and, as it was about the dinner time of the party, he prudently made choice of the opposite shore, to enjoy a private meal uninterrupted by the Indians. Having reached the spot they intended, they were met by about two hundred of the natives, some in their canoes with their families, and others walking on the shore, attended by a drove of about forty dogs, shorn close to the skin. Though the natives were so numerous, the party thought proper to land, for the purpose of taking angles; and they were received on shore with the greatest cordiality. Mr. Whidbey, however, did not continue any longer among them than was absolutely necessary; and, having finished his business, instantly embarked. In the morning the party again pursued their enquiry, and when they had landed to breakfast, they were visited by a large canoe full of Indians, who were followed by about a hundred more, bringing with them mats to cover their temporary habitations, and many other articles.

They landed without hesitation, and their behaviour was

ceiving any injury, having grounded on a muddy bank; and it was expected she would float off the next tide. About midnight she was hove off, and anchored near the Discovery, without having received any damage*.

The boats being ordered on shore to receive Mr. Whidbey, and those who had attended him the launch grounded; which being perceived by the Indian chief, he was the foremost to assist in shoving her off. This being effected, the gentlemen embarked. The chief, and some others accompanied the party for some time, when they very civilly took their departure. Mr. Whidbey and his party soon arrived off another populous village, and were attended by about seventy natives. They gave proofs of the greatest hospitality, making signs that they had abundance of food to bestow. The ladies were particularly earnest in their entreaties, and expressed much concern that their offers of civility were declined.

In the morning, the examination of the western branch was pursued, and found to terminate in an excellent cove or harbour. On each point of which was a deserted village. This was denominated PENN'S COVE, in honour of a particular friend. In one of the deserted villages several sepulchres were found, resembling a sentry-box. Some of them were open, which contained skeletons of children tied up in baskets; the smaller bones of adults were also observed. The surrounding country presented a most delightful prospect, consisting of spacious meadows, elegantly adorned with clumps of trees; among which

courteous and friendly in the extreme. A middle-aged man, who appeared to be the superior of the party, displayed great hospitality; and perceiving the Europeans were at breakfast, presented them with water, dried roasted roots, and other articles of food: For which a return was made by presents to the ladies and others. The chief had two hangers; one of Spanish, and the other of English manufacture. The spot where they had landed was delightful, and the shores on each side pleasing. The which, together with the friendly reception he had with, induced Mr. Whidbey to continue his examination on shore; on which occasion he was accompanied by the chief and many others, who conducted themselves with propriety: though they were not without a considerable degree of civil curiosity in the examination of his clothes, expressing an earnest desire to behold the colour of their hands, which they concealed, intimating that his hands and face were painted white: but when convinced of their mistake by opening his waistcoat, their astonishment was inexpressible.

proceed from

WITH
from
assistance on
the 24th

On the 3d
on the 4th
be provi
think the k
city's birt
er formally

OL. I. N

ded on a mudd
would float of
t she was how
covery, without

shore to receive
ad attended him
ing perceived by
almost to assist
ected, the gentle
and some other
time, when the
Mr. Whidbey
another populou
y about seven
the greatest ho
they had about
ladies were pa
ies, and expres
s of civility we

tion of the wester
d to terminate
On each point
This was denom
ed of a particu
ed villages sever
pling a sentry-bo
which containe
so in baskets; O
so observed. Th
a most delightf
meadows, elegan
ees; among whic

reme. A middle
ior of the party,
ceiving the Europ
with water, dried
food: For which
dies and others. T
inish, and the other
ore they had lande
le pleasing). The
reception he had
inue his examination
accompanied by the ch
themselves with me
without a consider
mination of his cloth
d the colour of the
that his hands and h
vinced of their mista
astonishment was in

oak was particularly noticed, the circum-
ference of which was from four to half a dozen
feet. In these beautiful pastures, bordering on
an expansive sheet of water, the deer were frisking
about abundantly.

The country bordering on this branch of the
sea, Mr. Whidbey says, "Was the finest we had
yet with, notwithstanding the very pleasing ap-
pearance of many others; its natural productions
were luxuriant in the highest degree, and it was,
by no means ill supplied with streams of fresh
water. A fortnight had now been bestowed
on the examination of this inlet, which is named
ADMIRALTY INLET*.

On the morning of the 5th our navigators
sailed down Possession Sound with a light breeze
from the north-west, with serene and pleasant
weather. While they were gently passing on,
the same liberal-minded chief, who had been so
kindly to Mr. Whidbey and his party, accom-
panied by several of his friends, came on board,
freely distributing dried fish and fruit. The
chief entered the ship with some reluctance, but
when on the deck he appeared perfectly recom-
mended; and with inquisitive earnestness surveyed
the surrounding objects, which filled his mind
with admiration and surprize. In this interesting
moment, an assortment of valuable articles was
presented to him and his friends, when they took
their leave, infinitely delighted with their re-
ception. The Chatham arrived in Strawberry
Bay on the 10th, with the loss of her stream
anchor, and in the afternoon the boats returned
on a survey they had been sent upon.

The survey was continued in boats, by different
parties, in which no very important events oc-
curred, or interesting discoveries were made.
From the civil natives, who differed not, in any
respect, from those the party had frequently seen,
they procured some excellent fish, for which
they were compensated in iron. Not meeting
with the satisfaction they expected, they thought
it highly expedient to proceed towards the ships.
On the morning of the 22d, they discovered two
vessels at anchor under the land, and on a nearer
approach, they were found to be a brig and a
schooner, wearing the colours of Spanish vessels
of war, engaged in pursuits similar to their own.
The Spanish officers behaved to them with great
politeness, and very cheerfully communicated
such information as they thought would be
pleasing and beneficial.

Urged by repeated solicitations, Captain Van-
couver took a hearty breakfast with them, and
bade them farewell; perfectly satisfied with their
attentive hospitality; but were much astonished
at the vessels, in which they were employed to
execute a service of importance: they were each
about forty-five tons burthen, mounted two
brass guns, were navigated by twenty-four men,
and having only one lieutenant. Their apart-
ments and offices rendered them the most ill
calculated and unfit vessels, that could possibly
have been contrived for such an expedition. It
was pleasant however to observe, that, notwith-
standing these inconveniences, they enjoyed more
comforts, in point of living, than could reasonably
have been expected.

SECTION VI.

Proceed from Birch Bay—Rute's Channel—Desolation Sound—Johnstone's Straits—Point Chatham
Continental Shore—Cheslakees—Fife's Passage—Smith's Inlet.

WITH a fine breeze the navigators sailed
from Birch Bay, (so called from the
abundance of black birch growing in its vicinity)
on the 24th of June, and about two in the after-

noon they were joined by the two Spanish ves-
sels, who saluted by cheering. This being re-
turned, the respective commanders favoured
Captain Vancouver with their company on board

lately been employed in exploring, in the name of his Bri-
tannic Majesty, his Heirs and Successors.

† It obtained this name on Mr. Broughton's first visit
there, when he found a large quantity of very excellent
strawberries.

the Discovery, and they pursued their way up the gulph together. At day-break on the 26th, they found themselves about half a mile from the shores of a high rocky island, surrounded by a detached country which presented a very inhospitable appearance. The tops of the rugged mountains which composed these shores, were not of a sufficient height to retain the snow in summer, though it probably arrays them in winter.

The divided appearance of the region, into which they had now arrived, seemed to promise plenty of employment for the boats. Captain Vancouver dispatched lieutenant Puget and Mr. Whidbey, in the Discovery's launch and cutter to examine the continental shore. Mr. Johnstone in the Chatham's cutter, accompanied by Mr. Swaine in her launch, were directed to survey a branch of the sound leading to the north-westward; and Senr. Valdes, one of the Spanish officers, undertook the examination of the intermediate coast. Mr. Broughton went in pursuit of a more commodious situation for the ships. In the afternoon Mr. Broughton returned, having discovered a more eligible anchorage, though in a dreary situation. The respective gentlemen in the boats, having received their instructions, departed to enter upon their offices.

The weather being serene and pleasant, gave Captain Vancouver an opportunity, in company with Senr. Galiano, (the other Spanish officer) to visit the island near which they were at anchor. The Discovery steered for the rendezvous Mr. Broughton had pointed out, where she arrived in the evening. The situation was on the northern side of an arm, about half a mile wide, presenting a very dismal aspect. The very circumscribed view of the country here, rendered it impossible for the captain to form the least idea, of any circumstances relative to the situation in which he had become stationary; or how long

* They found the continental shore continued nearly in its north-west direction to the eastern point of entrance into this sound. After a circumstantial detail of matters not remarkably interesting, one of the detached parties states that they discovered an extensive deserted village, supposed to have been the residence of about three hundred persons. It was built on a rock, whose perpendicular cliffs were almost inaccessible on every side; and connected with the main by a narrow neck of land. A kind of fortress was judiciously placed to protect the inhabitants of this village from any external enemies: the whole so skillfully contrived and executed, that it could hardly be considered as the performance of the untutored tribes who inhabit these regions,

he might remain in anxious expectation of the return of his friends. His residence here was truly forlorn; an awful silence pervaded the gloomy forests, whilst animated nature seemed to have fled from the neighbouring country, whose ungenerous soil afforded only a few onions and some samphire, excepting a scanty crop of berries on two or three meager bushes. The weather was equally unfavourable to his wants; the steep rocky shores prohibited the use of the seine, and the wary fish at the bottom could not be tempted by the most alluring bait.

Captain Vancouver had absented himself from the present surveying excursions, to procure observations from the longitude here, and for other essential reasons; among others, he was also desirous of acquiring some knowledge of the main channel of the gulf they had quitted. Early in the morning of the 30th, he set out the yawl on the latter pursuit, with a favourable breeze from the north-west; but about ten in the forenoon, a certain prospect of a continuance of unsettled weather induced him to abandon his design, and return to the ship: where he had the pleasure of hearing the launch and cutter arrived soon after his departure, having completed the examination of the continental coast.

Early on the morning of the 2d of July Mr. Johnstone returned, and related, among other particulars, that behind a low small spot of land some mountains rose very abruptly, divided into two very deep vallies, whence streams of fire water flowed, but not in sufficient quantities to admit of boats. In these vallies, and on the plains, large pine-trees grew; but the few which appeared on the mountains were of stunted growth. Steep barren rocks, capped with snow, formed the sides of this channel, the water which was nearly fresh at its head, and of a pale colour. It was denominated Bute's Channel.

had not their arms and implements, with parts of their manufactured garments, proved its inhabitants to have been of the same race.

While they were examining the rude and curious habitations, the gentlemen were assailed by an unexpected and whose legions made so furious an attack upon each of the persons, that, in order to drown their foes, they ran up to their necks in water. But even this expedient proved ineffectual; for nothing but boiling their clothes could save them from those myriads of fleas they had accumulated by examining too minutely the garments and apparel of late inhabitants.

Indian village now presented itself, situated on the space of a steep rock, containing about a hundred and fifty of the natives, some of whom visited the party in the passage up the channel; and many at this instant came off to barter fresh herrings, and other fish, for nails. From the point on which this village is erected, a very narrow opening, stretched to the westward, and through it so strong a current flowed, that the boats were unable to row against it; they were therefore obliged to be hauled by a rope, along the rocky shores which formed the passage. In this laborious service the Indians voluntarily assisted to the utmost of their power, and received an adequate reward for their trouble.

The boats now sought shelter from inclement weather in a small cove, where the same cause had before detained them: when the stock of provisions being nearly exhausted, it was thought necessary to return to the ships. By these detached expeditions the boundary of the continental shore was ascertained to the above narrow passage, and the strongest presumptions ascertained that the whole coast on the western side, south of that passage, was composed of a constellation of islands.*

The week, for which Mr. Johnstone and his party had been furnished with supplies, being now expired, the captain began to be anxiously solicitous for the welfare of his party; when, about two in the morning of the 12th, their safe arrival was announced; and that a passage leading into the Pacific Ocean had been discovered.

On the 8th the party were much surprised by the report of a gun at no very considerable distance: this was instantly answered by a swivel; but no reply was heard. The fog beginning to disperse, a small canoe appeared, which followed them till they reached a very considerable village, situate on a hill near the sea. The two Indians, finding they were observed by their countrymen on shore, ventured along side the boats. In the canoe, a musquet with its appendages was seen,

and an eagle recently shot, which accounted for the discharge heard in the fog. As the party advanced towards the village, they were visited by several canoes, each of which was provided with a musquet and ammunition. The village had the appearance of being constructed with great regularity, and its inhabitants were numerous, and well armed. Under these circumstances the party thought proper to pass by, without further enquiry, obedient to their established maxim of never courting a danger on shore, when necessity did not enforce their landing. After the chief received some presents, among which he gave articles of copper a decided preference to any thing else, he, with most of his companions, returned to the shore: and, on his landing, several musquets were fired as an ostentatious display of their dexterity in the use of these weapons†.

With a light breeze from the northward, on the 13th, the English navigators weighed and left their Spanish friends at anchor, who intended to pursue their researches through a channel Mr. Johnstone had discovered. Little further need be said respecting the station they had quitted, than to mention the general satisfaction that prevailed on leaving so inhospitable a region. In this route they passed through the cluster of islands and rocks at some distance before the entrance into Desolation sound; some of which presented a much more grateful appearance than that of the interior country. The wind was light from the northern quarter, and the weather serene and pleasant. Whales, in great abundance, appeared to enjoy the season, playing about the ship in all directions. Several seals also presented themselves to view: the latter were abundant in Desolation sound, and were seen in all the remote excursions of the boats; but they were too shy and wary to be taken. These animals were almost the only possessors of the gloomy region our navigators had just quitted; but the scene now before them was infinitely more congenial to

* Captain Vancouver's situation would not afford a single prospect pleasing to the eye, the most inconsiderable recreation on shore, nor a particle of animal food, excepting a very scanty proportion of those eatables already noticed, and of which the environs was very soon exhausted after his arrival. The exploring parties shared only the same parsimonious supply, whence the place acquired the name of DESOLATION SOUND. Some alleviation, however, under these disagreeable events, was agreeably afforded by their Spanish friends.

† The two Spanish gentlemen having received such information of the discoveries of our English navigators as they required, now begged leave to decline accompanying them any longer, as they were unable in their miserable vessels to co-operate with them; and they were apprehensive of retarding their progress. After an exchange of good wishes, they bid each other farewell, having mutually received and bestowed every kindness and attention.

their

their minds, as well from the aspect of the shores, as from the attention of the friendly Indians, who, as they were crossing the gulf, visited them in several canoes, with young birds, fish, and berries, no harder for their trinkets. From a neighbouring village, they were visited by several of the natives, who were laden with fish and the wild fruits of their country, which they exchanged for European articles with great honour and integrity.

After dinner, accompanied by Mr. Menzies, and several of the officers, Captain Vancouver went on shore, at once to return the visit of his friends, and to indulge his curiosity. On landing at the village, they were formally received by a person who appeared to be the chief of the party: he approached them with an air of confidence, whilst the rest of a numerous society, were arranged and seated peaceably before their houses. The Captain made him such presents as delighted him exceedingly, and he instantly conducted them to the village by a very narrow path, winding diagonally up a steep cliff. On the edge of this precipice stood the village, the houses of which were built in the Nootka taste, but smaller, and of the height of ten or twelve feet: almost close together, and in rows. On the beach, at the foot of the cliff, about seventy canoes presented themselves, which were chiefly of small dimensions, though among them there were several which would contain commodiously about fifteen people. From these and other circumstances, the Europeans were clearly of opinion, that this village might reasonably be supposed to contain about three hundred inhabitants. The spot where it was erected was very well chosen to insure its protection: a loose sandy precipice secured it in front, and a deep

chaasm in the rocks defended it in the rear: beyond these an almost impenetrable forest presented itself; and only the narrow path they had ascended could admit of the least access, and that could be easily maintained against very superior numbers.*

The Chatham having been some hours detained in Desolation Sound, after the Discovery had sailed, now arrived and anchored near her. About three in the morning of the 14th, our navigators were under sail, and with the assistance of the ebb tide, turned about four leagues up the inlet towards a commodious anchoring place, which had been discovered by their boats, and was the rendezvous appointed on the return of the launch and cutter; and about six they arrived and anchored in twenty-four fathom water. In the evening of the 24th, the boats returned, having found the channel from these narrow parts gradually increasing in width to a mile, and half a league, and to communicate with Johnstone's straits about four leagues further without any visible impediment to the navigation. As they proceeded none of the inhabitants were seen, but on their return they met with about twenty-canoes filled with Indians, who at first seemed shy, but afterwards approached the party with confidence, and gave evident tokens of their friendship and docility.

They were more variously painted than any of the natives the party had before seen. The faces of some of them were uniformly white, some black, others red, and some even of a lead colour; whilst the features of others were ornamented with a variety of colours, and their hair decorated with the down of young sea fowl; in these respects they nearly approach the manner of the people of Nootka†.

Accom

* Having gratified their curiosity, and made proper acknowledgments by trivial presents, they took their leave of the village, to have an opportunity of indulging themselves, before dark, with a refreshing walk, on a low margin of land extending from the more elevated woodland country; a luxury they had not for a long time experienced. In this excursion, they saw two sepulchres composed of plank, the height of each was about five feet, the length seven, and the breadth four. These boards were ingeniously perforated at the ends and sides, perhaps to admit a free circulation of air to the human bones they enclosed, which were evidently the remains of many different bodies. Some of the Indians attended them in their walk, picking berries from the trees as they passed, and civilly presenting them to the Europeans on green leaves.

† On the 16th our navigators reached Johnstone's Strait, passing a Point, which the Captain named POINT CHATHAM, after the little vessel which accompanied him. In the evening they passed a village, the inhabitants of which brought them a few small fresh salmon for sale: they had also several that were ready cooked, and diverted themselves in throwing them on board as the ships passed their canoes. Soon after they received the welcome visit of some hospitable friends from the shore, of whom they purchased such an abundant supply of fresh salmon, as to serve the whole crew as long as they would keep good; and was a comfortable relief from their salted provisions. The next morning they discovered that the neighbouring village was large and populous; many of the visitors from it brought them sea-otters' skins of a very excellent quality.

ear: but
rest pro
they had
ens, and
not very

detained
very had
near her
4th, out
the assist
r league
anchoring
eir boats
the return
six they
fathom
e boats re
om these
width to
mmunica
es further
avigation
tants were
ith about
o at first
the party
ns of their

than an
een. The
sly white
of a lead
were orn
their hair
a fowl; in
e manner

Accom

one's Strai
IT CHATHAM
m. In the
ts of which
lo: they ha
verted them
passed their
ome visit
om they pa
n, as to ser
od; and wa
isions. The
ouring vill
tors from
ilent quality



AN AMERICAN INDIAN.

J. B. Warren sculp.

Accom
Menzie
main repa
mounted d
fish-wat
small c
southern a
times from
mounting
the largest
de, being
the proprie
under Che
ers of tim
the archite
the village
ce, from
their landin
came d
the rest rem
The bou
ootka, bu
abitants di
ootka, in
ilies lived
apartmen
ore delica
au among
men were
estic affair
ents from
ization of
kind of b
tain wate
the gener
re as rema
genuity.
Having c

id in great
pper, and b
ong them.
gnage, thou
oken. The
tain Vanco
ch he was
mlakees.
Some othe
whom beha
re permitted
aged in obs
ect of the st
nderful qua
Vol. I. No.

Accompanied by some of the officers, Mr. Menzies, and the new guest *Cheslakees*, the captain repaired to the village; which was pleasantly situated on a sloping hill, above the banks of a fresh-water rivulet, which discharged itself into a small creek or cove. It was exposed to a southern aspect, and sheltered by hills and lofty trees from the northern winds; the houses, amounting to thirty-four, formed regular streets: the largest were occupied by the principal people, being decorated and painted as the fancy of the proprietor dictated. The mansion of their chief *Cheslakees* was distinguished by three rafters of timber raised above the roof, resembling the architecture of Nootka. Upon the whole, the village presented a very picturesque appearance, from the opposite side of the creek. On their landing, only three or four of the inhabitants came down to receive them at the beach; the rest remaining quietly near their houses.

The houses were constructed like those of Nootka, but appeared less filthy; and the inhabitants differed very little from the natives of Nootka, in dress or deportment. Several families lived under the same roof, but their sleeping apartments were separated from the rest, and more delicacy and decency seemed to prevail among the inhabitants at Nootka. The women were variously employed; some in domestic affairs, others in the manufacture of garments from bark, and other materials. The fabrication of mats for many useful purposes, and a kind of basket, so curiously wrought as to contain water like an earthen vessel, comprehended the general employment of the women, who were as remarkable for their industry as for their gentility.

Having concluded this visit, the Europeans

were entertained at the house of an elderly chief, to whom *Cheslakees*, and every person present paid great respect, by a song which was not without melody; though the performance of it created some disgust by the savage gestures, and uncouth actions accompanying it. The song being finished, they were each ceremoniously presented, with a strip of sea-otter skin. A song from the ladies was then expected; and during this interval Captain Vancouver observed, in the hands of the numerous tribe that surrounded them, a quantity of spears, clubs, large knives, and other weapons, which were not displayed on their first approach to the village. The captain did not much approve of this change in their appearance, though he sincerely believed their intentions were of the most inoffensive kind: supposing they produced their arms to impress the Europeans with an idea of their wealth and consequence. He thought it prudent, however, to withdraw, and having distributed some articles which he had reserved, *Cheslakees* was informed that he meant to return; in consequence of which, he and his relations attended them through the village, and accompanied them to the sandy island, whither the Captain went to observe its latitude*.

Two or three musquets were seen in most of their houses, which evidently appeared to be Spanish. *Cheslakees* had no less than eight in his house, all in the most excellent order: these, and many other European commodities, they had procured from Nootka; and in their commercial concerns with our navigators, they frequently observed that their skins would produce more at Nootka than they chose to give for them. The number of these villagers was estimated at about five hundred†.

Nothing

in great abundance, which were bartered for sheet paper, and blue cloth, articles in the highest estimation among them. Most of these people understood the Nootka language, though it did not appear to be very generally spoken. The chief of the village paid an early visit to Captain Vancouver, and received presents from him, with which he was highly pleased. The name of the chief was *Cheslakees*.

Some other Indians attended them on this occasion, all of whom behaved with such civility and decorum, that they were permitted to assemble round the Captain while he was engaged in observing. They were greatly amused with the play of the sun's rays through the reading glass; and the wonderful quality of the quicksilver, used for the purpose

of an artificial horizon, afforded them infinite entertainment. The business being ended they civilly took their leave.

† Mr. Broughton having been directed to pursue the line in fixing the continuation of the Continental shore, Captain Vancouver impatiently waited his arrival. He was indeed amused by the visits of a few Indians from the southern shore of the Straits, who supplied him occasionally with fish, which proved very acceptable, as he was unable to procure any by his own efforts. Among the other visitors, *Cheslakees* did him the honour to attend him, with whose importunities for various articles he had generously complied. He continued several hours on board; and as he sat at the Captain's elbow whilst he was writing, he saw him frequently referring to a small memorandum book, which

3 H he

Nothing interesting occurred till the 27th in the afternoon, when Mr. Broughton came on board in his cutter, the Chatham having been obliged, by adverse winds, to enter three leagues to the westward of their rendezvous. But the information communicated by Mr. Broughton to Captain Vancouver, was merely nautical and astronomical.

On the 28th the Discovery directed her course to the westward, who had not been long under weigh before she was joined by the Chatham, and steered to the northward for the Channel leading to the Deep Sea Bluff, which Captain Vancouver called FIFE'S PASSAGE. After a diversity of unimportant events, the Discovery suddenly grounded on a bed of sunken rocks on the 6th of August, about four in the afternoon. A signal announcing her situation was instantly made to the Chatham: she immediately anchored in fifty fathoms water, about a cable and a half from the Discovery, who received the assistance of all her boats. The force with which the ship had grounded, had occasioned her swinging considerably forward. On heaving, the anchor came home, when they could do little more than lighten the ship as much as possible, by starting the water, throwing overboard their fuel, &c. Soon after she was aground, the tide took her on the starboard quarter; and as she was afloat abaft she took a sudden swing, and heeled so considerably on the starboard side, which was from the rocks, that, for a short time, her situation was alarming in the highest degree. They remained in this melancholy situation expecting

he had the dexterity to purloin without detection. Having occasion to consult this book, and knowing no other person had been near him, the Captain had no difficulty in fixing upon the pilferer. A Sandwich island mat, which the Captain had given him, he had curiously folded up, and in the centre of it, he found the book he had been robbed of. *Chestlees* seemed to be somewhat ashamed of the detection, but suffered greater mortification when the captain took away the presents he had given him: the latter, however, were restored about two hours afterwards, on his expressing his deepest contrition, and earnestly supplicating a return of what his merits ought for ever to have deprived him of. The act of stealing a book, which could not have been useful to him, or to any other person except the owner, strongly points out that propensity to thieving, which almost generally influences the whole of the uncivilized world.

* Having so recently escaped the dangers of a perilous situation, a prospect of many snares was extremely discouraging; but being unable to find a less difficult way of performing their adventurous service, they had no other

relief from the returning flood, which, to the inexpressible joy, was at length announced the floating of the shoars; a happy indication of the ship's righting. The exertions of the crew were, however, unabated till the 7th, when the ship becoming nearly upright, they had the supreme satisfaction of feeling her again float, without having received any apparent injury.

A light breeze springing up about 10 o'clock, they were again under sail, and directed their course through the channel along the continental shore. This was a narrow passage, rendered extremely intricate by the multitude of rocks and islets, both above and beneath the surface of the water. This dangerous navigation, from the surf breaking against them with great violence, seemed to continue as far as they could discern towards the ocean, between the continental shore, and the opposite side of the channel, which was apparently an extensive range of islands*.

A thick fog ushering in the morning of the 8th, deprived the Discovery of seeing or knowing anything of the Chatham's situation; on the dispersion of the fog, the Captain found the satisfaction of seeing her approach under sail. On the return of the boats, Lieutenant Baker, who had accompanied the Discovery people to assist the Chatham, informed Captain Vancouver, that she had latterly struck so hard as to disable both the spare top-masts, which had been used for shoars: but that about past one they succeeded in heaving her off,

alternative than to proceed, with all the caution the nature of their situation would permit, through a narrow channel beset with islands, rocks, and breakers. About five in the afternoon they had fortunately passed through its narrow part; but about six some of the hidden dangers arrested the progress of the Chatham. The Discovery instantly anchored in seventy fathoms water, and sent her boats to minister assistance. Thus, before they could recover from the fatiguing exertions of one distressing night, a second calamity befel them on the next.

They had now less reason to expect the preservation of the Chatham, than they had that of the Discovery the preceding night, as the oceanic swell was here very perceptible, and produced a considerable surf on the shore. As, however, she succeeded, when she was driven by the tide ledge of sunken rocks; and though she had frequently when lifted by the surge, it was with so little violence, no damage was sustained; and her unpleasant state did not be of long duration, as it was nearly half ebb when she grounded.

which, to the
th announced
happy indicati
exertions of
till the 7th, wh
ight, they had
ng her again
ed any appare

up about
r sail, and direc
nel along the c
arrow passage,
by the multipli
ve and beneath
dangerous navi
against them
continue as far as
cean, between
opposite side of
an extensive ra

the morning of
of seeing or kn
am's situation;
g, the Captain
er approach un
boats, Lieuten
ied the Discover
informed Cap
terly struck so
e top-masts, wh
but that about
heaving her off,

all the caution the
through a narrow ch
akers. About five
sed through its narro
dden dangers arrest
Discovery instantly
and sent her boats
they could recover
tresting night, a in

spect the preservati
of the Discovery the
was here very percep
on the shore. A
s driven by the tide
she had frequently
with so little violence,
er unpleasant state
nearly half ebb wh

did not observe that she had sustained any material injury.

The sails of the *Discovery* were hardly set when the wind became variable; and by one o'clock she was obliged to anchor in fifty-five fathoms water; as did the *Chatham* about two miles to the northward of their former station, and near the continental shore. They afterwards appeared to have reached that part of the coast which had been visited by several traders, both from Europe and India. The *Experiment*, commanded by Mr. Wedgborough, in August 1786, honoured the inlet, through which they had lately passed, with the name of **QUEEN CHARLOTTE'S SOUND**; and the opening on the continental shore was called **SMITH'S INLET**, by Mr. James Hanna. Having a fine breeze on the 19th, they weighed at seven, and stood across Queen Charlotte's sound for the entrance of Smith's Inlet.

Intending a further investigation of the continental shore up Smith's Inlet, the *Chatham* was directed that way, but, discovering a great number of islets and rocks, as well beneath as above the surface of the sea, they abandoned that design. After many incidental occurrences, the *Discovery* anchored on the 11th, in seventeen fathoms, on the south side of a small cove, as did the *Chatham* on the opposite shore, readying the vessels with hawsers to the trees. On examining the cove, Captain Vancouver found it terminated in a small beach, near which an excellent stream of water ran, and abundance of wood was growing. Having much occasion for such articles, and knowing that it would take a considerable time to collect a quantity of each to replenish the stores, the Captain came to a resolution of laying the *Chatham* on shore, to examine whether any serious damage had been sustained by her whilst she was striking on the rocks.

* On the 17th, while our navigators were under the greatest concern for the safety of the detached parties, they were suddenly surprized by the arrival of a brig near the entrance of the cove, under English colours. Various were the opinions on so uncommon and so unexpected a sight, and all expressed their astonishment that a commercial vessel (for so she appeared to be) should visit a region so desolate and inhospitable: but on the return of Lieutenant Baker, they were informed that she was the *Venus* belonging to Bengal, of one hundred and ten tons burden, commanded by Mr. Shepherd, last from Nootka, bound on a trading voyage along these shores. By him they received

After giving directions for the performance of this service, he ordered the yawl, launch, and two cutters belonging to the *Discovery*, together with the *Chatham's* cutter, to be in readiness to depart the next morning, properly equipped, and supplied with a week's provisions. The boats being prepared, agreeably to his wishes, they departed about five o'clock, and having proceeded together to about the middle of the sound, he directed Lieutenant Puget and Mr. Whidbey, in the *Discovery's* launch and cutter, to examine the coast that had been unexplored. Conceiving the northern survey would be much more extensive than that to the south, the Captain joined Mr. Johnstone's party.

During their absence, a sufficient quantity of salmon had been taken to supply every person on board the vessel: the store of wood and water were nearly completed; but the rise and fall of the tide would not afford an opportunity of grounding the *Chatham*, without landing the greater part of her freight: the bottom, at low tide, was also found to consist of soft mud, and consequently unfavourable to such an operation*.

The entrance into Smith's inlet was almost closed by rocky islets; some producing small trees and shrubs, and some without either: rocks were also numerous beneath, as well as above the surface of the sea, which rendered the navigation extremely intricate and dangerous. About half way up the channel, a village was perceived, supposed to contain about two hundred and fifty persons. It was erected on a detached rock, connected to the main land by a platform, and so constructed as greatly to contribute to its defence. A considerable number of the inhabitants visited the party in about thirty canoes, and earnestly solicited them to come to their habitations. They offered the skins of several animals to barter, promised the best of their refreshments,

the agreeable tidings of the arrival of the *Dædalus* store-ships, laden with stores and provisions for their use: but the same commander also brought intelligence of a most melancholy event; Lieutenant Hergest the commander, Mr. Gooch the astronomer, and one of the seamen belonging to the *Dædalus*, had been murdered by the natives of Woahoo, while they were on shore procuring water at that island.

The weather was less bolsterous on the 18th, when the launch and cutter returned without having met with any accident, though infinitely fatigued by a long contention with the winds and waves.

and

and unequivocally informed them that the female part of that society would be happy in the pleasure of their company. Having no leisure to comply with these pressing solicitations, the civil officers of the Indians were declined, and the party continued their route back.

On the 16th they entered another opening, about three miles to the north of the north point of Smith's inlet, which was distinguished by the name of Rivers's Channel, and branched off in several directions: having examined these branches, they returned by a narrow intricate passage, leading through an immensity of rocky islets. But being greatly fatigued by the inclement weather, and having exhausted all their provisions, they returned on board without fully accomplishing their plan of examination.

Further labour, however, from this party, was deemed unnecessary; and every thing was directed to be taken from the shore, in order to be ready to sail in the morning towards the rendezvous, which Captain Vancouver had appointed with Mr. Johnstone. Nothing interesting occurred till the morning of the 17th, when Mr. Johnstone, for several reasons declined any further investigation of the business he had been detached to execute, and determined on returning to the ships. Two days afterwards he fortunate-

ly reached them, almost exhausted with hunger and fatigue. - Nothing this party had seen differed from the general appearance they had so long been accustomed to; no variation to cheer or chequer the continual sameness of the dreary melancholy scene before them, except a canoe about forty feet in length. This solitary article was hauled up the side of a miserable hut, near which a fire, almost extinguished, indicated the vicinity of some human beings. In this vessel they left some copper, nails, and other trifles; which on their return were found in the same state, the canoe or hut not having been visited in their absence. Supposing, however, that the natives could not be at any great distance, they added some other articles to their former donation.

In consequence of intelligence the captain had received from Nootka, he had resolved to abandon any further survey of the northern continental shore for the present season. This examination he had intended to have continued about a month longer; but as the distressing event of Mr. Hergest's death demanded his presence in the execution of his majesty's commands at Nootka, he determined instantly to repair thither. The navigators took their leave of these northern solitary regions, and directed their route towards Nootka.

SECTION VI.

Nootka—Anchor in Friendly Cove—Dædalus—Senr. Quadra—Cession of Nootka Sound debated and afterwards declined—Fire Works.

MONDAY the 20th, as the navigators were on their passage to Nootka, fresh squalls and rainy weather prevailed, and continued till noon the following day. In the forenoon of the 25th, they passed the north-west point of the large islands, which forms the south and western shores of the Gulph of Georgia and Queen Charlotte's Sound. In their passage to Woody Point the land appeared to be much broken, and to form many inlets, coves, and harbours, which they passed within the distance of about two miles. Proceeding to ascertain the outline of the coast to Nootka; foggy weather precluded them from steering for it with the favourable wind that prevailed from the north-west, but on its clearing away about two on the 28th they steered for that port.

On reaching its entrance they were visited by a Spanish officer, who brought a pilot to conduct the vessel to anchorage in Friendly cove, where they found his Catholic Majesty's brig the Active bearing the broad pendant of Senr. Don Juan Francisco de la Bodega y Quadra, commandant of the marine establishment of St. Blas and California.

The Chatham, by a partial dispersion of the fog, had found her way in some time before the Discovery: the Dædalus store-ship, and merchant brig called the Three Brothers of London, commanded by Lieutenant Alder of the navy, were also there at anchor. As Senr. Quadra had his residence on shore, Captain Vancouver sent Mr. Puget to give him intelligence of their arrival, and further to inform

him that he would return receiving a present of English salt regularly returned to the shore; and had the honor of the commission return the visit. Punctual and several Discoveries on were salutary and done in a series of festivities and a royal salute to the sovereign of seventeen of the service Chatham were Maquinna, occasion, but was in the ward the Discovery deck, observed his success complain Senr. Quadra but their behavior the sole length per ratory, ins the following the necessity, in consequence engaged and were haul Captain Vancouver the cession of Majesty, and Senr. on the part That he derivation of my claim of delivery solely possessive. They readily were received satisfaction. He not completely kind of for Vol. I. N

with hunger
d seen differ-
ly had so long
to cheer or
f the dreary
cept a canoe
solitary article
able hut, near
indicated the
In this vessel
other trifles;
l in the same
been visited in
ver, that the
distance, they
rmer donation,
he captain had
olved to aban-
northern conti-
This exami-
continued about
assing event of
presence in the
nds at Nootka
thither. The
e northern soli-
route toward

Sound debated

were visited by
pilot to conduct
lly cove, where
brig the Active
Senr. Don Juan
ra, commandant
f St. Blas and
dispersion of the
me time before
ore-ship, and
ee Brothers of
ant Alder of the
hor. As Senr.
shore, Captain
o give him in-
urther to inform

him that he meant to salute the Spanish flag, if he
would return an equal number of guns. Re-
ceiving a polite answer in the affirmative, the
English saluted with thirteen guns, which were
regularly returned: and when the captain went
on shore, accompanied by several of the officers,
he had the honour of being courteously received
by the commandant, who assured him he would
return the visit the next morning.
Punctual to his engagement, Senr. Quadra,
and several of his officers, came on board the
Discovery on the 29th, where they breakfasted,
and were saluted with thirteen guns on their ar-
rival and departure: the day was afterwards
spent in a series of ceremony, civility, harmony,
and festivity. A dinner of five courses of
delicacies and superfluities was elegantly served;
and a royal salute was fired on drinking health to
the sovereigns of England and Spain. A salute
of seventeen guns was also given; to the success
of the service in which the Discovery and the
Chatham were engaged.

Maquinna, a great chief, was present on this
occasion, but being unknown to our navigators,
he was in the morning refused admittance on
board the Discovery; the centinels and the officer
on deck, observing nothing in his appearance to
indicate his superiority of rank. Of this indignity
he complained violently and repeatedly; but
Senr. Quadra laboured so diligently to prove
that their being unacquainted with his person
was the sole cause of the mistake, he became
at length perfectly reconciled: The tents, ob-
servatory, instruments, &c. were sent on board
the following day, and all hands were employed
in the necessary duties of the ship. The boats
also, in consequence of the many services they had
been engaged in, required considerable repair,
and were hauled on shore for that purpose*.

Captain Vancouver circumstantially relates the particulars
of the session of Nootka to him on the part of his Britannic
majesty, and Senr. Quadra expressed himself, on this occa-
sion, on the part of his Catholic majesty, in these words,
"That he derived the greatest satisfaction from finding a
person of my character, with whom he was to transact the
business of delivering up Nootka." But this transaction
being solely political, a particular detail of it would be too
repetitive.

They reached Tahsheis about two in the afternoon,
and were received by Maquinna with great pleasure and
affection. His house was one of the largest, though it
was not completely covered in. Here they beheld, seated
in a kind of form, Maquinna's daughter, who had lately

The politeness, hospitality, and generosity
manifested on all occasions by Senr. Quadra, in-
duced Captain Vancouver and Mr. Broughton,
with several of the officers of both vessels, to dine
almost daily at his table, which proved infinitely
agreeable, as it teemed with a variety of refresh-
ments, to most of which they had long been
wholly unacquainted. The captain had the
honour of Senr. Quadra's company at breakfast
on Monday the 3d of September, when he took
infinite pains to impress on the minds of the na-
tives the most exalted opinion of their little
squadron; and the more effectually to establish a
good understanding in future, he proposed a
ceremonious visit to Maquinna. The next morn-
ing was agreed on for setting out to proceed to his
royal residence at Tahsheis, which was about
seven leagues up the sound. Agreeably to ap-
pointment, Senr. Quadra accompanied the cap-
tain in the Discovery's yawl; the other boats
being freighted with as many English and Spanish
officers as could be taken, they all departed from
Tahsheis, a message having been dispatched the
preceding day to announce their intended visit†.

After this repast Maquinna entertained the
company with a representation of their warlike
achievements. A dozen men appeared, armed
with musquets, and equipped with their ap-
pendages, making several movements in imitation
of attack and defence; singing at the same time
some heroic songs, in which they were accom-
panied by others. The evolutions being termi-
nated, the captain was presented with two small
sea-otter skins; and the warriors, laying aside
their military weapons, performed a mask-dance,
which was ridiculously laughable, particularly as
performed by Maquinna, who took a principal
character in the representation. Our navigators
were not backward in contributing to the sports

been proclaimed sole heiress to all his property, power, and
dominion. Near her three of his wives were exhibited, and
a numerous tribe of relatives. The young princess was
short and bulky, with a round face, and small features:
Her skin being clean, and, approaching to white, she
could not be considered as disagreeable, but her pretensions
to beauty were not strongly supported. To her, her father,
and the other relations, the captain made suitable presents,
which were rapturously received amidst the acclamations of
the throng. These ceremonies were succeeded by a most
elegant dinner, which Senr. Quadra had provided, at which
they were honoured by the company of Maquinna and the
princess, who had been placed at the head of the table, and
conducted herself with great propriety.

of the day; several songs were sung which afforded much pleasure to the natives; and the sailors, being provided with drums and fifes, concluded the afternoon's diversion with reels and country dances.

In the evening they took leave of *Maquinna*, who was totally incapable of expressing the sublime satisfaction he had received from them; protesting that neither *Wacamanish*, nor any other chief, had ever experienced such transcendent attention from any visitors. Before his departure he said he would return the compliment, and in the European fashion.

After breakfast in the morning of the 5th, they embarked, and directed their route towards Friendly Cove. About five they reached the cove, where the captain landed Senr. Quadra, and returned to the ship. In the course of conversation during this little excursion, Senr. Quadra requested some port or island might be named to their joint honour, and to commemorate their meeting and friendly intercourse. Thinking no spot so appropriate for this denomination as the place where they had first met, which formed the south-western sides of the gulf of Georgia, and the southern sides of Johnstone's straits and Queen Charlotte's sound, he named that country the island of Quadra and Vancouver, a compliment with which he seemed perfectly delighted.

On the 6th *Maquinna*, with two of his wives, and some of his relations, returned the visit. The royal party had not been long on board before they proved themselves the most consummate beggars the captain had ever seen, though a prevalent disposition in the whole tribe of Indians. Every thing which struck their fancy, either as useful, curious, or ornamental, however essential it might be to the possessor, must be immediately given them, or they would affect to be highly offended, or continue sulky for several days. The captain was, however, particularly fortunate in possessing every requisite to satisfy the demands of *Maquinna* and his party. Though he had been extremely liberal at *Tahsheis*, a circumstance too recent to have been forgotten, they nevertheless made a profitable visit, for

* The exhibition of fire-works, which the captain had promised the party, was impatiently waited for: as the evening advanced, they almost grew clamorous, and would not be persuaded that darkness was necessary to give splendour to the entertainment: they even assuaged him of breach of promise, and of advancing falsities. Senr. Quadra, how-

what their modesty forbade them to ask of him was amply made up by begging from the officers on board*.

Mr. Cranstoun, the surgeon of the *Discovery*, being reduced to a debilitated state of health, asked permission to proceed to Port Jackson, the *Dædalus*; from whence a passage might speedily be procured for him to England: he was consequently discharged; and Mr. Menzies, surgeon in the navy, appointed in his room. The boatswain of the *Discovery*, Mr. Robert House, a careful and attentive officer, who had laboured under a violent rheumatic complaint for a long time, was also, on his own request, discharged; Mr. John Noot, boatswain of the *Chatham*, being appointed in his room.

On the 15th of September, a young lad, who had been missing from Senr. Quadra's vessel about two days, was found in a cove near the ships, most inhumanly murdered. The calves of his legs were cut off, his head almost severed from his body, and several other shocking wounds had been given in different parts. Doubts arose whether this horrid crime had been perpetrated by the natives, or by an infamous black man who had deserted from the Spanish vessel about the time the boy was missed. The former opinion prevailing, Senr. Quadra demanded of *Maquinna* that the murderer should be given up; when the precipitate departure of all the inhabitants of the sound from the neighbourhood, was at least a strong presumptive proof of their delinquency.

A further investigation of the territory of Nootka now took place between Senr. Quadra and Captain Vancouver, when the precise territory stipulated by the former were rejected, and the captain acquainted Senr. Quadra that he must positively decline any further correspondence on the subject. It was, however, a satisfactory reflection, that though a manifest difference of opinion arose in their minds, it had not any effect on their personal intercourse with each other: they continued to visit as usual, and this day Senr. Quadra and Caamano, with several other Spanish officers, honoured him with their company at dinner.

ever, prevailed on them to wait patiently till night; when, proving favorable to their operations, their brilliancy exceeded expectation. The balloons, rockets, and combustible preparations, were truly excellent; and were regarded by the Indians with wonder and astonishment mixed with a degree of apprehension and delight.

In the morning of the 22d, Senior Quadra sailed from Friendly Cove, and having saluted the English navigators with thirteen guns, Captain Vancouver returned the compliment with an equal number. Captain Vancouver had uniformly persisted in his determination of strictly adhering to his line of duty, in opposition to the judgment and opinion of Senior Quadra. He freely declares, "I acted to the best of my judgment; should I be so unfortunate, however, as to incur any censure, I must rely on the candour of my country, to do me the justice of attributing whatever improprieties I may appear to have committed, to the true and only cause; to a want of sufficient diplomatic skill, which a life wholly devoted to my profession had denied me the opportunity of acquiring."

Senior Quadra having adopted no rigorous measures to detect and punish the murderer of the young Spaniard, the natives ceased to be much alarmed, and visited our navigators as usual: but Maquinna, and the other chiefs, were not so cordially received at the Spanish habitations, as they had been when Senior Quadro was among them, at which the natives were replete with invectives against the Spaniards.

The inclemency of the weather detained our navigators in Nootka Sound till the 12th of October, when in company with the *Chatham* and *Dædalus*, they hauled out of the cove.

About nine the next morning, the *Chatham*, by the weather falling calm as she weighed anchor, became under no command, and was swept by the tide on the rocky part of the cove, where the sea broke with violence; but by the judicious assistance of the *Dædalus*, she got off without receiving any apparent damage*.

On the 13th of November, after experiencing the innumerable vicissitudes usually attendant on maritime excursions, our navigators found themselves within a small distance of the entrance into Port St. Francisco. Having passed the inner points of entrance, they found themselves in a spacious sound, which appeared to contain a variety of excellent harbours. The Spanish establishment being on the southward side of the port, their course was directed along that shore. Several persons were seen coming to the south-east point; from whence two guns were fired, and regularly answered by them, agreeably to the signal established between Senior Quadra and Captain Vancouver. At night a large fire was seen upon the beach, and several other guns were discharged; but, as the meaning was not understood, the navigators steered up the port, under an easy sail, in expectation of seeing the lights of the town, off which they intended to anchor; but as they were not to be perceived at eight at night, and as they had found a snug cove, they anchored to wait the return of the day.

SECTION VIII.

Transactions at the Spanish Settlements in New Albion—Visited by a Priest and a Serjeant—Visited by Senior Sal, the Commandant—The Missions of Saint Francisco and Sta Clara—Arrival of the Chatham—Proceed to Monterey.

ON the morning of the 15th of November, the British navigators discovered their anchorage to be in an excellent little bay; within less than a mile of the nearest shore. Herds of cattle, and flocks of sheep grazing on the surrounding hills, furnished a delightful prospect for them, and such as they had long been strangers to. From such an appearance of wealth they concluded that the proprietors were not very remote, though no inhabitants or habita-

tions were at that instant visible. On hoisting the colours at sun-rise, a gun was fired, and soon after several persons on horseback descended from the hills to the beach, and made signals for a boat; which was instantly dispatched to the shore. A priest of the order of St. Francisco, and a serjeant in the Spanish army, embraced the opportunity this conveyance presented, of doing themselves the honour of breakfasting with Captain Vancouver.

* The remainder of this section is wholly devoted to medical and astronomical proceedings and observations, and

therefore inadmissible in a work intended for the general reader.

The reverend father congratulated him on his arrival, and assured him that every refreshment and service in the power of himself or mission to bestow, were wholly at his command; and that it would be conferring a peculiar obligation on them all, to allow them to be serviceable. The serjeant expressed himself in terms equally friendly, and informed the captain, that in the absence of the commandant, he was directed, on his arrival, to render him every accommodation in his power.

He attended them on shore after breakfast, where they embraced the earliest opportunity of proving the sincerity of their friendly expressions, by presenting him with an ox, a sheep, and some excellent vegetables. The reverend friar also pointed out the most convenient spot for procuring a supply of wood and water. Having taken a situation commodiously adapted to their several purposes, the Captain directed a tent to be pitched, for the convenience of the party he had selected for his purveyors; while the rest of the crew were engaged on board, in repairing the damages the rigging had sustained in contending with the tempestuous weather.

A south-west wind, attended with much rain, blew hard till Saturday the 17th of November, when the weather being more temperate, Captain Vancouver visited the shore, and had the mortification to find, that neither wood nor water could be procured without much inconvenience, and that the water was not of a good quality; but, as their Spanish friends had assured them the water here was infinitely better than

* Our navigators amused themselves in the morning with shooting a few quails, and returned on board to partake of the excellent repast which their hospitable friends had prepared for them. While they were thus agreeably engaged, their boat brought off father Antonio Danti, the principal of the mission of St. Francisco, and Senior Sal, an ensign in the Spanish army, and commandant of the port; whose generous professions of the most earnest desire to render themselves serviceable, demanded their most grateful acknowledgments.

† The Spanish soldiers, of which the garrison was composed, amounted to thirty-five; who with their families, and a few Indian servants, constituted the whole of the inhabitants. Their houses were placed along the wall; and the church, though small, was neat in comparison to the rest of the buildings. On the left of the church is the commandant's mansion, consisting only of two rooms and a closet. Between these apartments and the external wall, an excellent poultry-house and yard were observed, which seemed to be tolerably well stocked. The houses, in general, are fashioned alike, and must be uncomfortable dwellings

that at Monterey, he became reconciled to what the country afforded.

About this time some saddled horses arrived from the commandant, with an earnest invitation to the Captain, and his officers, to repair to his habitation. In consequence of which, Captain Vancouver, and several other gentlemen, rode up to the Presidio, an appellation appropriated to military establishments in this country, synonymous to *safe-guard*. The residence of the friar is called a Mission. The wall of the Presidio which fronted the harbour, was visible from the ships: they expected on their arrival there, to have found a city or town, instead of which they were conducted into a spacious verdant plain, surrounded with hills, excepting on the side which was opposite to the port. The principal object which presented itself, was a square area, whose sides were about two hundred yards in length, enclosed by a mud wall, and had the appearance of a pound for cattle. Above this walk the roofs of their low thatched houses, were barely visible. The wall when finished, will be about fourteen feet high, and five in breadth, and though rudely constructed with dry sods and mud plaster, it had the appearance of durability sufficient for their protection, with the assistance of their fire arms, against the greatest force the country might be able to collect.

Drawing near the house, they beheld this good lady, who, like her spouse, had passed the middle age of life, seated cross-legged on a mat a little elevated from the ground, almost in the front of the door; with two daughters and

in the winter; for though the walls are substantial, the windows, which are cut in the front wall, on the side near the square, are destitute of glass, or any other defence which would not at the same time exclude the light.

The commandant's apartment, into which the party were ushered, was about thirty feet long, twelve feet high, and fifteen broad; the other room was somewhat smaller: the floor consisted of its native soil, unpaved, and void of any even surface: flags and rushes formed the roof, and the inside wall had the appearance of having been formerly white washed; the furniture had not a superfluous article among it; a sparing assortment of indispensable articles, of the rudest fashion, and of the meanest quality, was all that could be seen. But though elegancies were wanting, it would be injustice not to acknowledge the hearty welcome they experienced from their worthy host, who had provided a refreshing repast, which he thought would prove acceptable, nor was his lady less assiduous and happy in the opportunity of exerting herself to give satisfaction to her new visitors.

conciled to what was the customary mode in which the ladies of that region receive visitors. The decorous and pleasing behaviour of the children did them great credit, and exceedingly delighted our adoptive fathers, who had banished all thoughts of the residence of their parents.

Senior Sal, hearing of the difficulties the British navigators had to encounter, in removing their headquarters to the sea-side, generously offered them the use of the Presidio; but they were greatly disappointed on the production of the plan, they were so miserably constructed, and extremely ill calculated for the service they were intended to perform. Thus, without much difficulty or examination, their curiosity was perfectly satisfied with respect to the Spanish mission, and settlement of Saint Francisco. Instead of finding a country well inhabited and cultivated, there is not an object to indicate its connection with any civilized nation, if its natural pastures, flocks of sheep, and herds of cattle are excepted.

This sketch will probably serve to convey some idea of the inactive disposition of the people, and the neglected state of the establishment at the port. It possesses no other means for its protection than such as have been already described; with a brass three pounder, on a rotten carriage, before the Presidio, and a piece of ordnance somewhat similar, lashed to a log instead of a carriage, which was the piece whose report they heard the evening of their arrival. Before the Presidio, two pieces of ordnance had formerly been placed; but one of them had lately burst to pieces.

One of the fathers of the mission of Saint Francisco, Martin de Landaeta, brought Captain Vancouver, a very friendly and pressing invitation from his brethren to dine with them, urged by this polite summons, Captain Vancouver, accompanied by Mr. Menzies, and several of the officers, engaged to attend the

* Whilst dinner was preparing, the party amused themselves in surveying the several houses within the square; one of which were appropriated to the reception of grain, though they were in possession of no very considerable stock, however rich the contiguous soil might be for all the purposes of husbandry. One large room was occupied by manufactures of a coarse kind of blanketing, from the wool produced in the neighbourhood. The looms were solely wrought by the Indians, under the immediate super-

mission, and their friendly Senior Sal took a ride with them to partake of the repast. A loose sandy road, much incommoded with low grove-like bushes, rendered the journey somewhat unpleasant, though the distance hardly exceeded three miles. The situation and external appearance of the mission, assorted well with those of the Presidio, and its neighbourhood was pleasingly diversified with hill and dale. The soil here was richer than that of the Presidio; the pastures produced a more luxuriant herbage, and fed a greater number of sheep and cattle.

The buildings of the mission formed two sides of a regular square; which might, at any future period, have been converted into a perfect quadrangle like the Presidio; the materials and the architecture seeming nearly to correspond. On the arrival of the party they were received by the reverend father with politeness, cordiality, and genuine hospitality. They were instantly conducted to their mansion, which communicated with the church. The houses formed a small oblong square, the side of the church composing one end, near which were the apartments appropriated to the fathers: these structures resembled those at the Presidio, but were larger, more commodious, compact, and cleanly. Along the walls several convenient offices were arranged for a variety of necessary purposes*.

By various encouragements to the children, or their parents, they procure as many females to rear in this manner as they require: they are well fed, and better clothed than the Indians in the neighbourhood, and are carefully instructed. But they must submit to certain regulations on their part; they must not presume to go out of the interior square, in the day-time, without permission: they must never sleep out of it at night; and, to prevent elopements, only one common door has any communication with the country, and the fathers have taken upon themselves the command of that aperture, and the additional office of seeing it carefully secured

attendance of the fathers, and the produce resulting from their manufactory is wholly applied to the clothing of the converted natives: Captain Vancouver, who saw some of the cloth, declared it "was by no means despicable, and had it received the advantage of fulling, would have been a very decent sort of cloathing." The spinning and weaving was performed by unmarried women and female children, who resided within the square, and were in a state of conversion to the Roman Catholic persuasion.

every evening. The apartments of the women, who usually retire immediately after supper, are also under their immediate care.

This establishment is protected only by five soldiers, under the direction of a corporal, and may be reasonably considered as liable to some danger. Should these children prove ungrateful and treacherous, they might conceal a sufficient number of weapons to effect any wicked purpose. There are only three fathers, who have each a separate residence; and should any attempt be made upon them at night, they would be able to make but little resistance; nor is it certain that the guard would be alarmed in time. Should a conspiracy for their destruction take place, the mission would certainly fall; as the conspirators would doubtless be joined by the Indians of the adjacent village, which consisted of about six hundred persons; the greater part of whom had been converted to the Roman Catholic faith*.

These wretched huts, each of which accommodated a whole family, were uniformly arranged, about three or four feet asunder, in straight rows, leaving passages between them; all of which were so abominably infested with filth and nastiness, that they were equally offensive and degrading to the human species.

Close by stood the church, which reflects credit on the constructors of it; the raising and decorating of which greatly attracted the attention of the fathers; the comforts of their humble habitations having been principally sacrificed to this favourite object. Even their garden had been greatly neglected, though of so rich a soil as to promise an ample return for the labour bestowed upon it. It consisted of about four acres, and produced some fig, peach, and other fruit trees, but of useful vegetables, very few were to be seen; weeds were the principal possessors of this promising spot.

* Few advantages, however, appeared to have attended their conversion: they seemed to have treated the precepts, and laborious example of their pastors with the most perfect indifference. The object of the reverend fathers was to allure them from a life of indolence, and to create among them a spirit of industry; which would enable them to augment their comforts, and partake of the blessings of civilized society. Deaf to these important lessons, and in-

visible of the advantages they offered, a state of civilization appeared to them a matter of indifference; and, with the exception of the inhabitants of Tierra del Fuego, and those of Van Dieman's land, Captain Vancouver declares, "they are certainly a race of the most miserable beings, possessing the faculty of human reason, I ever saw."

Returning to the convent, they were furnished with an abundant repast, consisting of beef, mutton, fowls, fish, and such vegetables as the garden afforded. The attentive and hospitable behaviour of their new friends, sufficiently compensated for any deficiency of form in serving up the repast; as it has already been intimated that they were entirely unprovided with the common and most necessary utensils of life, especially in the culinary department. After dinner the conversation of the company was principally directed to the nature of the institution, and the probable consequences of its effects. The establishment of Sta Clara, on a similar principle, was mentioned in the course of conversation; and the next day appointed for visiting that pious foundation, as it was at no greater distance than about one day's journey. Senior Sal proposed to be of the party, and the reverend fathers undertook to provide horses for the expedition.

On the Captain's return to the Presidio, he was favoured with a polite reply to a letter he had sent to Senior Quadra, informing him that neither the Chatham nor the Dædalus had yet arrived at Monterey; but assuring him that whenever they reached that port, he might rely on his best services; and trusted it would not be long before the Discovery would re-join them at Monterey. During the night the wind blew a strong gale, attended with rain, which continued till the morning of the 20th, when serene pleasant weather succeeded, and they undertook the journey to Sta Clara. In their way they called on their friends at the Presidio and Mission; by important dispatches received by Senior Sal, at the indisposition of one of the fathers, obliging them to decline the engagement. Our navigators, therefore, according to the fashion of the country, started, attended by as many spare horses as amounted to more than double the

Their persons, which are ill made, are generally under middle size; their faces are ugly, without any traits of expression but those of stupidity and vulgarity. They have an insurmountable aversion to cleanliness, either in the persons or habitations. Their houses are of a conical form, about seven feet diameter at their base, rudely constructed by a number of stakes, chiefly of the willow tribe. An aperture is left at the top, for the double purpose of admitting the light and discharging the smoke: a hole in the ground serves as the portal to the habitation; through which one person at a time can hardly gain admittance. A thick thatch of dried grass and rushes was the general covering of these curious mansions.

ent, they were furnished with such vegetables as the attentive and hospitable friends, sufficiently competent of form in service, already been intimate unprovided with the common utensils of life, especially department. After dinner the company was principally of the institution, and the effects. The establishment, on a similar principle of conversation; and for visiting that point no greater distance than they. Senior Sal proposed to the reverend fathers for the expedition. On his return to the Presidio, he wrote a letter to him, informing him that neither Dædalus had yet arrived, nor him that whenever he might rely on his being it would not be long before he should re-join them at Moscow. The wind blew a strong gale, which continued till the 10th, when serene weather set in, and they undertook the journey. In their way they called on the Presidio and Mission; but were received by Senior Sal, and one of the fathers, obliging and engaged. Our navigation was to the fashion of the day, attended by as many spectators as more than double the number made, are generally understood, without any traits of civility and vulgarity. They had been to cleanliness, either in their houses are of a conical form, at their base, rudely constructed of the willow tribe. A small fire for the double purpose of warming the smoke: a hole near the portal to the habitation; through which can hardly gain admittance, and rushes was the general decoration.

number of their party, under the escort of the commandant of the Presidio, attended by half a dozen stout soldiers, fully accoutered for their protection.

The buildings, including the offices belonging to this mission, like those of St. Francisco, form an oblong square which is not wholly inclosed. The fathers' apartments are upon the same plan with those at St. Francisco, and seem to be more extensive and convenient. Apartments within the square, where the priests resided, were appropriated to a certain number of young female Indians; and for the same reasons as were assigned at St. Francisco. Their occupations were similar to those at Francisco, but their woollen manufactures surpassed them. The upper story of the interior oblong square, being about one hundred and seventy feet in length, and one hundred in breadth, was divided into granaries, which were replete with corn and pulse. They cultivate wheat, peas, beans, and maize, of all which they produce sufficient to supply their necessities, and to enable them to make a reserve, should disappointments happen. Of these articles of food, they had several thousand bushels in store, of very excellent quality, which had been procured with little labour, and without manure: by a wretched apology for a plough, the earth is once slightly turned over, and

• Their route was nearly parallel with the sea-coast, a range of mountains, the summits of which exhibited a high degree of fertility, interspersed with woods, copses, and great open spaces, enriched with stately forest trees, extended to the north-east. Their journey was estimated at fifteen leagues, in which distance no house or hut was to be seen: no shelter presented itself but such as the extending trees afforded. About noon they arrived at an enchanting lawn, situated amidst a grove of trees at the foot of a small hill; a pellucid stream of excellent water, creating a degree of thirst it was so capable of allaying. This delightful pasture was enclosed on every side, and afforded resting-places for themselves, as well as delightful pasture for their cavalry. The bank on the margin of the murmuring brook, invited them to regale on what their provident friends had supplied; and, to complete the banquet, some grog had been procured by one of the officers from the ship. So enchanting a scene could not be quitted without extreme reluctance, especially as the beauty of it was much heightened by the delighted serenity of the weather. To this alternative they were, however, obliged to submit, and, selecting a fresh supply of cavalry, they mounted and pursued their journey. They were not far removed from this delightful spot, when they entered a country which they could not have supposed to exist in these regions. For twenty miles it exactly resembled one of the most elegant parks which

smoothed down by a kind of harrow: in November or December, they sow the wheat in drills, or cast it on the even surface, and scratch it in with the harrow; and in this simple process the whole system of their husbandry consists, which uniformly produces an abundant harvest in July or August.

The wheat produces, in general, from twenty-five to thirty to one, according to the seasons; for though enormous waste is occasioned by their mode of thrashing, which is performed by the treading of cattle in the open air, twenty-five for one has always been deposited in their granaries from the field. Other grains are equally prolific; but barley or oats are seldom cultivated, as those of the superior kind may be obtained with the same labour that the inferior sorts require. The management of the field is superintended by the fathers, but the laborious part is performed by the natives, who are instructed in the Roman Catholic faith, and in the art of husbandry. The annual produce is applied by the reverend pastors to the most useful and beneficial purposes. Besides the arable land, a small spot was peculiarly devoted to the production of vegetables, which are abundant and in great perfection; but it was not sufficiently capacious to supply the consumption of the European residents; the priests, and a guard con-

had ever been beheld in the most enchanting pleasure-grounds of Britain. This imaginary park had originally been closely planted with the genuine old English oak; the underwood which probably attended its early growth, had been cleared away, when the stately lords of the forest obtained complete possession of the soil; which was also covered with luxuriant herbage, and diversified with eminencies and vallies; the whole producing a scene not inferior to the most studied effect of taste in the elegant disposition of grounds. Their travelling this short journey was attended with some inconvenience, occasioned by fox-carths, burrows of rabbits, rats, and other animals; but their sure-footed horses, though expeditious, carefully avoided every danger. Having passed through this delightful park, they entered a low swampy country, through which their progress was obliged to be extremely slow. About dark a better road presented itself, and soon after the arrival of night they arrived at the mission of Sta Clara, which could not be less than forty geographical miles from Saint Francisco. But, though the adventurers encountered some difficulties on the road, their reception at Sta Clara, by the hospitable fathers of the mission, excited in them the most exalted sensations of gratitude and regard. The evening passed pleasantly; and after breakfasting on tea and chocolate the next morning, they took a view of the establishment, and the surrounding country.

taining a corporal and six soldiers. Peaches and other wall-fruit flourished, but the vines proved unsuccessful, which may probably be ascribed to their want of proper culture, rather than to the soil and climate. The oak, among the timber, appears to take the lead: a tree of this description which measured fifteen feet in girth, and was of a proportional height, was not considered by the fathers as of an immoderate size. The timber of these trees is supposed to be equal in quality to the best European oak: elm, ash, birch, and beach, are abundant, and in high perfection.

Our navigators repaired to the Indian village in the vicinity of the mission, but they found the habitations less regularly disposed than in that of St. Francisco; yet they observed the same horrid state of filthiness and idleness. Not a symptom could be discovered, in their general deportment, of their having received the least advantage from the precepts and laborious instructions of their religious tutors: these wretched being were totally insensible to the benefits with which they were provided, excepting in the single article of food, which they now found ready for their support, without dreading the effects of famine, or of being reduced to the scanty and precarious morsel. Not only grain, but domestic animals, have been successfully introduced among them, and some of the natives have been taught to manufacture useful garments, from the wool of their sheep. But these striking advantages seem totally lost on these untaught children of nature; a compound of stupidity and innocence. The operations and functions both of body and mind, were performed with a mechanical indifference, which they seem to have inherited from their fore-fathers. Further efforts, however, are now making, to brighten the gloomy cloud of insensibility, in which these miserable people are now enveloped*.

Hunger having announced its cravings, the party retired to dinner; a most excellent and plentiful repast was provided in the convent. The day passed to the mutual satisfaction of all

* In consequence of this visit, the fathers ordered a feast to be prepared for the entertainment of the Indians of the village. The principal part of it consisted of beef, which was presented to the villagers on this occasion. The black cattle on the fertile plains of Sta Clara, are wonderfully

parties; but the visitors found it a difficult task the next morning, to refuse obedience to the pressing solicitations of these good people to prolong their stay at Sta Clara, which necessity compelled them to decline. They took their leave at an early hour, highly gratified by their reception and entertainment.

Captain Vancouver, knowing the mission of Sta Cruz was also in its infancy, had entertained an idea of paying that a visit, but as his leisure would not admit of his extending his excursion, he repaired immediately to the ships when he had the satisfaction to find that the Chatham was at anchor near the Discovery. The price of large cattle at this port, was, on his arrival, six Spanish dollars each, and that of sheep in proportion. He instantly procured the quantity he required for both vessels, with poultry, vegetables, and other necessities, and presented Senior Sal with cash to the amount the supply having been principally furnished by him. But, to his astonishment, he declined receiving the money the Captain had tendered to him, declaring he had been strictly enjoined by Senior Quadra, not to accept of any pecuniary recompence from him; as matters of that nature would be adjusted by him on their meeting at Monterrey. These injunctions from Senior Quadra, removed his difficulties, as he would have been incapable of requiting such generosity from persons, who, in every respect excepting that of food, had the appearance of absolute poverty, bordering on distress.

The Captain's excursion into the country had convinced him, that though the inhabitants had an abundant supply of every essential requisite for human subsistence, they were almost destitute of those articles which principally tend to impart genuine felicity: he therefore experienced no small gratification in being able to distribute among them a few necessary articles; such as culinary implements and utensils, bars of iron and a few decorations for their churches: to which he added a hog'shead of wine, and another of rum. These presents were consigned to the care of Senior Sal, with a request that

prolific, and increase abundantly; but being in a wild state some adroitness is necessary to get them into subjection. Though this village appeared to be less populous than that at St. Francisco, it contained about double the number of inhabitants.

would
presidio, a
Sta. Clara.
led with,
satisfactory
In the mo
St. Francis
reception
They proce
spital obstac
bay of M
about n
and perm
bay, w
compa
western par
appear
earnest ex

recurrences
D

HAVING
I Captain
then re
presidio; fr
al assuram
ard, and
saluted
larly retu
Mr. Quad
ual numb
is compli
eacting go
rmed the v
emonious
d Chatha
nated, Ca
quadra on
hospitat
In the co
rmed the
potka, he
re all tru
se below
were to
ders natu
eir respo
ery arran
Vol. I.

a difficult task. The obedience to the good people to which necessity. They took their gratified by their

the mission of. They had entered a visit, but his extending his to the ship to find that the the Discovery his port, was, each, and that only procured the vessels, with necessities, and to the amount ally furnished by, he declined re had tendered strictly enjoined ept of any pecu a matters of the im on their mee ctions from Seni ies, as he would uting such gener ery respect except arance of absol

o the country ha e inhabitants ha essential requir re almost destitu ally tend to in refore experie able to distrib articles; such isils, bars of iron heir churches: of wine, and a were consign th a request th

ut being in a wild st them into subjecti ss populous than the double the number

the mission of. They had entered a visit, but his extending his to the ship to find that the the Discovery his port, was, each, and that only procured the vessels, with necessities, and to the amount ally furnished by, he declined re had tendered strictly enjoined ept of any pecu a matters of the im on their mee ctions from Seni ies, as he would uting such gener ery respect except arance of absol

the mission of. They had entered a visit, but his extending his to the ship to find that the the Discovery his port, was, each, and that only procured the vessels, with necessities, and to the amount ally furnished by, he declined re had tendered strictly enjoined ept of any pecu a matters of the im on their mee ctions from Seni ies, as he would uting such gener ery respect except arance of absol

the mission of. They had entered a visit, but his extending his to the ship to find that the the Discovery his port, was, each, and that only procured the vessels, with necessities, and to the amount ally furnished by, he declined re had tendered strictly enjoined ept of any pecu a matters of the im on their mee ctions from Seni ies, as he would uting such gener ery respect except arance of absol

anchorage, such a situation was discovered about four in the afternoon, by making the signal which had been settled with Senr. Quadra, which was instantly answered from the Presidio. Their anchorage was directed to be nearly under the elevated land on the south side of the bay. At seven in the evening Mr. Whidbey came on board from the *Dædalus*, which had arrived on the 22d, having completed the service she had been ordered upon.

Soon after they were met by some Spanish boats, ordered by Senr. Quadra to their assistance: and in about an hour they were safely moored. On their arrival they found at anchor the *Dædalus*, and the following Spanish vessels; the brig *Active*, the *Aransasu*, and a schooner. On board the brig the broad pendant of Senr. Quadra was displayed.

SECTION IX.

Occurrences at Monterey—The Mission of St. Carlos described—Departure of the Dædalus—Description of Monterey Bay—and the Presidio—Generosity of Senr. Quadra.

HAVING arrived at Monterey on the 26th, Captain Vancouver waited on Sen. Quadra, who then resided at the governor's house in the Presidio; from whom he received the most cordial assurances of friendship. He returned on board, and early the next morning the Presidio was saluted with thirteen guns; which being regularly returned, the topsails were hoisted, and Senr. Quadra's broad pendant saluted with an equal number. After a due acknowledgment of this compliment, Senr. Quadra, accompanied by the acting governor, and several Spanish officers, returned the visit, all of whom were respectfully and ceremoniously received on board the *Discovery* and *Chatham*. When these formalities were terminated, Captain Vancouver accompanied Senr. Quadra on shore, to partake of the delicacies of his hospitable table.

In the course of conversation Senr. Quadra informed the captain, that on his arrival from Nootka, he found orders directing him to capture all trading vessels on this coast, excepting those belonging to the people of Great Britain, who were to proceed without molestation. These orders naturally induced them to believe, that their respective sovereigns had finally adjusted every arrangement with respect to the territories.

Vol. I. No. XXXV.

at Nootka. This intelligence appeared of so important a nature, that Captain Vancouver began to think of relinquishing the design he had meditated, of sending the *Chatham* home this season to convey intelligence, if he could procure a passage to England for an officer through New Spain. He proposed to intrust all the intelligence, surveys, and charts in his possession, to the care of Lieutenant Broughton the commander of the *Chatham*, who knew the whole of his transactions with Senr. Quadra at Nootka; and whose abilities and observations would enable him, on his arrival in England, to satisfy the board of admiralty, with respect to any objects of enquiry. On this occasion, he requested permission of Senr. Quadra for Mr. Broughton to be permitted to take his passage by way of New Spain to England; to which an answer was instantly given by Senr. Quadra in the affirmative; and that Mr. Broughton might accompany him to St. Blas; where he would supply him with money and other accommodations to render his expedition perfectly agreeable. At so generous an offer, Captain Vancouver expressed his grateful acknowledgments, and lost no time in preparing for Mr. Broughton's departure.

On the 2d of December the captain, with some attendants,

5 L

attendants, paid his respects to the Mission of St. Carlos, accompanied by Senr. Quadra, Mr. Broughton, and several other English and Spanish officers. This establishment is situated about a league from the Presidio of Monterey, from whence they had a pleasant journey over a lively road: their reception at the mission was hospitable in the extreme, and manifested the joy of the reverend fathers for the honour they had conferred on them: nothing which their humble residence afforded was withheld from them. On their arrival at the portal of the mission the bells were rung, and the reverend fathers of the missions in New Albion, as well as that of Don Carlos, came out to meet them, and usher them into the principal residence of the father president; a venerable personage aged seventy-two years, with suavity of manners and a placid countenance*.

An Indian village in the neighbourhood, said to contain about eight hundred inhabitants, is governed by the same principles as those they had before visited. Notwithstanding these people were instructed and employed in the occupations most useful to society, they could not erect habitations more comfortable than those of their forefathers, nor had they derived a single advantage from the information they had received. Some of them indeed now engaged, under the direction of the fathers, in building a church of stone and mortar: the former is of a tender friable nature, little harder than indurated clay; but, when exposed to the air, is said to become hardened, and petrified.

Having satisfied their curiosity in these particulars, the party rode round the neighbourhood of the mission, which was pleasantly situated, and agreeably diversified with hills and vallies. Through one of the latter, a stream of water,

* After the usual ceremonies and formalities, their time was pleasantly engaged in the society of the father president, and two priests belonging to the mission of St. Carlos, who attended them over their premises; which much resembled those at St. Francisco, or Sta. Clara, but the structures were on a smaller scale. In their granaries a considerable quantity of grain was deposited, though inferior in quality to that produced at Sta. Clara. There was also a garden belonging to this mission, on a smaller scale, not remarkable for the abundance or excellence of the vegetables it produced.

† On their return to the convent, they found an excellent repast, decently served in a bower constructed for that purpose, in the garden belonging to the mission. After per-

about knee-deep, takes its course, passes the buildings of the mission, and is immediately received by the sea †.

Returning on board in the evening, the captain was on the following Monday honoured with the company of the party to dinner; with the addition of the governor's wife, and several other ladies of the Presidio. But the motion of the ship, though not very considerable, obliged the ladies and even some of the gentlemen, speedily to retire. It was not till the 9th that the captain's engagements permitted him to make another short excursion with Senr. Quadra, and several friends, to dine at the garden of the Presidio. This garden, though at a convenient distance for an excursion, had no regular accommodation for visitors. The only places of shelter in the vicinity were a few miserable mud huts, in which the gardener and a few soldiers were stationed for its protection. Few incidents occurred in the excursion entitled to attention; the adjacent country consisted principally of sandy heath over-grown with an impassable thicket of shrubs forming good cover for deer, foxes, hares, rabbits, &c.

The inconvenience suffered by some of the captain's visitors on board, from the ship's agitation, became the subject of conversation; and as there was no possibility of providing against it, he solicited the company of his Spanish friends at the encampment on shore. This request was complied with on the following day, when he was gratified with the presence of most of the ladies and gentlemen at dinner. A display of fire-works was exhibited in the evening, which gave infinite delight to the visitors, besides creating terror and astonishment among the Indians, who were assembled on this occasion, which was probably a novel spectacle to many

forming their duty at the meal, they were entertained with recital of the methods practiced by the Indians, in killing animals by imitating them. They clothe themselves with the skin of the head and hide of the animal they propose to take, and resort to the place it is customary for them to haunt, and, walking on their hands and feet, counter the motions of the creature they mean to betray. By these means, if they intend to take possession of a deer, they can easily get within three or four yards of him; when they embrace an opportunity of his attention being otherwise engaged, of discharging their arrows from their concealed bow, which they accomplish in a very slooping attitude; and the first or second discharge generally proves fatal.

course, passed the evening, and immediately retired. The evening was concluded by a dance and supper, and reciprocal satisfaction was received.

The carpenters belonging to the *Discovery* were employed in fitting up commodious stalls, on board the *Dædalus* for the reception of live cattle; Senr. Quadra having liberally offered any number of those animals, with such other productions of the country as might be thought necessary for his Majesty's infant colony in New South Wales. Twelve cows, six bulls, six rams, and as many ewes were received on board the *Dædalus* on the 24th. Several other essential duties were required to be performed, which prevented the sailing of the *Dædalus* till the 29th, when she departed, the cattle being then in excellent condition.

On this occasion Lieutenant Hanson received Captain Vancouver's orders to proceed to New South Wales; calling at Hergest's islands, in his way thither, for a supply of water, and food for cattle, with such other refreshments as were necessary, and could be procured; passing thence to the north of all the low islands, to proceed to Otaheite; from thence to New Zealand, and Port Jackson, where he was anxious the *Dædalus* should arrive with the utmost dispatch, as the cattle, sheep, &c. would be a valuable acquisition to that country. His visit at Otaheite was not merely that of procuring refreshments; he was also to take on board twenty-one English seamen who had been cast away in the *Matilda*, of London, in February 1792, on a ledge of rocks. After this accident, the crew returned in their boats to Otaheite from whence they had departed*.

A few cursory remarks on Monterey bay may not be absolutely unnecessary: It is situated between point Pinos and point Anno Nuevo. Between these points a spacious bay is formed, by the coast retreating from the line of the two points about four leagues. The only part that is eligible for anchoring is near its south extremity, about a league south-eastward from point Pinos. The

* This shipwreck appeared to have been attended with very disagreeable consequences, to many persons at Otaheite. Such valuable articles as the unfortunate people had preserved from the wreck, instead of being properly secured, had been carelessly scattered, or left to the disposal of the natives. This created a jealousy between the chiefs of Matavai, and those of Oparre: a war was the consequence between the two districts, which terminated to the disadvantage of Matavai; a considerable part of that beautiful

soundings are regular from thirty fathoms to four; the bottom a mixture of sand and mud. The anchorage is the only situation in the bay where vessels can ride with safety or convenience: the Spanish establishment is in its neighbourhood; and the Presidio is not far distant; near which a wretched kind of house has been erected, for the reception of a guard of soldiers.

The Presidio is situated on a plain, a little elevated above the level of the sea; having a diversity of charming spots in the neighbourhood, which would amply reward the taste and labour of the ingenious. The buildings of the Presidio, like those already described at St. Francisco, for the use of the officers, soldiers, &c. are erected along the walls on the inside of the inclosure, which admit of no more than one entrance for carriages or persons on horseback. This, as at St. Francisco, is on the side of the square fronting the church. Besides the principal gateway, they have small doors communicating with the country, to the right and left of the entrance. One of these, to the right, leads through the apartments of the commanding officer, which are numerous and extensive, but the windows are not furnished with glass. The window places are open; and these are all the apertures in the wall, which, when seen at a distance, give it the appearance of a prison. A small kind of block-house is raised a little above the top of the wall, where swivels might occasionally be mounted; and on the outside, before the entrance of the Presidio, are placed seven cannon, mounted: they consisted of four nine, and three three-pounders. Those, with what have been noticed at St. Francisco, one two-pounder at Sta Clara, and four nine-pounders dismounted, form the whole of their artillery. These guns are planted on the open plain, without any breast-work, or the least protection from weather; and such is said to be the defenceless state of all the new settlement on the coast, not excepting that of St. Diego.

The governor of the province resides at the Presidio, and his command extends from St.

country being laid waste, their houses consumed, and their fruit-trees destroyed.

With respect to the other objects of the voyage, Captain Vancouver had requested Commodore Phillips, at Port Jackson, to complete the cargo of the *Dædalus* to a year's provisions. He communicated to him the discoveries he had made in the South Pacific Ocean, and transmitted to him a survey of that part of the coast of New Holland which he had visited.

Francisco

Francisco to Cape St. Lucas; and on the eastern side of the peninsula of California, up that gulf to the bay of St. Louis. The rank required to be qualified for this extensive command, in the Spanish service, is that of lieutenant-colonel. By what Captain Vancouver could learn, the number of soldiers who composed the garrison did not exceed one hundred, including the non-commissioned officers. From this body detachments are drawn to protect the neighbouring missions; the remainder, with their families, reside within the walls of the Presidio. This establishment consisted entirely of military people: the few most essential mechanical employments were clumsily conducted by some of the soldiers, under the permission of the governor.

Captain Vancouver next apologizes for quitting the interesting subject of these establishments; in which he says, "We unexpectedly not only found an asylum, and pleasant retreat from the vicissitudes and labours of our voyage, but the gratification of social intercourse with a set of liberal-minded, generous people, each of whom endeavoured to surpass the other in manifesting an interest for our welfare, and expressing on every occasion, the happiness they felt in relieving our wants, or rendering us any kind of service*."

On Captain Vancouver's first arrival at Monterey, he requested information of Senr. Quadra, on the method of procuring refreshments, and the current price of the different species he might require. In answer to the first interrogation, he declared that every thing the country afforded was at his service; and, with regard to the last,

every thing could be easily settled at their departure. On this foundation, the captain urged his compliance with his former promise, especially as the transaction between them was of a public nature: but all remonstrances were ineffectual; he insisted that he had performed his promise, as the only settlement in which he could possibly engage, was that of seeing them accommodated to the extent of their wishes, with what the country could bestow †.

The parting from a society, which the adventurers so sincerely regarded, could not take place without considerable regret. The captain, however, experienced the satisfaction of administering to their comfort by a supply of necessary utensils: such articles as he could possibly spare, he assigned to their use, and had the satisfaction to find that they were highly valued, and thankfully received.

The tides appeared to be irregular, and of little elevation: by their general motion they appeared to flow but once in twenty-four hours; and it was high water about seven hours and a half after the moon passed the meridian. The rise and fall was about six feet at the spring, and four feet at the neap tides.

So far relates particularly to the transactions of the voyage appertaining to the Discovery to the end of 1792. The following section will be devoted to the principal events in the information communicated by Lieutenant Broughton of the Columbia river; and by Mr. Whidbey of the transactions of the Dædalus, during their state of separation.

SECTION X.

Summary of Lieutenant Broughton's Account of Columbia River—Transactions at the Marquesas—Murder of Lieutenant Hergest, Mr. Gooch the Astronomer, and one of the Ship's Crew.

HAVING soon abandoned the idea of taking the Chatham further up, Mr. Broughton

determined to proceed in boats, and departed with the cutter and launch, with a week's provisions,

* He expiates largely on the wonderful merits of Senr. Quadra, who, regardless of a diplomatic difference of opinion between them in the Nootka business, had uniformly maintained a character beyond the captain's powers of encomium to describe. His benevolence was not limited to the common rights of hospitality, but was extended upon all occasions. Among the innumerable instances that might be adduced to prove his great liberality, the following must not be forgotten. When Captain Vancouver requested an

account of the expences incurred by furnishing three vessels under his command with refreshments, with the charges attendant on the cattle, corn, &c. put on board the Dædalus, he not only disdained the idea of receiving payment, but gave peremptory orders that no account should be rendered: nor would he accept of any voucher or acknowledgment for the very liberal supply he had received.

† The venerable father president of the Franciscan missionaries, with the worthy members of that order, together

visions, in the ocean and the entrance of seven miles of the shoals. In this approached with deer skins of otter partly a few. Their language was American. The comprehension of the timbers; higher lands, several other of the river. Nine canoes Indians, took up a small distance which he proposed the country first produce barbarous banal. The men, and their need some amount of the river. The mount was dead bodies nominated M eastward, the single hut; wing till the

other with Senr. our navigation to their help in the common opinion and military conduct of the behaviour. The lieutenant named Poi was armed, and after, after the party, of their a drinkets; but their copper. Advancing upon the west about one hundred.

OL. I. No.

at their de-
captain urged
e, especially
of a public
ineffectual;
promise, as
uld possibly
commodated
h what the

h the adven-
ot take place
captain, how-
administering
ary utensils;
pare, he con-
satisfaction to
and thankfully

regular, and of
ation they ap-
y-four hours;
n hours and a
eridian. The
ne spring, and

ne transactions
e Discovery to
ection will be
ne information
ughton of the
hidbey of the
ng their state

the Marquis
ip's Crew.

and departed
a week's pro-
visions,

shing three vessels
with the charges
ut on board the
receiving payment,
unt should be ren-
cher or acknow-
ed received.
f the Franciscan
of that order
together

visions, in the prosecution of his plan. Between the ocean and what should properly be called the entrance of the river, is a space from three to seven miles wide, intricate to navigate on account of the shoals which almost extended from side to side. In this neighbourhood some of the natives approached in four canoes, clothed principally with deer skins, though some of them had garments of otter skins. These good people sold the party a few fish, and civilly took their leave. Their language was so different from that of the other American Indians, that not a syllable could be comprehended. The shores abounded with the timbers; the pine was distinguished on the higher lands, whilst poplar, maple, elder, and several other trees predominated near the banks of the river.

Nine canoes, with a considerable number of Indians, took up their temporary abode in a creek at a small distance from the party; a circumstance which convinced the lieutenant, that the farther he proceeded, the more populous he would find the country. Their warlike appearance first produced some caution, but their orderly behaviour banished all suspicions to their prejudice. The nine canoes continued to attend them, and their numbers kept increasing as they passed some small creeks and openings on the sides of the river. Approaching high land, a remarkable mount was seen, near which several canoes of dead bodies were placed, which was therefore designated MOUNT COFFIN. About a mile to the eastward, their Indian attendants stopped at a single hut; but Mr. Broughton continued on his way till three in the afternoon, when they

met with Senr. Sal, and the whole of the Spanish officers our navigators were acquainted with, were also fully sensible to their highest sentiments of esteem and gratitude. The common people had a justifiable claim to their opinion and respect, for uniformly imitating the exemplary conduct of their superiors, by their obliging and civil behaviour.

The lieutenant then arrived at a point, which he afterwards named POINT WARRIOR, (having been there surrounded by twenty-three canoes with several persons in full arms, and in their war garments.) These strangers, however, after conversing with the friendly Indians who attended the party, took off the war dress, and very civilly showed of their arms and other articles for European toys and trinkets; but would not, on any consideration part with their copper swords, nor iron battle-axes.

Advancing up the stream they had passed two Indian villages on the west side of the river, and had been joined about one hundred and fifty of the natives in twenty-five

PL. I. No. XXXV.

landed to dine on the opposite shore. Mr. Broughton continued to proceed, and soon passed a small rocky islet, about twenty feet above the surface of the water. The top of this little islet was covered with canoes in which dead bodies were deposited.

Proceeding on his course, he saw a very large village; and such of the strangers as seemed to inhabit it, strongly invited the party to walk thither; at the same time assuring them that if they persisted in going to the southward, they would certainly have their heads cut off. The same urgent intreaties had before been made to Mr. Broughton in the course of his excursion; but not supposing them necessary to be regarded he still proceeded up what he considered the main branch of the river till eight in the evening; when, under the shelter of some willows, they selected a lodging for the night on a low sandy point, accompanied by twelve of the natives in a canoe, who made choice of a residence near them.

The lieutenant having been seven days occupied in the examination of this river, and his remaining stock of provisions not being more than sufficient for two or three days, he gave up the idea of any further search; because, even thus far, the river could not be considered as navigable for shipping; he calculated also that he was now near a hundred miles from what he considered the entrance of the river; and that great frugality was required in the conduct of their meals, to preserve the existence of his party till they should rejoin the Chatham. But, before his departure, he formally took possession of the

canoes. To avoid surprize, they dined in their boats; though there appeared to be no necessity for such caution; for, on some trivial presents being made, trade immediately commenced, and was conducted with great decorum. Not an attempt was made to pass the line drawn on the beach, except by two who appeared to be chiefs, and who were permitted to communicate with their party. At the several creeks and branches they had passed, they gradually lost the company of most of the Indians, excepting one elderly chief, who on the most friendly terms had continued with them from the first, and had a village farther up the river. Having received considerable presents from the party, he became so strongly attached to them, that, to manifest his gratitude, he went forward to provide them with lodgings, and such acceptable refreshments as his village would afford. In the evening they reached his habitation; where he entertained them to remain; but, preferring a more secluded resting-place, they resorted to a shallow creek higher up the river,

PL. I. No. XXXV. 5 M river

river, and the country in its vicinity, in his Britannic Majesty's name. The venerable chief, who still continued one of the party, assisted at the ceremony, and drank his Majesty's health on the occasion. Some further information was anxiously endeavoured to be procured from this venerable man, but all that they could comprehend was, that higher up the river they would be prevented passing by a fall; which he explained by taking up water in his hands, and striving to imitate the manner of it falling on a rock: pointing also to the spot where the sun rises; intimating that its source in that direction would be found at a vast distance*.

At length the party arrived on board the Chatham, having consumed half the time in returning, that was exhausted in passing up that river, in consequence of the general rapidity of the stream downward; and of being often aided by a favourable wind. Though Mr. Broughton had received no orders for the investigation he had undertaken, he was convinced that such an enterprise would have been consonant to Captain Vancouver's wishes; he therefore deemed it expedient to join the Discovery with all possible expedition. Thus the Chatham quitted Columbia river: the rest of the time, till she joined the Discovery, was performed in a boisterous unpleasant voyage.

From Mr. Whidbey's account of Gray's harbour, and the transactions of the *Dædalus*, we shall extract a summary of the particulars, with the murder of Lieutenant Hergest at Woahoo, &c.†.

Mr. Whidbey supposed the natives of this place amounted to about a hundred: they spoke the Nootka language, and seemed, in many respects, to vary little from those the navigators had seen in the summer: their behaviour was friendly, civil, and courteous. In Mr. Whid-

bey's excursion to the head of the harbour, he was visited by several of them, who, having satisfied their curiosity, were about to depart, when the boat, endeavouring to approach a small rivulet, became entangled among shoals, stumps of trees, &c. and was rather in a perilous state, which the friendly Indians perceiving, instantly afforded them such assistance as totally relieved them from their embarrassment; after which they respectfully took their leave and departed.

The natives seemed to be divided into three distinct tribes or classes, each having one or two chiefs. Each partizan declared the other two were bad people. Hence it may be presumed that they were then at variance, or at least had separate interests. Some of their war canoes had a piece of wood wretchedly carved, perforated and placed at each end, three feet above the gunwale: through these holes they could discharge their arrows, without presenting their persons to their adversaries; and each contained about twenty people. One of the Indians asked the mate of the *Dædalus* to shoot a pelican, on the water about fifty yards off: the mate fired twice with a ball, and missed it: The pelican still keeping his station, the Indian missed with his first arrow, but with the second he pierced through the body of the bird, to the great exultation of the natives. They understand commercial pursuits, and deal honourably and fairly. For sea-otter skins they sometimes expected iron in exchange, but usually sold them for copper and woollen cloth. For articles of less value they were glad of pale blue beads; two of which would purchase a salmon. They seemed to be a hardy people, and regardless of the inclemency of the weather. This is the substance of the information procured by Mr. Whidbey, in his visit to Gray's Harbour.

* With these ceremonies and enquiries night had closed in; notwithstanding which Mr. Broughton immediately re-embarked, and, having the stream in his favour, proceeded on his return. All the Indians, except the old chief, and his suite, very civilly took their leave. They, however, continued to attend him, their route being the same way. At length the old chief took his final adieu of our navigators; when the part of the river on which this affectionate parting was solemnized, obtained the name of *FRIENDLY REACH*.

† Gray's harbour, in its present state, appears to be of little importance, as it affords but two or three situations where the boats can effect a landing: the shallowness of the water on the bar also renders it less commodious as a port, as it would be impracticable to pass it unless near high-

water, even with vessels of a moderate size: Mr. Whidbey also supposes it to be a shifting channel. Wood and wax cannot easily be procured; especially the latter, which found only in small springs, running through the sand at the distance of a mile from the landing place. Both the *Dædalus* and Chatham had the advantage of the Discovery by remaining in port while she was contending with the boisterous weather. There they were abundantly supplied with excellent fish and wild fowl. Salmon, sturgeon, and other fish, were plentifully supplied by the natives: the geese, ducks, and other wild fowl, shot by themselves were sometimes sufficient for the support of the crew. The south side of Gray's harbour was found to be the best sporting ground.

* These islands were the na-

the harbour, he who, having out to depart, approach a small shoals, stump, perilous state, living, instantly, totally relieved; after which and departed. divided into three, having one or two, the other two, may be presumed, or at least had, war canoes had, ved, perforated, et above the gun, could discharge, their persons to, contained about, indians asked the, pelican, on the, mate fired twice, The pelican still, missed with his, pond he pierced, to the great ex, understand com, urably and fairl, nes expected in, them for copper, les of less val, ls; two of which, ey seemed to be, of the inclemen, substance of the, idbey, in his vi,

size: Mr. Whid, el. Wood and wa, the latter, which, through the sand, ing place. Both, age of the Discover, contending with, abundantly suppl, salmon, sturgeon, by the natives: a, shot by themsel, support of the cre, found to be the b

The following interesting intelligence is collected from letters written off Owhyhee, by the Lieutenant Hergest, agent to the *Dædalus* transport, concerning the transactions at the Marquesas*; together with Mr. New's account of the unfortunate death of that officer, and of Mr. Gooch, the astronomer. As the preceding part of Mr. Hergest's journals on board contained interesting intelligence, the narrative commences on the arrival of the *Dædalus* at the Marquesas. Having made the Marquesas, Lieutenant Hergest proceeded for Resolution Bay in the land of Ohetahoo, where the *Dædalus* anchored on the 22d of March 1792. In a heavy squall about four the next morning, they parted from their anchor and drove out of the bay. Soon after the vessel had cleared the points, Mr. Hergest perceived the ship to be on fire: it had been full of smoke during the night, that none of the crew could sleep; and those who had the watch on deck, imagined it had come from the fore. This opinion, indeed, was generally adopted without reflection, till Mr. Hergest was convinced, after going into the cabin, that the smoke originated from a more alarming cause. On lifting up the gun-room scuttle, an immense column of smoke instantly issued, strongly manifesting the peril of their situation, as the fire was close to the magazine. The powder was expeditiously removed into a boat along-side; though it was a task attended with much danger, the gun-room itself was very hot, and full of smoke; and the powder had, very carelessly and promiscuously, been stowed among the ship's provisions. After hoisting up a large quantity of powder to get out the powder, the smoke still appeared to ascend from below: this circumstance, with the extreme heat of the deck, fully demonstrated that the fire must be in the lazaretto below, where some pursers' beds were recollected to have been stowed; and from the seas shipped during the tempestuous weather had probably got wet, and taken fire. Confirmed in this opinion, Mr. Hergest stopped every avenue, and crevice about the after hatch-way, and scuttled the deck to enable him to extinguish the fire by pouring water over it. He was soon convinced that the fire had originated as it was at last conjectured; and perceived the good effect of their judicious labours.

* These islands were discovered by Mendana, who imagined the name in honour of Don Garcia de Mendoza,

Other holes were bored over the beds for the purpose of pouring down large quantities of water; and they soon had reason to thank divine Providence for so critical a preservation. Some of the beds and coverings were absolutely consumed. As rum and oil were stowed with these beds, had the fire once broke out into a blaze, it would have been impossible to have extinguished it, or to have prevented its communication with these inflammable substances.

"The bedding which was scorched or rotten, was thrown overboard, and furnished employment for the natives to enrich themselves with the discarded remnants. In the afternoon Mr. Hergest in the cutter, with the second mate in the long boat went to procure water, and landed with the mate and three men. Many of the natives were assembled, who behaved very disorderly, as they had not a chief among them: they stole every thing they came near, so that hardly a bucket remained to fill the casks with water. Mr. Hergest, thinking the party on shore would require assistance to effect his purpose, was on the point of embarking, when one of his people claimed his attention. The natives amused themselves with teasing and pulling the hair of a young man, which at the same time diverted the rest of the Indians. These indignities were found so disagreeable to the poor fellow, that he instantly burst into tears. On being reproached by Mr. Hergest for his pusillanimity and childishness, he found himself suddenly turned round by the natives behind him, and his fowling-piece wrenched from his hand. Mr. Hergest, on the impulse of the moment, ordered the mate to fire, and bring down the thief; but fortunately his piece was not cocked, and he had time to recollect that there was no other musquet on shore; for had the thief been shot, as he at first intended, there was no judging of the extent of the consequences that might have resulted from it. Mr. Hergest and his party prudently returned to their boats; but, on re-embarking, it appeared that some of the Indians had dived under water, and cut the grapnel-rope belonging to the long-boat.

"Considering that to pass over such insults and injuries, would encourage the islanders to persevere in their depredations, Mr. Hergest en-

marquis of Canicute, viceroy of Peru.

deavoured to awe them into better behaviour by rowing close to the beach, and discharging a volley of musketoons and small arms over their heads. This measure was so far effectual, that it drove all of them, except one man, from the beach among the trees. This fellow had the temerity to remain, and throw stones with his sling at the boats. Mr. Hergest, however, took no further notice of him; but on his return to the *Dædalus*, fired four of their great guns over the village. This step threw them into such a terrible consternation, that the natives instantly flew, in every direction, towards the mountains.

"In the evening one of the natives swam off with the ensigns of peace, which was a green bough, inclosed in a white cloth, which he threw into the ship, and then returned to the shore. From this act of humiliation among the natives, Mr. Hergest supposed that he might get his future business conducted on shore, without interruption or molestation. On these considerations, he went the next morning, without meeting with any disappointment; but he still perceived that it was impossible to restrain entirely the exercise of their thievish practices, even on board the ship. One of them had taken the astronomer's theodolite, in its case; but being discovered swimming with it to his canoe, a musquet was discharged at the Indian by the chief mate; that induced him to abandon his prize, which was recovered, the canoe having been sufficiently buoyant to keep it from sinking.

"When Mr. Hergest returned to the shore, with a guard completely armed to procure a supply of water, the natives, instead of interrupting, cheerfully assisted in filling and rolling down the casks, for which they were rewarded with trifles that were very acceptable. Their operations were now carried on very amicably, but the visitors were become too numerous; colours were therefore hoisted to signify that the ship was *tabooed*, which had the proper effect with regard to the men, but the women were

not so easily restrained: they continued to swim from the shore in such multitudes, that muskets were obliged to be fired over their heads to deter them from advancing.

"Plenty of vegetables were obtained, but hogs and pigs were scarce and dear. Two chiefs who had visited the ships, restored the grapnel that had been stolen, and promised to return Mr. Hergest's fowling-piece. Having a sufficient stock of water on board on the 29th of October, and having no business to detain him, Mr. Hergest was preparing to sail, when the two chiefs who brought back the grapnel revisited the ship, and repeated their promise of restoring the fowling-piece. On account of their former good behaviour, they had received several presents; and as Mr. Hergest now had them in his power, and as he knew they could cause the gun to be delivered for its owner, he informed one of them that the ship was instantly going to sea, and if it was not speedily sent on board, he should be taken from his island. Little attention seemed to be paid to this menace, but an armed centinel was placed to guard him in the cabin; when his apprehensions were much heightened. A message was sent to the chief who really had the piece in his possession, and in less than an hour a canoe was seen approaching the ship, and displaying the usual emblems of peace: the canoe contained a chief, and the contested gun; Mr. Hergest received the gun, and delivered up the prisoners unhurt. They parted amicably, and the two chiefs became reconciled on receiving some valuable presents*."

In the evening, about five o'clock, they weighed and steered to the northward, and the next morning came within sight of some islands, supposed by Mr. Hergest to be new discoveries. One of them was about six leagues distant, and inhabited by a friendly tribe of Indians, some of whom visited the ship in their canoes: the island presented a fertile appearance, in the vallies of which were a great number of coco-

have been expected. A ball from a musquet, however, accidentally passed the calf of a thief's leg, who was detected in stealing a bucket: the intention was merely to intimidate him.

They may not perhaps be so fortunate on the arrival of future vessels, as their propensity to thieving seems to admit of no restraint or controul: not even a chief among them had sufficient inclination or authority to induce them to abandon such practices.

* Thus the *Dædalus* quitted the island, after continual misunderstandings with the inhabitants for their daring and repeated thefts. Mr. Hergest concludes his narrative of the transactions at the Marquesas by expressing much satisfaction at not having taken the lives of any of the natives for the preservation of their own property. This, he observes, was a fortunate circumstance, as the shot from the great guns went up the valley among many of their habitations; and their escaping unhurt was more than could possibly

continued to swim, and plantain trees. From hence they stood over to the southernmost island, appearing at a distance like a very high rock, with three peaks. This is about the middle of the island. As they approached the shore they saw a country well cultivated, and numerous inhabitants. Upwards of a hundred Indians were soon assembled round the ship in their canoes, disposing of their coco-nuts, &c. for beads, and other trifles in a very equitable manner. At the south-west end of this island is a good bay, with a sandy beach on its eastern part. On the first of April the south side of the island was passed: at its head was a break in the shores, imagined by some to be the mouth of a rivulet, but Mr. Hergest, supposing it to be too large for so small an island to afford, believed it to be only a deep bay. The island was named Sir Henry Maudslayi island; and immediately to the west of its south-east point, called Point Martin, is a deep well-sheltered bay.

About two leagues to the westward of Point Martin, a very fine harbour extends deep into the island, bounded by a fertile and delightful country. Mr. Hergest and Mr. Gooch examined the port, which was named Anna Maria; it was free of access, and had no shoals or rocks but such as were sufficiently conspicuous to be avoided. An excellent run of water flows into the harbour, which possesses every advantage that could be wished. The country is highly cultivated, and fully inhabited by a civil race of people, who courteously supplied the adventurers with the refreshments that were required. They experienced the most hospitable reception from them on their landing, when about fifteen hundred of the natives, among whom were several chiefs, assembled on the shores of the harbour.

Mr. Hergest observes, that while he was at the islands, and at the Marquesas, they had frequent heavy squalls, and much rain. He compares the inhabitants of this group, to those of the Marquesas, in size and colour; but in

After leaving this island, two others were perceived to the northward of them; the largest of the two does not appear to have any coves or landing places; and though its soil was green, it had only a few shrubs and bushes scattered over the face of the rocks; nor was it more inhabited than by the tropical oceanic birds, which are extremely numerous. The north-west side had no favourable aspect, a few trees making their ap-

pearance on its shores, and in the vallies: it also affords some coves, where good landing is to be found, particularly in one near the middle, which was called BATTERY COVE. Good anchorage, and regular soundings, was also found in a bay about a mile to the north of this cove; an excellent run of fresh water discharged itself into the bay near the grove, consisting of cocoa-nut trees: the landing is difficult, on account of the surf, but water may be obtained.

manners, behaviour, dress, and ornaments, they more resemble the natives of Otaheite, and the Society Islands; he admits, however, that they are less punctured. This is substantially all the information that could be collected from Mr. Hergest's papers with respect to his voyage thus far: the imperfect arrangement of which exhibits an additional cause for lamenting the melancholy fate of that valuable officer.

The adventures of persons, employed on public services, being naturally objects of minute enquiry, this section will be concluded with the account delivered by Mr. New, master of the *Dædalus* transport, of the untimely fate of Lieutenant Hergest, her commander, Mr. Gooch, the astronomer, and the unfortunate seaman who was murdered with them.

"In the morning of May 7, the *Dædalus* arrived in the bay, where the *Resolution* and *Discovery* had anchored in 1779, but Mr. Hergest declined anchoring there, considering the inhabitants of that neighbourhood to be the most savage of any in the islands. He therefore lay to, and purchased from the natives some hogs, vegetables, and water. In the evening he stood off shore, and requested the inhabitants to procure him a further supply of water and refreshments the following morning; but it falling calm, and the current setting the ship to the westward, they could not regain the shore till noon on the 11th, when Mr. Hergest unfortunately receded from his former determination, and ordered the ship to be anchored. The cutter was hoisted out and veered astern, that nothing might interrupt them in their necessary traffic for water; but before three casks were filled, he ordered the cutter along-side, the full casks to be taken out, and replaced by empty ones; and then, in company with Mr. Gooch, he went on shore, and another boat was hoisted out for water; those on board continuing to make purchases till it was almost dark. At this moment the cutter returned with only five persons, instead of eight, who went to shore in her.

These

These communicated the distressing intelligence, that Mr. Hergest, Mr. Gooch, and two of the boat's crew, having landed unarmed with two water casks to fill, their defenceless situation induced the natives to attack them, who killed one of the people, and carried off the commander and the astronomer. The other being stout and active, made his escape through a crowd of these savages, fled to the boat, and with two others landed again with two musquets, intending to rescue their officers, and recover the body of their mess-mate*.

The officers were assembled by Mr. New, to consult the measures that were necessary to be pursued: in consequence of which a resolution was formed, to stand off and on with the ship during the night, and in the morning dispatch the cutter on shore, well manned and armed, to endeavour to recover their unfortunate commander and shipmates. An old chief, a native of Attowai, who had been on board the *Dædalus* from the time she entered the bay, and had been promised by Mr. Hergest a passage to his native island, attended in the boat to exercise his good officers. He landed, and proceeded towards the natives, demanding the absent gentlemen, when he was deliberately informed that they were both killed the preceding night. Returning with this message, he was sent back to demand their bodies. In reply to this, they said, the bodies had been cut in pieces, and divided among seven chiefs.

"After this ineffectual effort to procure the bodies of those who had been murdered, great numbers of the savages repaired to the sea-side and threw stones at the party in the boat, who fired several times, and at length compelled them to retire. Finding their errand was rendered wholly unnecessary, they returned on board, which the old chief re-embarked, and the vessel bore away to land him at Atowai, as had originally been promised; but, when they were about five or six leagues to leeward of Woahoo, the gentleman suddenly sprang overboard, and swam from the ship, without the least intention of turning on board; and having no particular business at Atowai, they proceeded to Nootka.

"On the 13th of June they made the American coast, and bearing to windward arrived at Nootka on the 4th of July. Obedient to a letter of instructions, left by the late commander of the *Dædalus* in his bureau, addressed to Mr. Thomas New in case of his death, Mr. New opened the dispatches addressed to him from the Lords of the Admiralty; and conformably to the directions they contained, he delivered to Senr. Quadra the commanding officer at that port, the letter therein inclosed, and addressed from the Spanish minister."

Thus ended the transactions of their voyage to the conclusion of 1792. In the following section the narrative is resumed of the proceedings at Monterey.

SECTION XI.

Lieutenant Broughton's Departure to England—Progress towards the Sandwich Islands—Voyage Attempt in Search of the Island of Los Majos—Arrival at Owhyhee—Visited by the Chiefs—General Taboo—Kahowmottoo's Wives—Anchor in Karakakooa Bay.

THE beginning of 1793 was not marked with any thing important: the benevolent disposition of Senr. Quadra encouraged Captain Vancouver again to be intrusive, by requesting some black cattle and sheep, that a breed of those valuable animals might be established in the Sandwich Islands. A dozen of them were im-

mediately procured, consisting of four cows, four ewes, two bulls, and two rams. Though the captain was anxious to get away from Monterey, that the further objects of his pursuit might re-commence, and Senr. Quadra be no longer detained by him, he could not get his charts, letters, and other documents, ready

* They discovered that Mr. Hergest and Mr. Gooch were yet alive among a multitude of the inhabitants, who were stripping and dragging them up a hill behind the village. In attempting to get near the crowd, they were so vigorously assailed by stones from the merciless wretches, that they

were under the necessity of retiring; and, as night approached, they thought it prudent to return on board, that more effectual means might be adopted on this calamitous occasion.

be trans-
January.
the follow-
with the
and many
No int
absentees,
them were
had absco
france of
offered to
the only s
reluctance
age of su
from the u
received o
Quadra's
our Britia
together, s
the purp
only f
their depa
the char
he had pre
repairing t
Lieutenant
command
of Mr. Br
The nigh
on the 14th
ward, y
but, as ne
vessels wer
off Point
farther fro
the wind b
they stood
friends. T
'clock, w
aking su
uite to p
Captain
• In the a
with squall
once contr
mourer o
of the C
the cov res
t's taler ts,
after of no
nity had
e applied
commandant
twenty-f

t to procure the
murdered, gre
d to the sea-side
in the boat, wh
h compelled the
nd was rendered
ed on board,
ed, and the ves
as had original
y were about fi
Woahoo, the o
st intention of
ing no particu
eded to Nootka
made the Americ
d arrived at No
tient to a letter
ommander of th
Mr. Thom
New opened t
from the Lords
ly to the directi
to Senr. Quadra
at port, the lett
from the Spani

of their voyage
e following section
he proceedings

ich Islands—V
by the Chiefs—

ing of four co
rams. Thoug
t away from Mo
ets of his purs
r. Quadra be
could not get
cuments, ready

g; and, as night
to return on bo
pted on this calam

he transmitted to England till Sunday the 6th of January. Proposing to sail with the land wind the following evening, he was honoured on board with the company of Senr. Quadra, Caamano, and many of his Spanish friends*.

No intelligence had yet been gained of the absentees, though the persons sent in pursuit of them were returned. To prove that these people had absconded, without the knowledge or connivance of the Spanish officers, Senr. Quadra offered to replace the armourer by substituting the only smith in his establishment. With much reluctance he was induced to accept the advantage of such an offer, which was only excusable from the urgency of the case. He was therefore received on board the Chatham, and Senior Quadra's vessels, as well as those belonging to our British navigators, were intended to sail together, so long as their southern course answered the purpose of their respective routes. Waiting only for a favourable land breeze to take their departure, Captain Vancouver consigned to the charge of Mr. Broughton the dispatches he had prepared, with orders to lose no time in repairing to England: he also directed his first lieutenant, Mr. Puget, to take upon him the command of the Chatham, during the absence of Mr. Broughton.

The night was perfectly calm; but about nine on the 14th, a light breeze sprung up, from the eastward, with which the Discovery weighed; but, as neither the Chatham, nor the Spanish vessels were able to move, she waited for them off Point Pinos. The next morning she was farther from the shore than the captain expected: the wind blew a fresh breeze from the land, and they stood to the northward in quest of their friends. The Chatham joined them about nine o'clock, when an opportunity presented itself of making such observations as were thought requisite to prove the rate of the chronometers.

Captain Vancouver remained off Point Pinos

* In the afternoon the wind blew a hard gale, attended with squalls, and a torrent of rain. An additional circumstance contributed to detain him some time longer: the armourer of the Chatham, a most excellent workman, and one of the Chatham's best marines, had absented themselves the course of the day: the loss of a man of the Armourer's talents, and hitherto unimpeachable conduct, was a matter of no small consequence, especially as this little community had not a competent person to supply his place. He applied to Senr. Quadra, and to Senr. Arguello, the commandant of the Presidio. After consultation, a reward of twenty-five dollars was offered for the recovery of each

till the evening, when being joined by his Spanish friends, they directed their course to the southward with a light northerly breeze. The Active brig outsailed the little squadron, and the Aransas was so had a sailor, that she was nearly out of sight astern. The tracks they each had to pursue shortly began to diverge, so that by continuing together they would have drawn each other from the proper line of direction: a separation was therefore thought necessary, and Senr. Quadra, Mr. Broughton, and such of their Spanish friends as could be spared from the brig, honoured Captain Vancouver with their company to partake of a parting dinner. Mutual good wishes were afterwards exchanged, and an affectionate farewell. On reaching the Active, their friends took their leave, they were saluted with three cheers, which they cordially returned, and each pursued their respective voyages†.

Intending to determine the existence or non-existence of a cluster of islands, described in the Spanish charts as lying between the 19th and 21st degrees of north latitude, the captain endeavoured to obtain perfect satisfaction, but after much exertion, he concluded they could have no existence in the neighbourhood of the spot assigned to them: he therefore relinquished any further search, made the best of his way to Owhyhee; and at nine in the morning on the 12th of February he saw the east end of it, distant about seven leagues.

The navigators now directed their course toward the north-eastern part of this island, forming the eastern point of a very deep bay. They sailed within two or three miles of its shores, which were firm and compact, terminating chiefly in rocky cliffs; from which many streams of water fell, and discharged themselves into the ocean. The country was uncultivated, and had a dreary aspect, having only a few small destitute habitations, thinly scattered at vast distances from each other. Proceeding to the westward, culti-

of the deserters, and soldiers were dispatched in every direction. The loss sustained, and the exertions to repair it, would have induced the captain to wait a few days for the event of the searches; but adverse winds, and a succession of calms, prevented their sailing till Sunday the 13th, when the regular sea-breeze from the north-west prevailed.

† On the 21st Joseph Murgatroyd, one of the carpenter's crew was missing: he was last observed opening the gun-room ports, and was supposed to have sought his own destruction, by contriving to let himself down into the sea, as it was hardly possible that he could have met his fate there by accident.

vation

vation and population appeared on the increase. About nine a canoe was seen coming from a small bay, towards the ship: they immediately brought to, expecting others would follow her example; but they did not*.

About noon they arrived off a part of the northern side of Owyhee, where the coast is formed of high, steep, rugged, and romantic cliffs, discharging from their naked summits rapid cataracts into the ocean. The rushing of these torrents down the barren surface of the rocky cliffs, contrasted with the enchanting country to the east and west, present a very beautiful and picturesque appearance. Nearly in the centre of these cliffs is a small deepish bay; but it seemed too much exposed to the sea, and the generally prevailing winds, to be an eligible situation for shipping. The western part of the land, from this situation, descends gradually from the base of the mountains, and forms a capacious plain towards the water-side, which was highly cultivated, and abounded with the habitations of the natives. They passed at the west point at the distance of about a league, and hauled into Toeaigh bay, in 41 fathoms water. The night proved boisterous, attended with heavy gusts of wind directly off the land.

In the afternoon of the 14th it moderated, and the weather became serene and pleasant: the adjacent shores seemed fertile and populous, but none of the natives ventured to visit our Europeans. Supposing the taboo to be at an end, they imagined the shyness of the inhabitants arose from some more serious cause. About ten o'clock, however, a canoe ventured to come along-side; when the people in her informed them that they belonged to *Kahowmottoo*, who then resided at a village on an estate of his, in the bottom of the bay named Toeaigh; off which good anchorage might be had, and water easily procured. They said the reason of their not having been visited sooner was, that the whole island was under a strict taboo, which prohibited

* The visitors informed them that a general taboo had prevented the inhabitants coming off to them: they ventured at the extreme hazard of suffering death, should the priests or chiefs become informed of their transgressions: the taboo had been two days in force, but its operation was expected to cease in a day or two more. Intelligence was also received from these people that *Tamaahmaah* was then at *Karakakooa*, and that the disposal of hogs and other refreshments of the islands to European or American visitors, was prohibited under the penalties of death, except for

the inhabitants from using their canoes or quitting the shore; but that the rank of their master *Kahowmottoo*, enabled him to dispense with the restrictions upon the present occasion; hoping the vessel in sight was that in which his favourite servant *Terechoa* had embarked, he had therefore sent them to make the necessary enquiries, and if his expectations were successful, a present of a hog and some vegetables was in the canoe for *Terechoa*; whose gratitude for so distinguished a mark of respect was instantly testified, by a flow of involuntary tears on his receiving the message. This was accompanied by a very pressing request that the captain would anchor off *Kahowmottoo's* village, where he should be supplied with everything he required as soon the taboo was at an end, which had existed four days, and was now on the point of expiring†.

Soon after the ship had anchored, *Kahowmottoo* paid Captain Vancouver a visit, bringing with him half a dozen fine hogs, and a plentiful supply of vegetables. He took the liberty of acquainting *Kahowmottoo* that arms and ammunition were still tabooed; at which he expressed great regret, but did not suffer it to influence his hospitality, for he assured the captain that if he would remain a few days at Toeaigh, he should be furnished with every refreshment that he could possibly procure. After dinner he went with him on shore, to take a view of the watering place: it is situated in a small sandy bay, where, over a small space of rugged rocks, a fine stream empties itself. *Kahowmottoo* repeatedly urged his request of the captain's remaining a few days at Toeaigh; declaring he would afterwards accompany him to another of his mansions lying between this bay and *Karakakooa*. To these solicitations the captain in part consented, by promising to stay the next day; not only in expectation of procuring provisions for his people, but also of procuring provender for the cattle and sheep; the poor animals being almost starved by feeding on what they procured at Monterey.

arms and ammunition. Regardless of the taboo, however, the visitors disposed of their cargo, consisting of a hog, some fowls, and vegetables, for some iron, with which they returned to the shore.

† He readily accepted this invitation, and a wind favouring his design, he steered for the village of Toeaigh. Mr. Whidbey, who was in the cutter sounding for an anchorage, made the signal for an eligible situation, where, about two, they anchored in twenty-five fathoms water.

canoes or quitting
of their master
dispense with the
occasion; hoping
which his favourite
he had therefore
enquiries, and in
a present of
in the canoe for
so distinguished
testified, by a flow-
ing the message
pressing request
of Kahowmotoo
plied with every
taboo was at an
ys, and was now

red, Kahowmotoo
it, bringing with
d a plentiful sup-
the liberty of ac-
s and ammunition
e expressed great
influence his hos-
captain that if he
leagh, he should
ment that he could
er he went with
of the watering
sandy bay, where
cks, a fine stream
repeatedly urged
aining a few days
d afterwards ac-
s mansions lying
kooa. To these
rt consented, by
not only in ex-
er for his people,
er for the cattle
ng almost starved
red at Monterey.

the taboo, however,
consisting of a hog,
on, with which they
and a wind favour-
go of Toaigh. Me-
ng for an anchorage,
where, about two
water.

To this cause the captain attributed the severe
losses he had suffered in his passage, amounting
to three rams, two ewes, a bull, and a cow*.

Paying their respects so Kahowmotoo's wives,
and surveying this salt pond, occupied much of
the time and attention of our navigators. Having
verified the former by a distribution of such
articles as they knew were highly esteemed by
them, they returned towards the boats, accom-
panied by the chief and his consorts, and attend-
ed by the natives, who conducted themselves
with great propriety. They presented them-
selves as they passed along, and seemed
alert in affording them any little service or
civility, without being troublesome. On reach-
ing the boats, Captain Vancouver requested Ka-
howmotoo to accompany him on board to dinner;
but, recollecting the taboo, he did not presume
to solicit that favour from the ladies. They were,
however, of a very different opinion; particularly
Namahanna, Kahowmotoo's favourite, who con-
tended that the taboo only prohibited their em-
barking in canoes belonging to Owwhyhee. This
ingenious method of explaining the arbitrary
statute seeming to meet with the concurrence of
Kahowmotoo, they soon embarked, leaving Mr.
Menzies, one of their party, on shore, in search
of vegetable productions; he returned in the
evening, after receiving much civility from the
natives.

Kahowmotoo went on shore with the lady who
had so ingeniously expounded the tabooing law,
and one of the European's boats. On its return a
message arrived from Tianna, requesting to know
who our navigators were?—Adding, that, if they
were friends, he would lose no time in visiting
them. But as it would be late before he could ar-
rive, he would carry a large fire in the bow of his

In the morning of the 15th Kahowmotoo visited the
captain on board, for the purpose of conducting him to his
habitation on shore. To render the visit more agreeable,
eleven fine hogs attended him, with a large assortment of
vegetables, and a quantity of herbage for the cattle. Arms
and ammunition were no longer solicited; he thought him-
self well repaid for these favours by about two yards of red
cloth, a small piece of printed linen, with a few beads, and
other trivial articles intruded as presents to his favourite
ladies. Of these he had four, under the denomination of
wives, who, he said, were anxiously waiting on shore to
see the captain; as the taboo, though expired with regard
to certain particulars, was still in force with regard to
women's embarking in canoes. Such of the female visitors
favoured the Europeans with their company on board,

canoe, as a signal by which he might be known
in the dark. He arrived about four in the
morning of the 16th, just as they were getting
under sail. In his canoe were half a dozen fine
hogs, which he desired might be taken on board,
and said he had others to follow the ship to the
southward. Kahowmotoo, with his favourite
wife, came on board, in consequence of a pre-
concerted signal, to conduct them to Tyeatatooa.
The wind proved variable, as well in direction
as in force. Sometimes the weather was perfect-
ly calm, at others the navigators had gusts from
the land: when night was approaching, a brig
and a sloop were seen in the offing. From the
natives they were informed that these were the
Chatham and the Jackall trader, under the orders
of Mr. Brown of the Butterworth. They in-
stantly made towards them, and expected speedily
to join their consort. But to their great astonish-
ment, on Sunday morning the 17th, they found
themselves about ten leagues from land, and had
lost sight of both the vessels. The morning of
the 18th brought the two vessels, again in sight;
and before noon the Chatham was so near them
that he received a visit from Mr. Puget, by
whom he was informed, that he had traced the
shores on the south-east side of Owwhyhee, without
finding any place that presented a probability of
anchorage. Mr. Puget also informed Captain Van-
couver, that he would find Karakakooa a more
formidable place than he expected: for the people
of the Jackall, who had visited it, had de-
clared it was far from being a desirable stop-
ping place for small vessels, since Tamaahmaah
had procured a number of cannon, and a quantity
of ammunition. That these cannon were planted
and protected by stone walls, along the beach in
the bay before the houses, situated where the

were therefore obliged to have recourse to swimming for
that purpose.

Toaigh is situated in a grove of cocoa-nut trees, behind
a sandy beach: the village consisted only of straggling
houses, of two classes; those intended for the residence of
the inhabitants, were small, mean, miserable huts; but the
others, appropriated to the building and repairing their
canoes, were excellent in their kind: on these occasions,
many were employed, who seemed to finish their work with
neatness and ingenuity. About the middle of the village a
reservoir of salt-water is inclosed by walls of mud and
stones. These salt-works produce large quantities of salt,
equal in colour and quality to any made in Europe, but
the crystals are much larger.

habitations of the priests were destroyed after the death of Captain Cook*.

As they approached Owhyhee on the 20th, they met a great number of canoes, laden with the productions of the country, which were honourably and civilly exchanged for various articles of traffic. Beads, and some other trinkets, were only accepted as presents, and were not requited with any return. Among their visitors was *Tamaahmaah's* eldest son, the presumptive heir to the sovereignty of Owhyhee: he was a shrewd lively boy, of about nine years of age. For the presents the captain had made him, he gave him three or four hogs on his quitting the ship, and promised an additional supply in the morning†.

After some ceremonious conversation between *Tamaahmaah* and the captain, he said the queen and several of his relations were in the canoe alongside, and requested they might be admitted

* Calms, and light baffling winds detained them in an inactive situation, the weather at the same time being oppressively hot and sultry: other disagreeable circumstances arose; the only bull that remained, and a cow that had brought forth a dead calf, were unable to stand, and without speedy relief must both infallibly perish. In the afternoon of the 19th they were visited by several canoes, though about eight or nine leagues from the land. In one of these was a chief named *Crymahahoo*, half brother to *Tamaahmaah*. On him such presents were bestowed as were highly arduous to his rank, and seemed to give him infinite satisfaction: encouraged by this circumstance, the captain expected, through that chief's good offices, to be enabled to get these poor animals conveyed to the shore. Strong intimations were given that such an act would be highly estimated by him: but a thousand evasions and excuses were immediately started: yet, as Captain Vancouver knew that avarice is the predominant passion with most of those islanders, he offered *Crymahahoo* an ample recompence for so desirable a service; the bull and cow were instantly placed in his canoe, in which there were some vegetables. Of these the bull ate plentifully, strongly indicating that he would soon recover by the help of nourishing food, which the shore abundantly supplied.

† Having now almost reached *Tyahtatooa*, Mr. Whidbey was sent in the cutter to examine the anchorage. About noon on the 21st Captain Vancouver was honoured with the presence of *Tamaahmaah*, the king of Owhyhee: From his own memory, and the description given of him by Captain King, he expected to have recognized his former acquaintance by a very savage countenance; but he was agreeably surprised in finding that his riper years had softened that stern ferocity, which his younger days had exhibited, and his general deportment displayed an open, cheerful, sensible mind, combined with generosity and goodness of disposition. He was conducted to the ship in a very large canoe, accompanied by John Young, an English seaman, who was not only a favourite, but also had con-

on board. This was no sooner intimated than granted, and Captain Vancouver was introduced to her majesty, who they had previously understood was the daughter of *Kahoromotoo*, by his wife *Namahanna* now on board. The meeting of the daughter and her parents, sufficiently indicated their consanguinity. She was about sixteen, and one of the finest women they had before beheld in any of the islands. The object of this visit was to invite our navigators to *Karakakooa*; but the reply to their solicitations was that their boat was examining at *Tyahtatooa*, and on her return a satisfactory answer should be given‡.

After several occurrences of no very considerable importance, our navigators proceeded to *Karakakooa*, and found themselves abreast of the bay on the 22d, when they were visited by a vast concourse of people, who brought in their canoes abundance of refreshments to barter for different

articles. *Terrehoo*, who had been dispatched to deliver the bull and the cow to the king, was also of the party, also informed Captain Vancouver that the cow had died in her passage to the island, but that the bull had arrived safe, and ate heartily.

§ Captain Vancouver was highly pleased with the propriety and decorum of the royal party. Though it consisted of many, not a single article was requested; nor did a word escape that could be construed to express an expectation of receiving presents. They were particularly cautious to avoid giving offence: even the king himself was scrupulous, as to enquire when and where he could be seated without incommoding or offending any person. The inhabitants assembled round the ships, were numerous; but being refused admittance on board, they remained perfectly quiet in their canoes, and carried on a friendly and honest intercourse.

Desirous of preserving that harmony which now seemed to exist, the captain distributed among his visitors such presents as were suitable to their respective ranks, and such as he knew would be acceptable to the whole party. Permission was now requested for the friends who were alongside in their canoes, to be permitted to come on board. Leave being granted, a number of new visitors of both sexes, instantly found their way aft, and almost filled the cabin; all of whom were pleased with what they had received. The party having been rendered happy by the distribution, the king, in addition to what he had before received, was presented with a scarlet cloak, reaching from his neck to the ground, adorned with tinsel lace, and further decorated with blue ribbons. The looking-glasses being placed opposite to each other, displayed, at one view the whole of his royal person; when he was so infinitely delighted with his transformation, that the cabin could hardly contain him. He afterwards strutted upon the deck and exposed himself in the most conspicuous places, to attract the applause and admiration of his subjects.

articles; but, being sufficiently stocked with what they had to offer, Captain Vancouver directed that no more of them should be purchased till the ship was properly secured; which was accordingly effected by about noon.

This village, as before stated, was found to be the residence of Tamaahmaah; from whence eleven large canoes put off from the shore with great order, forming two equal sides of an obtuse triangle. The largest canoe being in the angular point, was rowed by eighteen paddles on each side, in which his Owhyhean majesty, clad in a printed linen gown, was seated: an elegant feathered cloak, reaching from his shoulders, and trailing upon the ground, with a handsome helmet upon his head, gave him an air of majestic dignity. Thus pompously equipped, he paraded round the vessels, with a slow and solemn motion, all, with infinite affectation of majesty, he ascended the side of the ship. Taking hold of Captain Vancouver's hand, he asked, if he and his suite were sincerely his friends? This question was answered in the affirmative. He then said, he understood they belonged to King George, and asked if he was also his friend? Being satisfied in this particular, he declared that he was their good friend; in testimony of which, according to the custom of the country, they saluted touching noses. He then presented the cap-

tain with four beautiful feathered helmets, and ordered ten large canoes to approach the starboard side, each containing nine very large hogs; whilst a fleet of smaller canoes contained a profusion of vegetables. This supply was more than they could conveniently receive; the decks of the Discovery and the Chatham being both encumbered with good things, but he would not suffer a single hog to be returned to the shore.

The remaining live stock the captain had on board, consisting of five cows, two ewes, and a ram, were sent on shore in some of his canoes. They were all in a healthy state, but in a low condition. Tamaahmaah himself was particularly careful in placing these animals in the canoes. In addition to his magnificent present of provisions, other canoes were now laden with cloth, mats, and other articles of their manufacture, and were delivering into the ship; but, as they could not then be received, the king permitted them to be returned to the shore, and ordered them to be taken care of; as they belonged to the captain, and not to himself. The remainder of the section is almost wholly taken up with an account of two English seamen residing on the island, and the characters of some of the leading chiefs; a circumstantial account of whom would probably be thought a deviation from the proposed plan of the work.

SECTION XII.

Occurrences at Karakakooa Bay—Visit from the Widow of Terreeoboo—A Sham Fight—A general Peace suggested—Departure from Owhyhee.

AS Karakakooa does not naturally furnish a sufficient quantity of fresh water, on visiting the well from which the Resolution and Discovery had been supplied, our navigators found but a small quantity, and that extremely stinkish: it was therefore apprehended that the use of it would be pernicious to the health of the people. The vast quantity of that beverage required for the cattle in their passage hither, made the supply they now required very considerable; he therefore applied to Tamaahmaah to assist him on this important business; the result of which was that a certain number of his canoes should each take one, two, or three puncheons,

according to their respective size, to different places on this side of the island, to be filled with that liquid from the little wells in their plantations. The plan was instantly agreed on, and speedily carried into execution. A dozen puncheons, by way of experiment, were dispatched to different destinations, some of which were expected to return in less than two or three days; but it so happened that on the following morning, the 26th, six of them were brought back, full of most excellent water; for which the procurers were amply repaid by a piece of iron for each cask, of the length of six inches, and the breadth of two. The people of the neighbourhood were

also directed to bring down water for sale, and they continued that traffic with their usual integrity and honour*.

On Thursday the 28th, *Kerneecubervey*, the unfortunate widow of the late *Terreoboo*, favoured Captain Vancouver with a visit. After lamenting the death of her husband, and witnessing nearly the extirpation of his whole race; and after surviving a long state of captivity, she had met in *Tamaahmaah*, a generous conqueror, and a kind friend and protector. During the conflict at the revolution, he was obliged to have recourse to some violence to shelter her from the vengeance of his nearest relations, and the fury of the populace, who clamorously demanded her immediate execution, and the lives of all her husband's adherents. Having seen her in 1779, when the captain visited these islands, he perfectly recollected the features of her countenance; but the high degree of placidity it then possessed, compared with her present appearance, too strongly manifested that she had since experienced much sorrow and dejection†.

On Sunday the 3d of March, his material business being almost accomplished, the captain visited the three villages in the bay; and first of all the fatal spot where Captain Cook, so unfortunately, for the world, was deprived of his valuable life. Here, as well as in the other villages, the very numerous inhabitants behaved with the greatest civility and decorum. It may be proper to observe, however, that they repaired on shore with both boats completely armed, and, as it was usual on a Sunday, they were clothed in their best attire, and attended by a guard of marines. Perhaps this appearance had some influence on their behaviour; the vanity of *Tamaahmaah*, was however, much gratified by this parade, and he

* The king passed the day in visiting the two vessels, where all his enquiries were pertinent, and directed to useful objects. Not visiting the *Discovery* on the 27th, the captain received a message from him, informing him that an axe, and some other articles belonging to the *Chatham*, had been stolen by some women who had been suffered to sleep on board: the articles were, however, restored the following day.

† In faltering accents she informed the captain, that she had accompanied *Tamaahmaah*, to pay him a visit and see the ship; that his name was familiar to her, but his person was so altered, that she could not for a long time be reconciled to the change in him, which fourteen years had produced. Curiosity induced her to visit several parts of the ship; and whilst she was so engaged, cheerfulness

regretted that he had not an English dress to sport upon the occasion. But he substituted a garment which the captain had given him, which was much applauded by the surrounding multitude. *Tianna*, and other chiefs, were present; but the ambitious *Tianna* had envy strongly depicted in his countenance, on his not receiving the same degree of respect that was shewn to his sovereign. In walking through the village he asked the captain in a contemptuous tone of voice, why he gave that man so many things, and himself so few? The answer given was intended as a kind of explanation, but it was not thought satisfactory to the interrogator. Nothing further occurred during the perambulation on shore, that merited attention. When it was ended, they returned on board to dinner.

Having promised to give the king an entertainment with fire-works, that exhibition was fixed for Monday evening; and, in order to contribute to the pleasures of the day, the sovereign proposed to have a sham-battle in the afternoon between the best of warriors that could be convened on so short a notice. On the 4th, as soon as dinner was over, they were summoned to the review; and *Tamaahmaah*, deriving consequence from all his ceremonies and formalities, requested the captain to be attended on shore by a guard.

The warriors assembled towards the north corner of the beach, and consisted of about one hundred and fifty men, armed with spears. They were divided into three parties. The sham spears were blunt pointed sticks; the combatants were without any leader, making speeches as they approached, replete with vaunts and menaces. His Owhyhean majesty entered the lists for a short time, and conducted himself with great dexterity‡.

§ It seemed to obtrude for a moment, and to suspend the weighty afflictions of her declining years. Captain Vancouver presented her with an assemblage of valuable suits to her former distinguished rank; and obtained, in her presence, a solemn promise from *Tamaahmaah*, that the articles he had given her should not be taken from her by him or any other person.

¶ But as the relation of this disorderly sham-fight would yield no information or amusement to the reader, the display of fire-works may probably have attractions. *Tamaahmaah*, and some of the chiefs, recollected to have seen some indifferent exhibitions of this kind, that were given by Captain Cook, on his being visited by *Terreoboo*, and those of Captain Vancouver, consisting of a greater number and all in the highest preservation, were viewed by

The
Howroo
informed
inhabitants
only
amour
armed,
between
that they
house
ome opi
women o
the prevail
The we
companies
blowing i
These squ
well into
obliged th
maah, and
after day-
years. T
with a
repeated
bled on t
of these pas
The cap
maah, and
adately to
happiness,
ing disgrac
ness each
en they co
A genera
ening of
disposed of
ook their l
his departu
ants, obser
ward; and
tended to
orning. S
mented h
ellow scath
at the s
ak he h
after expat
at the two
years, in h
e then care
England.
George; an
strictly enj
ver their
ing in the
lf the ho
ood a frien
Vol. I

The following morning *Cavahera*, the chief of *Kowroa*, who was present the preceding evening, informed him, that on his return home, the inhabitants considered what they beheld as a diversion only, but from its continuance, and the clamour attending it, they were exceedingly alarmed, and suspected that a quarrel had arisen between our navigators and *Tamaahmaah*, and that they were extirpating him, and all his people and houses, on that side of the country. The same opinion had prevailed with many of the women on board the vessels, who could hardly be prevailed on to believe otherwise*.

The weather was cloudy in the afternoon, accompanied with rain; the wind was also unsteady, blowing in squalls from the northern quarter. These squalls continuing brought a very heavy swell into the bay in the morning of the 7th, and obliged them, much to the satisfaction of *Tamaahmaah*, and others, to remain stationary. Soon after day-light they all flocked round the Europeans. The king was not, according to his

custom, with astonishment, admiration, and fear; and from the repeated bursts of acclamation from the inhabitants assembled on this occasion, it was difficult to determine which of these passions most generally operated.

The captain had long endeavoured to convince *Tamaahmaah*, and the chiefs, that a peaceable mode of life was infinitely to be preferred, and more conducive to real happiness, than the continued state of warfare that had so long disgraced their islands, from an inordinate ambition to possess each other's territories, which experience had shewn them they could not remain long masters of.

A general periodical *taboo* was to take place on the evening of Tuesday the 5th, and most of the chiefs, having disposed of the articles they had brought with them, they took their leave, knowing the captain was speedily to make his departure. The *taboo* required the removal of the tents, observatory, &c. which were of course received on board; and the captain had informed *Tamaahmaah* that he intended to sail on Wednesday night, or the following morning. Supposing this might be his last visit, *Tamaahmaah*

presented him with a pompous cloak, composed of red and yellow feathers; with a collection of other native curiosities, and at the same time delivered into his custody the superb cloak he had worn on his former visit at their arrival. After expatiating on the beauty of this cloak, he pointed out the two holes made in different parts of it by the enemy's spears, in his last battle for the sovereignty of this island: he then carefully folded it up, and desired, on his arrival in England, that he would present it in his name to king George; and, as no person had worn it but himself, he strictly enjoined him not to suffer any person to throw it over their shoulders, declaring it was the most valuable thing in the island of *Owhyhee*, and he therefore did himself the honour to send it to so great a monarch, and so good a friend as he considered the king of England. When

Vol. I. No. XXXVI.

general practice, among the earliest who made their appearance: his delay had been occasioned by his waiting to come off in state, in one of his largest canoes, that had been rigged for him with a full suit of canvas sails, with a union jack and a pendant. On his arrival he seemed highly delighted with his man of war, but admitted that she would make a better appearance with a few swivels properly mounted. The captain was of the same opinion, but the words "*Taboo king George*," prevented any further conversation on that subject†.

Kahowmotoo, performed his promise of visiting our navigators on the 9th, and presented them with twenty fine hogs, with a large assortment of vegetables: a handsome feathered cloak accompanied these provisions.

The servants of the king brought eighty large hogs for the *Discovery*, and half that number for the *Chatham*, with considerable supplies of vegetables for both. During the forenoon Captain Vancouver received a visit from *Tianna*, who

the captain received the cloak, he gave his majesty the most positive assurances of acting agreeably with his directions.

Thinking he had not sufficiently rewarded *Tamaahmaah*, for the very essential services he had rendered the Europeans, Captain Vancouver resolved to give him an additional testimony of his friendship, and their general approbation: a number of useful and ornamental articles was selected; among the latter were two handsome cloaks, and a quantity of variegated gartering tape; the latter being held in great estimation, as being much used in decorating a part of their dress called the *maro*. The useful articles were a variety of culinary utensils, and implements of husbandry; with an assortment of the most general smiths' and carpenters' tools. With this acquisition he was immoderately delighted. He then took a most affectionate leave, not only of the captain and all the officers, but of every person he saw upon the deck.

† On the evening of their departure, *Tamaahmaah* was required to resign himself to the strict obedience of a *taboo* which was at that time to commence. On this occasion all his people who had any commercial intercourse with the Europeans, were to present before him all the treasure they had acquired and render him the customary tribute. Such presents as the king himself had received, were also to be exposed to public view, when certain priests would perform exhortations, prayers, and other functions of their office. On the 8th the weather being pleasant, with a gentle breeze from the land, they sailed from *Karakakooa*, and stood along shore to the northward. *Tamaahmaah*, with his queen, and many of his attendants overtook them. The royal party continued on board till about two in the afternoon; when, taking a respectful leave of them all, and lamenting the shortness of their visit, they returned to *Karakakooa*.

brought with him about half a dozen lean hogs, for which he had neither room nor occasion. He was, however, rewarded with a farewell present, with which he ought to have been perfectly satisfied; as he could assume no merit, either for the supplies, or services bestowed upon them; yet his envious pride displayed itself in keen expressions of dissatisfaction that he had not been complimented with articles, equally valuable with those that had been offered to *Tamaahmaah*. His conversation was really in so domineering a stile, and so different from the language adopted by the other chiefs of *Owhyhee*, that the captain was induced to request he would return the scarlet cloth, axes, and other useful articles he had given him, observing that these were so inadequate to his claims, they could not possibly be worth his acceptance. With this proposal, however, *Tiamg* was not willing to comply, pretending, on recollection, to be perfectly satisfied.

Having no further business at *Owhyhee*, our navigators made the best of their way out of the bay; but calms and light baffling winds rendered their situation stationary, which gave the natives an opportunity of displaying their dexterity in catching a small kind of bonetto. They were not only entertained with the sport, but also furnished with an explanation of the general trade at the time they arrived on the coast. It was the consequence of the commencement of the season for the taking of these fish, which are excellent when fresh, and are to be taken in such abundance that they constitute a principal part of the food of the inhabitants, when preserved and salted. In the evening *Kahowmotoo*, and all the natives took their leave after the strongest assurances of perpetual friendship, and expressing the highest satisfaction and happiness at their visit.

The astronomical observations made at *Kakooa*, conclude this narrative of their transactions during their continuance at *Owhyhee*.

SECTION XIII.

Arrival off Mowee—Particulars of the Murder of Lieutenant Hergest, & Conversation respecting Peace with Owhyhee—Peace acceded to by the Chiefs—Departure from Mowee—Whytelee's Account of the Murder—Trial and Execution of the Murderers—Proceed to Attoou—Provision made for two Female Natives, found at Nootka—Quit the Sandwich Islands.

ARRIVING off the eastern shores of Mowee, on the 10th of March, our navigators availed themselves of a favourable breeze, and bore away along the coast about two miles from the shore. They took a direction from hence to the south point of the island. From the number of villages and separate houses, they supposed the island to be tolerably well inhabited; but the scene was changed as they advanced a few miles to the westward. The appearance of the country was different: the shores shewed no indications of being inhabited, and were almost destitute of vegetable productions. Perpendicular veins separated the different strata, and descended down the mountains. They passed the south point at the distance of about half a mile: it is formed by craggy rocks, the sea breaking at a little distance to the north-west of it. Approaching these breakers, they gained soundings, and suddenly decreased the depth from

twenty-five to ten fathoms; but on hauling shore they could reach no bottom with eight fathoms.

While they were thus situated, they were visited by some of the poor natives from a small cove, where they had some wretched habitations. Their poverty was further apparent, by their having only a few small packages of salt to dispose of, and by the miserable plight of their canoes. In the afternoon they were visited by a chief, in the only decent canoe they had seen at Mowee. He had been sent by *Tiamg* to learn who they were, and to know if their intentions were friendly towards the island. His first question being answered, he seemed suspicious of the motives of their visit, in consequence of the late murders at *Woahoo*. Reports that had been propagated respecting that melancholy business, induced Captain *King* to endeavour to obtain the real circum-

at Owwhyhee, on the way out of the bay, the winds rendered it difficult to give the natives their dexterity in the art of navigation. They were not, but also for the general trade of the coast. It was the object of the season, which are excellent in such abundance, and all the natives, the most assured of their visit. The natives made at Kure, and of their transport at Owwhyhee.

conversation respecting the natives—Whyteete proceeded to attend to the Islands.

but on hauling the bottom with eight fathoms, they were informed that the natives from a small, wretched habitation, were apparent, by the traces of salt to the north, and the plights of the natives were visited. The natives they had seen sent by the natives to know if they were the island. The natives, he seemed to be their visit, in the natives at Woahoo. The natives propagated respect, and induced Captain Vancouver to remain the real circle.

of that affair, that the offenders might be brought to justice".

Captain Vancouver again expressed his wishes to Titeeree and his friends, that they would advance their happiness and welfare, by embracing the blessings of peace; when Taio requested, that on the captain's return to these islands, he would take him to Owwhyhee, where, under his protection, he would treat with Tamaahmaah, and a permanent peace might be concluded, and an amicable intercourse established between Owwhyhee, and all the islands; and he requested that these intentions might be made known to Tamaahmaah. This was accordingly done in the captain's letter to Owwhyhee on this subject, which was to be entrusted to a sensible chief, who, invested with a sufficient authority, was instantly to proceed to Owwhyhee, to negotiate this important business with Tamaahmaah.

A chief named Martier was dispatched upon this embassy; a man whose appearance was far from being prepossessing, though he was known to be shrewd and sagacious. His countenance was strongly marked by ferocity; but he was remarkable for the mildness and urbanity of his disposition. In all their conferences he was a principal speaker; and from the attention paid to Titeeree and Taio, to what he advanced, it evidently appeared that his abilities were held in the highest estimation.

Having so far succeeded in this favourite object, the captain embraced the opportunity of a public assembly, to advert again to the murder at Woahoo. On this occasion he was hastily addressed by Titeeree, who said that business was now settled; that they had full confidence in his assertions, and he ought not to doubt them! He considered the restoration of peace to these islands, and the punishment of the assassins at Woahoo to be important to the commercial

He had understood at Owwhyhee, that three of the principal murderers had been put to death by the orders of the king. These, and several other circumstances that he adduced, rendered it more than probable, that Titeeree and Taio were innocent of the murder with which they had been indirectly charged. A pusillanimous conduct, on an occasion, would have sunk the character of Europeans into the lowest contempt; and atrocities would become frequent; to the disgrace of human nature, and the dishonour of the adventurers engaged in the commerce of the North Pacific Ocean.

Wednesday the 13th, the captain was honoured with the presence of Titeeree, who, he was informed, was considered as king of all the islands to leeward of Owwhyhee,

adventurers in this ocean, the captain had long contemplated these objects. The prospect of one of them being happily accomplished; and of justice taking place in the other, had given him great satisfaction.

As hogs and other refreshments were not to be procured, he was desirous of quitting this station. Titeeree, and his counsellors, were informed of this resolution, when, at their earnest request, he promised to pay them a visit on shore, while the vessel was preparing for her departure. The chiefs, however, requested he would defer his departure for a few days, and further solicited that a display of fire-works might be complied with; when they would repair to the ship, and accompany him on shore. The captain was readily induced to comply with their wishes; and on the morning of the 17th, the king, Taio, and the rest of the chiefs; and in the afternoon accompanied by Titeeree, and some of the naval officers in two armed boats, with a guard of marines, Captain Vancouver paid his compliments on shore, where the landing was but indifferent.

The captain, and those who accompanied him, were received by the natives with great civility and respect; their number amounting to about six or seven hundred, including the children. The king conducted them through the crowd, who readily made way for them, and behaved in an orderly inoffensive manner. They soon arrived at his residence, consisting of two small shabby huts, situated in a pleasant grove of spreading trees; where they were regaled with cocoa-nuts, and other refreshments. The captain requested Titeeree and Taio to walk with him through the plantations: they begged leave to decline this task, pleading their great age and infirmities; but they directed that Namahanna, Tomohomoha, and Martier should attend them,

and that Taio derived all his authority from him. Titeeree entered the ship with a sort of partial confidence, attended by several chiefs: he appeared to be upwards of sixty years of age, and greatly debilitated and emaciated; the colour of his skin seemed to indicate that the feebleness of his frame was occasioned by an excessive use of the ava. His faltering voice proclaimed the decline of life; but his countenance, though furrowed by years and irregularities, displayed a cheerfulness and sensibility, which time had only partially obliterated. Among the articles the captain presented to him on this occasion, was a superb cloak, not inferior to any of those he had given Tamaahmaah: his whole suite were also complimented with presents proportioned to their rank, and each appeared well satisfied.

who

who were equally capable of preventing the intrusion of the curious, and rendering them any other service*.

Having satisfied their curiosity, they returned to the royal habitation, where *Titeerec* and *Taio* were dining on raw pickled fish and *pos taro*, a dish prepared from the *taro root* resembling hasty pudding. Supposing the Europeans would not be much delighted with such food, they had provided two excellent baked hogs, which were immediately served up; but as the cook had provided no vegetables, which would have been an important article to mariners, they declined the repast; and the chiefs, having finished their meal, returned with them on board.

Thinking this would be the last visit he should receive from *Titeerec* and *Taio*, the captain presented them with an assortment of tools, utensils, implements, cloth, linen, and beads. To *Titeerec* he also gave some goats; which being the first foreign animals imported into *Mowee*, was regarded as an important present. The inferior chiefs and attendants were not neglected on this occasion, the captain having more than gratified their most sanguine expectations. They expressed an inclination to have been liberal of their favours to the Europeans, and lamented their want of ability, from the general distress of their country; but they promised to assist them on their return to the utmost of their ability. In the evening a display of fire-works took place to the great terror and admiration of their visitors,

* Attended by the guard and these chiefs, they visited the cultivated parts of the extensive plain of *Rahaina*: the quarter which bordered on the sea was judiciously laid out in plantations of taro, sugar-cane, potatoes, the clove-plant, &c. and well shaded by spreading trees, principally of the bread fruit; but the productions of these plains were less luxuriant than those of *Otaheite*, or the *Society Islands*. To the ravages in *Tamaah-maah's* wars, the impoverished appearance of these crops were to be ascribed; and the dreary aspect of the country was incontestible evidence of this melancholy truth. The tenements in the lands formerly cultivated, were now laying waste, their fences partly demolished, and their little canals destroyed. The larger portion of the plain was in this ruinous state; nor was a hog or a fowl any where to be seen: The very small part of the land which appeared to be in a flourishing state, bore the certain marks of very recent labour.

† The exhibition being ended, the captain expected to have taken leave of his *Mowee* friends; but the darkness of the night, and a heavy surf breaking on the shore, induced the king and *Taio* to request permission to stay on board. Contrary to the general rule, he consented to indulge them, and part of their retinue with the cabin. The

and their attendants on board. All the natives of every description, assembled about the ship in their canoes†.

Light baffling winds attended our navigation after leaving *Rahaina* roadstead, till the evening of the 18th, when they reached the channel between *Mowee* and *Morotoi*, and anchored for the night off the north-west part of *Mowee*. With a light easterly breeze; on the morning of the 20th, they directed their course so as to sail along the north side of *Woahoo*. They were visited by some of the natives in small canoes who brought hardly any thing to dispose of. One double canoe also made its appearance, in which came *James Coleman*, one of the three men left by *Kendrick* at *Atowai*: this man had quitted *Kendrick's* service, and entered into the service of *Titeerec*, who had stationed him at this island to regulate the trade, and assist such vessels as might touch at *Woahoo* for refreshments.

Coleman was accompanied by a chief named *Tennacee*, and a youth called *Ta-hooboo-ar-ah*. The latter, having been to *China* in one of the trading vessels, had gathered a few English words and phrases, with which he could render his conversation intelligible to the natives of the country. These people informed Captain *Vancouver* that they were sent by *Tri-too-boory*, the eldest son of *Titeerec*, and Governor of *Woahoo*, to enquire who they were, and to tender them such supplies as the country afforded, though they could not present boast of any abundance.

† The night was more devoted to conversation than repose. *Titeerec* departed suddenly the next morning, without the knowledge of the captain, who was therefore apprehensive that some accidental offence had been given him, but *Taio* assured him to the contrary, declaring that such was the usual method of retiring. *Taio*, *Martier*, and some of the other chiefs, continued with them till they sailed: about noon a light breeze from the westward, being favourable for their purpose, they took an affectionate leave of the captain, and he put to sea.

‡ *Coleman* introduced the melancholy subject of the murder at *Woahoo*; but for more particular information he referred them to *Tohoobooarto*, who was present, and would relate the whole of that melancholy tragedy. *Tohoobooarto* declared he had received much civility from *Mr. Hergest*, and the other gentlemen, on his visiting *Daedalus* at *Whyma bay*; that when *Mr. Hergest* and *Mr. Gooch* were going on shore, he attended them in the boat; their interpreter: that, on their arrival at the beach, he advised *Mr. Hergest* not to attempt to land, assuring him that no chief was present, and the most abandoned wretches inhabited that part of the island: that, his caution being disregarded, they ventured on shore, and after taking the

All the natives
about the ship

Our navigator
till the evening
the channel be
and anchored for
part of Mowee
in the morning
course so as to
ho. They were
in small canoes
g to dispose of
its appearance,
one of the three
ai: this man had
entered into the
him at this island
ist such vessels
freshments.

Ta-hoo-bo-ar-
ina in one of the
d a few English
h he could render
the natives of the
ned Captain Van
Tri-too-boors,
vernor of Woahoo
d to tender the
afforded, though
of any abundance

ersation than reposed
morning, without
therefore apprehensi
n given him, but T
ing that such was
rtier, and some of
till they sailed: about
ward, being favourable
ectionate leave of

choly subject of a
particular information
who was present, a
melancholy tragedy
ved much civility
en, on his visiting
n Mr. Hergest and
ded them in the boat
rival at the beach,
to land, assuring
ost abandoned wife
that, his caution be
and after taking

He further declared, that having interfered to save Mr. Hergest, he received a wound in his left arm, the scar of which he shewed; and added, that the man who murdered Mr. Hergest, with two or three who assisted, were still living on the spot; the former of these he had pointed out to Coleman a few days before, *Toohoo-bo-oar-to* having finished his narrative, he was interrogated by *Tomohomoho* with respect to the residence of the offenders; and he was requested to assist him in apprehending them, and bringing them to justice. *Toohoo-bo-oar-to* wished to decline this office, fearing the friends and relations of the offenders would murder him: but, being assured by *Tomohomoho's* protection, he readily consented, and the whole party proceeded to the shore*. *Toohoo-bo-oar-to* did not appear as a witness against the accused, which occasioned Captain Vancouver some regret; but as it was extremely probable that Coleman's evidence would corroborate what the chiefs had asserted, he was ordered to attend. On his entering the apartment, he attentively surveyed the persons of the supposed criminals, and pointed out the same man whom the chiefs had pronounced the murderer of Mr. Hergest; but acknowledged that he knew nothing of the other two. Mr. Dobson, one of

measures to facilitate a supply of water, Mr. Hergest, notwithstanding repeated cautions from the young man, persisted in accompanying Mr. Gooch from the sea-side, towards the habitations of the natives, by whom they were treated in a friendly manner. *Toohoo-bo-oar-to* then left them in order to wash himself in the fresh water (a prevailing custom with those who have been some time at sea;) and whilst these gentlemen were absent, a dispute arose at the watering-place, between the natives and the crew of the *Dædalus*. An affray ensued, and a Portuguese seaman was killed.

No molestation was offered or intended against the English gentlemen, who received great civility from the people of the village, till intelligence of this unfortunate transaction arrived; when, to prevent the effects of revenge, they thought it necessary to destroy the chiefs they had in their power; in consequence of which Mr. Gooch was instantly stabbed through the heart with a *pahoa*. By the next blow that Mr. Hergest received, he was only wounded; he endeavoured to make his way towards the boat, a stone struck him on the side of the head, and he was afterwards most barbarously murdered. The fellow who stabbed Mr. Gooch, and that who first wounded Mr. Hergest, as well as another who had been active at the watering-place, had been apprehended by *Titeeree's* orders.

The next day, the chiefs, after a due investigation of the business, pointed out the principal offender, whose description perfectly corresponded with that given by *Toohoo-bo-oar-to*: half his body was rendered black by punctu-

Vol. I. No. XXXVI.

the mishipmen who came out in the *Dædalus*, without the least hesitation, pointed out the same man, and was ready to make oath to his identity†.

Many other particulars tended to confirm the perpetration of the murder, and that these men were at least accessory to it; but Captain Vancouver desired the chiefs would endeavour to find out, and bring on board every person who could prove the innocence of those in custody: but this injunction was little attended to, as every one was perfectly convinced that no such person could be found: he therefore wished that a number of the natives might be gathered together, to witness the awful punishment the culprits had brought upon themselves by their barbarity; and that they would publicly make it known, that the execution would probably take place on the morning of the successive day.

Early on the 22d. several of the natives were observed about the ship; and after breakfast, Coleman, with *Tomohomoho* and *Tennavee*, came on board. Immediate execution of the prisoners was demanded by the two latter. A short respite was, however, granted, but nothing appearing that could either palliate or extenuate their guilt, sentence of death was formally pronounced against them‡.

This

ating: the other two men were equally punctuated, but not with the same regularity. By these appearances alone, their persons could not have been sufficiently identified, as several of *Titeeree's* subjects were disfigured in the same barbarous taste; a practice which had been adopted in the preceding war, for the purpose of increasing the ferocity of their appearance, and creating terror in their enemies.

† Captain Vancouver ordered the prisoners into confinement till further evidence should be produced: *Tomohomoho* disapproved of the delay of punishment, and begged the prisoners might be immediately executed; but the captain persisted in the exercise of his own feelings. A fourth person had been suspected of being concerned in the murder, but from the little probability of his being taken, and other circumstances, any further search was declined.

‡ Before they were taken from the ship, they were placed in irons on the quarter-deck; where, in the presence of the whole ship's company, Captain Vancouver recapitulated the crime they had committed, and the solemn judgment of the chiefs; circumstances which were also made generally known among the Indian spectators who were present. To render the spectacle more awful, a guard of seamen and marines were drawn up on one side of the ship, and alongside of it next the shore, a canoe was stationed for the execution: the rest of the crew were properly arranged, to prevent any disturbance or commotion.

Another essential ceremony still remained to be performed: one of these malefactors had long hair, which the law required

5 Q

This public example so long after the perpetration of the crime, it was hoped, would have a salutary effect, as it would convince the islanders that no intervention of time would, in future, prevent the regular course of justice. The dead bodies were taken to the shore, attended by many of the natives who witnessed the awful scene, and who paddled slowly and solemnly towards the island. The captain had intended to have caused each of these dead bodies to have been hung upon a tree near the shore, to deter others from committing similar offences; but *Tomohomoho* assured him that such spectacles would be thought extremely improper, contrary to their religious rites, and would give offence to the whole priesthood.

The two chiefs urged Captain Vancouver to pay a visit to *Trytooboory*, protesting that had he not been extremely ill, he would have been present at the late unpleasant business; and that he was particularly desirous of the captain's friendship. Though he entertained no apprehensions for his safety, whilst he was under the protection of the chief, he thought it would have been imprudent, so soon after the execution of the criminals, to throw temptations of revenge in the way of an ill-disposed part of the people by placing himself and others in their power on shore: their civil invitations were therefore respectfully declined.

But as an interview only was required, and as *Trytooboory's* indisposition, and the want of a proper conveyance, prevented his coming on board, Captain Vancouver proposed, as it was a fine day, to make a commodious platform, on which he might easily come alongside; and then, if he should be inclined to enter the ship, he should be hoisted in by a chair, or the parties

required to be severed from his head previous to his execution, to be ceremoniously presented as a customary tribute to the king of the island. The captain was shocked at the want of feeling manifested by the two chiefs on this solemn occasion, who rudely and indecently contended for the honour of cutting it off, and presenting the tragic prize to the king. The odious contest being settled, the criminals were separately taken into a double canoe, where they were lashed hand and foot, and deprived of life by *Tenaavee*, their own chief; and so dexterously was this office performed, that life instantly fled with the report of the piece, muscular motion seeming also to cease at the same moment.

Though so extremely indisposed, his conversation was cheerful and agreeable, and the captain had the happiness of hearing him approve of the proceedings against the unfortunate wretches who had that morning suffered. The protracted peace with *Qwhyhee* was next adverted to: he

might converse together on the platform. *Coleman*, with *Tennavee* departed to communicate this plan to the chief, to whom he again sent the present of red cloth and other articles. These had the desired effect, and the messengers soon returned with *Trytooboory*, who without hesitation begged to be hoisted into the ship; this being readily complied with, he was securely placed upon the quarter-deck. *Trytooboory's* age did not seem to exceed thirty-three years; his countenance and frame were emaciated and debilitated; and he was so totally deprived of the use of his legs, that he was carried from place to place like an infant.

The usual compliments, and mutual exchange of friendly assurances having taken place, the captain requested the favour of his company below: To this he readily assented; but when the natives in the canoes about the ship were informed of his intentions, a general alarm arose, and he was earnestly requested not to quit the deck, expecting some disagreeable consequence might happen: *Trytooboory*, however, paid no attention to these remonstrances, and ordered the people who were carrying him in the chair to proceed to the cabin, where he was comfortably seated, and appeared to be perfectly at home.

With a pleasant breeze from the westward on the 24th, the navigators plied to the windward along the south side of *Woahoo*, till the afternoon, when they anchored abreast of the westernmost opening, called by the natives *Opo-ro-ah*. Whilst they remained in this situation, a few of the natives paid them a visit: their canoes were small, and very indifferent, and their visit was that of mere curiosity, as they had very few articles to barter. In the afternoon their attention

much applauded the measure, and said, if it could be effected it would be of infinite importance to them; and by the production of a greater abundance from the soil, they would be enabled to procure a more ample supply of European commodities. *Trytooboory*, having heard of the fame of the European fire-works, requested to be indulged with a sight of their effect. Willing to oblige, the captain gratified his curiosity by the display of a small assortment in the evening, from the after part of the ship. These were beheld by the surrounding natives, with a degree of awful astonishment he had never observed before. The exhibition being ended, *Trytooboory* was conveyed into the canoe in the same style he had been hoisted into the ship. Before his departure, the captain complimented him with some additional articles; and, with these and his reception he seemed particularly delighted.

platform. Cole had been every assistance in his power, I made them know: on this occasion he was afforded the greatest satisfaction in the choice of the articles which were presented to him. To these he was fully entitled for the integrity, by which he was ever actuated, from the first to the last moment he had associated with the navigators.

They were now visited by some of the natives in the most wretched canoes they had ever seen among the South-Sea islanders: Some time after, several of the inhabitants of another village earnestly intreated their anchoring; promising that if they would stay till the morning, their boats would be on board with a number of hogs, and a large collection of vegetables; but they would not visit them then, as it was *taboo* *poory*, the face of the country, however, did not promise an abundant supply; the situation being exposed, and the extent of anchorage limited and bad. Under these circumstances, having cleared the shores by eleven at night, they presently made the best of their way, with a light south-east breeze, towards Attowai.

The weather being calm induced some of the islanders, who were passing from Attowai to the westward, to take the opportunity of visiting the ship. The foremost of these, undertaking so distant a voyage in a single canoe, attracted their attention; and, on her coming alongside, she proved to be the finest canoe they had ever seen among these islands. She was sixty-one feet and half in length, exceeding by four feet and a half the largest canoes of Owhyhee; and the workmanship of the whole was performed in a very masterly manner. If the size of this canoe was still a greater curiosity, the wood of which it was formed was still a greater: it was fabricated from a very fine pine-tree, supposed to have been drifted from the ocean, and probably the growth of some of the northern parts of America. The circumstance of fir-timber being drifted on the north-west side of these islands is not uncommon, especially at Attowai, where a double canoe was

made from two small pine-trees, that were driven on shore nearly at the same spot. Three or four trees of the pine tribe were at that time lying on the island, which had occasionally been lodged there by the sea, and which time had rendered absolutely useless.

In the morning of the 27th, a pleasant, though unfavourable breeze, rendered our navigators unable to weather the north-east point of Attowai, as they had intended, for the purpose of examining its northern shores. But being unwilling hastily to abandon the project they had in view, they tacked about two miles from the shore. A range of low hills, at the foot of distant mountains, presented a most pleasing appearance; from the richness of its verdure, the high state of its cultivation, and its romantic air.

About three miles to the south of the southern extremity, lies the south-east point of the inland. Not far from this point is a small cove, accessible only for boats, where a village of the natives is enriched by a rivulet flowing into it. This portion of Attowai, the most delightful district of the island, is the principal residence of the king, or, in his absence, the superior chief. Here *Enemo* the regent, with the young prince *Tamooerrrie*, were now residing; who sent Williams (the Welchman mentioned in their former visit) to acquaint Captain Vancouver, that in the course of the morning they would visit the ship. The captain had received private intelligence, that his behaviour on a former occasion had been so highly approved by *Enemo*, the young prince, and the principal chiefs, that hogs and many other articles had been a long time *tabooed*, that his demands might be the more amply supplied. Of these friendly intentions they were fully informed before they quitted Owhyhee; but knowing the great South-Sea nation of islanders to have little adherence to truth, he did not rely implicitly on such tales, and had fortunately availed himself of the bounty of *Tamaahmah*, and his other Owhyhean friends. It was indeed intimated to him, that having ex-

said, if it could be of any service to them; and being informed from the soil, that the more ample supply of the natives, having heard of the ship, requested to be taken on board. Willing to oblige, the ship displayed a small flag, and after part of the ship was observed before. The natives, with a degree of curiosity, were conveyed into the ship, and complimented him with these and his reception.

The leg-bones of the two chiefs were in the canoe, with some of the flesh and sinews adhering to them; to be thus presented to *Tio*, as trophies of victory over the rebels. This large canoe was charged with the official dispatch, and the others were conducting certain ring-leaders as prisoners to *Tio* to be examined respecting their conduct in the insurrection; among whom were several of his nearest relations.

ceeded

ceeded the period of their promised return, the importunate demands of the trading vessels, and the extravagant prices paid by their commanders, under the persuasion that they should not return, most of the supplies had been disposed of; some few hogs, however, were to be procured from the north side, and fortunately they were in the route he intended to pursue.

Williams corroborated the account of the insurrection which had been related the preceding day. He stated that it arose from the conduct of the regent *Enemo*, and that no injury was intended against *Taio*, or his son. Their aversion to him had principally arisen from his having put several people to death, and confiscated the property of others, for having been suspected of witchcraft; a notion very prevalent among the Sandwich islanders. They again stood in shore, and about noon received the honour of a visit from *Enemo*.

The captain expected much satisfaction from the renewal of their former acquaintance, but he experienced sensations of a very opposite nature. The limbs of *Enemo* were no longer able to support his aged and venerable person, being deserted by their former muscular strength; and a dry white scurf, resembling scales, overspread the whole surface of his body. The captain was indeed surprised and shocked that a person so wretchedly infirm; should have undertaken the trouble of this visit; which was, however, a flattering compliment to him, and for which he expressed his gratitude in the most appropriate terms*.

As the ship was not far from the shore, the good old regent took his leave about four in the

* Though his corporeal infirmities were great, a ray of cheerfulness beamed forth, when he declared he was very happy to see him, and much concerned that he had not arrived on an earlier day; according to his promise, when he had a great abundance of refreshments for his use; and lamented that they were almost exhausted. The captain acknowledged that it was his misfortune, not his fault, that he had not arrived at the time appointed, and rewarded his friendship with presents equal to those he had given the principal chiefs of the other islands. With these he was much pleased, especially with the scarlet cloak, and a set of armourer's tools. *Enemo* continued on board a considerable part of the afternoon, making many judicious observations and enquiries; and warmly expressed his satisfaction at the steps he had taken to introduce a general peace. He then requested to know whether, on his return, he would take him to England, as his principal wish, in his life, was to see that country, and to have the honourable

afternoon, after acquainting the captain, that the next day was *Taboo Poory*, neither himself nor the prince could leave the shore; but he would direct a chief to bring off such hogs and vegetables as could be procured by the morning, and that if they could remain off this part of the island till the day following, he would bring and send such supplies as could be obtained in the neighbourhood. A separation then took place, and little expectations were afterwards entertained by our navigators of ever seeing him again.

Being near the shore, and seeing several canoes making towards the ship, the navigators gave them an opportunity of coming alongside. They contained *Poorey*, *Tao*, and some other chiefs, having with them eight hogs, and some vegetables. This was but a scanty supply, and they had little probability of procuring more; the captain therefore bore up for Whynea bay. There he intended to complete his stock of water, and proceed immediately to the northward, having still remaining of his Owhyhean stock a considerable number of hogs, exclusive of a very large quantity that had been salted.

Poorey, and the rest of the chiefs, accompanied them to Whynea, anxious to render them any services within their power; but, owing to light baffling winds, they could not anchor till eleven at night. The next morning, the 29th, as the natives who had approached them had brought very little for sale, *Poorey* and his friends repaired to the shore, hoping to collect such articles as they required. The launch was also hoisted out, and dispatched with a guard of marines for a supply of water†.

On the arrival of the captain on board, gratification of speaking to his Majesty King George, which he should die in peace.

† After the departure of *Enemo*, *Tamoorrie* came on board: he appeared to be in high spirits, and much rejoiced by their return; but, like his guardian, upbraided them for not coming sooner, when the productions of the country were more abundant. The captain made him presents suitable to his rank, after which he reluctantly took leave.

‡ Captain Vancouver then enters into a digression respecting a comfortable establishment he had procured from the chiefs for two female passengers, *Rakeia*, and *Tymarow*, whom he had met with at Nootka in October 1792, and had brought them to this their native country from whence they had been forcibly taken. This offer of humanity he was fortunate enough to accomplish to the satisfaction—"If," says the captain, "it were fair to judge of the dispositions of a whole nation from the qual-

and his
procuring
new potat
amount of
how
ending fro
ore to be
ould dep
aving pr
bought m
with
light bre
navigators
not havin
prouously
being ass
place t
tated

assage to
at Noot

THE na
the Sa
d in one
variable wi
outhward.
asionally
orning of
d to t
rain.

The por
en procu
hausted,
ved, wit

these two
d with n
their dep
ard and go
let I bear
piness and
Rakeia, s
ore than a
sly expres
re, the re
tacy which
point of p
her sex su
ich, her su
per, and
Vol. I.

captain; that neither himself nor his friends had not been very successful in procuring supplies: Seventeen leanish hogs, a few potatoes, and some taro was the whole amount of their collection. His stock of water was, however, completely replenished; and being informed from the chiefs that no more provisions were to be procured, he informed them that he should depart with the first favourable wind. Having presented them with such articles as he thought most valuable to them, they took their leave with expressions of the highest satisfaction. A light breeze springing up from the land, our navigators put to sea about ten at night. A report having prevailed that Captain Cook had erroneously separated Oreehooa from Onehow, being asserted that the inhabitants walked from place to the other; and that Captain King stated the number of inhabitants at four

thousand: to investigate these facts, Captain Vancouver steered over for Oreehooa, and passed within half a mile of its shores: he declares that Oreehoo is positively separated from Onehow by a channel about a mile in breadth; and from the colour of the water, it must have been infinitely too deep for people to walk across from one island to the other. On the subject of population, Captain King must have been egregiously misled: the island of Oreehooa is of small extent, consisting wholly of one rugged naked rock, apparently destitute of soil; exhibiting nothing to indicate its ever having been the residence of human creatures: Having obtained this satisfaction, they hauled their wind to the north-west, and for the present bade adieu to the Sandwich islands, to pursue their route towards Nootka.

SECTION XIV.

Passage towards the American Coast—Anchor in Trinidad Bay—Inhabitants of described—Arrive at Nootka—Quit it, and proceed to the northward—Find the Chatham in Fitzhugh's Sound.

THE navigators took their departure from the Sandwich Islands on the 30th of March, and in one week afterwards they reached the variable winds, after a light breeze from the northward. A few albatrosses and petrels were occasionally seen about the ship; and on the morning of the 7th of April, the wind suddenly shifted to the north-west, attended with squalls and rain.

The pork and other refreshments which had been procured at the Sandwich Islands, being exhausted, the regular provisions were now served, with portable soup, peas, wheat, and

sour krout. Being plentifully stored with these healthy articles, Captain Vancouver ordered a double quantity to be regularly served, to preserve that excellent state of health the crew had acquired in New Albion, and at the Sandwich Islands. Several birds of the petrel tribe were seen about the ship; and on the 8th a number of whales passed through a quantity of the medusa villilia. In the night of the 13th they passed over a part of that space, where Mr. Meares states that Mr. Douglas found the compass so affected, as to make it impossible to steer the ship by it; but our navigators affirm that they

these two young women, it would seem that they are treated with much affection and tenderness. At least such is their deportment towards us; by which they gained the regard and good wishes of, I believe, every one on board, whilst I became in no small degree solicitous for their future happiness and prosperity."—From the captain's panegyric on *Raheina*, many of his readers will imagine that he was more than a friend to that alluring female: he thus rapturously expresses himself—"The elegance of *Raheina's* features, the regularity and softness of her features, and the grace which she naturally possessed, gave her a superiority, in point of personal accomplishments, over the generality of her sex among the Sandwich islanders: in addition to which, her sensibility and turn of mind, her sweetness of temper, and complacency of manners, were beyond any

thing that could have been expected from her birth, or native education."

Through the captain's influence with the chiefs, a comfortable estate was allotted and secured to each of these young women, which they respectfully took possession of; and, in the warmest and most grateful terms, acknowledged the obligations they were under for this last mark of his attention to their future welfare, and for the kindness they had experienced from the Europeans during their residence among them. They attended the captain and several of his officers to the beach, where they took an affectionate leave: the latter embarked for the ship, leaving the amiable females to meditate on their new situation and independent circumstances.

never met with any phenomenon of that nature, either now or at any former period of their voyage, unless the violence of the wind and sea produced such an agitation.

They continued to ply with adverse winds to little effect: on the 29th the weather was serene and pleasant. In the morning of the second of May it was for some time calm, and alterations in the wind were expected to take place; though a heavy swell continued from the northward. The land was in sight, but was so obscured with haze, that its parts could not be distinctly observed. The northerly wind returning, they stood for the land, and fetched it a few miles to the southward of Rocky point; just at the spot discovered by the Spaniards in Senr. Quadra's expedition to this coast in 1775, which they named Porto de la Trinidad. It had been recommended as an eligible place for shipping, but as they had passed it before, unnoticed as a port, the captain wished to become better acquainted with it. Their tardy passage had almost exhausted them of wood and water, and operated as an additional inducement for stopping.

In the evening they anchored in eight fathoms water in Porto de la Trinidad. Their station was in a small open bay or cove. When moored, the bearings from the ship were a high, steep, rocky, head land, projecting from the general line of the shore into the ocean, and forming a bay. Soon after they had anchored, they were visited by two of the natives in a canoe, who approached with confidence and a friendly aspect. In exchange for some arrows and a few trifles, they were presented with some iron, with which they returned to the shore, apparently much pleased. After dark, another party followed their example, having provided a fire in their canoe: two of them ventured on board, but could not be prevailed on to descend below the deck: they were, however, gratified with a few trivial presents, and retired, well satisfied with their visit.

The next morning the captain went on shore,

* After revisiting the party at work, he left them under the direction of Mr. Swaine, and returned on board, where he found a few Indian visitors trading with great integrity; their merchandise consisting principally of bows, arrows, sea-otter skins, and herrings. Though few of the natives visited the ship, the party on shore had the company of about a hundred; those of the village alone, amounting to sixty at the least; the others, who came from the southward, were armed with bows and arrows. These were constantly

attended by a guard of marines, and a working party, in search of wood and water; a supply of both which articles was easily found near a small Indian village. Most of the regular inhabitants of this village were absent in their canoes, trading alongside the ship, leaving some old women only to attend the Europeans. After setting the crew to work, the captain accompanied these aged females to their habitations, amounting to five houses, built of plank, and rudely constructed like those at Nootka, but of a different form. The entrance to each is a round hole in one corner of the house, close to the ground, through which a grown person finds it very difficult to force himself. Four of these mansions appeared to have been recently built, and seemed calculated for six or seven persons each: the other was smaller, and perhaps intended for a single family. To the matrons of these humble habitations, the captain distributed some nails, and trinkets, who, in return, insisted on his accepting some large muscles, candidly acknowledging they had nothing better to offer*.

Having taken on board about twenty tons of water, and as much wood as was thought necessary, they stood to sea, without the least regret at quitting a station which they considered as an unsafe and unprotected roadstead for ships. The points of Trinidad Bay lie about two miles asunder. The round rocky barren islet, from the north-west point of the bay, has eight or nine fathoms water round it, and admits of a clear channel from nine to six fathoms deep close to the above point: from thence to rock point the grounds are interspersed with rocky islets and some sunken rocks. The sounding of the bay are from nine to five fathoms, but they had reason to consider it not to be very good holding ground.

They had little opportunity of becoming acquainted with the country, as they never strayed beyond the vicinity of the water-side: the ground bordering on the sea contained several rocky patches, without trees, though they were covered

in readiness for action, and the respective possessors of the would not permit them to be inspected. They seated themselves together at a distance from those of the village, appearing to assume a kind of superior dignity: at length, however, they became more docile and familiar, and offered their bows and otter-skins for sale. Their arrows were dexterously made, and pointed with bone, agate, or common flint. They had knives fabricated of the same material, many of which displayed great ingenuity.

with grass, fern, and other herbage. At a little distance from this margin, an uninterrupted wilderness was seen, producing a variety of stately pine-trees; among which were observed the black spruce, alder, maple, yew, and a number of shrubs and plants which are common to the southern parts of New Georgia. They could form no opinion of the land animals but from their skins, which served as clothing for the inhabitants, and were of the kind to be found in the more northern part of the Continent. The shortness of their stay among the natives, would not permit them to give a perfect account of them. They are indifferently formed, but stout, and of a lower stature than any tribe of Indians they had before seen: their hair in general, was long, kept extremely clean, neatly combed and oiled; but they are much disfigured and smeared with paint. Like the other tribes on this side of America, they commenced singing when they approached the ship, and their music was not unpleasant to the ear: their clothing, as already observed, consisted of the skins of animals. Whatever they were possessed of, they readily exchanged for iron, an article which they held in the highest estimation. The men were not very attentive to their dress; a garment was loosely thrown over them, which was very little calculated either for warmth or decency. The women were more delicate on these points; some of them being covered from head to foot with a kind of gown, consisting of thin tanned hides, and others with a smaller robe of similar materials; under this they wore a sort of petticoat of warmer untanned skins, descending from the waist below the knees.*

At noon the coast was in sight, and in the afternoon a range of high inland mountains were observed. In the evening of the 18th our

* Among these people, and most of the other Indians, mutilations or lacerations are practised, either as ornamental, religious, or whimsical; or perhaps to answer some purpose of which our navigators were ignorant. At Trinidad the custom was attended with much pain in the process, and great inconvenience must arise from it ever after. The teeth of both sexes are all uniformly ground down, horizontally, to the gums; and the women, like European Belles who delight in the extremity of fashion, set their teeth reduced even below this level; and their upper lip was adorned with three perpendicular columns of incrustation. Had it not been for these depreciating circumstances, some of the younger females might have been

navigators fetched well up along shore of the Isle de Feron; off which are many small islands, and some sunken rocks. At this time a schooner was seen to windward, and the clearness of the atmosphere gave them an opportunity of beholding the rugged mountains that compose this country, whose summits were encumbered with snow. The wind permitted them to fetch Nootka, and about four in the afternoon, they saw another sail which they supposed to be a brig. As this might probably be the Chatham, the private signal was made, but not acknowledged. At five they reached Friendly Cove, and anchored in eight fathoms water. An officer was dispatched on shore to inform Senr. Fidalgo of their arrival, and that he would salute the fort, on the promise of an equal return: eleven guns were therefore reciprocally discharged †.

The vessel they had seen in the offing anchored here soon after them, and proved to be the snow Saint Carlos, from St. Blas, commanded by Senr. Don Ramon Saavedra, ensign in the Spanish navy. Nothing of sufficient importance to require recapitulation occurred, since they had left Nootka, till Sunday the 26th of May, brought them opposite to the arm leading to Point Menzies; and where they expected to find the Chatham, about eight miles within the entrance of a cove on the south shore; but the wind and tide being adverse, they made little progress till six o'clock, when they worked up the arm with the flood tide, and a light easterly breeze. The Chatham was seen at eleven, and about noon they anchored within half a mile of her in sixty fathoms water.

Mr. Puget informed the captain that he had arrived here on the 24th, and that nothing important had occurred since he had left Nootka.

considered as having pretensions to beauty. The men had also some punctuations about them, and, either from accident or design, many of them had scars upon their arms and bodies.

† A Spanish officer who visited them before they anchored, delivered to Captain Vancouver, a letter, and other papers, left by Mr. Puget. These documents informed him that the Chatham had arrived in this port on the 15th of April, and quitted it on the 18th of May, in conformity to the instruction the captain had given Mr. Puget if he should not happen to arrive here by about the middle of May, every moment might be employed in prosecuting the survey of this coast.

SECT.

SECTION XV.

Two Boat Excursions—Fall in with a Tribe of Indians—A House of a singular Construction—Visited by a great Number of the Natives—A female Party—Their Dress—Seaman poisoned by eating Muscles.

SOME repairs being required in and about the Discovery, Captain Vancouver came to a determination, on the 26th of May, that whilst those on board were employed on the necessary duties, two boat parties should be dispatched to examine the region before them. Recollecting a large cove to the northward, that he had noticed on his former visit, he went to take a view of it; and finding it a very eligible place, he anchored there at two on the 27th in twelve fathoms water, and moored the ship to the trees on the shore: an excellent stream of water flowed into the cove, through a fine sandy beach near the station he had taken; and a convenient place presented itself for the observatory and tents. The seine was hauled with such success as to afford moderate encouragement of acquiring some refreshment from the sea. These advantages exceeded the expectations of our navigators in this desolate region, where the rain had been almost incessantly pouring down in torrents ever since their arrival on it.

On the 28th the repairs were begun; and on the 29th, Mr. Johnstone was dispatched in the Chatham's cutter, attended by the Discovery's small one, to complete the examination of this inlet, which could not be accomplished the last year on account of the badness of the weather. The next morning, the 30th, Captain Vancouver, accompanied by Lieutenant Swaine in the cutter, set out in the yawl to examine the main arm of this inlet, which he had denominated BURKE'S CHANNEL.

Conceiving it expedient that those employed on boat service, should have an additional

* From these rocks they steered to the opposite shore, the channel being upwards of a mile wide. The evening of the 30th was rough, rainy, and unpleasant; and the steep precipices that constituted the shores would not suffer them to land till almost midnight, where they could hardly find a situation for constructing their necessary tents. A heavy fall of rain continued during the night; and at day-light on the 31st, their lodging was discovered to have been in a morass, and that most of their attire was wet. In this unpleasant abode the weather detained them till eight o'clock,

allowance of salutary food and spirits, to be used at the discretion of the officer commanding each party; he instantly adopted that practice, which he afterwards found necessary to be continued during the remainder of the season.

About nine in the morning the captain arrived in what he supposed to be the main branch of the inlet, leading to the north from Fitzhugh's sound. A fresh southerly gale was in his favour, but the cloudiness of the weather prevented his obtaining any observation for the latitude, though he landed for that purpose on some rocks near the western shore. He was visited by a few natives, who at first seemed shy, but a few trinkets, properly distributed, obtained their confidence. These people were very different from those our navigators had seen to the southward, spoke a different language, and were totally unacquainted with that used by the inhabitants of Nootka. They were stouter, and more robust than the Indians farther south; and the prominence of their countenances resembled the northern Europeans. Had they not been besmeared with filth, oil, and paint, even their colour would have differed but little from some of those who are exposed to the inclemency and alterations of the weather*.

The appearance of the country they had passed by, in the course of the survey, did not vary from what has already been frequently described, excepting that the birch, maple, and other small trees, seemed to be more numerous: two or three whales, several seals, some sea-otters, and two black bears had been seen; all of which were wonderfully shy†.

when they proceeded northward to a point on the opposite shore.

† Being satisfied that all the land forming the sea-coast from the south entrance into Fitzhugh's Sound, to the place where they looked into the ocean, consisted of two extensive islands, which were probably much subdivided, the captain considered the object of his errand accomplished, and commenced his return towards the station of the vessel from whence he was then forty-five miles distant.

In the further course of the survey undertaken by the navigators

This do
ffered lib
out our r
nter. A
board
principal
The ne
the captain
May he re
be found
The party
house of
nothing to
now advan
three India
ing their
new nails
them, and
some of h
were of d
before see
aised and
ground by
occupying
and covered
horizontal
wellings,
y a tree
ut in it b
under: U
and a gent
ascend.
kind of
osted, ea
much unl
Mr. John
there was
the usual
ians, on
navigators,
o relate; h
with about
ibe of Ind
The
hem with
tile distant
ey were v
ceiving s
the women
the captain
were emp
ate from
perhaps as
ater, bea
VOL.

This delicacy, as well as the cockles, they offered liberally, in return for nails and trinkets, but our navigators accepted only a few of the latter. About ten at night the captain arrived on board, where he found all well, and the principal part of the work had been completed.

The next morning Mr. Johnstone informed the captain, that on the forenoon of the 30th of May he reached a point of the inlet, from whence he found an arm lying in a south-east direction. The party had noticed, on the preceding evening, a house of a very singular construction, but saw nothing to indicate its being inhabited. As they now advanced, some smoke was observed, and three Indians cautiously approached them, intimating their disapprobation of their landing. A few nails and trinkets, however, soon reconciled them, and they attended Mr. Johnstone, and some of his party, to their habitations. These were of different construction from any they had before seen: they were erected on a platform, raised and supported near thirty feet from the ground by large perpendicular spars: the whole occupying a space of thirty-five yards by fifteen, and covered in by a roof of boards lying nearly horizontal. It seems divided into three different dwellings, each having a separate access formed by a tree in an inclined position, with notches cut in it by way of steps, about a foot and a half asunder: Up one of these ladders, Mr. Johnstone, and a gentleman of his party only, was permitted to ascend. Removing a small board, placed as a kind of door, they found four of the natives seated, each bearing a coarse iron weapon not much unlike a dagger. They only permitted Mr. Johnstone to look about him; though indeed there was nothing to be seen that differed from the usual internal arrangements among the Indians, on the shores of North-west America.

Nothing further occurred which it is our province to relate; but in a bay on the western shore, they fell in with about forty men, women, and children of the same tribe of Indians they had observed before. They addressed them with caution, desiring they would land at a rock a little distant from the party. Complying with their wishes, they were visited by many of the men and boys, who, after receiving some presents, took care to acquaint them that the women would have no objection to their company; but the captain civilly declined their solicitations. These people were employed in collecting cockles, and in preparing a paste from the inner bark of a kind of pine-tree, intended perhaps as a substitute for bread: this was washed in seawater, beat hard upon the rocks, and made up into balls.

Vol. I. No. XXXVII.

Not more than fourteen inhabitants were seen in this curious place, and among them there were neither women nor children. Hence it appeared that the landing of our navigators had excited no inconsiderable alarm.

From this extraordinary mansion Mr. Johnstone came back along the eastern shore; where he saw another habitation on a similar construction. Having completed the examination of this branch, the party returned along its northern shores, and near the point of entrance. The captain's directions were for Mr. Johnstone to return to the vessels, which they reached in the morning of the following day, having seen several bears in their passage: two of the young cubs were killed, and proved to be most excellent food.

The captain then directed Mr. Johnstone to examine the arm leading to the north-north-westward, and to gain what information he could respecting the channel they had discovered leading to the sea. With these instructions, and a week's provisions, he departed in the *Discovery's* small cutter in the forenoon, attended by Mr. Barrie*.

A small stream of tide making in favour of the party, they weighed, and though they had the assistance of all their boats a-head till near midnight, they did not advance above a mile before they were obliged to anchor in fifty-three fathoms water. In this situation they continued till the morning of the 12th, when they proceeded. The next morning they tried the seine, but without success. A quantity of muscles were, however, procured, of which some palatable dishes were formed. On the 14th they received the compliments of some of their Indian friends, among whom was *Whacosh*, with two other principal chiefs, one named *Amzeer*, the other *Nestaw Daws*. Dark, gloomy, rainy, uncomfortable

It was tender, had a sweetish taste, and was thought excellent food by the natives.

* During the captain's absence, the gentlemen were visited by the natives, who seemed to be of three different tribes, each having a separate chief, who were respectively named *Keyut*, *Comockshulah*, *Whacosh*. They appeared to be on amicable terms with each other, and conducted themselves with propriety on board; and their language resembled that used by the inhabitants of queen Charlotte's islands. They brought for barter the skins of sea-otters and other animals, some of which were exchanged for copper and iron. This uninteresting region afforded nothing worthy of particular notice, excepting the soundings, and such astronomical and nautical observations as could be procured.

58

weather

at the expense
did they think

, usually rowed
the same ceres-
ture; singing
harmony. They
and appeared
all as honest, in
the skins of sea
and eighty were
n board; beside
ns probable that
as many of the
did not mean to

departure from the
natives with some
ntly caught; but
red, the Indian

As they passed
itants seemed to
nd attention, for
h some present
notice occurred
pped to breakfast
few of the people
e they proceeded
ne south-westerly
ne to dine. Mr.
Mr. Barrie, the
place where they
who had eaten
numbness about
soon after their
n the same ex-
with giddiness and
in England, was
ne cause; and was
indisposed. Re-
tation had relieved

ch sides:—they are
ages are made of fir
most unnatural ap-
of human absurdity
without ocular de-

entter, and the De-
a fatiguing and dis-
tressing by the
seaman, who had been
r three others of the

him

him on a former occasion, he took an oar, and
advised those who were unwilling to follow his ex-
ample: John Carter, John Mc. Alpin, and John
Thomas, being the persons diseased, he particu-
larly addressed himself to. He found considerable
relief from again adopting the same judicious
plan; but as soon as the boat landed, and their
 exertions at the oar ceased, the seamen were
obliged to be carried on shore: one man in the
Chatham's boat was also thus affected*.

When this poor fellow resigned his life, and
before, the obstinacy of the other was re-
moved, and they could be prevailed on to drink
the hot water: his melancholy fate taught them
obedience to their officers' advice, when they all
obtained relief, and eventually preserved their
lives. This unfortunate circumstance detained

the boat about three hours; when, having taken
the corpse on board, the party continued their
route down the south-west channel, till they
stopped in a bay for the night, where they in-
terred the dead body; on which account it was
named CARTER'S BAY; the spot where the
muscles were eaten was called POISON COVE; and
the branch leading to it obtained the name of
MUSCLE CHANNEL.

The very unfavourable weather, during their
absence, did not afford them one opportunity of
ascertaining the latitude. Mc. Alpin and Thomas,
as well as the patient belonging to the Chatham,
were a little recovered; but complained of numb-
ness, dizziness, and a violent pain in their bowels;
and were, consequently, immediately taken under
the surgeon's care.

SECTION XVI.

Boat Parties dispatched on different Duty—Most remarkable Occurrences in their Survey.

IN the morning of the 18th of June, it being
calm, all the boats were employed in towing
the navigators round the point of the opening,
which was not effected till one in the afternoon;
and by eleven at night they had advanced two
leagues further to the south-west, when they
anchored. A brig or a schooner was seen the
next morning, standing towards the sea, but it
was not long visible; so many intervening islands
existing between our navigators and the ocean.
Saturday the 22d, Mr. Whidbey, with the
large cutter, and Mr. Humphrys in the launch,
going with them supplies for the week, were
dispatched to the openings that had been left un-
explored behind. And Mr. Johnstone, in the
discovery's small cutter, with Mr. Barrie in the
Chatham's launch, were sent to examine the
branch leading to the westward.

Mr. Johnstone, not doubting of the cause from which
evil had arisen, and having then no medical assistant
present, ordered plenty of warm water to be got ready,
the offending matter might be removed by drinking
plenty of it. Carter attracted the particular attention
of all present, who endeavoured to afford him relief by
rubbing his temples and body, and applying warm cloths
to his stomach; but all their efforts proved ineffectual, as
he could not be induced to swallow the warm water: within
an hour after he was landed, the poor fellow died.
It was not doubted that his death was occasioned by a

The poison received by eating muscles was not
of so malignant a nature but it might have been
subdued, could proper remedies have been ap-
plied in time. The means used for the recovery
of those taken on board, was first an emetic; at
bed-time anodynes procured them rest; and the
next day these were followed with cathartics,
which gave great relief, producing considerable
abatement in the unpleasant symptoms. The
assistance of diaphoretic medicines, and due at-
tention to the complaints in their bowels, soon
removed the malady. Besides the melancholy
event above related, prudence directed our navi-
gators to abstain from muscles in future, though
they had found those fish a very pleasant and
palatable fresh meal†.

On the 27th of June Mr. Whidbey observed,
that the face of the country was, for a consider-
able

poison contained in the muscles he had eaten about eight in
the morning; at nine he began to find himself unwell, and
died at half after one: he pulled his oar till the boat landed,
but in attempting to rise to go on shore, he fell down, and
could not get up without the assistance of his companions.

When first seized his pulse was regular, but gradually
grew fainter and weaker till he expired; when his lips be-
came black, and his hands, face, and neck were consider-
ably swelled.

† The remainder of this section, in the original work,
almost entirely consists of experiments for discovering and
ascertaining

able distance, an entire barren waste, almost destitute of wood and verdure; and presenting to the eye one continued mass of naked rocks, rising progressively into rugged mountains, whose towering summits seemed to overhang their bases, making them appear tremendous: the whole had a perpetual covering of ice and snow; and waterfalls of various dimensions were seen descending in all directions.

Proceeding in their survey, they were visited by eight Indians in two canoes, the first they had beheld during this expedition: their behaviour was friendly and civil; and they presented the party with two fine salmon, each exceeding the weight of seventy pounds. The natives were recompensed with a small piece of iron, and departed well pleased with the commercial transaction*.

By this time Mr. Whidbey's provisions were nearly exhausted, he therefore thought it prudent to decline the further examination of the continental shore, and return towards the vessels.

Mr. Whidbey was again dispatched, in the large cutter, attended by Mr. Barrie in the small one, to prosecute the inland navigation. Taking ten days' provisions with him, he departed about noon; and in the forenoon of Thursday, the 4th of July he made sail to windward. The wind being adverse the whole day, the party was compelled at ten o'clock to anchor, and make fast to the trees, in fifty fathoms water. Nothing

ascertaining the existence of navigable communication between the North Pacific, and North Atlantic oceans; and would not afford much gratification to the general reader. Some of the most remarkable particulars may however be entitled to narration—The seine and lines of one of the parties having been repeatedly tried without success, rendered their situation very afflictive; neither the sea nor the shores afforded them the smallest refreshment: and the weather being extremely unpleasant retarded the progress of their boats in the examination of this inhospitable region.

Mr. Whidbey, in the narrative of one of his expeditions, mentions that on the 24th of July, as he and his party were preparing to proceed, a smoke was discovered issuing from among the stones on the shore. On examination, a kind of stream of hot water was found passing among the stones, which at high water must be six feet at least beneath the surface of the sea. They could not discern its source, nor ascertain the exact degree of heat; but some of the seamen attempting to wash their hands in it, complained of the heat being troublesome and inconvenient. Its taste was saltish, and in that respect, as well as in the colour, it was thought to resemble the waters of Cheltenham.

* On the 29th, where the party had stopped to dine, they were visited by ten canoes, in which were about sixty

very interesting took place for some time: on the 10th the seine was hauled, and a satisfactory meal of fish procured for all hands; an abundance of berries were also found on the adjacent shores.

By noon of the 14th, the party reached point Ashton, where Mr. Whidbey had before quitted the examination of the continental shore. Proceeding up the northern branch, which had been left unexplored, they were visited by seven canoes in which were about thirty natives, the greater part of whom were little old men: they brought with them an inferior assortment of sea-otter skins to dispose of, and their wretched appearance was a strong indication of the poverty of their tribe. At the south point of entrance into this arm, and for two miles within, the sea abounded with otters; playing about the boats in the most sportive manner; rearing themselves half way out of the water, and holding up the young ones in their fore-paws, as if they intended to give them a sight of the boats as they passed by them†.

In the afternoon, the tents, observatory, and instruments, were sent on shore, under the directions of Mr. Whidbey; and Mr. Johnston in the Chatham's armed cutter, with Mr. Barrie in the Discovery's small cutter, taking with them a supply of ten days' provisions, departed to recommence the survey of the continental shore northward.

The account which Captain Vancouver has

Indians. The largest of these canoes, with the chief of his family, was decorated with carved work, both at head and stern; and uncouth figures were painted, to suit their ideas of elegance. Skins of animals, as usual, were readily disposed of for copper, blue cloth, and blankets. These people were perfectly honest and civil, which induced Mr. Whidbey to permit the chief to dine with him; honour which he seemed much to enjoy, and conducted himself decently. He drank some grog, and was particularly fond of bread and sugar; but he preferred the latter and even seem astonished at the taste of it. After dinner Mr. Whidbey returned down a branch he had passed, accompanied by the chief and his attendants, who frequently entertained the company with songs not destitute of melody. The party, in the evening, stopped for the night in a cove; and, on an intimation being given them that they were going to rest, the Indians retired to another cove at a little distance.

† Going on shore, they found a small canoe with the natives, who were employed in taking salmon, which were abundant up a fine run of fresh water that flowed into the cove. Some of these fish were purchased with tribute, but they were of a very inferior kind, and destitute of the flavour of European salmon.

some time: on the
ed a satisfactory
ds; an abundance
e adjacent shores
ty reached point
ad before quitting
ntal shore. Pro
which had been
d by seven canoes
tives, the greater
en: they brought
ment of sea-otter
wretched appear
of the poverty
t of entrance into
within, the sea
g about the boat
fearing themselves
d holding up the
as if they intended
boats as they passed

received of this famous inlet, induced him to undertake the principal management of it himself; for which purpose the Discovery's yawl and launch were equipped with supplies for a fortnight. Lieutenant Swaine was destined to attend him in the latter, and Mr. Puget, with Mr. Menzies, accompanied him in the yawl.

SECTION XVII.

Very extensive Boat Excursion—Party attacked by the Natives attended with serious Consequences—Indians endeavour afterwards to annoy the Europeans.

MATTERS being arranged, they departed at five in the morning of the 24th of July, in thick rainy weather, though in the afternoon it became fair and pleasant. Their course was first directed along the eastern shore. They passed an island to the west of them, about two miles long, and half a mile broad; after which they entered a narrow arm, leaving to the west a coast much broken, and divided by water. They stopped to dine about a mile short of the low land which composed the head of the arm. Here they were visited by seven of the natives in a canoe, who cautiously approached them, and plainly intimated that they doubted of their friendly intentions: a few trivial presents, however, dissipated their apprehensions, and they cordially joined the party. They were well provided with arms, consisting of spears, and bows, and arrows: and each man wore an iron dagger about his neck or wrist. The chief, by significant signs which were easily understood, desired to partake of their repast. He was served with some bread and dried fish, and afterwards he and his attendants were indulged with a glass of brandy; all which they seemed to enjoy. These people suffered very little from the generality of the surrounding natives. They invited the party to visit their habitations, which their motions indicated to be on the low land at the head of the arm; but this being out of their route, they declined these solicitations, and with a favourable tide, returned towards the entrance of the arm.

observatory, and
ore, under the direction
and Mr. Johnston
r, with Mr. Barrington
atter, taking with them
rovisions, departed for
the continental shore.

in Vancouver he
oes, with the chief
ved work, both at
es were painted, to
animals, as usual,
no cloth, and black
and civil, which indu
to dine with him;
to enjoy, and condone
grog, and was particu
he preferred the latter
te of it. After describ
much he had passed,
endants, who frequen
not destitute of melo
s for the night in a
g given them that a
ired to another canoe
small canoe with
in taking salmon, w
sh water that flowed
purchased with tri
ind, and destitute of

From the appearance of the country on the western side of this inlet, no doubt was entertained of its being the continent; and they departed, in full expectation, that in this excursion, they should be able finally to determine the reality of the discoveries attributed to the labours of Admiral de Fonte.

At eight in the evening they reached this entrance, where they took up their abode for the night: after which they pursued the western shore of the inlet, towards the ships, where they arrived about noon. No longer entertaining the least doubt of this being the continental shore, the captain resolved to prosecute his researches in that quarter, and caused his stock of provisions to be recruited. After dining on board, he immediately recommenced an examination along the western shore of the inlet, and rested at night in a small cove, about twelve miles to the southward of the ships.

As they advanced, they were joined by two canoes, in which fifteen natives were contained. They approached the Europeans without much ceremony or hesitation; and their countenances exhibited a greater degree of savage ferocity, than had ever before fallen under the notice of Captain Vancouver, among the various tribes he had beheld. In painting themselves, they had contrived so to dispose of the red, white, and black colours as to render their ugly countenances still more horribly hideous: This frightful appearance did not seem to be a new fashion among them, but had been long adopted by their ferocious dispositions; that their faces might correspond with the stern and savage deportment which they affected. The captain offered them some customary presents, which were disdainfully rejected; a few of them indeed condescended to receive them, but it was with a thankless indifference.

Among the party a woman appeared, being additionally figured with the grotesque and unnatural lip-ornament. The captain offered her a looking glass, and some inkets, at the instance of the most savage fellow of the party,

she rejected them with contempt. This Indian then arranged about six or seven spears, as if he meditated an attack; at the same time putting on his war garments, and drawing his dagger.

As it was necessary for the captain to land on the point for the purpose of taking angles, the European party waited for the launch to come up; and during this interval, their endeavours were exerted to conciliate the good opinion of their visitors: but all was ineffectual; they refused to accept any more presents. Several of them pronounced the words *Winnec watter*, implying that they wished to trade or barter; producing at the very moment, some wretched sea-otter skins. But by offering to trade with these savages, they were unable to procure their friendship; for neither cloth, iron, nor any thing they had, was thought sufficient in quantity, or equal in quality to the value of their skins, though they were declared to be the worst, without exception, that the party had ever seen upon the coast. On the launch arriving, the Europeans pulled towards the shore, when the natives seemed better pleased: their behaviour was more civil, but, though their demands in bartering were still exorbitant, they parted on better terms than they had met. They remained on the spot, and the Europeans proceeded up the arm; but their absence was not of any long duration; for they speedily returned, waving their skins, and exposing them to sale; and offered now to exchange them for those identical commodities which they had before rejected with contempt.

It is probable, however, that their resentment had been first excited, by the perfect indifference shewn respecting their commodities which were brought for sale; for, on their being now offered blue cloth for their skins, they began a song, which was not ended till they came very near them; when it appeared that all their arms and war garments were laid aside, after the disposal of such articles as they had for sale; they began to display their propensity for theft. This drew from the captain the strongest marks of his disapprobation of their conduct, who made signs

* The war garments of these people, were formed of two, three, or more folds of the strongest hides of land animals; in which the body is tolerably well protected, and both arms are left at liberty for action. Further to secure the part which covers the breast, thin laths of wood are sometimes fixed on the inside.

In the morning of the first of August, the natives offered for sale some sea-otters' skins, and a large black bear that seemed to have been killed by a spear in the course of the night: they rejected every article that was proposed to them by way of barter, though they followed the Euro-

pean party for their immediate departure, with which they reluctantly complied*.

On Friday the 2d, the European party passed through a labyrinth of small islets and rocks along the continental shore; this taking now a winding course to the south-west and west, discovered the south-eastern side of the channel to be much broken, through which was a passage leading towards the ocean. They passed this in expectation of finding a more northern and westerly communication; in which they were not mistaken as the channel they were then pursuing was also found to communicate with the sea.

After encountering a succession of rainy and unpleasant weather for several days, during which no interesting circumstance arose; they observed the surrounding country to consist of a huge mass of barren rocky mountains, whose summits were perpetually covered with snow excepting in one particular part, where they rose in perpendicular cliffs from the water's edge producing a few scattered stunted trees. Near the ruins of a few temporary huts of the natives they discovered a box about three feet square containing the remains of a human skeleton which appeared from the confused situation of the bones, to have been thrust with great violence into a very small receptacle.

A small round island was soon after beheld lying off the north-west point, from whence they saw a remarkable rock, resembling a ship under sail. Its situation and elevation, if accessible promised a perfect view of the inlet; and its singular pyramidal appearance excited their curiosity. They reached the rock about seven and found the main inlet to take a northerly direction, extending from two to three miles in breadth. This singular rock, bearing some resemblance to the Light-House rock off Plymouth, the captain named it the New EDDYSTONE, and stopped on the base of it to breakfast. While

pean party for about two miles, requesting they would *Winnec watter*. Finding at length, that no articles were tendered them but what they had before declined, they retired in disgust. The party, including a woman decorated with the lip-ornament, consisted of about eighteen persons who, with respect to ferocity, nearly resembled those they had seen a few days before. The woman, who steered the canoe, was a complete termagant, and seemed to possess unlimited authority: she exacted the most rigid and ready obedience to her commands, which were given in a surly and supercilious manner.

with which they were thus agreeably employed, three small canoes, with about a dozen of the natives, approached them unarmed, and with great good humour accepted some presents; intimating, by signs, that they should be happy to make a suitable return if they would visit their habitations; which favour they pressingly solicited, declaring they had abundance of valuable articles to dispose of. But, for several reasons, their civil entreaties were declined. The circumference of the New Eddystone, at its base, is about fifty yards, standing perpendicularly on a surface of fine sand. It is entirely detached, at the distance of about two miles from the eastern shore, and one from the western shore of the inlet, and its height was found to be upwards of two hundred and fifty feet. The fissures and chasms in its sides afford nourishment to several small pine trees, and a variety of shrubs *.

After many unimportant incidents in the further course of their examination, the party saw some of the natives in their canoes near the shore: four of these canoes apparently large and well manned, approached the launch, which was then at some distance astern of them; at the same time signifying their peaceable intentions by their singing. They were also visited by a small canoe, with only two of the natives, who civilly received some trifling presents; and related this circumstance of their kindness to some of their associates. These came off in two canoes, that just reached them as they were sitting on shore to take the angles. Their behaviour was orderly, civil, and inoffensive; and seemingly grateful for the presents distributed among them. They offered their commodities for barter, and several exchanges took place; no apprehensions having been entertained by the Europeans, that these people had any evil design, though, like many of the natives they had lately seen, they were well armed. Captain Vancouver therefore landed, leaving Mr. Puget in the yawl to entertain his new visitors.

In a little time they grew clamorous, and turbulent; and on Captain Vancouver's return to the boat, Mr. Puget informed him, that they had manifested a thievish disposition; and that

The natives attended our adventurers for a short time, finding that their course was not directed towards their habitations, they retired; after having significantly intimated them, by signs, that at night they would find the

he was clearly of opinion they had some mischievous intention. He instantly ordered the boat from the shore, expecting by that means to get rid of them. It was with much difficulty, however, that hostile measures could be avoided, when the largest of the canoes, under the steerage of a termagant old woman, with a formidable lip ornament, laid them on board across the bow: this vixen snatched up the head line which was lying there, and lashed her canoe with it to the boat; whilst a young man seated himself in the bow of the yawl, and put on a mask resembling a wolf's face, united with the human countenance. At this moment, the Indian who first visited them, stole a musquet from the boat. The situation of the Europeans was now very alarming, and to augment their embarrassment, the launch was too far distant to afford them any immediate succour. They had no other chance of preservation, than to introduce a kind of parley, to give their friends an opportunity of coming to their assistance.

With these ideas, Captain Vancouver went forward, with a musquet in his hands, to expostulate with the chief; on which about fifty surrounding Indians seized their daggers, brandished their spears, and pointed them against our navigators in all directions. The captain still entertained hopes of effecting an amicable separation. The chief, at his request, instantly quitted the boat, and said, if he would lay down his musquet, his people should instantly abandon their arms. The gun was parted with, and the treaty readily complied with on both sides.

Here the matter would probably have rested in tranquillity, had it not been for the vociferous efforts of their female conductress, who seemed to put forth all the powers of turbulent oratory to stimulate the men to act with hostility against them. Her language had so far operated on a ferocious looking old man, as to encourage a second outrage, and the spears were again brandishing, as if hostilities were immediately resolved on. Observing this, the captain again made signs for peace, and went immediately aft; when he found Mr. Puget attempting to

inlet closed on all sides; and when they had slept at its termination, requested they would visit their habitations on their return.

accom-

accomplish the same desirable object, and pacific terms were on the point of being again adjusted*.

Those who were in the small canoes jumped into the sea, whilst such of them as were in possession of the larger ones, raised the opposite sides, to protect them from the fire of the yawl, though they were partly exposed to that of the launch; and thus they scrambled sideways to the shore. The only arms remaining in the yawl, excepting those in the arm chest, were a blunderbuss, a musquet, a fowling piece loaded with shot, and a brace of pocket pistols; the rest of their arms, which consisted of three musquets and a fowling-piece, having been stolen in the affray. The arm-chest, however, afforded a supply for their future defence, and were expeditiously got in readiness for their protection†.

It was now thought expedient to be vigilant and cautious, to have all their arms ready, and to charge such as were unloaded. These suggestions were privately attended to, that no unnecessary alarm might be given to the Indians, who were required by signs to keep at a proper distance; and only one canoe at a time permitted to come near enough to receive the presents that might be offered: these were accepted with great civility; and the general tenor of their conduct manifested a friendly disposition. Apparently in this humour, they paddled hastily towards the

* But this apparent cessation was not very durable: the Captain had hardly turned round when he saw the spears, in the canoe which contained the old woman, all in motion; but on his again advancing, they were as suddenly dropped. While the Captain was thus engaged, the Indians near the stern of the boat, grew extremely troublesome; a general commotion seeming to have taken place: some spears were thrust; one or two of which passed very near him, and the Indians seized all the moveables in the boat that came within their reach: they had also recourse to several other acts of violence. The destruction of our European navigators now seemed inevitable; as the force they had to oppose against the number that surrounded them was, as they were circumstanced, in every respect inadequate. Fortunately, about ten minutes from the captain's return to the boat, the launch had arrived within pistol-shot; and being thoroughly convinced that their forbearance had given the Indians confidence, and stimulated them to acts of temerity, he gave directions to fire: this instantly taking effect from both the boats, was attended with the desired effect, and they were thus relieved from a perilous situation.

† On reaching the shore, the Indians ascended the high rocky cliffs, of which it is composed, from whence they attempted to annoy those in the launch by stones; and from whence also they fired a musquet. The arms they

yawl; a party of their comrades assembling at the same time about their boat. Though the gentlemen in the launch had observed, that these people had made uncommon exertions to reach the yawl, their efforts were at first attributed to a propensity to diversion; but when their spears began to be in motion, they did not delay a moment to come to afford relief to their friends against the machinations of these savages.

It must be admitted that the Indians, through the want of caution in our British navigators, had in this instance sufficient address to succeed by their friendly professions, in nearly assembling all their force around them; though in an earlier part of the voyage, they would have been more suspicious of their wiles; particularly their vociferous hollowing to each other, their immoderate haste, their throwing their dogs overboard, and other hostile indications which were of too menacing a nature to escape their suspicions: but a series of tranquil intercourse with the several different tribes of Indians, had almost obliterated the apprehensions which had formerly been entertained of them‡.

The navigators now directed their route across an extensive bay, in which several small openings were observed, appearing to lead to the eastward and south-east. Nothing but a journal of occurrences, nautical and astronomical, engaged many of the following pages. The remains of

had stolen from the boat were all loaded; and they had fire-arms of their own, but they were not supposed to be charged. The launch being now ordered to join them, an equal distribution was made of the remaining weapons and ammunition in both boats. Being fully prepared to repel any other attacks that might be made, they rested on the oars, about a quarter of a mile from the precipice the Indians had fled to, till Mr. Menzies had paid due attention to the wounded men. Robert Bretton, in assisting to remove the arm chest, first received a wound in the breast, but by his seizing the spear he destroyed its force: on repetition of the blow, he received a deep and dangerous wound on the upper part of his thigh. George Bridgman was also severely wounded by a spear that passed quite through one of his thighs. The captain, however, was afterwards informed by Mr. Menzies, that neither of the wounds were likely to be attended with any present danger, nor with consequences that might be inconvenient hereafter.

‡ What execution the Europeans' firing had effected was never ascertained: some of the natives were observed to fall, as if killed or materially wounded; and excessive lamentations were heard when they had retreated to the woods: after which they did not find themselves disposed to renew the attack.

a large village
reck, much ex
weather, in w
character was
by the natural c
the rude artists
with boards, a
warlike instrum
box, covered w
erded down.
contained the re
age, and the c
erited; but as
answer no bene
given concern t
ould it be thei
of the dead, c
ment to have
were superstitiou
ecured; but fr
variety of not re
ification of i
good purpose.

proceed to the J
B

OUR naviga
17th of Au
from the southwa
indward. On
anchor, they fou
ough it had bee
orn out. The
lf fortunate in
e cable broke,
ole depth. At
sored for the r
estern shore, in
with a hawser to
in the 18th, the
their favour,
le from the sou
The Indians,
approached then
eir countenance
ere disposed to
ould accompan
Vol. I. No. X

A large village was observed on a high detached rock, much exposed to the inclemency of the weather, in which a sepulchre of a peculiar character was found. It was a vault, formed by the natural cavity of the rocks, meliorated by the rude artists of the country. It was lined with boards, and decorated with fragments of warlike instruments; and also contained a square box, covered with mats, and very curiously crowded down. This our adventurers supposed contained the remains of some important personage, and the curiosity of many of them was excited; but as any further examination could answer no beneficial purpose, and might have given concern to the friends of the deceased, should it be their custom to visit the repositories of the dead, Captain Vancouver refused his consent to have the body disturbed. Not from mere superstitious motives, as was by some conjectured; but from a conviction of the impropriety of not restraining our curiosity, when the gratification of it could not possibly tend to any good purpose.

The provisions of the examining party were now so nearly exhausted, that each individual dined this day on half a pint of peas. They were under the necessity of keeping on their pars, or under sail, all night; and at seven in the morning of the 16th, they arrived on board, on which occasion they were not a little rejoiced, as they had been almost confined to the boats for twenty-three days; in which time they had traversed more than seven hundred geographical miles, without having materially advanced their primary object. Their return also afforded relief to the feelings of those on board, who had experienced great anxiety for their welfare.

By proper assistance and care, the two wounded men, who were each valuable in their respective stations, were in a fair way of recovery; and as they had no object to detain them longer in this situation, the Captain ordered every preparation to be made to proceed down the inlet in the morning.

SECTION XVIII.

Proceeded to the North-West—Visited by the Natives—A second Visit from the same Party—Two Boat Excursions—Visit from a very formidable Number of Indians.

OUR navigators weighed on Saturday the 17th of August, but having a strong gale from the southward, they made but little progress landward. On heaving up the best bower anchor, they found the cable almost divided, and though it had been very little used, it was entirely worn out. The Captain, however, thought himself fortunate in saving the anchor, which, had the cable broke, must have fallen an unfathomable depth. At eight in the evening they anchored for the night, near some rocks on the western shore, in 85 fathoms water, and steadied with a hawser to the trees on the shore. At five on the 18th, they again made sail with the tide in their favour, but with a strong unfavourable wind from the southward.

The Indians, inhabiting the neighbourhood, approached them with deference and fear, and their countenances seemed to indicate that they were disposed to be friendly, but none of them could accompany them to the opposite shore;

where, about three in the afternoon, they anchored in 45 fathoms water, steadied, as before, by a hawser to the trees.

The weather being calm on the 21st, it gave the natives of the western shore an opportunity of paying them a visit. On their approach, one of them who was a kind of inferior chief, desired to be admitted on board; a request that was readily granted. He informed our navigators that he was acquainted with most of the principal traders on the coast, and was an associate to a powerful chief named *O-non-nis-toy*, the *U-en-Smoker*, or *U-en-Stikin*, whose residence was up the north-west branch. He requested Captain Vancouver to fire a gun; on the report of which this great chief would instantly visit them, with salmon and skins in abundance, to barter for their commodities. A gun was consequently fired; when he desired to know if it was his intention to go up the north-west passage. Receiving an answer in the

affirmative, he seemed highly pleased; but when he declared he should first visit the north-east branch, he seemed equally disappointed and displeased. He endeavoured to convince our navigators that, in those regions, they would find neither skins, chiefs, nor any thing worthy of their research; and that the people who resided in them were addicted to thievery and every other vice.

On surveying the countenances of their new visitors, our navigators could not discover a face that they had seen before, they were therefore the rather inclined to give some credit to these representations; but advertg to some late instances of this treacherous tribe, they paid very little attention to his report. As two a breeze sprang up from the south-west, with which their course was to pass to the north-east of Cape Caamaro; which, being observed by our visitors, they declined attending us any further: and as the inferior chief had given Captain Vancouver the skin of a sea-otter on his coming on board, he made him an ample return: he also gave him a piece of blue cloth, which he desired him to present, in his name, to his chief *Ononmistoy*; a task which he undertook to perform with apparent satisfaction.

The Chatham being sent a-head in search of an eligible port, made the signal in the evening for having discovered one on the western shore, in which she shortly anchored; steadied, as before, with a hawser to the trees. On the 22d, the port was found to be formed by a small convenient bay; which being situated and circumstanced much to the wishes of our navigators, they ran in and moored in sixteen fathoms water, about a cable length from the western shore. Plenty of excellent water might also be commodiously obtained.

The boats were immediately prepared for two long excursions; Mr. Whidbey in the Discovery's large cutter, with Lieutenant Baker in the launch, having supplies for a fortnight, were to proceed on the survey of those branches which had been before declined; and they were to continue their researches along the continental shore.

To Mr. Johnstone, with the two cutters, as usual, the other expedition was entrusted, taking with him provision for ten days. He was directed to return to Cape Caamaro, and to examine the starboard shore of the north west branch, till it communicated with the ocean.

On the 22d. the navigators were again visited by the same party of Indians who attended them on the 21st. The man who had undertaken to deliver his present to the chief, informed Captain Vancouver, that in a day or two *Ononmistoy* would wait upon him. He said the chief was at some distance, and required some time to prepare for his journey; but, in the mean time, he took the liberty to solicit a further present for him, as a testimony of his friendly intentions: he even intimated that molasses and bread would be very acceptable to *Ononmistoy*. Such articles, with several others, were accordingly entrusted to the man's care, and he departed the next morning. Rainy weather, attended with strong winds and squalls, continued till the 25th, when the sky being serene and clear, the captain was enabled to procure some good observations.

About midnight the Europeans were disturbed by the singing of a party of the natives, as they were entering the harbour. Judging, from the uproar they made, they at first supposed them to be a very numerous tribe, but, on a nearer approach, they were discovered to be only the freight of one canoe, in which seventeen persons were contained. After paddling round the vessels, with their usual formalities, they landed at an inconsiderable distance from them, and continued singing till day-light. They had bestowed much time in decorating their persons: the faces were painted according to the taste or fancy of the respective possessor, and their hair powdered with the white down of young sea fowls. Approaching the Discovery again, with the same ceremony, they come alongside with the utmost confidence.

Kanant, the chief of the party, requested to be admitted on board; which being granted, he presented the captain with an otter-skin; which on making him a proper acknowledgment, desired that his people and theirs might enter into traffic with each other. They accordingly held commercial dealings together till the 28th of August, when they separated on friendly terms, seeming much pleased with the honesty and propriety of all parties, and making honourable mention of *Ononmistoy*, their chief, and the beauty of a very numerous tribe.

In the afternoon Mr. Whidbey returned, after having traced the boundaries of the continental shore; when the several arms that Captain Vancouver had left unexamined were discovered

of little extent. He saw several parties of Indians in the course of this survey, but observed nothing materially different from what he had seen before, excepting some of their dancing and singing, which he thought more savage and un-
 south than any he had ever been entertained with. He observes, indeed, that a small party of the natives, consisting of seven men only, in going up one of the arms, seemed to be preparing to oppose the landing of some of the gentlemen of the European party*.

These actions being considered by Mr. Whidbey as pacific overtures, he threw some spoons and other trivial articles to the orator, and gave him some indications, that he and his party wanted to eat. This intimation had the desired effect; the aged orator ordered those who were armed to retire, and some salmon was soon produced. He directed the boats to come to the rocks, and instantly delivered them the fish; receiving in return, what he considered to be amply satisfactory; still blowing the down into the air, he plucked it from the aerial animal.

It would have been imprudent, for the sake of a minute enquiry into these mysterious ceremonies, to have attempted a further acquaintance with these people; they were therefore left in quiet possession of their dreary rocks, every inch of which they would probably have disputed; as there was reason to apprehend that this party had either been concerned in the attack upon the whawl, or had been made acquainted with the particulars of that transaction†.

In the afternoon, when these new friends were visiting the Chatham, they were surprized by the

* Their canoes were lodged close to them, near a stretched nut. Having put on their war garments, they advanced to meet the boat; one of them being armed with a saquet, and another with a pistol, both of which were locked; the other five were provided with plenty of bows and arrows, in readiness for immediate service.

There was also an elderly person at a little distance, without either a weapon, or a war garment, making long and elaborate speeches, having in one hand the skin of a seal, and with the other he was plucking the feathers and down; which he blew into the air at the conclusion of the several subdivisions of his harangue.

† In the course of this examination, Mr. Whidbey received a visit from another party of the Indians, on the 10th of August. They were conducted by two chiefs, and consisted of twenty-five persons. They were extremely small, and affected importance; not seeming to take any notice of several articles that were presented them, and being wholly engaged in their own con-

arrival of a canoe laden with men in the act of singing, and keeping time by the regularity of their paddling. Directing their course towards the Discovery, they seemed to have given offence to the other party, who immediately assumed their war-garments, holding their spears in a menacing position. Thus equipped, they advanced slowly to meet them, fulminating the most violent speeches, which were answered in the same boisterous tone of voice, by some persons standing in a large canoe. On a nearer approach they rested on their paddles, and entered into a kind of parley; when our European navigators observed, that all those who stood up in the large canoe, were armed with polished pistols and blunderbusses. Their conversation terminating in a pacific way, the opposing party returned with the new comers, who, on passing by the Chatham, laid down their arms: but when they came alongside the Discovery, one of the chiefs, who had been on-board, hastily drew from within the breast of his war-garment, a large iron dagger, and seemed much irritated at some expressions that had dropped from those in the large canoe, who again very coolly took up their pistols and blunderbusses. An explanation, however, took place, when their arms were again returned to their proper places: their pistols and ammunition were carefully wrapped up, and both parties appeared perfectly reconciled.

The chief of the large canoe, at his particular request, was admitted into the ship, accompanied by a man of apparent consequence, who though not actually a chief, was appealed to by the chief upon all matters of importance; and his

conversation. The chiefs remained on board a considerable time, and at length became very sociable. One of them had a pleasing cheerful countenance, and was the finest figure of an Indian that they had yet seen upon that coast; a number of scars about him sufficiently pointed him out as a great warrior. Bread and molasses were the greatest treat that could be given to these people; the chiefs ate heartily of that food, and distributed some among their friends in the surrounding canoes. As an adequate return for this delicious repast, they earnestly recommended some of their whale oil, which stunk most intolerably; it was served into the cabin in a bladder, out of which a spoonful was deliberately poured by the chief; who expatiated on its superior qualities, pronouncing it to be equal, as a delicacy, to European treacle; Mr. Whidbey, indeed, found it attended with much difficulty to get excused from partaking of their nauseous meal, which they seemed to enjoy in the most superlative degree: a glass of rum concluded their angelic feast.

countenance

countenance pronounced him a man of penetration. This senator informed our Europeans that the chief who now visited us, was the great *Ononmistoy*; and his intelligence was confirmed by *Kanant*.

Ononmistoy accepted with much cheerfulness, the presents which Captain Vancouver thought proper to offer him on this occasion. The chiefs of the other tribe came on board at the same time, and received such articles as gave them perfect satisfaction. Towards the evening this great chief, and two or three others of his suit, lamenting that they had not any habitation on shore, requested to be permitted to sleep on board; which was granted as soon as proposed, and fire-works were exhibited for their amusement. Bread and molasses, with rum and wine, were set before *Ononmistoy* for his refreshment; to which were added some of their own dried fish; on which the party fed heartily, and retired to rest with great composure*.

There were five chiefs belonging to the associated parties, who, having performed their several parts, were admitted on board. *Ononmistoy*, wishing to promote commerce, recommended that necessary employment; and wished it might be generally practised. Trading immediately began among the parties; when sea-otter skins, salmon, and several other articles were purchased. Fire-arms, and ammunition were at first earnestly requested in exchange;

but finding they were positively withheld, they soon appeared reconciled to the prohibition, and trafficked briskly in bartering for blue cloth, and tin kettles, which they preferred next to fire-arms, in exchange for their sea-otter skins; but they were willing to part with their fish, and less valuable articles, for looking-glasses, pewee spoons, beads, and other trinkets. The Indian dealers, now assembled, amounted to about sixty persons, who all conducted themselves with great propriety.

About noon on the 4th of September, Mr Johnstone and his party returned from their expedition. He had not discovered a passage to the ocean by the way he had pursued, but he brought back sufficient evidence to prove that the channel he had navigated would ultimately be found to communicate with it†.

Being ignorant of the cause of their assembling, and their numbers were so considerable, Mr Johnstone declined any further acquaintance with them; as their intentions might probably be hostile; no such party having yet visited the ship at any one time, or ever attended in such numbers together. It may rationally be conjectured, that the informed of the absence of the boats, the whole of the neighbouring natives might be collected on this occasion, to intercept the party on their return. A light breeze springing up, favourable to the boats, they kept under sail the whole night, and arrived on board about noon.

SECTION XIX.

Continue to the North-west—Proceed to Nootka—Quit Nootka—The Chatham sent to Port Bodega—Port Francisco—Chatham arrives there—Proceed to Monterey—Anchor at Sta Barbara—Visit Buena Ventura—Arrive at St. Diego.

CALM weather not permitting our navigators to move till the 5th of September, they then

directed their course, with the assistance of the boats, towards Caamano. After encountering

* In the morning of the 1st of September, *Ononmistoy* and his friends joined the party on shore, where they were fully employed in decorating their persons till breakfast was ready; when *Ononmistoy*, attended by all the other chiefs, came off in his large canoe, singing as usual while they paddled round the vessels. Then coming alongside the *Discovery*, they exhibited a kind of entertainment which our adventurers had never seen before. It consisted of singing, and a medley of rude, ridiculous, and extravagant gestures; the chiefs being the principal performers, each in

succession becoming the leader of the song; at the several pauses of which, Captain Vancouver was presented, by an exhibiting chief, with a sea-otter skin.

† The narrative of this examination consists almost wholly of the repetition of inlets, arms, shores, capes, &c. to most persons uninteresting; excepting the following circumstance, on his return from the survey to the ships—the course of the day, the party had passed three dozen villages, two of which occupied a considerable space; but discovered no signs of the humble mansions in them have

verse weather, till the 7th, it became more favourable; when they were visited by a party of Indians in six or seven canoes, who continued on board with them till it was time for them to retire to rest. An intimation being given them to that purpose, they repaired immediately to the shore, where they remained till the following morning, when they repeated their visit with many songs, having greatly augmented the number of their party: this addition, however, consisted principally of women, who without a single male assistant, conducted two or three canoes, and managed their paddles with great dexterity; they were also inclined to entertain our navigators with their vocal abilities*.

A light breeze springing up, our adventurers got under sail, and the Indians took their leave. Soon after the weather began to wear a very threatening appearance; but they were so fortunate as to find, before night, an excellent port; which, after the first lieutenant of the Discovery, received the name of POINT BAKER. This the

tham entered, making the necessary signals to be observed; but just as they reached its entrance, the wind fell calm, and the tide sat them out. A light breeze springing up, blowing directly into the port, conducted them safe to a secure situation, where they anchored about seven in the evening. The threatened storm continued

completely inhibited. The next morning the party were in motion, and near Cape Caamano, they were surprised with the sudden appearance of twenty canoes, from behind a projecting point of land that seemed to contain about a hundred and fifty Indians: a very formidable number, experience had taught our Europeans, that the inhabitants of these regions never traversed the country without being well armed.

Mr. Johnstone, and his party, put themselves immediately on the defensive, and warned the Indians to keep off; but, regardless of his admonition, they still advanced directly towards the boats: he therefore ordered a musquet to be fired over them; and afterwards a swivel, loaded with grape-shot, was discharged, cautiously regulated to avoid doing harm, but near enough to demonstrate its effect. They stopped for a moment, though they again pushed forward. A musquet was then fired over the main body of canoes; when they stopped till the boats rowed past them, and instantly paddled over to the opposite shore.

Most of those who had attained womanhood wore very fine lip ornaments; and among the other female attendants, they saw the progress of that deformity in all its stages, which in general was accompanied with the most excruciating pains; while the process was as cruel as it was durable. The women were more sprightly and cheerful than any Europeans had seen with this hideous mark of distinction.

Vol. I. No. XXXVIII.

with increasing violence during the whole night; but they very providentially reached an anchorage, that completely sheltered them from its fury. Grateful for such an asylum, Captain Vancouver named it PORT PROTECTION. Had they not happily gained this place of safety, they must have past a most perilous night. Thankful, in the highest degree, for so providential a retreat, from the stormy season which now appeared to have commenced, he resolved to continue there while the boats should examine the broken region before them†.

Captain Vancouver waited on Senr. Saavadra, the commandant of the port; who informed him that he had not received any intelligence, either from Europe or New Spain, since his departure from thence in the spring; and that neither the Dædalus, nor any other ship with stores, addressed to him, had been there. The only vessel he found at Nootka, was the Saint Carlos, laid up for the winter; but it was understood from Senr. Saavadra, that in the course of the summer the port had been visited by La Flavia, a French ship, having on board a very valuable cargo of European commodities, which was taken to Kamschatka, to be bartered with the Russians for furs; with which a cargo of tea was to have been purchased in China; but that their expedition had not answered their expecta-

Could they indeed be prevailed on to dispense with this barbarous custom, many of them have such features as would justly entitle them to the appellation of comely.

Want of wind detaining our Europeans, they purchased from these people a large supply of excellent salmon, and some sea-otter skins; for which they received blue cloth, tin-kettles, spoons, and many other articles. In all these commercial transactions, the women took a very active part, and proved themselves perfectly adequate to the task. So far from considering the women inferior to the men, in these, or in any other respects, it is evident that they are looked upon by the natives as the superior sex, for they generally kept the men in awe, and under their subjection. No chief, or person of importance, was discovered to be among this party, unless such authority was vested in some of the females. They all conducted themselves with great integrity, and seemed perfectly to rely on the same honourable treatment from our navigators.

† Scientific remarks, and descriptions of entrances, inlets, arms, bays, coves, &c. then occupy a considerable space of the ingenious narrative; which could only prove interesting to those who are adepts in the superior branches of nautical mathematics. Let it be observed, however, that from hence our navigators directed their course towards Nootka, the port of which they reached on the 5th of October, 1793.

5 X tions.

tions. Senr. Saavdra further stated, that the crew had been mutinous at Nootka, and could with difficulty be prevailed on to be obedient to their commander's orders: at length, however, a reconciliation was effected.

In the morning of the 8th, having requested Senr. Saavdra to take charge of a letter to the commander of the *Dædalus*, or of any other vessel that might arrive at Nootka, with dispatches for Captain Vancouver, he sailed from that port with a light northerly wind, paying and receiving from the fort the usual compliments.

On leaving the port of Nootka, the progress of our navigators was much impeded for want of wind; but, proceeding along the coast, they observed on the eminences and hills near the shores, several large fires, burning throughout the night; a circumstance which had never before attracted their observation. Wishing to obtain information respecting the port of Bodega, of which the storms of the preceding season had disappointed him, Captain Vancouver directed Mr. Puget to make the best of his way thither, whilst he proceeded to St. Francisco: expecting to meet Senr. Quadra, either there, or at Monterrey, with sufficient credentials for adjusting the business depending about Nootka. Mr. Puget having received his directions, and having appointed St. Francisco as a rendezvous for either meeting him, or hearing from him, he immediately departed for the port of Bodega.

In the evening Cape Mendocino was seen bearing south-east, at the distance of seven or eight leagues: in the afternoon they passed Barro de Arenos; the Chatham, though at some distance from the Discovery, being still in sight, and kept close to the land. Fogs and thick weather impeded their course till the 19th, when

+ Being hailed from the shore, a boat was dispatched thither, which immediately returned with Senr. Sal, the once civil and attentive friend of our navigators, who not only made offers of hospitality and services, but gratified them with a communication of the interesting intelligence of the state of Europe up to a very recent period. After supper Senr. Sal repaired to the shore, and the next morning the captain received two letters from him: one requiring, in an official form, an account in writing of his arrival in port St. Francisco; of the supplies he should want; and the time he intended to continue in that port; that all those particulars might be immediately communicated to the governor of the province. The second letter stated, that under the superior orders, by which alone his conduct could be governed, he was obliged to inform him, that no individual could be permitted to

a pleasant breeze brought them to an anchor in Port St. Francisco, not far from their former birth off the Presidio*.

In justice to their once worthy friend, Senr. Sal, the captain remarks that it was evidently with the utmost repugnance, that he was compelled to deliver these injunctions, in compliance with the orders of his senior. In reply to which he told Senr. Sal, that he had put in Port Francisco to procure wood and water, and such refreshments as the country might afford, and to wait the arrival of the Chatham; this port having been appointed as their next rendezvous, previous to their parting company: that when he should have obtained his supplies, which he supposed would not occupy more than two or three days, they should instantly depart; and that the restrictions imposed in the other letter, respecting their communication with the shore, should be punctually observed. This port, however, was the rendezvous of the Chatham, and as the captain had not been deprived of the privilege of procuring some fresh beef, he continued there till she arrived, which happened to be on Monday the 21st.

When our navigators were here before, they procured water in a low place behind the beach which was then flooded by the rain: that temporary fountain was now quite dry, and they were induced to resort to a small stream of most excellent water; but as it was necessary to pass a loose morass to arrive at it, the accomplishment of this object was so tedious as to detain them till the evening of the 23d, when they prepared for their departure. On the 24th, having the ebb tide, and a fresh breeze, they turned out of the port. Though the wind in the offing was light and baffling, they directed their course as well

come on shore, excepting for wood and water, but himself, and one officer, or midshipman, who would be received, and attended at the Presidio, as on their former visit.

These restrictions were so ungracious and degrading that Captain Vancouver could not consider them in any other light than as a dismission from St. Francisco; and was under the greatest perplexity to account for a reception so totally different from what he had formerly experienced, and contrary to what he had, on many occasions, been taught to expect. It was indeed intimated to him, that a captain of the Spanish infantry, named Arriaga, had lately arrived at Monterrey: and, being the senior officer, had taken upon him the jurisdiction of the province, and that his sentiments were not the most favourable towards foreign visitors.

to an anchor in
on their former

thy friend, Sen-
it was evident
that he was com-
ss, in complian-
In reply to which
ut in Port Fran-
er, and such re-
ht afford, and t-
; this port hav-
rendezvous, pro-
ay: that when he
ss, which he sup-
than two or three
part; and that the
letter, respecting
shore, should be
st, however, was
n, and as the cap-
f the privilege
e continued the
d to be on Mond-

here before, the
behind the beach
rain: that the
dry, and they were
stream of most ex-
necessary to pass
the accomplishment
to detain them in
they prepared for
b, having the el-
turned out of the
the offing was light
their course as well

and water, but his
an, who would be
io, as on their former

ious and degrading
nder them in any other
Francisco; and was un-
or a reception to total-
ly experienced, and
occasions, been taught
to him, that a captain
age, had lately arrived
rior officers, had taken
province, and that his
urable towards future

they could towards Monterrey; where they expected to find the deserters of the Chatham; and where the captain entertained hopes of meeting a favourable reception, by explaining the peculiar nature of his situation to Senior Arrillaga, notwithstanding his former restrictive orders.

It appeared by Mr. Puget's journal that he did not reach the entrance into Port Bodega, till the 20th, when he stood in between its north point, and the flat rock lying off it. On landing they were joined by some Indians, who had previously made a large fire on the north corner of the bay. These people, including all ages, and both sexes, did not exceed thirty, and appeared to be perfectly inoffensive: some of them had bows and arrows, which they readily disposed of to the European party for beads and trinkets; their language was a mixture of Spanish and their own provincial dialect. The men were in general naked, but the women wore skins of animals about their shoulders and waists, and were very much tattooed, or punctured: the hair of both sexes was black, and formed into a club behind.

The soil is sandy, containing bushes of different sorts of verdure: great numbers of the feathered tribe made their appearance, such as white and brown pelicans, gulls, plovers, and a variety of aquatic fowls. On the shores were observed eagles, hawks, crows, ravens, and the red-breasted hawk: not a quadruped was seen, but they saw the track and dung of what they supposed to be black cattle. The wind coming to the south-west, with a very threatening appearance from that quarter, deterred him from pursuing his examination*.

The wind continued variable, and sometimes accompanied with foggy weather; in which

though many guns were fired on the 28th to denote the situation of the navigators, the Chatham party company, but the *Dædalus* kept her station. This unpleasant weather continued till they reached Monterrey on the 1st of November, where they anchored with the *Dædalus* about eleven in the forenoon. Here they found their consort, which had fortunately reached this place on the 30th of the preceding month. Whilst the people were engaged in securing the ship, Captain Vancouver sent an officer to acquaint the governor of his arrival, and of the object of his visit; and to offer, on his part, to salute the garrison, on a stipulation that an equal compliment should be returned†.

In the afternoon a signal was made from the shore for one of the boats, which attended and brought off a Spanish officer, who delivered two letters from Senr. Arrillaga to Captain Vancouver: one of them purporting, that he had no orders for the reception of foreign vessels into the ports under his jurisdiction, unless the rights of hospitality demanded his assistance; and requesting he would mention the objects which had brought him there, that he might regulate his proceedings accordingly: the other contained expressions of a desire to preserve the subsisting harmony; but at the same time stated that he could not depart from the *spirit* of the orders by which his conduct was to be governed, and therefore could not permit any persons to come on shore, excepting the commanders of foreign vessels, with one or two officers to each; or the individuals employed in procuring wood and water; which service must be expeditiously performed; and that his other wants would be supplied with the greatest dispatch, on his giving previous notice for that purpose.

deavours had been more successful, as he had taken from Otaheite to Port Jackson seventy of those animals.

† This being assented to, the captain waited on Senr. Arrillaga, the commandant, and was received with the usual ceremonies; but, on his preparing to state his reasons for having entered the ports under his government, the commandant stopped him from proceeding further, and begged the subject might be referred to a written correspondence, that matters might be more accurately explained. Captain Vancouver then started some enquiries respecting the deserters from the Chatham, and was informed by Senr. Arrillaga, that in the month of January, they had made their appearance, and were taken into custody: they were ordered to be sent prisoners to St. Blas, and to be removed from thence to Nootka.

The

* In proceeding towards Monterrey, our navigators hired a vessel, and in standing towards her, she proved to be the *Dædalus*. About noon on the 25th, Lieutenant Anson came on board, and informed Captain Vancouver that he had pursued the route he had directed towards New South Wales; and that he had taken from New Zealand a party of the natives to instruct the inhabitants of Port Jackson in the management of the flax plant. From Mr. Anson, it appeared that Major Groce was very desirous that Captain Vancouver should again attempt to introduce the cattle of this country into New South Wales; though, the number he had before sent thither in the *Dædalus*, viz. one cow, three ewes, and one ram, had survived the voyage, the failure of the rest being generally attributed to their being too aged. With regard to the swine, his en-

The tenor of these letters differed so materially from what his conversation gave the captain reason to expect, when he visited him at the Presidio, that he thought it necessary to send him, the next day, a minute explanation of the objects of the voyage, and of the motives which had induced him to enter the ports under his jurisdiction. He particularly stated that his Britannic Majesty had entrusted him with a voyage of discovery, for the purpose of exploring various countries in the Pacific Ocean; of which the north-west coast of America was a principal object. That, before his departure from England, he had been taught to believe, that he should be hospitably received on this coast by the subjects of the Spanish crown: and that he was instructed to make a free communication of all discoveries made in the course of his researches to any Spanish officer he might happen to meet, engaged in similar pursuits with himself; and that he now proposed to transmit to Senior Quadra a copy of the charts and surveys that had been made since their departure from this port the preceding year. That the voyage was engaged in for the general benefit of mankind, and that the court of Spain would be more early informed of, and as much benefited by his labours as the kingdom of Great Britain. That, on his former visit here, he had been treated with great friendship and hospitality; and had received from the viceroy of Mexico, the strongest assurances that these attentions had been shewn in compliance with the desire of his Catholic Majesty. That our survey would require another year to complete it, and that he had made choice of this port, or St. Diego, for refitting the vessels, and making such astronomical observations as were become necessary. He added, that he hoped the officers and people might be indulged with the same recreation on foot and on horseback, which they had enjoyed on their former visit, under such limitations and restrictions as might be thought reasonable and proper.

On the 4th he received a reply to his letter from Senior Arrillaga, which he acknowledged to be ingenious, and thanked him for the perusal of the Viceroy's letter, which he had inclosed.

* The situation proposed for the reception of their provisions and stores, was not only inconvenient, but offensive and unwholesome, in the midst of the slaughtering place for all the cattle; from whence the offal had never been cleared away, but left from time to time in a continual state

In vindication of himself, he said, there was no royal order for the reception of the vessels, like that produced by M. de la Perouse. That he did not suppose his excellency expected that they should repair a second time to those ports; and that even Senior Quadra had intimated that the attentions they had received on the former occasion, were for that time only. But, notwithstanding these objections, and being desirous of promoting a public undertaking, he requested the captain would inform him of the precise number of days in which the store-ship could be unloaded. He offered to give him the key of the warehouse at the landing place, for the reception of her cargo, near which he might erect the observatory; and permitted the officers and gentlemen to recreate themselves within sight of the Spanish officer, who should be stationed to protect the cargo and observatory; the latter of which was only to be erected in the day time, as he could not suffer any of their people to be on shore between sun-set and sun-rise. And lastly, he had no objection to their supplying themselves with wood and water, provided the persons employed on that service should retire on board at night, and that he would engage to be expeditious in these and all his other transactions*.

On due consideration of these circumstances the captain declined accepting the assistance of Senior Arrillaga; and resolved, after having investigated these shores, to retire to the Sandwich Islands; where he supposed the inhabitants of Owhyhee, or its neighbouring isles, would cheerfully afford him that accommodation which had been so ungenerously denied him at St. Francisco and Monterey. In the forenoon of the 5th they were unmoored, and about ten at night weighed anchor, and sailed out of the bay; on the 6th they hauled in close to mount Pinos, and there recommenced their survey of this coast south-eastward from Monterey.

As they proceeded, the coast near the land was observed to be tolerably well wooded, even close down to the shore: some of the trees were very large, with spreading branches; and, being generally distributed in detached clumps, pro-

of putrefaction. In the centre of this nuisance they were obligingly permitted to erect the observatory, and to attend to their astronomical pursuits, but in the day-time only, and in a certain limited space, within sight of the Presidio they might amuse themselves on shore.

due

VOL. I.

There was no doubt that the vessels, like those of the Spanish establishment, seemed to benefit by its superior productions, as they soon discovered such a canoe approaching them as they little expected to have met with: it was formed of wood, after the Nootka fashion, and very adroitly navigated by four of the natives of the country; their paddles, which were about ten feet long, had a blade at each end, which they managed with great dexterity. Their exertions to reach our navigators were great, but as they were favoured with a fresh gale, the natives were unable to come up with them. The captain regretted that he could not afford time for a better acquaintance with these people, who, by the ingenuity displayed in their canoe, seemed to be very different from those insensible beings they had met with in the neighbourhood of Saint Francisco and Monterrey*.

A light breeze springing up, they directed their course along shore to the eastward. About two in the afternoon they passed a small bay, which had a bed of sea-weed across its entrance. Within this bay a large Indian village was pleasantly situated, from whence they were visited by some of the inhabitants; among them was a very intelligent fellow who informed them, in the Spanish language, that there was a mission and a Presidio a little further to the eastward. About five in the evening this establishment was perceived in a small bay, which appeared to be a state of civilization far superior to any other of the Spanish settlements. The buildings were regular, and well constructed, the walls clean and white, and the roofs of the houses covered with red tiles. The Presidio just shewed itself above a grove of small trees, forming, with the rest of the buildings, a very picturesque effect. Proposing to continue somewhere for the night and as this bay seemed likely to answer that purpose, as well as to afford refreshments, they hauled

in and anchored in six fathoms water. Thus situated, before the Spanish establishment, Captain Vancouver sent Lieutenant Swaine to the commanding officer of the Presidio to inform him of their arrival; and, as he intended to depart in the morning, to request that the Indians might be permitted to bring, in the course of the night, such articles of food as they were willing to dispose of; which was understood to consist of hogs, fowls, dried fish, and vegetables.

Mr. Swaine returned, after meeting with a polite reception from the commandant Senior Don Felipe Goycochea, who very hospitably informed him, that every refreshment the country could afford was entirely at their command; and begged they would remain a few days to partake of those advantages, that he might enjoy the pleasure of administering to their wants. On learning from Mr. Swaine which way they were bound, he observed that wood and water would be found extremely scarce, farther to the southward; and recommended, if their stock should require replenishing, to embrace the moment which the present opportunity afforded for so doing.

The intelligence communicated to the captain by Mr. Swaine, and the liberal conduct he expected from the commandant, inclined him to think of accepting the advantages he had so obligingly offered. The next morning accompanied by Lieutenants Puget and Hanson, he paid his respects on shore to Senior Don Felipe, the commandant of the establishment of Sta Barbara. He received them with politeness, and earnestly renewed the offers he had made to Mr. Swaine the preceding evening. He said he should be happy to render them any service that was not incompatible with the orders under which he acted; which orders only required that those who were employed for the service of

they anchored in company with the Chatham and *Dædalus*.

The want of wind detaining them in this situation, furnished the neighbouring natives with an opportunity of paying them a visit: their canoes were made of wood, and decorated with shells: they brought with them fish and ornaments, which they cheerfully disposed of for scissars, spoons, and beads. They displayed great vivacity and sensibility, and conducted themselves with decency and decorum; and seemed a perfect contrast to the inanimate stupidity of those Indians they had seen under the Spanish jurisdiction at St. Francisco and Monterrey.

* Point Conception is rendered remarkable by its stretching out into the ocean, from an extensive tract of low land, falling perpendicularly into the sea, which broke against it with great violence. Immediately to the eastward of this point, they passed a small Indian village, the first they had observed along the shores of the southern parts of New Spain. The inhabitants made a fire as soon as they came within their view, but no one attempted to pay them a visit. The navigators endeavoured to approach the shores of the main land, in order to stop for the night. In the evening it was nearly calm; and having no soundings at the depth of thirty-seven fathoms,

the vessels on shore, or engaged in their several recreations in the neighbourhood, were required to be on board every night. The captain assured him that his stipulation should be punctually attended to, as well as every other regulation which his prudence might suggest*.

The pleasing society of their good friends at the mission and Presidio was at this time augmented by the arrival of Friar Vincinte Sta Maria, one of the fathers of the mission of Buena Ventura, situated about seven leagues to the south-eastward. The motives that induced this respectable priest to favour them with his company, strongly manifested his beneficence. Having crossed the ocean more than once himself, he knew how valuable the fresh productions of the shores were to persons in their situation; and had therefore brought with him, for their service, twenty sheep, and had laden twenty mules with various fruits and vegetables from the garden of the mission. This benevolent friend, accompanied by the commandant, and Father Miguel, honoured Captain Vancouver with their company to dine on board; where in the course of conversation he was informed, that the mission of Buena Ventura was situated in a small bay; and as Friar Vincinte appeared, pleased with his visit on board, the captain requested he would favour him with his company in the Discovery to his residence. This offer he cheerfully accepted, and the captain only regretted that he must speedily lose the society of a gentleman, whose observations through life, and general knowledge of mankind, rendered him a most entertaining and instructive companion. The next morning our adventurers were attended at breakfast by their friends from the shore; and were detained at anchor till almost noon, when they took leave of their Sta Barbara friends, and accompanied by Father Vincinte, they directed their course towards Buena Ventura†.

* They were introduced to Friar Miguel, one of the reverend fathers of the mission of Sta Barbara, who expressed the greatest anxiety for their welfare. The commandant had given directions that our navigators should be furnished with fresh meat, in such quantities as they might think proper to demand: vegetables and fowls were principally to be procured from private individuals; whilst the reverend fathers of the mission, and the commandant, shared with them the productions of the gardens, which, like those of the more northern establishments, were but of small extent.

The party found their situation on the succeeding morning to be within about two miles of the shore; the landing place near the mission of Buena Ventura being three miles distant. The coast opposite, and to the northward of them, consisted chiefly of high steep cliffs, indented with some small sandy coves. The general face of the country was mountainous, barren, rugged, and dreary; but towards the mission, a margin of low land extended from the base of the mountains: a few trees in the neighbourhood of the establishment, tended to give this part of the country a less unpleasant appearance. Having taken an early breakfast, Captain Vancouver attended Father Vincinte to the shore, where a large assortment of refreshments were ready for embarkation. The violence of the surf, at this time, prevented their landing, and it required great circumspection in the Indians to venture off to them. They were therefore determined to wait; and in the meantime the canoes brought off sheep, fowls, and vegetables in such abundance, that four boats were occupied in conveying them to the ships.

In this situation they waited at a grapnel till the afternoon; when it appearing that the surf was not sufficiently abated to admit of their landing in perfect safety; and the learned divine not having the courage to venture on shore in any of the canoes, they returned on board. But when they had proceeded about half way to the ship, Father Vincinte recollected that he had entrusted his bible and prayer book to the care of a servant, with the strongest injunctions to deposit them securely on shore: this service had been inviolably performed; for on their return these spiritual comforts had been forgotten to be recalled. The omission added greatly to the dejection of spirits which the holy father now experienced: an untoward accident, at the same instant, presented a situation of great alarm; but it was soon discovered to proceed from the

Suspecting that the unpleasant restrictions which had been imposed on our navigators, had been occasioned by their abusing the liberty that had been granted them, Captain Vancouver issued positive injunctions, that no individual under his command should extend his excursions beyond the view from the Presidio.

† To sail into the bay or roadstead of Sta Barbara is attended with no difficulty, as it is open and without any kind of interruption; and the soundings on approaching are regular, from fifteen to three fathoms.

plung having worked out from the boat's bottom, by which means a great quantity of water was received, and it continued to increase till the cause was discovered and removed; when the effect instantly ceased, and the boat as instantly was restored. This accident, however, appeared to be a matter of the most serious concern with the pious priest; which might perhaps be a little aggravated by some smiles at his distress, which it was impossible to suppress*.

The next morning our navigators received an early visit from some of the Indians, who came to inform Father Vincente that the surf was abated, and that he might land in security. With the assistance of the Discovery's light small boat, he was conducted with great ease, perfectly dry, and much to the satisfaction of his reverence; of whose bounty a large quantity of provisions, and other useful articles were now remaining on the beach, in readiness to be sent on board. Five head of cattle formed a part of this liberal present; one of which, being a very fine young bull, was taken on board alive, in order to be conveyed to Owhyhee: the others were killed to afford an ample supply for food: more than these were equally at their service, had they required them.

Their hospitable friend then conducted them towards the establishment, which was almost a mile from the water-side. As they advanced, a great number of Indians, of all ages, and both

* This reverend Father was now so much disconcerted, that he almost despaired of arriving safe at the ship. They were, however, soon along-side, and the reverend pastor was by no means reluctant to leave the boat. When he found himself safely on board, he soon recovered from his earlier apprehensions of danger, yet the absence of his books was now a source of great vexation; and our navigators were unable to afford him any consolation, as those who had on board were in a language he did not understand. In the evening, to his great astonishment and joy, a servant came on board with the bible and prayer-book, neither of which had received the least wet or injury from the ocean. The very great comfort this circumstance imparted was strongly manifested by the countenance of the pious father: he retired, and was closeted about three quarters of an hour; when he returned to supper, and became as cheerful as he had been before these alarming events had happened. The captain apologized for having taken the liberty of meddling at his situation, and obtained absolute forgiveness, where he laughed heartily at the adventures of the day, and a comfortable evening ensued.

When our navigators entered the mission, they were received by Father Francisco Dume, and most respectfully entertained. The morning was employed in surveying the

sexes, came running towards them. This sudden collecting of people was attributed to curiosity, and the desire of seeing strangers; but our navigators were soon convinced, that this grand assemblage was not to welcome them, but the return of their pastor and benefactor. Though it was then early in the morning, the happy tidings had reached the mission, from whence these adopted children issued; each pressing through the crowd to salute the hand of their paternal guardian, to receive his benediction: this being graciously administered, the little multitude dispersed with apparent satisfaction†.

With light baffling winds, they directed their course on Friday the 22d. to the southward, gratefully thankful for the hospitable reception, and benevolent donations of their reverend friend at Buena Ventura‡.

The land wind blew a moderate breeze on the 27th, with which they stood to the southward along the shore: but the weather was then so hazy as to prevent their looking about them till eight o'clock, when they perceived they were near the south-west point of entrance into the port St. Diego, called by the Spaniards Punta de la Loma. It is the southern extremity of a remarkable range of elevated land, and at a distance has the appearance of being insular: the fact, however, is not so; but when viewed from the sea, it has that singular appearance. It descends in steep rocky cliffs to the water-side, from

buildings of the mission, and the arrangements of the land in the vicinage; all of which appeared to be in a superior style to any of the settlements they had before seen. The day passed agreeably in the society of their ecclesiastical friends; and the pleasure of it was much heightened by the arrival of a mail from Europe, to be forwarded to Monterey. In the evening they returned to the vessels, which had been prevented moving by the calmness of the weather.

† On the 26th of November, about nine in the forenoon, another Spanish establishment presented itself, erected close to the water-side. Its appearance, and situation relative to the mission of St. Juan Capistrano, corresponding with what Captain Vancouver had heard of that settlement, induced him to believe that it was the last establishment between Sta Barbara and the Presidio of St. Diego. This mission is delightfully situated in a grove of trees, whose luxuriant foliage, when contrasted with the adjacent rugged and dreary shores, gave it a most romantic appearance. The buildings of the mission were of brick and stone, and the soil in their vicinity displayed the most remarkable fertility; the landing on the beach in the cove appeared to be good, and had he not been at that instant indulged with a favourable gale, he would have been tempted to have passed a few hours at this enchanting place,

whence

whence a bed of weeds extends into the ocean. With some difficulty, our navigators entered the channel leading into port St. Diego, across which is a bar; and about two in the afternoon anchored in ten fathoms water, at the usual place of anchorage in the harbour. Having taken this station without having been observed by any of his Catholic Majesty's subjects, Captain Vancouver immediately dispatched Lieutenant Swaine up the harbour to the Presidio, to inform the commanding officer of his arrival; and to enquire if any dispatches for him had been committed to his care. Mr. Swaine was also instructed to enquire whether such commanding officer would kindly condescend to forward such dispatches as he might think necessary to transmit to England*.

When Mr. Swaine returned, he informed the captain that he had been politely and hospitably received by the commanding officer, who informed him that he had neither seen nor heard of any letters or dispatches addressed to him; but that he would gladly take charge of, and forward to Europe, what he might have occasion to transmit. He assured Mr. Swaine, that such refreshments as the country afforded were perfectly at the command of our British navigators; and that he should be happy to shew them every civility within the line prescribed by the orders under which he acted.

After Captain Vancouver had answered the commandant's letter, and gratefully acknowledged the politeness and hospitality manifested in the reception of the officer who had been dispatched to him, he intimated an intention of waiting on him the following morning; when the visit accordingly took place, and the captain was accompanied by Lieutenants Puget and Hanson: On their landing, they found horses waiting for them, on which they rode to the Presidio, and were received with the most flattering marks of attention and respect. The commandant renewed his friendly offers; and similar assurances of assistance were given by Senr. Don Jose Zuniga,

* During the absence of Mr. Swaine, the captain received a polite epistle from Senr. Antonio Grajero, a lieutenant in the Spanish cavalry, and commandant of this port, requesting to know the nature of the business that had brought his little squadron within the limits of his command.

† Those gentlemen, however, informed our navigators, that they had lately, to their great mortification, received from Senr. Arrillaga such a list of restrictions as would inevitably deprive both parties of reciprocal satisfaction.

the former commandant, who was now promoted to the rank of captain of infantry; and was also appointed to an important charge on the opposite side of the gulph of California, whither he was then preparing to depart†.

Notwithstanding these ungenerous directions the gentlemen begged our navigators not to deprive themselves of a supply of such refreshments as the country afforded; for though they must appear to keep within the limits of the orders, they would rather mitigate than add to their severity, where they could prudently act a lenient part; assuring them that all rigorous proceedings were contrary to their own inclinations.

A continuation of southerly winds detained our navigators till Monday the 9th of December when they quitted the port of St. Diego. The captain felt himself much indebted for the hospitable intentions shewn him at the mission, as well as at the Presidio of St. Diego; for which he not only tendered his most grateful acknowledgments, but requested their acceptance of a few necessary articles, which they could not readily procure through any other channel. He had the further satisfaction of seeing that these favours were very thankfully received. The captain concludes the transactions at St. Diego by stating such astronomical and nautical observations as were made there, with those that had been made previously to their arrival, and after their departure from that port.

Having quitted St. Diego, our navigators were assisted by a pleasant breeze from north west, with which their course was directed along the coast. During the forenoon, on the 10th of December, immense columns of smoke were seen to arise from the shore in different parts, but principally from the south east, which towards noon obscured the shores in that direction. The whole coast was soon enveloped with these clouds of smoke to such a degree, that only a small part of it was visible. The eastern

These orders amounted to a prohibition of their transacting any business on shore, but that of procuring wood and water; particularly enjoining that the store-ship should not be unladen at St. Diego; and expressed, that when the above-mentioned supplies were furnished, (which must be done with all possible dispatch) it was expected they would instantly depart. Among other severe injunctions, they were not permitted to take any live cattle, or sheep on board.

Third

THE

coast
upon on the
will visible
moderate
the next m
island n
a north
they had a
reeze fro
they had c
ed with
the 20th a
ull that a
manifested
the 29
Hajos isl
edicate th
On the
was favou
ard settle
Two o
very d
erupt
the op
ferent pa
ence of
ry great
e most c
m rising f
orthward
roofs were
was, woe
roductions
country, as
a consid
ed that t
circumstanc
country sho

VOL. I

now promoted
ry, and was also
on the opposite
whither he was

erous directions
navigators not to
of such refresh-
for though they
the limits of the
gate than add to
prudently act
that all rigorous
their own inclina-

y winds detained
9th of December
St. Diego. The
bted for the boat
at the mission, a
Diego; for which
grateful acknow-
acceptance of
they could ne
y other channel
of seeing that the
received. The
ions at St. Diego
and nautical ob-
e, with those the
their arrival, at
t port.

our navigators
reeze from north
was directed along
on, on the 10th
of smoke were seen
different parts, be-
ust, which toward
nt direction. The
ed with these dis-
degree, that on
ble. The eastern

tion of their transac-
of procuring wood
t the store-ship the
expressed, that when
nished, (which must
was expected they
vere injunctions, to
ve cattle, or sheep

wind prevailing brought with it from the shore
immense volumes of this noxious matter, which
were not only distressing to their feelings, but
adverse to their pursuit, as it concealed from
their view every object at the distance of a hun-
dred yards*.

The ninth chapter of the fourth volume of the

original work is almost wholly devoted to the
transactions of the Spanish missions, and mission-
aries; a further account of which the editor thinks
would be more than his readers can require; a
copious account of those religious settlements,
and their spiritual conductors, having been given
in the preceding pages.

SECTION XX.

*Third Visit to the Sandwich Islands—Leave the Coast of New Albion—Arrive off Owhyhee—
Visited by Tumaahmaah—Proceed to Karakakooa Bay—Transactions there.*

THE progress of our navigators from the
coast of New Albion was so slow, that at
noon on the 15th of December, the shores were
still visible. In the afternoon the wind blew a
moderate gale, which brought them by day-light
the next morning within the sight of Guadaloupe,
an island about thirteen miles, in length, nearly
to a north and south direction. On the 22d,
they had a calm; after which they had a gentle
breeze from the north-east: as they proceeded
they had cloudy and gloomy weather, accompa-
nied with rain and sudden gusts of wind. On
the 29th a tropic bird was seen, and a common
bill that appeared to be greatly fatigued, as she
manifested an inclination to alight on board.
On the 29th they passed the spot assigned to los
Mojos isles, but perceived no circumstance to
indicate the vicinity of land.

On the 7th of January, 1794, the weather
was favourable, and the wind from the north-
east settled in the north-east; to this they spread

Two opinions were adopted respecting the cause of
every disagreeable clouds of smoke and ashes. Vol-
canic eruptions was the first conjecture; but after some
time the opinion changed to the fire being superficial in
different parts of the country; and which, by the pre-
valence of the north-east and easterly wind, spread to a
very great extent; and this latter opinion appeared to be
the most correct. Large columns of smoke were now
seen rising from the valleys behind the hills, and extending
northward along the coast. To the south several manifest
proofs were belied of its fatal effects; as burnt tufts of
grass, weeds, and shrubs, which were the only vegetable
productions, were distinguished over the whole face of the
country, as far as they could discern; and in many places,
at a considerable distance, the rising columns of smoke tes-
tified that the fire was not yet extinguished. Under such
circumstances, it cannot be a matter of surprise that the
country should have a desolate appearance. The smaller

all their canvas, expecting to see the island of
Owhyhee early the next morning. The wind,
however, slackened during the night, and it was
not till nine in the morning on the 8th, that
Mowna-Kaah was discovered: at this time the
east end of Owhyhee bore south-west at the
distance of ten leagues. They stood in for the
land till sun-set, when being within two leagues
of the shore, they employed the night in
preserving their station off the coast, expecting
to find the harbour or bay of Whyeata; in
search of which Captain Vancouver dispatched
Wr. Whidbey in the cutter, attended by a boat
from the Chatham, and another from the Dædalus,
all properly armed†.

Mr. Whidbey informed Captain Vancouver
that, in some respects, Whyeata might be a con-
venient bay; but it was entirely exposed to the
northerly winds, which then blew very strong;
and, being attended with a heavy sea from that
quarter, it was almost impossible to land from

portions of smoke induced our adventurers to exercise their
glasses in search of population, but neither inhabitants nor
habitations were within the limits of their survey.

† The boats had hardly departed, when several of the
natives came off in their canoes, but a heavy swell prevent-
ed their bringing many refreshments. Discovering who our
adventurers were, they informed them that *Tumaahmaah*,
with several of the principal chiefs, was then on shore
waiting for their arrival; and then hastened towards the
shore, proclaiming their return to that country with shouts
of joy. About ten in the morning they were honoured
with the presence of the king, who expressed the highest
satisfaction on seeing them again, and hoped they would
be able to remain there some time, to enjoy the benefits
arising from the fertility of the island. *Tumaahmaah* had
observed the boats in their passage to the shore, and ex-
pected they would return with a favourable report.

their boats. The captain therefore resolved to proceed to Karakakooa, as that bay was the most secure and convenient port for shipping of any in the Sandwich islands. His intention was immediately made known to *Tamaahmaah*, and also that the captain requested the pleasure of his company thither.

After some miscellaneous conversation *Tamaahmaah* expressed an inclination to accompany him, but the *taboo* appertaining to the festival of the new year demanded his attendance, and nothing could excuse his absence without the particular sanction of the priests. Aware of the superior influence possessed by the priesthood, and of the strict adherence of the people to their superstitions, he did not attempt to check him on that consideration; but pretended to attribute his declining the captain's invitation to a relaxation, in the friendship he had formerly shewn and professed*.

Their course was directed round the east point of the island, and as they passed the district of Opoona on the 11th, they had an excellent view of Mowna Roa's snowy summit, and the range of hills extending towards the east end of Owhyhee. From the tops of these, several columns of smoke were observed to ascend, which *Tamaahmaah* and his friends said were occasioned by the subterraneous fire, that frequently broke out in violent eruptions, creating a multiplicity of superstitious notions; volcanic rites being solemnly performed for the purpose of appeasing the wrath of the enraged demon†.

About noon they were opposite the south point of the island: the wind blew strong till the

* *Tamaahmaah* had always been accustomed to attend their meals on board, but being thus reproached with a want of friendship, he refused to accept of any thing at table: his sensibility was probed to the quick; and he resolved, rather than be suspected of such coolness, to risk the displeasure of the priests by an unprecedented breach of their religious rites: he therefore immediately sent his half brother *Orymahoo* to communicate his intentions of accompanying the captain. Their little difference being thus amicably adjusted, he ate a very hearty breakfast; and having given instructions to his brother respecting the mode of government in his absence, he was dismissed, with directions to return speedily with the answer of the priests. The result of their deliberations was, that they would unanimously accede to his wishes: the captain did not hesitate in giving his hearty concurrence to this determination, being anxious to proceed expeditiously to Karakakooa.

† On approaching the shores of *Kao*, they were met

morning of the 12th, when it became variable and their progress was very slow towards Karakakooa. *Tamaahmaah*, wishing to gain the place of their destination, went on shore to find some conspicuous lights, to guide them in the evening to their former anchorage; where, about ten the following night, they anchored near an American brig, named the *Lady Washington*, commanded by Mr. John Kendrick. As the vessel worked into the bay, the assembled inhabitants announced their congratulations by shouts of joy. The *Discovery* was secured nearly in her former situation on the following morning; and the *Chatham* and *Dædalus* were properly disposed of for the convenient execution of their respective services.

Tamaahmaah, convinced of the necessity of landing part of the cargoes of the vessels, appointed proper places for their reception; and undertook to be answerable for the safety and security of whatever might be taken on shore. Considering also that bartering with the several chiefs, and other individuals, would be troublesome and unpleasant, he only required that the navigators would daily make their demands known to him, and gave his assurances that the three vessels should be duly supplied with every necessary refreshment. This friendly arrangement, Captain Vancouver was happy to concur in; and at day-light on the 15th, three large canoes arrived, laden with forty large hogs, thirty small ones, and a considerable quantity of vegetables; which were, by the directions of the sovereign, distributed among the three vessels‡.

by several of the inhabitants, in their canoes laden with freshments. Many of them expressed their astonishment at seeing their king on board, and wished to know whether he had broken the *taboo* by his own choice, or by compulsion: Matters being explained to their satisfaction, they were equally satisfied to be informed, that it was the king's pleasure that the hogs and vegetables they had brought should be taken on board, without their receiving any equivalent in return.

§ The three large canoes having thus delivered the very acceptable cargoes, they conveyed to the shore the five cattle which the captain had been more successful in bringing from New Abien, than on the former occasion. They consisted of a young bull, two fine cows, and two bull calves, all in excellent condition. These were accompanied with five rams, and an equal number of sheep: two of these, with most of the black cattle, were given to the king; and as those he had brought the preceding year had been tolerably successful, the sheep had

Captain

became variable
w towards Kar
ing to gain the
on shore to fi
ide them in the
ge; where, abo
nchored near a
ady Washington
ndrick. As the
abled inhabitant
na by shouts of
red nearly in he
ng morning; and
ere properly di
xecution of the

the necessity of
f the vessels, ap
reception; and
or the safety an
e taken on shore
t with the sever
would be trouble
required that on
e their demand
assurances that
plied with eyes
friendly arrange
happy to conce
15th, three larg
forty large hog
terable quantity
the directions
ong the three

Captain

r canoes laden with
d their astonishment
hod to know whether
n choice, or by use
their satisfaction, the
that it was the king
they had brought
at their receiving

g thus delivered the
ayed to the shore
on more successful
the former occasion
vo fine cows, and
ion. These were
equal number of
the black cattle, w
had brought the
useful, the sheep

Captain Vancouver, willing to make the most of his time, proposed sending the tents, observatory, and instruments on shore, to enable him to make his observations: on this occasion, however, he was surprised to find that the king had made some objections to their being placed in their former situation, near the morai; declaring he could not sanction his inhabiting the consecrated lands without the permission of an old woman*. *Tamaahmaah* observing his disappointment, requested him to fix on some other part of the bay; but the captain insisting that no other spot would be equally convenient, he assembled some of the principal priests in the morai; and, after a serious conference with them, he was permitted to occupy the consecrated ground as formerly; and accordingly took possession of it on the 25th. To this spot, as on their former visit, none were admitted but those of the society of priests, the principal chiefs, and a few of their male attendants: no woman, on any pretence whatever, being ever admitted within the sacred limits of the morai.

The unfortunate son of *Kahowmotoo* had been brought by his father from his principal place of residence to the village of *Kowrows*, for medical assistance, but without effect; for in the afternoon he breathed his last. The periodical *taboo* that ought to have commenced on the following evening, was, on this occasion, suspended, to manifest their displeasure with the deity for the

and, and one of the cows having produced a cow-calf, he entered himself with the idea of having at length established a breed of these valuable animals.

Several of the principal chiefs were now in the neighbourhood; and *Kahowmotoo*, Captain Vancouver's former friend, paid him an early visit, taking with him a dozen large hogs, and a proportionable quantity of vegetables. He had lost much of his cheerfulness, and was indeed exceedingly depressed, in consequence of a wound his favourite son *Whokaa* had received in the exercise of throwing the spear with a man of inferior rank. The wound had baffled their art to cure, and had reduced the youth to the last stage of his existence. His antagonist was therefore arrested, and the following day his eyes were pulled out: after remaining in that deplorable state about two days, he was executed by being strangled with a rope.

The daughter of the venerable *Kaah*, and wife to the notorious *Koah*. V. Capt. King's account of Captain *Koah*'s death.

It happened, however, that *Kavakeero*, the chief of the village, where his son had departed this transitory life, in the course of the night, privately caused the body of the young chief to be conveyed to one of the sepulchral mounds, of the steep hill forming the north side of the bay. The circumstance sufficiently evinces their extreme aversion

death of their young chief, whose loss was deplored by the whole family, but more particularly by *Kahowmotoo*. Captain Vancouver took the liberty of enquiring when the body would be interred, and if he might be permitted to attend the funeral solemnities; when he was informed by *Kahowmotoo*, that the funeral would take place the subsequent day, and that he would come on board to accompany him on the melancholy occasion†.

The party that accompanied Mr. Menzies returned with him on the 25th. Their object had been to gain the summit of *Mowna Roa*, which they could not effect in the direction they had attempted; but they had reached the top of another mountain which is very conspicuous, and called by the natives *Worroraray*. This mountain rises from the western extremity of the island, and on its summit a volcanic crater appeared, perfectly accounting for the formation of that part of the country, over which it was found so difficult and dangerous to travel‡.

Being much displeased at the ingratitude of his attendants, Captain Vancouver demanded of *Tamaahmaah*, in an expostulating tone, the two knives that were withheld; and expatiated on the disgrace the theft had attached on every individual of the whole party. *Tamaahmaah* expressed much chagrin that the captain should be thus unhandsomely treated; which was greatly aggravated by one of his most particular

to the discovery of their religious rite, and their determination to prevent the attendance of the curious on any of their religious formalities.

† The whole of the retinue who had attended *Tamaahmaah* from *Aheedo*, with the addition of several visitors, were supported on board the ships, and ought to have felt themselves perfectly happy in their situation; but such was their irresistible propensity to thieving, that five of the captain's table knives were missing. The Indian party protested they had not the least knowledge of the theft; but the knives having been stolen by some of them, he ordered every man, except the king to quit the ship immediately, and that none of them should be re-admitted. He also intimated to *Tamaahmaah* that he expected the knives should be restored. He saw the propriety of the captain's insisting upon this demand, and in the course of the morning three of the knives were returned.

The *taboo*, which had been postponed on account of *Whokaa*'s death, was observed this evening; it was attended, however, with tokens of resentment to their deity for permitting him to die; for it was only to be in force from sun-set to sun rising, instead of the usual time of two nights and a day. The king returned to our navigators as soon as the ceremonies were ended.

favourites

favourites having been justly charged as one of the delinquents. About noon he sullenly repaired to the shore, and did not return till sent for in the evening when another of the knives was produced, which he declared was the only one he could find. The truth, however, was at length made known; the knife had been given by the pilferer to a person of importance, over whom *Tamaahmaah* was unwilling to enforce his authority. The captain readily acquiesced to

the loss of the knife, as it relieved him from the inconvenience which a number of troublesome visitors had occasioned.

On the 30th our navigators were favoured with the company of *Tere-my-tee*, *Crymahahoo*, *Tianna*, and other chiefs, from the distant parts of the island. They had been summoned by the king to attend a grand council, to debate on the cession of the island to the crown of Great Britain, which was unanimously desired.

SECTION XXI.

Farther Transactions at Karakakooa—Cession of the Island of Owhyhee to the British Crown.

THE reception of our European navigators among these unlettered people, though distinguished by the appellation of savages, was such as is seldom equalled by the most civilized nations of Europe. They were not fettered with ungenerous restrictions, but immediately on their arrival, an ample space was appropriated to their service protected by the most sacred laws of the country; whilst those of their little community who chose to visit the interior parts of the island, in pursuit of knowledge or recreation, received encouragement and assistance from the kindness of *Tamaahmaah*; hospitality and friendship was shewn them, at every house which they approached in the course of their different excursions.

A strict *taboo* was on the 12th of February to be enforced over all the island, and the chiefs were required to retire to their respective estates, for the purpose of rigidly observing their solemnities; which were to continue two nights and a day. Should the omens prove favourable, such chiefs would be allowed to eat what pork

they thought proper to consecrate on this occasion; and high *poory*, that is, grand prayers would be performed; but should the omens happen otherwise, the rites were immediately to be suspended. Captain Vancouver having expressed a desire to be present upon some of these occasions, *Tamaahmaah* obtained the consent of the priests that he should be thus indulged; on his promise, during the continuance of the interdiction, to observe all the restrictions which their religion demanded.

Having promised obedience to this condition he was formally visited by several of the principals of their religious order; one of whom was named *Eakoo*, no *Tamaahmaah*, the god of *Tamaahmaah*. This priest had often been one of the captain's attendants; but, on this occasion he was detected in stealing a knife, for which he was dismissed from the party, and excluded from the limits of their encampment*.

Tahowmotoo was a constant visitor, but his daughter, the disgraced queen, seldom appeared

* The restraints imposed were—1. A total seclusion from the company of women. 2. To partake of no food that is not previously consecrated. 3. To be confined to the land, and to avoid being wet, or afloat in sea-water. 4. Not to receive or touch the most trivial article from any one who had not attended the ceremonies of the *morat*.—These restrictions were required to be observed by the whole of the party resident on shore. At sun-set they obeyed the summons of the king at the *morat*, who was there officiating as high priest, attended by the principal residents of their religious orders, chanting an invocation to the setting sun, with which they commenced their hallowed rites. In their devotions, they did not omit to pray for the welfare of his Britannic Majesty, and for the

safe and happy return of our navigators to their native country. A certain degree of order was perceptible throughout their ceremonies, blended with many superstitious and mysterious formalities; among which, we also mention one performed about the dawn of day. At that time the silence of every creature was required. The king then repeated a solemn prayer in so low a tone of voice as to be almost inaudible; in the middle of which he took a live pig tied by the legs, and with one effort killed it against the ground, without breaking the silence by the cries of the victim. Hogs, plantains, and coco-nuts were then consecrated for the principal chiefs and priests. Soon after the sun rose on the 14th, they were absolved from any further obedience to their sacred injunctions.

ed him from the
of troublesom
were favour
e, *Crymamahoo*
the distant part
summoned by the
to debate on the
crown of Great
y desired.

British Crown,

ate on this occa
grand prayer
ould the omen
e immediately
puver having ex
pon some of the
ed the consent o
hus indulged; o
ance of the inter
ctions which the

to this condition
veral of the prie
one of whom wa
aah, the god o
ad often been on
t, on this occasi
nife, for which h
and excluded fro

at visitor, but h
seldom appear

igators to their us
order was percept
ed with many su
among which, we
awn of day. A
s required. The
low a tone of voice
of which he took
th one effort kill
ing the silence by
ains, and cocoa-n
pal chiefs and prie
th, they were al
sacred injuncti

on that side of the bay: she was anxious, how-
ever, for a reconciliation with *Tamaahmaah*; and
his unaltered affection for *Tahowmanno* was con-
firmed with a sort of conviction of her innocence:
he candidly acknowledged that his own conduct
had not been such, as to warrant his having de-
manded a separation from his queen; and though
she did not authorise, it pleaded a kind of excuse
for her infidelity. With respect to himself, he
admitted that his rank and supreme authority
was a licence for such indulgences.

An accommodation, which appeared to be
mutually wished by both parties, was strongly
urged by the queen's relations; and Captain Van-
couver's interference was frequently solicited by
them. A plan was therefore projected which
produced an interview, when the captain seizing
Tamaahmaah's hand, and joining it with the
queen's, their reconciliation was instantly com-
pleted. This was demonstrated by the tears
that involuntarily stole down their cheeks, as
they embraced each other, mutually expressing
the satisfaction they experienced. A short pause
produced by so unexpected an event, was suc-
ceeded by a flow of pleasantry and good humour;
and a little refreshment, from a few cheerful
glasses of wine, concluded the scene of this suc-
cessful meeting.

The queen gratefully acknowledged the
mighty obligations she felt for Captain Van-
couver's services on this occasion; but, to his
astonishment, as they were all preparing to go
on shore, she said she had another important
affair to request; that of obtaining from *Ta-
maahmaah* a solemn promise, that on her return
to his abode he would not beat her. An ap-
plication to this effect was made to *Tamaahmaah*,
who readily complied with the solicitation, de-
claring that nothing of the kind should ever
happen; but *Tahowmanno* still petitioned the cap-
tain to accompany them to the royal residence,
where he had the pleasure of seeing her restored
to all her former privileges and honours.

The domestic affairs of *Tamaahmaah* being
thus happily adjusted, his mind became more at
liberty for political considerations; and parti-
cularly the cession of *Owhyhee* to his Britannic
Majesty. This subject had been seriously dis-

cussed by the chiefs of the island, and the result
of their deliberation was, an unanimous opinion,
that in order to obtain the protection of that
monarch, it was necessary that *Tamaahmaah*
should surrender it formally to Captain Van-
couver, on the part of his majesty; that he
should acknowledge himself and people, his
British subjects, and that they should supplicate
that power to protect them from future molestation.

Convinced of the importance of those islands
to Great Britain, and in return for the services
our British navigators had derived from the ex-
cellent productions of this country, Captain Van-
couver lost no opportunity of encouraging the
friendly disposition of these people towards them.
Under these impressions, he felt an incumbent
duty to accept, for the crown of Great Britain,
the cession that had been tendered; and there-
fore stipulated that it should be made publicly
and unequivocally. The formal surrender of the
island, however, had been delayed on account of
the absence of two principal chiefs; *Commanow*,
the chief of *Aheedo*; and *Tamaahmotoo*, the
chief of *Koarra*.

On the day of a conciliatory interview between
some of the chiefs, the dinner was announced; and
as the captain's consecrated pork was exhausted,
Tamaahmaah had provided a repast suitable to
the keen appetites of their numerous guests, con-
sisting of fish, fowls, dogs, and vegetables.
The glass was circulated freely after dinner, and
Tamaahmotoo strove to excel in this accomplish-
ment, by drinking without reserve. Captain
Vancouver thought it is duty to remind him, that
as he was not accustomed to drink strong liquors,
the wine and grog might disagree with him;
but as his spirits became exhilarated, he became
less attentive to these admonitions, till the opera-
tion of the liquors compelled him to retire. As
some persons were removing him, he indistinctly
uttered *attowaini*, declaring he was poisoned;
and many persons present appeared to be a little
concerned for his safety. The king, however,
laughed at their apprehensions, and briefly ex-
plained the cause of his indisposition: a little
warm water almost instantly recovered him, and
he rejoined the party who were still pleasantly
regaling themselves*.

* One of *Tamaahmotoo's* most confidential friends con-
fided, that he had been given a different bottle to drink out
of, from that which had been used by the rest of the com-
pany, and produced a kind of dagger, formed from the

widest part of an iron spit; but on seeing the king and
several other persons, drinking wine from the same bottle,
he became pacified.

The convocation of the principal chiefs of the island, by the royal mandate, naturally occasioned another assembly. Most of the superior people, of both sexes, took up their residence in the neighbourhood; which became so populous that every temporary habitation was completely occupied. Several thousands of the natives were now collected, whose cheerfulness, good humour, and eagerness to oblige, could not be exceeded by the inhabitants of the most civilized regions. The days passed pleasantly to those who devoted them to mirth and innocent amusements, and advantageously to such as were expert in bartering one commodity for another; whilst our European navigators, who recreated themselves on shore, were received with the greatest hospitality, and enjoyed the amusements of the country; all of which could not fail of being interesting, whilst they were essentially contributory to health*.

Among the evening amusements in the neighbourhood, Captain Vancouver was induced to attend the performance of a single young woman of the name of *Puckoo*. Her dress, though the weather was intensely hot, consisted of a large quantity of thin cloth wound about her waist, and extended to her knees. It was so ingeniously plaited as to give a beautiful effect to the variegated pattern of the cloth, and the whole was displayed with elegance and taste. Her head and neck were decorated with wreaths of feathers, red, black, and yellow. Her ankles, and about half way up her legs, were ornamented with

* The days were usually closed with singing and dancing, and the nights were as quietly passed as in the most orderly towns in Europe; though the inhabitants did not retire to take their repose till a late hour. From sun-set till the time of separation for the night, the hours were employed by some parties in social conversation, and by others in different games of chance; and it is worthy of remark, that the losers always conducted themselves with the greatest good temper and propriety.

† Thus equipped her appearance excited applause from the numerous spectators, before a single word was uttered. She performed in the open air, accompanied by two men seated on the ground in the characters of musicians. Their instruments were made of the shells of large gourds open at the top, and the lower ends were flat and thin. They were occasionally struck on the ground, and in the intervals, regulated with their hands and fingers, to accompany their vocal exertions, and the motions of their hands and body; the vivacity of their countenances plainly testifying their enjoyment in the performance of their parts as well as their satisfaction on hearing the plaudits bestowed upon the lady, on the fascinating gestures and motions of her

folds of cloth: this was encompassed by a piece of net-work, from the meshes of which small dogs' teeth were hung: her wrists were decorated with bracelets made of the tusks of hogs, which were very curiously displayed†.

The afternoon was to be dedicated to a most splendid spectacle, in which some ladies of the court of *Tamaahmaah* were to perform the principal parts. Our navigators were informed that about four o'clock was the time for attending the noble dames, whose theatre or place of exhibition was in a small square, surrounded by houses and sheltered by trees; a situation equally well chosen for the performance, as for the accommodation of the spectators; who, including all ranks and descriptions of persons, amounted to at least four thousand. A difference of dress had been observed in the audience at the former entertainment; but here every one shone forth in the best apparel they could procure. Feathered rubrics and gartering tape in wreaths, decorated the ladies' heads, and were also sported as necklaces. The dress of the female performers resembled that worn by *Puckoo*, though formed of superior materials, and more elegantly and tastefully disposed‡.

As their majesties withdrew, the ladies of distinction, and the principal chiefs, began to advance; when the reception of the former was marked with a singular degree of respect, as they placed themselves in such a manner as to form a commodious avenue to their respective stations; where they seated themselves on the

person. Her speech, or poem, which began in a slow and solemn manner, gradually became more energetic: producing a vociferous oration, accompanied by violent emotions. Though our Europeans were not sufficiently acquainted with the language to be able to comprehend the subject, they were highly pleased with the performance. The music and singing was far from being discordant or displeasing, and the attitudes were not destitute of taste and elegance.

‡ *Tamaahmaah*, who was considered as a profound orator in the habiliments of the ladies, was frequently appealed to by the most respectable among them, and his directions were implicitly obeyed in several little alterations. The party being fully attired, the king and queen, who had been present while they were dressing, were obliged to withdraw; the royal pair being prohibited by law from attending such amusements, excepting on the festival of the new year. The whole of this day's recreation was indeed an infringement on the established rules, but being intended as a compliment to our European strangers, the innovation was admitted.

passed by a piece
of which small
ists were decorate
ks of hogs, which

dedicated to a mon

some ladies of the

to perform the pri

were informed that

ne for attending the

place of exhibition

nded by houses ar

equally well chose

he accommodation

ding all ranks ar

nted to at least fo

ress had been of

e former entertain

ne forth in the be

Feathered ruff

ths, decorated th

ported as necklac

performers resemble

a formed of super

y and tastefully di

w, the ladies of di

chiefs, began to u

of the former w

gree of respect, a

uch a manner as

to their respect

themselves on th

which began in a slow

e more energetic; p

panied by violent r

were not sufficiently

ground, which was covered with mats. Most of the ladies being corpulent, they moved with great stateliness and dignity; attended by a number of their pages, with extended fans to court the refreshing breeze; or with fly-flaps to disperse the offending insects.

So much time was devoted to the decoration of the performers, that the audience grew impatient and clamorous; manifesting their great displeasure that the commencement of their diversion should be so shamefully delayed. *Try-hookee*, who was the manager of the ceremonies on this occasion, came forward, and made an apology of so conciliatory a nature as to prevent any additional murmurs; soon after which the music began. The band consisted of five men, all standing up, each with a polished wooden stick in the left hand, and a piece of the same material in his right: with this they beat, on the stick, to produce an accompaniment to their voices in singing. The music, however, was speedily interrupted by the appearance of the court ladies, who were received with reiterated shouts of applause. The musicians then retired a few paces, and the actresses placed themselves before them.

The piece was in honour of a captive princess, whose name was *Crycowculleneaw*, and the subject, enforced by gestures and appropriate actions. Whenever the princess's name was pronounced, every person present who wore ornaments above their waist, was obliged to take them off. The actresses indeed were excused from that ceremony during the performance, but at the conclusion of the act, they were required to comply with this mysterious ceremony. Among a variety of uncommon attitudes, some of these performers exhibited a degree of graceful action, for the attainment of which it seems

* The heroine of the piece had once partook of the affections and embraces of *Tamaahmah*, but was now wedded to an inferior chief, whose department in the household was superintendent of the king's apparel. This lady was distinguished by a green wreath round the crown of the head. The captive daughter of *Titeeree* was the next: the third a younger sister to the queen and the wife of *Crymamahoo*, who, as being of the most exalted rank, was placed in the centre. On each side of these, two of inferior quality stood, making in the whole seven actresses. These were arranged in the front of the square, which was wholly occupied by the ladies of quality and the chiefs.

† Captain Vancouver now began seriously to prepare for his departure, that he might be able to sail on the arrival of Mr. Menzies and his party. Most of the prin-

ciples of the piece had once partook of the affections and embraces of *Tamaahmah*, but was now wedded to an inferior chief, whose department in the household was superintendent of the king's apparel. This lady was distinguished by a green wreath round the crown of the head. The captive daughter of *Titeeree* was the next: the third a younger sister to the queen and the wife of *Crymamahoo*, who, as being of the most exalted rank, was placed in the centre. On each side of these, two of inferior quality stood, making in the whole seven actresses. These were arranged in the front of the square, which was wholly occupied by the ladies of quality and the chiefs.

difficult to account. The whole was supported with wonderful spirit and vivacity; and had their performance finished with the third act, the Europeans would have retired from the theatre with a much more exalted idea of a moral tendency of their drama, than was conveyed by the libidinous scene exhibited by the ladies towards the conclusion.

Having finished this curious representation with the descending sun, as the law prohibits such amusements after that period, the spectators retired with great order and decorum; but as Captain Vancouver had promised the additional amusement of fire-works, which could not be advantageously displayed till the absence of light, the multitude were permitted to re-assemble for the full enjoyment of that spectacle. They began about seven in the evening; and drew from the expecting multitude such acclamations of surprise and admiration, as may be more easily conceived than expressed. *Tamaahmah* fired the two first rockets; but only one or two of the chiefs had sufficient courage to follow his example.

Intelligence was brought in the afternoon that the travellers had reached the summit of Mowna Roa, and were on their return; but their arrival was not very soon expected, as they were to return by land, and the roads were in a very indifferent state.

Captain Vancouver having again resumed his residence on board the ship, he was, on the 21st, honoured with a formal visit of all the great personages in the neighbourhood, except *Cavaheero*, who was known to have accepted the stolen cartridge-box: the captain therefore considered him as an accessory in the theft, and would not suffer him to enter the ship. The pride of this chief was greatly mortified by this

disappointment,

disappointment, and he lost no inconsiderable emolument from his perfidy; as none of his associates returned to the shore without a significant token of the captain's esteem.

The number of chiefs that were expected being now assembled, Captain Vancouver asked the king when the cession of the island was to be confirmed. A short conversation ensued between *Tamaahmaah* and some of his counsellors then present, and as a *taboo-poory* was appointed to commence on the evening of the following Sunday, which was to continue till the Tuesday morning, they thought it judicious to embrace that opportunity of reconsulting the priests, that each might be convinced of the propriety of the measure they were on the point of adopting. Understanding that a final appeal to the priests could not possibly be dispensed with, the captain readily complied with their wishes.

He was very much concerned that his endeavours to effect a reconciliation, and to establish a peace in these islands had proved unsuccessful: the mutual distrust of the people prevented the attainment of this desirable object. He was under the necessity of declining any more personal interference in this important business, though he knew the tranquillity of many thousands might have been secured, at least for a time, could he have accomplished this design. *Tamaahmaah* had been informed of the captain's intended route from *Karakakooa*, and eager to embrace every opportunity of continuing his good offices, dispatched one of his principal domestics to *Toeaigh*, to make every necessary preparation for their embarkation on their arrival.

After these, and some less important arrangements had taken place, relative to their departure, the king and his attendants returned to the shore.

* Mr. Puget and some other officers repaired to the shore, and there displayed the British colours; taking possession, in his Majesty's name, of the whole Island, as requested by *Tamaahmaah* and his subjects. On the conclusion of this ceremony, a salute was fired from the vessels; after which the following inscription on copper was conspicuously displayed in the royal residence.

"On the 25th of February, 1794, *Tamaahmaah*, king of *Owhyhee*, in council with the principal chiefs of the

About this time the gentlemen from *Mowna Roa* made their appearance, having descended from the mountains to the shore, from whence they returned by water. On the 23d of February Captain Vancouver accompanied *Tamaahmaah* to the *Morai*, and complied with all the regulations and restrictions of the *taboo*. The ceremonies were similar to those he had before observed, though more concise, less formal, and attended by fewer persons.

The prominent features in the different speeches made by the chiefs on the cession of *Owhyhee*, particularly related to their religion, government, and domestic economy; and it was clearly understood that no interference was to be admitted in either; that *Tamaahmaah*, the chiefs and priests, were to retain their respective stations, and that no alteration should take place in any of those particulars. After a full discussion of these preliminaries, the whole party (including the king) declared that they were no longer *Tanata no Owhyhee*, i. e. the People of *Owhyhee*, but *Tanata no Britannee*, i. e. the People of *Britain*. This was immediately proclaimed to the surrounding crowds in their numerous canoes about the vessels; and cheerfully repeated by the whole attending multitude.*

A distribution of such valuable articles was then made to the principal chiefs, their favourite women, and other attendants, as *Tamaahmaah* and Captain Vancouver esteemed most suitable to their respective ranks and situations on this memorable occasion. Such were the ceremonies of ceding *Owhyhee* to the British crown; but whether this addition to the empire would yield any additional happiness to the people, or even be of any importance to Great Britain, time only must determine.

island, assembled on board his Britannic Majesty's sloop *Discovery*, in *Karakakooa Bay*, and in the presence of George Vancouver, commander of the said sloop; Lieutenant Peter Puget, commander of his said Majesty's armed tender the *Chatham*; and the other officers of the *Discovery*, after due consideration, unanimously ceded the said island of *Owhyhee* to his Britannic Majesty, and acknowledged themselves to be subjects of Great Britain."

SECTION XXII.

Quit Karakakooa—Visit Tyahtatoo Bay,—and Toaigh Bay—Examine the Northern Sides of Mowee, Woahoo, and Attowai—Leave the Sandwich Islands.

OUR navigators had no inducement to detain them in Karakakooa bay, that memorable spot where Captain Cook became a sacrifice to his enterprising spirit; but it now proved an hospitable asylum for our British travellers; where the unremitted attention in the superior classes of the people to preserve good order, produced a cheerful and uniform obedience and respect, from those who acted in a subordinate degree. The general conduct of the natives was irreproachable, and they were perfectly fair and honest in all their commercial intercourse. Excepting in the instances of the table-knives, the cartridge-box, and some few others of less importance, our navigators had little to complain of; and those offences were principally occasioned by leaving irresistible temptations in their way. In this delinquency reflections are only due to the particular individuals concerned, and ought not to be mentioned as characteristic of the whole people.

All Captain Vancouver's friends were prepared to attend our adventurers: some of them were on board, and others appeared in their canoes, ready to follow the ship as soon as she had got under sail; which was effected about three in the morning of the 26th. The *Discovery* and *Thetis* directed their course along the shore towards Tyahtatooa bay: the morning was pleasant, and the surrounding objects demanded attention and admiration. The country they passed rose with a gradual ascent from the sea shore, seemingly in a high state of cultivation, and decorated with a number of extensive villages;

* Accompanied by *Tamaahmaah*, several of the officers, and some chiefs, Captain Vancouver visited the royal residence at this place; which consisted of three neatly constructed buildings; but from their not being regularly inhabited for some time, were considerably out of repair. This residence of his majesty, like that of Karakakooa, was situated near a grand morai, on the margin of the sea. It was the handsomest structure of the kind the captain had ever seen, and kept in the greatest order; it was ornamented with idols, fabricated from the trunks of large trees, with a desire of imitating the human form, but they were the most preposterous and gigantic figures that can possibly be imagined.

whilst their numerous companions moved on the bosom of a serene and tranquil ocean; and the rest, in their more humble conveyances, leisurely attended them, paddling along, and heightening the beauty of the interesting scene: thus exhibiting, by their numerous population, that wealth which the improved state of the island so strongly indicated. About eight they anchored in Tyahtatooa bay.

Mr. Meares's account of Douglas's voyage, represents this place as equal, if not superior to Karakakooa, for secure anchorage; but it appeared to our navigators in a very different point of view; though they admit that it possesses an advantage with respect to landing, superior to Karakakooa. This landing is on a sandy beach, before a grove, consisting of those trees that produce the cocoa-nut, and bread-fruit; and contains a village in the midst of it. Near it is a small cove, towards the south part of which a spring rises rapidly from among some rocks that are usually covered with the sea-water: but when this is low, which is often the case, it produces a stream of excellent fresh water, the current of which might be easily diverted, and rendered subservient to the domestic use of the neighbourhood; as well as to the vessels refitting at Karakakooa*.

The captain was anxious to quit this station, but a light breeze from the sea, succeeded by calms, prevented their moving till midnight; when, with a gentle breeze from the shore, they proceeded along the coast to the northward. In the forenoon of the 27th, having a light breeze,

Having gratified their curiosity, they returned on board to dinner, which consisted principally of beef and mutton; to give the chiefs an idea of the value of those articles of food which the Captain had imported; when it was unanimously agreed, by a very numerous party, that both were excellent. The beef, though salted, seemed to claim the preference in their opinion; though they admitted the mutton to be very similar in its taste to the flesh of their dogs, which they highly esteemed. On taking the opinion of the whole company present, whether mutton or dog's flesh had the preference, it was decided in favour of mutton, by the casting voice of *Tamaahmaah*.

they steered for the anchorage of Toesigh. Though a strong current opposed them, the weather was pleasant, and the objects about them cheerful and entertaining: a dreary, volcanic, and uncultivated shore was, however, amply compensated by the number of their friends that accompanied them afloat in canoes; still preserving that cheerfulness and good humour which they had so universally manifested at Karakakooa.

The evening being appointed for a *Taboo*, to be continued till the morning of the 1st of March, the king and his friends went on shore to attend their religious duties. The weather in the evening being squally, induced the captain to believe, it was very probable that he should not reach his destination before it was dark: on intimating this circumstance to *Tamaahmaah*, he engaged to have a proper light placed in such a situation as to be distinctly seen, to which he might be conducted with safety. It was not, however, till near four the next morning that they gained soundings, when they anchored in thirty fathoms water. After day-light they removed to what was supposed to be the best anchorage of the bay; but which was, in his opinion, a very indifferent one. The only circumstances that seem to render it a desirable stopping-place, are the stream of water, which, however, does not constantly flow; and the probability of getting a supply of refreshments, from its contiguity to the western part of the district of Koarra, and the plains of Whymea.

The country, on their approach, had no very pleasing aspect; but at some distance behind where the plains of Whymea are stated to commence, it is rich, productive, and occupies an extent of several miles. In this valley, a large tract of luxuriant pasture presents itself, whither all the cattle and sheep imported by Captain Vancouver were to be driven; there to ramble unrestrained "to increase and multiply," far from the sight of strangers; and consequently less likely to tempt the inhabitants to violate the sacred promise they had made*.

The next morning the king, and most of their other friends, made their appearance about the vessels. In the course of the day *Tamaahmaah*

* This day being devoted to their holy rites, the king and his chiefs remained in sacred retirement; and the same cause deprived our navigators of the society of many of their

displayed the excess of his liberality, by presenting our British navigators with about a hundred of his largest hogs, and as great a quantity of vegetables, as the vessels would contain; with offers of a further supply if it should be required.

It was the captain's intention to have sailed with the land wind in the evening; but *Tamaahmaah*, lamenting that his necessary engagement had deprived him for some days of the captain's society, earnestly solicited that the last day might be dedicated to the enjoyment of each other's company, the captain consented to remain till the following day. Sunday the second of March was therefore passed in receiving farewell visits and making grateful acknowledgements to the numerous friends: who expatiated on the pleasure they had experienced during their residence among them, and demonstrated their regret at the approaching separation. By sun-set the group was nearly dispersed, prior to which strong impressions were made on the sensibility of our Europeans, from the repeated ardent solicitations that they would return to them again; and the genuine sincerity of their wishes and prayers for their future happiness and prosperity.

The first breeze from the land was to announce the moment of their departure: *Tamaahmaah* and his queen, unwilling to take leave of them till the arrival of that moment, remained on board till almost midnight, when they parted with hearts too pregnant with sensations to give them appropriate utterance.

Our navigators bade adieu to *Owhyhee* early in the morning of the 3d of March, highly indebted for the reception, and the abundant refreshments they had procured. The land wind blew so faintly, that their progress from *Owhyhee* was slow, which induced a few canoes from the shores of Koarra to visit them as they passed; but they did not recognize any of the chiefs, or their former acquaintances. Towards noon the sea breeze reached them, with which they stood to windward. On the 4th they bore away along the north side of the island. In this row they fell in with the south-east side of *Mowee*, where they anxiously looked out for the harbour

visitors, particularly females, who are, on no consideration permitted to be afloat on these occasions.

ality, by present-
about a hundred
eat a quantity of
ld contain; with
it should be re-

on to have sailed
ng; but Tamaah
ssary engagements
ys of the captain
the last day might
ted to each other
ted to remain the
second of March
ing farewell visit
gements to the
iated on the plea
ing their residence
ed their regret

By sun-set the
prior to which
on the sensibili-
e repeated arde-
nd return to the
ity of their wish
appiness and pro-

nd was to announce
re: Tamaahma-
take leave of the
ment, remained
when they part-
h sensations to give

to Owhyhee ear-
March, highly in-
d the abundant re-
d. 'The land with
gress from Owhy-
ew canoes from the
em as they passed
ny of the chiefs,
es. Towards noon
s, with which the
4th they bore away
land. In this route
st side of Mowee
out for the harbor

ure, on no considera-
ions.

mentioned

mentioned by Captain King, said by the natives to exist in that neighbourhood; but nothing could be seen to warrant such a representation, but two small open coves, situated on each side of the eastern extremity of the island. Off this eastern extremity, at the distance of about nine leagues, a small islet appears, having some rocks between it and the shore: the north of this islet was covered with verdure, in which several houses were dispersed, but neither trees nor shrubs were visible. The adjacent country presented a fertile appearance, and seemed to contain a number of inhabitants. The wind being light, a few of the natives were enabled to visit them in the course of the afternoon; but having little with them to dispose of, they returned home in the evening. On the 5th a few natives paid them a visit, but were as little qualified for bartering as those they had seen before.

Having completed their intended survey of Mowee, they stood over and brought to near the north-east point of Morotoi, in expectation of seeing *Tato*; for whom they had reserved some sheep for establishing the breed in these islands: for *Titeere* they had also reserved some of the same sort of animals, and for the same laudable purpose. But learning that the day was *taboo* day, the captain knew he could not receive a visit from him; nor had he afterwards an oppor-

* The wind in the afternoon being light and variable, they made little progress: but in the course of the day they obtained a scanty supply of hogs and vegetables: the night was passed in preserving their station. Having completed the survey of Attowai, they met the regular trade wind, with which they stood to windward for Whymea bay, in that island, where they anchored on the 9th. Here they again met the Washington. Their arrival being presently known, they were visited by many of their former friends; among whom were the two young women Captain Vancouver had brought from Nootka and settled here. During their late absence they had been kindly treated, but they now expressed their fears, that on their finally quitting these seas, they should be deserted or neglected; but the captain was not inactive in obtaining from all the principal chiefs the most solemn promises of the contrary.

Since their late departure, Enemo had attempted to acquire the supreme sovereignty of these islands, independent of *Titeere* and *Tato*. To effect this he had been assisted by several European and American renegadoes; but, after some disagreeable consequences, *Titeere* solicited Mr. Brown to take him to Attowai, to effect, in an amicable way, an accommodation with the rebellious chief. Mr. Brown complied with the request, and after an explanatory interview on board his ship, all matters were mutually adjusted to the satisfaction of both parties; and from that

tunity of seeing him. Having finished their survey of Woahoo, they directed their course towards the north-east part of Attowai: soon after they rejoined the American brig Washington, which had sailed with them from Karakakooa, but had directed her course to the southward of the islands, for Whyteete in Woahoo, where she had continued five days*.

But to return. Our navigators were early attended by *Enemo* and *Tamoorrie*, accompanied only by a few chiefs; but by a number of women of the first consequence, who were attendants on his court. From the regent and prince the captain received a few indifferent hogs, though estimated by them as some of the best on the island; the stock of these animals being lately much reduced, by the uncommon demand for them from the trading vessels. An ample supply of vegetables, they, however, depended upon procuring here, in which indeed they were more successful; though the yams, a very desirable article for sea-stores, were extremely scarce.

Not having had an opportunity of seeing *Titeere* and *Tato*, the captain deposited with *Enemo* the breeding sheep intended for those chiefs: informing him, that in proportion as they multiplied, they were to be distributed among the other islands†.

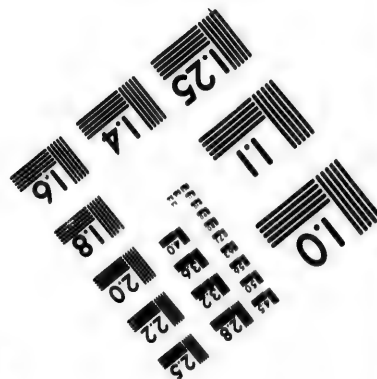
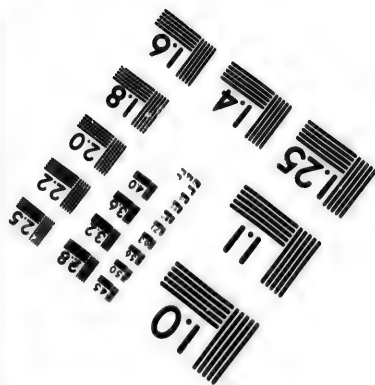
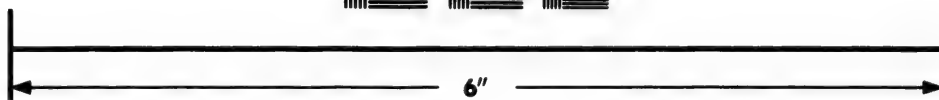
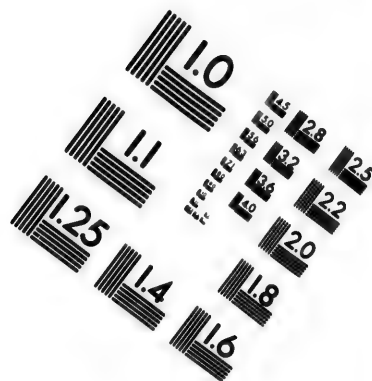
On the following day, Wednesday the 12th of

period the island has enjoyed tranquillity, though it continued under the government of *Enemo* as regent.

† Having been invited by the regent to an evening amusement on shore, the captain proceeded to the place of exhibition, where he found the performers assembled, who were numerous, and composed chiefly of women; they were habited in variegated apparel: and taste was visible in the arrangement of their feminine embellishments. The entertainment, which consisted of three parts, was performed by three classes of about two hundred women in each, who ranged themselves in five or six rows, in the singular attitude of sitting upon their haunches. A man advanced a few paces before the centre of the first row of the ladies, who, like a flugal monitor, directed the proceedings of the drama. In this situation and position they exhibited an infinite variety of astonishing gestures. The whole of the groupe was perfectly in unison both of voice and action. Their voices were melodious, and ease and elegance accompanied their motions. The several other parts of the performance were conducted with the same correctness and uniformity, but were less easy to be described. There appeared to be great variety, and little repetition, though the performers amounted to about six hundred persons. This *hoorah* was not degraded by that disgusting obscenity, which Captain Vancouver had formerly been constrained to notice in these public representations. The

numerous





Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

15
18
20
22
25
28

10
01

of March, the ships' companies had completed their water; and after procuring a few hogs and vegetables, and requiring the chiefs and others for the favours they had conferred, a formal leave was reciprocally taken. Wishing to procure a stock of yams, which they understood were plentiful at Onehow, the navigators quitted Attowai on the 13th, and proceeded to that island.

By their several visits to Attowai, they had found that the roadstead of Whymea was much confined in respect of safe anchorage; for if the Discovery's cables had not been injured by a foul bottom, yet the Chatham, in March 1792, had both her cables much fretted and damaged by the rocks at the bottom. Though a situation more convenient to the shore, in a less depth of water, is to be found by keeping the steep banks of the river not shut in, but just a little open; yet, from the lurking patches of rocks that have been found near the same kind of bottom, great caution should be observed to avoid those hidden dangers; instead of resorting to an operation that appears incredible. It had been positively asserted, that the natives were capable of diving to the depth of forty fathoms, and there cutting through a fourteen-inch cable. It is indeed generally admitted that these people are very expert swimmers, and have almost as much dexterity as

fish in the water: their efforts, however, are chiefly confined to the surface. Wonderful must be their skill in diving, to be capable of descending to the depth of two hundred and forty feet, or to continue in that situation a sufficient time to cut through a cable!

One of the best divers in that country was employed at Karakakooa, to recover a caulking iron which had been dropped in twelve fathom water. To stimulate his exertion, a considerable reward was promised him if he succeeded: but after two unsuccessful attempts, he was so exhausted as to be unable to make a third trial then, though he promised to renew his efforts the following day; when, however, he thought proper to decline another attempt, and the caulking iron was suffered to remain at the bottom. Captain Vancouver mentions this circumstance on his own knowledge, and not from the representation of others.

About two in the afternoon they anchored on the west side of Onehow; and in the evening Mr. Puget, whom the captain had directed to examine the north-west side of this island in the Chatham, joined the Discovery. Having now accomplished their survey of the Sandwich Islands, and been disappointed of their promised supply of yams, they took their leave of Onehow on the 14th.

SECTION XXIII.

Part from the Chatham—Indications of Land—Proceed along the Coast—Enter Cook's River.

HAVING left the Sandwich islands on the 15th of March, their course was directed to the northward, with a fresh breeze; but as the Chatham was some distance astern, a chance was given her to overtake the Discovery; she did not appear by ten at night, nor answer a false fire, the captain therefore entertained hopes of seeing their consort at day-light; but in this he was disappointed, and wondered at the cause of their separation. Among other surmises, he thought it was not improbable, that by the low

sail he had carried during the night, she might have passed unobserved, and was then ahead. He proceeded, however, towards the coast of America, hoping to join the Chatham at the appointed rendezvous.

On the 24th the wind blew a fresh gale from the south-east, accompanied with dark gloomy weather: on the 26th, two pieces of drift wood were passed; one which appeared to have been a considerable time in the water, as it swam deep, and was almost covered with barnacles:

numerous spectators were in their best apparel, and all retired decorously at the conclusion of the performance. This entertainment was declared to be in compliment to the wife of the regent on the proclamation of her pregnancy,

which was to be repeated, at stated times, till the happy issue had taken place. Fire-works, as usual, were exhibited by Captain Vancouver, in return for the amusement he had received.

the other was only by a few of wood were of land that between the Sa coast Mr. that in passing to the westward and other ocea Dixon, in their men seals, puf some undiscover but the wether Chatham's pass ascertained.

With a fresh quarter, they p On the 30th s were observed; were perceived now began to known to them the 31st, the me and the scuttle c that, attended digging in ice. the ship, and i discerned almos bearing north distinguished to

The season of aspect of the c shrubs existed, beneath the wint shores some snu which were the during this pass After sun-set enabled them to and at midnigh of fifty fathoms in easy sail, y fathoms. Early steered towards roached the sh of the coast we

Though the ea very, yet its situ taking a nearor an irregular ruit; having fre

Vol. I. No.

the other was more buoyant, and was attended only by a few of those shell-fish. These pieces of wood were the only indications of the vicinity of land that had been seen by our navigators, between the Sandwich Islands and the American coast. Mr. Puget afterwards said, however, that in passing these regions, about four degrees to the westward of their track, he saw petrels, and other oceanic birds. Messrs. Portlock and Dixon, in their voyages, mention their having seen seals, puffins, and other indications that some undiscovered land was not very remote; but the weather was so foggy at the time of the Chatham's passing, that this fact could not be ascertained.

With a fresh gale, chiefly from the western quarter, they proceeded rapidly to the north. On the 30th some sea-weed and a few divers were observed; and albatrosses and sheer-waters were perceived about the ship. The climate now began to assume a degree of severity unknown to them before: on the next day, Monday the 31st, the mercury stood at the freezing point, and the scuttle cask on the deck was frozen. The frost, attended with snow and sleet, eased their rigging in ice. On the 3d of April a shag passed the ship, and in the afternoon high land was discerned almost wholly covered with snow, bearing north by east; which was afterwards distinguished to be an island*.

This season of the year increased the inhospitable aspect of the country; where, if any trees or shrubs existed, they were generally hidden beneath the winter garment of snow. About its shores some small whales presented themselves, which were the first our navigators had noticed during this passage to the north.

After sun-set on the 4th of April, the wind enabled them to stand nearly for Trinity Island; and at midnight, having soundings at the depth of fifty fathoms, they plied till day-light under an easy sail, with soundings from 70 to 82 fathoms. Early in the morning of the 5th they steered towards Trinity Island; but as they approached the shores, they found the lower parts of the coast were generally free from the snow:

* Though the captain did not consider this as a new discovery, yet its situation had not been properly ascertained: in taking a nearer survey the following day, it appeared to form an irregular four-sided figure, about ten leagues in circuit; having from its western part, which appeared to

be insular, a remarkably high, flat, square rock, lying in a south-west direction, at the distance of about two miles; between which and the island, a ledge of smaller rocks are situated.

the frost, which had existed with severity since the 31st of March, now gave way, and the thermometer rose to 35. As they passed Trinity Island, it had the appearance of being divided into two, accompanied with several little islets lying to the north. As they proceeded they were visited by two of the neighbouring inhabitants, a young man and a girl, in a small skin canoe, who proved they were acquainted with some European nation, by having adopted their mode of salutation, by bowing as they approached the ship, and by their willingness to venture on board. The man took his dinner, *sans ceremonie*, drank brandy, and accepted such presents as were tendered him; but gave a preference to snuff and silk handkerchiefs. From his general appearance and language, they were inclined to suppose him to be a Kamtschadale, rather than a native of America, or any of its adjacent islands. They afterwards received a visit from a single Indian in a canoe, who was less familiar than the others; and after paddling at a distance round the ship, returned satisfied to the shore.

On the 12th of April, at noon, they were fast approaching the coast to the eastward of Cape Elizabeth; for which they steered, and passed that promontory to the entrance of Cook's river. The coast is composed of high land, with three small islands, and some rocks before it; the cape itself is the largest of these islands, which seemed to form a navigable channel between them and the main land; though some lurking rocks were discerned between the cape and the middle island. Another cluster of rocks are situated both above and beneath the surface of the water, to the south-west of the middle island.

For the first time this season, they observed some flocks of wild geese, and particularly remarked that they all flew to the southward; but on the 13th, the extreme mildness of the weather was succeeded by a sharp frost, and a very heavy fall of snow; and as our navigators were then in 20 fathoms water, they anchored till the weather should promise to be more favourable to their pursuit. Whilst they had a perfect view of every thing in the western quarter, a misty haze

be insular, a remarkably high, flat, square rock, lying in a south-west direction, at the distance of about two miles; between which and the island, a ledge of smaller rocks are situated.

from the opposite side of the horizon totally obscured the opposite side*.

On the 17th, in expectation of finding a deeper channel, they proceeded, but the soundings decreased to six fathoms; and soon after the ship grounded in fifteen fathoms water; where they anchored to wait for the ebb tide, in order to return the way they had come. The shoal on which the ship had grounded, lies six or seven miles from the main land, and is near a league from the west side of the island; where also a flat extends some distance into the river. Not long after, the depth of water decreasing to four fathoms, the ship struck with some violence, occasioned by a heavy swell from the ocean, which for several days had been attendant on the flood tide. In this unpleasant predicament they remained nearly stationary for an hour and a half, the vessel frequently striking, and sometimes so heavily as to give birth to the most fatal apprehensions. Having, at length, got the ship's head to the eastward, she struck but once more in crossing the shoal, and the water deepened to fifteen fathoms; and they soon after had the satisfaction to perceive that the ship had made no water, nor suffered any other injury of importance. The Indian passengers were remarkably active and useful on board while the ship was in this perilous state, and gave the most unequivocal proofs of their excessive joy on seeing the Europeans again in perfect security†.

Not far from thence they were visited by two of the natives in a small canoe, who, hearing of the reception their neighbours had been honoured with, solicited similar indulgences: their canoe was therefore taken in, and they were permitted to continue on board. One of these, who affected a superiority of rank, presented the captain with some martin skins; for which

* On the 16th the air was so extremely keen that the sun's rays had no effect on the thermometer: they weighed about ten in the forenoon, with the flood tide, and a light breeze from the north-west, and proceeded up the river; they directed their course between the western shore, and the low island near it, noticed by Captain Cook. Shortly after noon they were visited by three of the natives, who came familiarly on board without the least hesitation, but bowed very respectfully on coming upon deck. They signified a desire for some snuff and tobacco, with some other trivial articles; which they seemed to be highly gratified by receiving, and manifested a degree of modest concern that they were incapable of offering any thing in return. At dinner, they did not hesitate to partake of the repast, with such liquors as were offered to them; though they drank

he was requited with beads, iron, snuff, tobacco, and a few trinkets. They appeared to be acquainted with the Russians, and to know something of their language; but our Europeans lamented that they were unable to converse with them, as they appeared to be very civil and intelligent persons.

The Indian visitors informed our navigators, as well as they could, that their habitations were in this neighbourhood, on the western shore, and requested permission to take their leave. While they remained on board, they behaved with a degree of modesty and decorum rarely found among those in a more civilized state. They reposed implicit confidence in the integrity of the Europeans, and considered themselves as much at home in their society as if they had been most intimately acquainted with them.

In the morning of the 23d our navigators saw on the surface of the water, large pieces of floating ice, which were violently drifted by the tide against the ship's bows; but it fortunately happened that they were not of sufficient magnitude to be materially injurious. The weather was fair on the 24th, when, at low tide a dry shoal was seen extending from the northward to the eastern shore, where the river took an easterly direction. For their satisfaction in this particular, as well as to find a more convenient station for the ship, and a supply of fresh water, the captain made an excursion after breakfast, accompanied by several of the officers. They were not long in discovering a fine stream of that element on the eastern shore, which might have been conveniently obtained after clearing away the ice. They next directed their attention to a bay or cove, where the captain entertained hopes of finding a commodious resting place for the ship. On reaching the south point of this

very cautiously, seemingly aware of their intoxicating effects. Towards the evening a light breeze sprang up, when they, by significant gestures, wished to know if our European navigators were going up the river? Being answered in the affirmative, they agreed to accompany them; and, taking their canoes on board, which they had made fast alongside, the captain permitted them to enjoy that indulgence.

† The weather, though cold, was now become cheerful, and favoured them with an excellent view of the surrounding region, composed, at a small distance from the river, of stupendous mountains, clothed in a perpetual sheet of ice and snow; presenting a prospect magnificently grand, yet dreary, cold, and inhospitable. A volcano appeared near the summit of these, which from two distinct craters emitted large columns of whitish smoke.

tobacco
to be ac-
low some-
peans la-
erse with
vil and in-
navigators
tions were
shore, and
e. While
ed with a
ely found
They re-
rity of the
s as much
been most

ber, they observed near the edge of the steep cliffs that form it, some houses, which, on a nearer survey, appeared to be mere skeletons of habitations which had been deserted.

The watering place, already mentioned, lying to the south of their anchorage, they weighed with the latter part of the ebb, that they might place themselves as conveniently to it as the shores would admit; but in attempting this, they ran a-ground on a shoal between their last anchorage and the shore. The ship was, how-

ever, immediately hove off, without having sustained any apparent injury. The next morning Mr. Swaine was dispatched with a party to clear away the ice that impeded the run of the water, and select a spot for the convenient reception of the casks; whilst another boat was employed in search of commodious anchorage for the ship. Such a situation being found about a mile to the southward of the run of water, they took their station there in the evening, and moored in five fathoms depth at low water.

SECTION XXIV.

Much incommoded by the Ice—Examination of the upper Part of Cook's River—Its Termination—Found to be only an extensive Arm of the Sea—Obtains the name of Cook's Inlet.

gators saw
pieces of
fted by the
fortunately
icient mag-
The weather
y tide a dr-
orthward to
ook an en-
tion in the
e conveni-
fresh water
er breakfast
cers. They
e stream of
which might
ter clearing
their atten-
entertain-
ing place for
point of the
oxicating eff-
up, when they
our Europe-
answered in the
; and, taking
fast along-side
alngence.

HAVING taken a station at a convenient distance from the shore, our navigators earnestly engaged in the several duties they had to perform; among which the procuring of wood and water was not the least essential. This service was much interrupted by the floating ice, great masses of which were buoyant, and driven with great violence against the boat, menacing their destruction. Some anxiety was also experienced for the safety of their cables, though every precaution had been taken for their preservation.

In the afternoon twenty-three natives visited them in a large canoe; all of whom were without arms. They were conducted by a young chief named *Chatidooltz*, who was treated with the greatest deference by all the party. A younger man than the chief, distinguished by the appellation of *Kanistooch*, was also particularly regarded. This person attended the chief upon all occasions, and was the only man indulged with the liberty of sitting on the same seat with him; the others humbly squatting themselves down upon the deck. At first only six were admitted on board, but as the evening advanced, the chief

requested they might all be allowed to enter the ship, and that their canoe should be taken on board*.

The drift ice being less abundant the following day, the chief and his party took their leave; evincing their approbation of the treatment they had received, by singing as they paddled round the ship; on which occasion *Chatidooltz*, who was the only person standing up in the canoe, entertained the spectators with a number of ludicrous attitudes and grimaces. The chief promised a repetition of his visit in the course of a few days; and the captain endeavoured to convince him that game or fish would be highly acceptable to him. But his signs in reply to this request, did not encourage him to expect a supply of such refreshments.

The drift already mentioned to have been so troublesome and perplexing, now seemed to be in a diminishing state; but it afterwards became so much augmented by the flood tide, that large masses, forming almost complete fields of ice, were driven by the velocity of the spring tides, against the bows of the ship with alarming violence. The following day, Tuesday the 29th,

modest, and particularly engaging in their manners and deportment. After supping upon salt meat and biscuit, in company with five other Indians who had been invited on board, they continued there till the next morning; when the captain distributed among them presents of tobacco, snuff, ear-shells, buttons, beads, and needles, which were severally accepted with the most lively tokens of their gratitude.

brought

brought no favourable alteration. The quantity of ice, and the rapidity of the tide continued to increase to a very alarming degree: one large body of ice hooked the small bower cable, and with the force of the tide broke it about fifteen fathoms from the bows. At the same time the cable of the best bower, by which alone the ship now rode, was constantly pressed with such immense weights, that our navigators would have despaired of its being able to sustain them, had it not been for a new sixteen-inch cable, larger than those of their own establishment, which had been procured at the Cape of Good Hope. But great as their confidence might be in this circumstance, their situation was extremely irksome; for in the event of its breaking, they would have been reduced only to one anchor and a thirteen inch cable for their preservation*.

Towards slack water, they had some intermissions of these threatening dangers; in one of which, by means of creeping, they fortunately hooked the broken cable; but the rapid return of the ice only afforded time to affix a buoy to it, that it might be recovered with the greater facility. About the time of high-water they were visited by ten Russians, with double that number of Indians, in a large open rowing boat, who with great difficulty and circumspection advanced to the ship through the drift ice; they expressed great concern for the safety of our navigators. It was apprehended they had come with an intention of passing the night with them; but after remaining on board three very unpleasant hours, they were induced, by the prospect of an extensive open space between the fields of ice, to take their leave.

But whilst they were thus annoyed, and kept in a state of solicitude by the ice, the weather, though cold, was serene and pleasant; and on the 1st of May they had the happiness of observing that a less quantity of ice was brought up by the flood tide than usual; and at low water they fortunately recovered their anchor and cable.

* All communication with the shore was now at an end; and by the violence with which the ice, almost as hard and ponderous as the solid rock, was frequently driven against the ship's bows, created serious apprehensions lest the hull of the vessel should sustain some irreparable injury. In addition to these unpleasant circumstances, on heaving the slack of the cable at high water, they saw it had been chafed by rubbing against some rocks at the bottom. To have quitted a station so precarious, and so pregnant with

They were again much incommoded by the ice on the following day; but by moving their station a little to the south-eastward, the cable at low water was found to have hooked to a rock and the ship grounded; and so remained till she was floated off by the return of the flood tide. The weather altered on the 3d: the sky was obscured by thick misty rain and fog, which continued till the 4th; when the weather again became fair and pleasant: the surface of the water was nearly free from ice, and opened a communication for transacting business on the shore.

In the evening Mr. Whidbey and his party returned on board, after having accomplished the service he had been sent to perform; as his examinations were principally relative to nautical, mathematical, and philosophical objects, we again decline giving our readers a particular detail of those abstruse objects:—We mean, however, to introduce an account of such remarkable occurrences as may arise, independent of scientific subjects.—One evening, in particular, on the discharge of some musquets that had become damp, fifteen Indians came from the woods, and with great cheerfulness and affability welcomed them to their region, by presenting them with some dried salmon; for which Mr. Whidbey made at least an adequate return; and accompanied them to their habitations, which were about a mile from the boats, and consisted of two huts that seemed to have been recently built. Each of these fabrics contained a family of about fifteen persons, including different ages and both sexes; whose behaviour was marked with that decorum which had been eminent preserved among their countrymen who had visited the ship.

The next morning their survey was continued through the rocky labyrinth, extending about seven leagues along the shore. Great circumspection was necessary to conduct the boats clear of these dangerous pyramidal rocks, rising perpendicularly from a base at the depth of four

disasters, would have been a happy relief; but, had they been ever so much inclined, this resource was denied them for not a breath of air had been in motion during the last twenty-four hours. Had they attempted to move, they must have resigned themselves to the influence and petuosity of the stream, encumbered with huge masses of ice, through a narrow and intricate channel; without being able to convey any intimation for the guidance of the whole part of their little community in the boats.

oded by the ice on
oving their station
the cable at low
ked to a rock and
ained till she was
e flood tide. The
sky was obscured
which continued till
again became fair
the water was nearly
communication for
ore.

ey and his party re
accomplished the
perform; as his ex
relative to nautical
thical objects, w
ers a particular de
—We mean, how
of such remarkab
pendent of scienti
particular, on the
that had become
from the woods, an
affability welcome
representing them w
which Mr. Whidbe
e return; and as
habitations, whic
boats, and consist
have been recent
s contained a fami
cluding different ag
aviour was mark
had been eminent
ymen who had vis

urvey was continu
th, extending abo
ore. Great circun
duct the boats cle
ridical rocks, risi
at the depth of fo

py relief; but, had the
resource was denied them
n motion during the
attempted to move, due
to the influence and
ered with huge mass
e channel; without hav
the guidance of the ab
e boats.

to nine fathoms. Had any of their boats ground-
ed on them with the rapidity of the falling tide,
instant destruction could only be expected. This
extraordinary rugged region appeared to join
the southern side of the shoal, on which the
Resolution had grounded in 1778: it must there-
fore be considered as a very fortunate circum-
stance, that neither Captain Cook nor themselves
had attempted to pass on the south of that
shoal*.

The Russians, who had resided at this station
about four years, appeared to be perfectly con-
tent to live after the manner of the native Indians;
partaking with equal relish and appetite their
mauscular food, adopting the same fashion, and
wearing the same apparel; differing from them
only in their exterior appearance by the omission
of paint upon their faces, and by their not de-
corating their persons with any of the Indian
ornaments. They seemed to live on the most
intimate terms of friendship with the Indians of
all descriptions, who were perfectly satisfied in
being subjected to the Russian authority.

Captain Vancouver observes, that as the navi-
gators advanced to the north-east of this river,
the western shore gradually inclined towards the
eastern, till they were within half a mile of each
other; and that by continuing to advance about
two miles, their curiosity became satisfied, by
seeing its eastern banks unite with those on the
western side, and terminate in a circular form;
the most distant part appearing to be within half
a league of them. The water which flowed be-
tween the banks, still retained a very considerable
degree of saltiness, and clearly demonstrated that
neither by falls, marshes, or fens, any large quantity
of fresh-water found its way to the ocean by this
communication; and that, consequently, "ac-
cording to the general acceptance of geogra-
phical terms, this can be no longer considered

as a river: I shall therefore distinguish it hence-
forth as an inlet." Thus terminated this very
extensive opening on the coast of north-west
America, to which had the first discoverer of it,
whose name it bears, dedicated one day more to
its examination, he would have spared the theo-
retical navigators the trouble of ascribing to this
arm of the ocean a channel, to which an existing
north-west passage to the ocean might ultimately
be discovered.

While our navigators were making these ob-
servations for ascertaining the termination of
Cook's Inlet, they were attended by a party of
the natives, who conducted themselves with great
decorum, and earnestly invited them to their
habitation, at the distance of about a mile from
the water-side: it had the appearance of being
constructed by the Russians, but was much out
of repair, and seemed to be now considered as
only a temporary resting place for travellers.
Accepting the invitation, they were cheerfully
and affably received by the whole party; who,
on finding their intentions were speedily to de-
part, solicited them to prolong their stay. As
an additional inducement, they added, that their
friendly young chief *Chatidooltz* was at no great
distance, and would speedily arrive at their
dwelling. But having satisfied their curiosity,
they repaired towards the ship with the first of
the ebb tide; and arrived on board about four in
the afternoon, where every thing was in readiness
to take them down the inlet the next morning.

In the evening two guns were heard in the
offing; and the next morning, Wednesday the
7th, a brig was seen at anchor, which proved
to be the *Chatham*. About noon Mr. Puget
came on board, who related sundry particulars
which had occasioned the separation, and other
inevitable causes of delay.

* In pursuing his survey of Cook's river, Mr. Whidbey
observes, that he saw one large house, about fifty feet long,
twenty-four wide, and ten in height. It was appropriated
to the residence of nineteen Russians, and superintended
by an elderly man, who conducted their party into the
house, by a small door, which was the only entrance.
Having seated them at a table, near the upper end of the
mansion, a repast consisting of dried fish and cranberries
was produced. But the offensive odor of the house took
away any relish for such dainties. The attentive host,

perceiving a reluctance in the guests to partake of the re-
freshments that had been set before them, ordered the
cranberries from the table, and caused them to be beaten
up into a *ragout* with some train oil; when they were again
served up, and were expected to have been eaten with
avidity. But these hospitable endeavours to please proving
unsuccessful, and the gentlemen having sacrificed as much
to politeness as their stomachs could bear, sought relief in
breathing the pure air, and instantly returned to their tents.

SECTION XXV.

Proceed from Cook's Inlet to Prince William's Sound—Meet a large Fleet of Canoes—Spring the Bowsprit in a strong Gale of Wind—Carried away the fore Yard—Survey of Prince William's Sound by the Boats—A Storm—Visited by a few Russians—Hospitably received by Colomence and Ballusian—Icy Bay, and Mount Elias.

THE weather being remarkably serene, the morning of the 16th of May was ushered in by a sight that had been little expected in these seas. A numerous fleet of canoes collected about the Discovery, each carrying only two men; and at the same time a considerable number of them visited the Chatham; the whole fleet containing about four hundred Indians. With a true mercantile spirit, they instantly engaged in commercial dealings, bartering away their hunting and fishing implements, which had been neatly manufactured from the sinews of different animals: and with bags curiously decorated with needle work, performed on the thin membrane of the whale's intestines. These articles, with some fish, and their ingenious models of canoes, constituted the principal commerce with these people, as well as with the natives in Cook's Inlet. Furs seemed now no longer considered as forming a part of their apparel, as they had been on a former visit. These Americans were now satisfied with the skins of birds or quadrupeds of inconsiderable value. This frugal fashion was probably introduced by their Russian friends, in order to increase the number of the skins of the sea otter, ermine, martin, and foxes, and such other animals as come under the denomination of furs, which are worth the trouble of importing.

These good people conducted themselves with great probity, and continued with our navigators till near noon, when they all retired to a bay, they were then abreast of. The haziness of the atmosphere on the 18th prevented their seeing the coast; and in the afternoon they passed Chiswell's Isles. The intention of our navigators was to have passed along the south-east side of Montague Island, but the wind veering about to the east-

ward, and the weather being overcast, they bore up, and in the evening they anchored within the south point of this island*.

On the 23d they remained under sail till about ten o'clock, when a sudden flurry of wind vented its whole fury on them with such immense violence, that, though the topsails were down before it was at its height, all the masts were expected to have gone over the side; but fortunately they escaped with the loss of the foreyard only, and the splitting of most of their sails then set; and being then at no great distance from the shore of Montague Island, they anchored in fifteen fathoms water, struck the top-gallant-masts, and replaced their damaged sails.

Lieutenant Swaine, with the carpenters and a party of men, was sent on shore to procure a foreyard, in which they almost instantly succeeded: this was directed to be rough-squared, only in such a way as to admit of its being used for the present to convey them to Chalmer's harbour, where the ship was to remain whilst the boats were engaged in exploring the navigable extent of the opening. On the 26th the foreyard was sent on shore to be properly finished; and various necessary repairs, in and about the vessel, were diligently engaged in.

Two boat parties were now equipped: one under the direction of Mr. Whidbey, and the other of Mr. Johnstone: the former with the yawl and large cutter; and Mr. Johnstone with the Chatham's and the Discovery's smaller cutter. Their respective objects were a survey of the western shore of the exterior coast of Cape Suckling; on which service they departed on the 17th.

The weather being serene and pleasant, was

in this sound. These people had nothing to dispose of, nor could they be prevailed on to venture on board, though they had no objection to receive such trivial presents as were bestowed on them; expressing their acknowledgments in the Russian language, and intimating that they were people of that nation residing up the sound.

* Whilst they continued at anchor, they were visited by four of the natives, in two small canoes, one of whom was an elderly man, who seemed to know they were from England; as he frequently made use of the words "English, Portlock, and Nootka". The meaning of the two former was perfectly comprehended; and by the latter was supposed to be meant the vessel in which Mr. Meares had passed a winter

equally favourable to these excursions, and to their respective employments. Among the latter our navigators attempted to take some fish with the seine, but without success: on the 28th the weather became gloomy and overcast, and the rain descended in torrents till the 30th, when it abated. During the night it became calm, and a favourable alteration was expected to have taken place: but about five in the morning of the 31st, the wind resumed its easterly direction with accumulated violence. The stream cable gave way, and broke near the anchor; and, on a closer examination, it was discovered to be stranded in three different places. By this accident they were obliged to remain unmoored during the storm, and at low water the ship took the ground for a short time, but on the returning flood tide she floated again. This very unpleasant weather continued till June 2d, when it became more tranquil, the ship was re-moored, the stream anchor recovered, and their other essential concerns were again in a train of execution. On the 3d they had the mortification to be convinced, by the carpenters employed on the bowsprit, that it was entirely rotten in the middle, and that all the time and labour upon that business had been applied to no effect*.

Early on the 5th they were visited by some strangers, who landed from their canoes at the sewing tent. As they intimated no desire of visiting the vessels, Captain Vancouver paid his compliments to the party on shore; which consisted of eight Indians and a Russian: he particularly invited the latter on board, and requested he would prevail on the Indians to procure them some fish, for which they should be thankfully rewarded. The invitation was positively declined, but he signified an inclination to procure some fish for them: in consequence of which the canoes were launched, and the party accordingly set off.

On the 4th, being the anniversary of his Majesty's birthday, no work was engaged in but that of hauling the seine, in the pleasing expectation of procuring some fish for the people's dinner. A second disappointment was, however, the consequence; but as good a dinner was served the ship's provisions afforded, and a double allowance of rum, with which the auspicious day was cheerfully celebrated.

The Russian having been joined by two of his countrymen, the three paid our navigators an early visit on the 7th; they came unprovided with any refreshments; which created some disappointment to the captain, as he relied on the performance of their promise of furnishing him with an ample supply of fish. The Russian who had

In the evening two of the canoes returned, with four of the Indian visitors; but the Russian was not of the party; nor did any of the Indians exhibit any fish, or other article for sale. The captain made them several presents, with which they seemed exceedingly delighted; and particularly informed them that he had an abundance of such articles, which he would gladly exchange with them for fish, wild fowl, &c. As the Russian had shewn, from his behaviour, that apprehensions for his personal safety deterred him from visiting the ship, the captain sent him by these Indians some beef, pork, bread, and rum, in order to dissipate his fears and encourage him to a perfect confidence in their pacific disposition.

The four Indians again returned, bringing with them two wild geese, and two divers, as a present from the Russian, who still evinced that he was much influenced by his fears; though he was still evidently desirous of being enriched by what our Europeans had to give away. This appeared from the instructions he had invariably given them to ask for such articles as they knew would be highly acceptable to him. These were readily entrusted to their charge, with a repetition of the strongest assurances of their friendship, and of their earnest solicitations to see them on board†.

On the 8th the wind blew fresh from the northward, accompanied with bright shining weather. In the forenoon Mr. Johnstone and his party returned, having completed the examination of his limits on the inside of the sound—The following particulars which came under his notice, have a claim to our attention in the general history of Captain Vancouver's voyage, and are not of too confined a nature to be introduced into a performance calculated for general amusement and information.

The evening became unpleasant as the day advanced, and a very hard gale of wind blew from

given incontestible proofs of his unwillingness to enter the ship, was named Ammus Nicounnervitch Ballusian. He was better acquainted with geography, and the sea charts, than any of his companions, and in other respects appeared to be a sensible intelligent man: speedily comprehending the object of the wishes and enquiries of our navigators in this part of the world. In the course of conversation, the captain having expressed a desire of seeing a Russian chart of their modern discoveries in this ocean, he said he had such a chart at Port Etches, which had been lately constructed: this he offered to procure; and, after taking some refreshments, departed for that purpose, leaving his companions behind.

the eastward, attended with heavy rain. About noon the party reached Snug-corner cove, where shelter might have been found from the existing inclement weather; but Mr. Johnstone, eager to prosecute his survey, and supposing that some other secure retreat might be met with before night, pursued his route between the south point of the cove, and the island lying off it. The easterly gale continued increasing, insomuch that the violence of the storm induced them to retire to the island they had just observed, where they hauled the boats on shore to preserve them from the wind and sea: to which they were much exposed by their critical and insecure situation.

Soon after the party had landed, a loud cry from the woods assailed their ears, of "*Lawlee Lawlee*," signifying friendship; and four Indians instantly appeared, with extended arms, and making pacific gestures to shew their aversion to hostile purposes; which being returned, with some trivial presents from the party, friendship and civility were established on both sides. The Indians' canoe had been just hauled up within the skirts of the wood, but their residence was at a considerable distance; the violence of the storm only had driven them here for shelter. It afterwards appeared, however, that these worthy natives thought proper to steal away during the night. This abrupt departure occasioning suspicions of their delinquency, enquiry was made into the particulars; when it was soon discovered that an axe was missing which had been used the preceding day. This implement could not have been purloined without the unpardonable negligence of those upon the watch; a fault which in future was properly noticed by Mr. Johnstone, who adopted such measures as produced a different conduct in those who had been thus inattentive to their duty, during the remainder of his excursion. In the course of the survey, they discovered on their landing, an old bear nearly at the top of a pine-tree, with two cubs: the former instantly descended, and made its escape; but the young ones were shot, and afforded them an excellent repast. The party indeed fared tolerably well on this expedition, having killed several wild fowl, and collected an immense quantity of eggs on the rocks where they had landed.

This party had entered port Etches, which Mr. Johnstone had the captain's directions to visit, if circumstances would permit him so to

do, to obtain some geographical information from the Russians established in that place, whose habitation they found situated in the north-west part of that port. Here they were received with every mark of politeness and respect by the principal person, Mr. Peter Colomenee, who had the direction of an extensive commercial establishment. Mr. Colomenee then conducted the party to the Russian residence, which was defended by a galliot of about seventy tons burthen, hauled on shore, placed erect, and forming nearly one side of the square, within which their houses were built. On board this vessel some arms and Russians constantly resided, and on her deck some swivel and carriage guns were mounted. Three of the latter were also observed at the entrance of the large common dwelling house. Here they were seated to partake of a breakfast consisting of the following delicacies—boiled seal's flesh, train oil, and a small decoction of eggs; served up with a degree of neatness corresponding to the delicacy of the articles, which the repast was composed; the skin, and most of the hair, still adhering to the flesh of the seal, did not operate as a provocative on the occasion. Mr. Johnstone desired to add a portion of chocolate, beef, and bread to the breakfast; which was readily admitted, and to which their Russian host rendered ample justice.

Mr. Johnstone said there were but a few Indians in the neighbourhood of this settlement, but he believed they had a considerable village at the head of the port: the Russians were not to amount to about a hundred. In consideration of the attentive reception he had experienced from Mr. Colomenee, and in return for the favour their party had received from the Russians at the Indian village, Mr. Johnstone presented their hospitable host, with such articles of trade and consumption as were then remaining; among which was about half a gallon of rum; which was considered as the most acceptable compliment of the whole. Mr. Colomenee declared he had not, for a considerable time, been in the actual possession of such a delightful quantity of spirituous liquor. The immediate, and in moderate use of it, indeed, soon proved it to be a fortunate circumstance that his situation precluded him the indulgence of such luxuries. Though his previous deportment, superior station, and venerable age, entitled him to the utmost respect of every rational individual; he became

in an instant, found themselves making their leave nearly bordering. The next section principally of goods, respecting inhabitants; with the survey. That on the 19th the assistance of every directly to entrance of port. Although of line within a quarter the sea broke w however, a breez that just suffici current, and reli of danger. Th light south ove them int without their be they bore away dored in thirty- After dinner mpanied by se politely and h nee and Mr. their situation v ere also intro yloff, who pr is mercantile c e galliot mentie the side of an the Russian e accompanied d Mr. Smyloff med to the sh

About noon on the conceived, co narrative is too k, and cannot t The only fish t Chalmers was o the outskirts of y, and the spe rior to any the geese, ducks, g en by the spor y also captured d the flesh of it they saw but few

an instant, an object of their pity: They found themselves under the absolute necessity of taking their leave, whilst he was thus intoxicated, and nearly bordering on a state of insensibility*.

The next section of the original work consists principally of geographical and other observations, respecting the adjacent country and its inhabitants; with some further particulars relative to the survey. Captain Vancouver informs us, that on the 19th of June light southerly airs, with the assistance of the flood tide, drove the Discovery directly towards the north point of the entrance of port Etches; where, with a hundred fathoms of line, no bottom could be reached within a quarter of a mile of the shore, on which the sea broke with great violence: fortunately, however, a breeze sprang up from the north—just sufficient to enable them to stem the current, and relieved them from all apprehensions of danger. This breeze was succeeded by calms and light southerly airs, which, about noon, drove them into the entrance of port Etches, without their being able to resist their influence. They bore away for anchorage, and at last anchored in thirty-one fathoms water.

After dinner the captain went on shore, accompanied by several of the officers, and was politely and hospitably received by Mr. Colvocoze and Mr. Ballusion, as the poverty of their situation would permit them. Here they were also introduced to a gentleman named Smyloff, who presided over the maritime part of a mercantile company, and who superintended the galliot mentioned by Mr. Johnstone, as forming the side of an inclosure near the landing place of the Russian factory. On their return they were accompanied on board by Mr. Ballusion and Mr. Smyloff; the former, after supper, returned to the shore; but Mr. Smyloff remained

About noon on the 15th Mr. Whidbey arrived, having, he conceived, completed the task allotted to his labours. His narrative is too nautical and scientific for our general use, and cannot therefore be circumstantially introduced. The only fish they obtained in the neighbourhood of Chalmers was a few indifferent crabs from the shores. The outskirts of the woods they found a little white wild berry, and the spruce beer brewed in this quarter was superior to any they had before made upon the coast. A geese, ducks, geese, and other aquatic birds were seen by the sportsmen, which proved very acceptable. They also captured an old black bear, but they hardly pressed the flesh of it to their own salted provisions. They saw but few of the native inhabitants of the country;

with them till they were clear of the port; which they did not effect till about noon on the 20th†.

Captain Vancouver particularly mentions *Icy Bay*, and Mount St. Elias: he observes that, by ten in the forenoon on the 29th of June he tacked in twenty-three fathoms, within a league of the east point of the above icy bay, which he named Point Riou. It is low, and well wooded, with a small island to the westward of it. Eastward from the steep cliffs that terminate this bay, and from whence the ice passes into the sea, the coast has a spacious margin of low land, rising from a gradual ascent to the foot of the chain of lofty mountains, whose summits are the base from whence *Mount St. Elias* towers, majestically conspicuous in regions of perpetual frost. As they advanced along the coast from point Riou, the country became less woody, and further to the eastward vegetation gradually disappeared, and presented a naked barren country.

On the 7th of July the captain was visited by some of the inhabitants in a canoe, who came alongside without much hesitation; but would not venture on board, unless a hostage was sent into their canoe as a security for their safe return. Their request was, however, complied with: one of the European seamen was sent into their vehicle, and an Indian was received on board; to whom such presents were made as were expected to have been found acceptable, and to encourage them in offices of friendship. This treatment operated as might have been expected, for the Indian remained on board in a state of perfect ease and satisfaction; till a breeze from the south-west sprang up, which was favourable for our navigators' proceeding into Cross Sound, he desired his man to come on board, and intimated to the native that he must return to his canoe; but his countrymen expressed

hardly any of them approached the ship: Though Mr. Whidbey had coasted near four hundred and twenty miles of the shores of the peninsula and continent, he did not meet with more than thirteen of the Indians: neither did he see any of their habitations, or deserted villages. Hence it appears that the population of Prince William's Sound is very inconsiderable, when compared with its extent. The appearance of the adjacent countries gave them every reason to believe that these regions were very thinly inhabited—It was also remarked, that, during the surveying excursions, not a sea-otter had been seen: whales or seals were seldom found; and wild fowl were less abundant in Mr. Whidbey's, than in Mr. Johnstone's expedition.

a resolution of detaining their new companion; and it was not till menacing signs were used, by producing muskets, and hoisting out a boat, that he was suffered to quit the canoe. No sooner had the European sailor got on board the ship than he was presented with a sea-otter skin, and some other trivial matters, by a man who had the appearance of the principal or chief of the party, and to whom the captain made a very ample return. After this the Indians departed singing, and our navigators proceeded up Cross sound, a spacious opening in the coast; and, as Captain Cook correctly observes, branches into several arms, the largest appearing to take a northerly direction*.

Chapter X of the original contains a survey of the exterior coast of King George the Third's Archipelago; and relates two boat excursions, rendering more complete the survey of the continental shore, of north-west America. To justify our omission of these and several other particulars of a limited and scientific nature, we have taken the liberty to quote Captain Vancouver's own words; which are as follow—"I have considered it essential to the illustration of our survey, to state very exactly not only the track of the vessels when navigating these regions, but likewise those of the boats when so employed, as well when I was present myself, as when they were conducted by Mr. Whidbey or Mr. Johnstone, on whom the execution of that laborious and dangerous

* Chapter VIII which is here introduced in the original work, is devoted to Mr. Puget's survey of the coast between Prince William's and Cross sounds. The transactions in chapter IX are foreign to our present purpose, as they are principally occupied in an account of a boat excursion, and a description of Althorp and Cross sound. The following circumstance may, however, be entitled to attention. On the 18th of July in the afternoon, the amicable intercourse of the Europeans with the inhabitants of the country, was in some measure interrupted, by the detection of one of them in the act of stealing some of the lower part of the rudder chalus: Muskets were fired to induce the delinquents in the canoe to return their prize, but to no effect: the launch was therefore sent in pursuit of the canoe, and when the Indians were on the point of landing the canoe overset, and most of the stolen goods were left, besides several other valuables they had collected in the course of the day. The offenders, consisting of two women and one man, were taken prisoners, and, together with their canoe, conveyed on board. The three delinquents were ordered into irons; but they had not been long in this disgraceful situation before the captain received a very pönitent petition from the two ladies, who, on their joint promise of future good behaviour, were liberated. The man remained in confinement till the 19th, at which time it was

service principally fell, and to whom I feel myself indebted for the zeal with which they engaged in it on all occasions. The perusal of these parts of our voyage to persons not particularly interested, I am conscious will afford but LITTLE ENTERTAINMENT."

The following particulars, however, from Mr. Whidbey's narrative of this survey, will hardly be found uninteresting.—In order to dry the wet clothes of his party, and to give thorough cleaning to the boats, Mr. Whidbey landed on a commodious beach; but before the party had finished their business a large canoe arrived; in which were several women and children, and sixteen stout Indian men, who were without fire-arms. Their behaviour on the beach was courteous and friendly for a little time, but their conduct afterwards assumed very suspicious appearance: the children withdrew into the woods, and the others fixed their daggers round their wrists; exhibiting other hostile indications. To avoid the chance of disagreeable consequences, Mr. Whidbey thought it most humane and prudent to depart, and he continued his route down the branch along its south-west shore. The Indians did the same but kept on the opposite shore, and suddenly the canoe disappeared†.

This conduct of the Indians greatly attracted the observation of the party, and whilst they were observing the motions of these people

asserted that a similar theft had been committed on board the Chatham, it was therefore thought expedient to make an example of the thief in their possession, as it might be attended with the desirable effect of preventing further misdemeanours; for this reason only he was punished with four dozen lashes; after which his canoe was returned him, and he and his ladies were discharged.

† To avoid any communication with these people, the party stopped to dine near the high bluff observed from point Vandeput, but before they had finished their repast the same Indians were seen coming round the point of the cove where the party had retired, and within a quarter of a mile of their dinner station. As the canoe approached a musket was fired over it, to deter the Indians from advancing; but it had a contrary effect, as they came forward with greater eagerness; but on a second shot being fired at the canoe, they instantly retreated, and took the station behind the point. Still as Mr. Whidbey suspected they were projecting some method of annoyance by surprise he hastened the meal of his party, and put off from shore. His conjectures were soon proved to have been well founded; for instantly a number of armed people issued from the woods, exactly at the spot where the canoe had dined; and almost at the same point of time the canoe was again seen paddling round the point of the cove.

their attention
the return of
Mr. Johnstone
disappeared
The captain
Whidbey had
the continent,
ward to Cape
they had disco
name of his
successors.

Passage

WEARY
Captain
and in con
from what he
name of port
towards the
progress, as the
adverse winds
not till the mor
the open oc
were in immi
about twelve
on cape Omm
the irregularity
near to that p
nicity, that t
required to kee
inevitable destr
sequence. A
roke with gre
and as no anch
their situation
they were pro
reeze from t
this critical
The wind at
and pleasant v
the 2d of Se
ove, Nootka
olic Majesty
ransaan, and
establishment
The prin

their attention was more agreeably excited by the return of the boats under the direction of Mr. Johnstone. On the sight of these the Indians disappeared.

The captain also informs his readers, that Mr. Whidbey had his directions to take possession of the continent, from New Georgia north-westward to Cape Spencer, with the adjacent islands they had discovered within those limits, in the name of his Britannic Majesty, his heirs and successors. This, on the parties stopping to

dine, was carried into execution; the colours were displayed, the boats' crew drawn up under arms, and possession taken under the discharge of three volleys of musquetry, with all the usual formalities; and a double allowance of grog served to the respective crews for the purpose of drinking his majesty's health. This circumstance having taken place on the birth-day of Frederic duke of York, the sound in which the ceremony took place, was honoured with the name of PRINCE FREDERIC'S SOUND.

SECTION XXVI.

Passage to the Southward along the Western Coast of America—Arrive at Nootka—Transactions at Nootka.

WEARY of an inactive solitary situation, Captain Vancouver determined to put to sea, and in company with the Chatham departed from what he had before distinguished by the name of port CONCLUSION. The navigators sailed towards the sea, but made no considerable progress, as they were continually attended with adverse winds and thick foggy weather. It was not till the morning of the 24th that they reached the open ocean, to accomplish which they were in imminent danger of losing the vessels about twelve the preceding night, by being driven on cape Ommaney. The variable winds, and the irregularity of the tides, conducted them so near to that promontory, and the rock in its vicinity, that their utmost efforts in towing were required to keep the vessels off from the land, or inevitable destruction must have been the consequence. A heavy western swell at this time broke with great fury within half a mile of them; and as no anchorage or bottom could be found, their situation was exceedingly alarming; but they were providentially extricated by a gentle breeze from the north-west, when they were in this critical and perilous state.

The wind at north-west, accompanied by clear and pleasant weather, brought our navigators, on the 2d of September, to an anchor in Friendly Cove, Nootka sound. Here they found his Catholic Majesty's armed vessels the Princissa, Aransasu, and the St. Carlos, belonging to the establishment at St. Blas, and several other vessels. The princissa, commanded by Senr. Fidalgo

had arrived from St. Blas the day before, and had brought hither Brigadier General Don Jose Manuel Alava, colonel of the regiment of Puebla, and governor of Nootka. This gentleman had been appointed governor of Nootka, in consequence of the death of the much esteemed Senr. Quadra, who had died in March, universally lamented.

The Discovery having, in the course of the day, greatly outsailed the Chatham, the latter did not arrive till after it was dark; a formal visit to the governor was therefore deferred till the following day. On Wednesday the 3d the two commanders waited on the governor, who resided on board the Princissa, where they were received by him and Sen. Fidalgo with great attention and politeness. Captain Vancouver was informed by Senr. Alava, that he was appointed to this government in order to finish the pending negotiation, respecting the cession of these territories; which, in consequence of different constructions on the first article of the Spanish convention of the 28th of October 1790, had since the month of September 1792, been entirely suspended. The present governor, however, was still unprovided with the credentials necessary for the completion of this business; but on his departure from St. Blas in June, these documents were hourly expected, and a vessel was waiting there in readiness to be dispatched to this port, if they arrived in time for her reaching Nootka on the 15th of October; but should she not effect a passage by that time, she was to repair to Monterrey.

terrey. In consequence of this arrangement, Senr. Alava proposed to remain here till that period should arrive; and Captain Vancouver also thought it extremely probable, that a duplicate of his instructions for the like purpose might be transmitted by the same conveyance*.

Since their arrival they had occasionally been visited by *Maquinna*, *Clewpanelow*, with some of the inferior chiefs, and several of the inhabitants, who brought to market some fish and venison: but most of the people had now retired to their winter habitations up the sound. Senr. Alava expressed a desire to visit these absentees, and as it was generally known that such an excursion would be highly flattering to *Maquinna*, and many others, a party was formed; three of the ships' boats, and a Spanish launch were destined to convey the luggage. Senrs. Alava and Fidalgo, with Mr. Menzies, accompanied Captain Vancouver in the *Discovery's* yawl; and Mr. Puget, with some of the officers of the *Chatham*, went in the cutter; Lieutenant Swaine, with some of the gentlemen of the *Discovery*, were in their large cutter; and with those in the Spanish launch, the party consisted of fifty-six persons.

As the wind had not been favourable to them, it was sun-set before they arrived at a pleasant spot near *Maquinna's* village, where they pitched their tents; but, as the day was so far advanced, their ceremonial visit was deferred till the next: a message was therefore sent by *Clewpanelow*, who had attended them from the ships. But *Maquinna*, who was in readiness to receive them, instantly dispatched a messenger, requesting the pleasure of their company that evening. This, however, they thought proper to decline; but some of the gentlemen walked to the village to

* Under this impression, and in consideration of many other circumstances relative to the situation of both vessels, Captain Vancouver resolved to remain till that period with Senr. Alava; and if, in the mean time, he should receive any instructions for the government of his conduct respecting the restitution of these territories, by the expected Spanish packet, or any other conveyance, he should be ready to act with Senr. Alava as the nature of his orders might require.

The weather was wet and gloomy, but it did not prevent *Maquinna* and *Clewpanelow*, with some other chiefs, and several of the natives, from visiting the vessels: the two former received suitable presents, with which they were highly satisfied; and the latter disposed of a small quantity of fish at a very exorbitant price. The governor, Senr. Fidalgo, Saavandra, and several of the Spanish officers,

explain to him that it was only the lateness of the hour that prevented their attending him that evening, but they would certainly wait on him in the morning.

After breakfast on the 26th, the party proceeded to Tahsheis, and were welcomed, on their approach to the shore, by a vociferous old man, exclaiming "*Wacosh, Wacosh*"—a term expressive of friendship, and the favourable intentions of the natives towards them. The sentiments being properly returned, they landed, and were received by *Maquinna*, and two of his brothers, with loud and reiterated expressions of "*Wacosh*." This ceremony being ended, they were conducted through the village to *Maquinna's* mansion, where they were complimented with seats covered with mats at the upper end of the saloon.

Having taken their places, twenty or thirty men began each to strike with a stick on a hollow board, to summon the inhabitants of the village to that spot. This signal being instantly obeyed, *Maquinna* addressed the assembled crowd with great earnestness in a speech of considerable length, in which he took occasion to mention the infinite honour conferred upon him by this visit; and particularly endeavoured to justify his own general conduct in his political concerns. He then proceeded to enumerate the good qualities that were distinguishable in the character of the Spaniards and the English; and that both were strongly attached to himself and his people. He added, that he hoped they would be agreeably entertained by their mode of receiving visitors.

The performers, it appeared, were ready and anxious to begin their performance; for the instant *Maquinna* had ceased speaking, the hollow board music commenced, and a man fantastically

honoured our navigators with a return of their visit on the 4th; but in consequence of their reduced stock of powder they were under the necessity of declining the usual ceremony of saluting, which was very politely excused and dispensed with by the whole party.

On the 10th the wind blew fresh from the south-east and exhibited an uncommon instance of lightning and thunder in this country, which, accompanied with torrents of rain, continued during the night. Both wind and weather, as the autumnal equinox approached, became very changeable. On the 13th the atmosphere was gloomy with drifting showers. In the afternoon the wind blew from the north-east in heavy squalls, accompanied by torrents of rain. This kind of weather continued till the 17th, but the violence of the equinoctial gales from that time appeared to have abated.

by the lateness of
tending him that
inly wait on him

, the party pro-
welcomed, on their
ciferous old man,
sh"—a term ex-
ne favourable in-
them. The senti-
they landed, and
and two of his
ated expressions of
being ended, they
village to *Maquinna*—
ere complimented
t the upper end of

, twenty or thirty
a stick on a hollow
tants of the village
ng instantly obeyed
sembled crowd with
ch of considerable
ccasion to mention
upon him by this
oured to justify his
political concerns
te the good qualities
the character of the
and that both were
and his people. He
would be agreeable
receiving visitors.
ed, were ready and
rnance; for the in-
peaking, the hollow
d a man fantastically

turn of their visit on the
duced stock of powder
declining the usual cer-
politely excused and dis-
esh from the south-east
tance of lightning and
accompanied with torren-
night. Both wind and
ox approached, became
atmosphere was gloomy
afternoon the wind blew
ills, accompanied by tor-
er continued till the 17th
gales from that time

drew

dressed in a war garment entered the house: he was curiously decorated, and his face besmeared with black and red paint; or more properly speaking his features were hardly distinguishable. His hair was powdered with the delicate white down of a young sea-fowl; and in his hand he bore a musquet with a fixed bayonet, making a savage, though a whimsical appearance. This man was followed by about twenty more, all fantastically decorated, but differently armed: some of them had musquets; others displayed pistols, daggers, swords, arrows, fish-gigs, and hatchets.

The presents that had been provided for the occasion, were now exhibited to public view, consisting of copper, blue cloth, blankets, ear-shells, and other inferior articles. These were distributed by Senr. Alava and Captain Vancouver, according to the rank and consequence of the receiver; these tokens of amity were so judiciously given, that acclamations of applause resounded through the village. On these succeeding, a second vocal and instrumental performance was exhibited, which concluded by a return from *Maquinna* for the presents they had made—He afterwards placed a sea-otter skin at the feet of Senr. Alava; and paid a similar compliment to Captain Vancouver, Senr. Fidalgo, and Mr. Puget: after which Senr. Alava, and Captain Vancouver were each presented with a second sea-otter skin; thus completing the ceremonies of the visit.

Their curiosity being satisfied, and their pockets emptied by the unremitting solicitations of the inhabitants of Tahsheis, of all the trinkets

* This preposterous group were drawn up before our wigwags; and though they were perfectly satisfied of their harmless and peaceable intentions, their savage and barbarous appearance was not a little augmented by their coarse actions and vociferous behaviour: accompanied an unnatural kind of jumping. After these people had formed their destined parts, *Maquinna* undertook a mask dance by himself. He seemed greatly elated during the performance of this character, and convinced the beholders that he took infinite delight in it. The masks he had seen did credit to his imagination in point of whimsical art; and his dress was different from any of those worn by the other performers. It consisted of a cloak, and a short apron covered with hollow shells, with small pieces of copper so placed as to strike against each other, and produce a jingling noise; which with their substitute for a drum, and some vocal exertions, produced a savage and loud noise. But as the object of their visit was complimentary to *Maquinna*, their plaudits were bountifully be-

Vol. 1. No. XLI.

they had provided, they strolled for some time about the skirts of the wood, and then returned to their encampment. Here they found *Maquinna*, with several of their Tahsheian friends, who requested they would return to partake of an entertainment in the evening; but having made an appointment to visit *Clewpanctoo*, at his principal residence called *Mootechee*, he could not comply with the solicitations of *Maquinna* and his fraternity. They were honoured at dinner with the company of *Maquinna*, several of his family, and some other chiefs, who after expressing their thanks for their visit, bade them farewell after dinner, and they departed.

Their progress was not very rapid, as both the wind and stream were adverse to their pursuit, which was through a region so inhospitable in its appearance, that Senr. Alava frequently expressed his astonishment that it could ever have been an object of contention, between the respective sovereigns. It was near three in the afternoon of the 27th before they reached the village of a *Mootechee*, which consisted of a few houses huddled together in a cove; the inhabitants of which crowded about them, and gave them much inconvenience, though their intentions were perfectly innocent and inoffensive. *Clewpanctoo*, though he was their chief, had not sufficient influence to restrain this behaviour, even within his own habitation, to which they were led by a narrow passage between the houses; the filth of which combined so many offensive exhalations, that they lost no time in the distribution of their presents, that they might be at liberty to retire.

As

stowed, which gave general satisfaction to the surrounding multitude.

† In passing through the village, they observed it to be extensive, but thinly inhabited, which *Maquinna* thus accounted for—Many of the inhabitants were still absent, not having yet procured their stock of provisions for the ensuing winter; at which time, if all their inhabitants are occupied, eight or nine hundred persons are resident in the village. *Maquinna's* habitation was larger than any of the others, and had a very superior advantage over all of them by being less filthy.

‡ Their store of trinkets being exhausted, they repaired to their boats, accompanied by *Clewpanctoo*; who, in return, made them presents similar to those they had received from *Maquinna*; to which he added one infinitely more valuable than all the rest.—It was indeed a very fine buck, just killed; which being placed in their boat, they took leave of *Mootechee*, amidst repeated acclamations of "Wacosh, Wacosh," with earnest entreaties for them to

5 F

proleas

As the month of October advanced, they knew that the summer season of this country was drawing to a conclusion; and therefore took an early opportunity of receiving on board the observatory instruments and tents. To complete their fuel and water could not fail of detaining them three or four days longer; so that waiting the stipulated time, after which the Spanish ship was not to be expected, could now be of little consequence, when compared to the importance of her arrival, in expediting their return to

England. This, however, did not happen, nor any other circumstance deserving notice during this anxious interval. At midnight on the 16th the *Discovery* put to sea, in company with the *Chatham*. The *Princissa*, Captain Fidalgo, with governor Alaya on board, was to follow the next day. Monterrey was chosen as the next rendezvous, where these officers expected our navigators would meet with a reception suitable to their wishes and expectations.

SECTION XXVII.

Quit Nootka Sound—Violent Storm—Arrive at Monterrey—Receive the Deserters from the Chatham and Dædalus—Excursion into the Country—Extraordinary Mountain.

A LIGHT breeze from the land accelerated the progress of our navigators out of Nootka Sound, so that, by day-light on the 17th of October, they were about three leagues from the land, when the wind suddenly died away, and was succeeded by a calm with thick hazy weather; which gave the ships the appearance of being stationary the whole of the day. The haze was succeeded by a thick fog, without a breeze of wind. The obscurity in the atmosphere had concealed the *Chatham* since the preceding evening, but the stationary situation of the *Discovery*, induced Captain Vancouver to conclude that she could not be far off. Their powder being nearly exhausted, the fog signal had not been made; a gun was, however, fired, and to their great astonishment it was not answered. The fog and calm continued, and the depth of water was a hundred and five fathoms, with sandy bottom. The fog now dispersed, and the calm was succeeded by a light breeze: another gun was fired, and a false fire burnt as a signal to the *Chatham*, but neither was answered. On the

19th, they made all sail, steering to the south east.

In looking round for their consort, a vessel was discovered astern, for which they shortened sail; but perceiving it to be the Spanish ship *Princissa*, they directed their course as before, with all sails spread to a pleasant easterly breeze. On the 27th the wind increased to a gale so violent, as to render it necessary to strike the top gallant masts, and bring to under the storm staysails; this gale was accompanied with a very heavy rain till midnight, when the storm suddenly moderated*.

The ship being secured, an officer was dispatched to the Presidio with the usual ceremonies and with an apology for their not having saluted. The people who, on their first visit to this Presidio, had deserted from the *Dædalus* and *Chatham*, were found here, directions having been given for their being delivered up to our navigators; but as the governor of the province was soon expected, they declined taking any steps in this business till he should arrive. Nor did the

prolong their stay. But it was thought expedient to make the best of their way towards the ships, on board of which they arrived on the 28th; nothing particular having occurred, during their absence: the weather which had favoured their excursion, had been equally favourable to the several employments of re-equipment; and the serenity of the weather afterwards continued to further their operations.

* In the morning of the 6th of November, our navigators found themselves about three or four leagues from point Año Nuevo, point Pinos in sight, and having a moderate breeze, with pleasant weather, they steered for Monterrey,

where they anchored about two in the afternoon, and moored nearly in their former situation. Here they found the *Chatham*, she having arrived there on the evening of the 2d. By Mr. Puget a satisfactory account was given of Captain Vancouver, of the cause and consequences of the *Chatham's* separation from the *Discovery*. And after the professional enquiries were mutually satisfied, the captain had the pleasure to be informed by Mr. Puget, that he had been most cordially received by their former friend Sr. Arguello, the lieutenant of the Presidio, who then, as on their first visit to this place, officiated as governor during the real governor's absence.

not happen, nor
ing notice during
night on the 16th
company with the
Captain Fidalgo,
d, was to follow
chosen as the next
ers expected our
reception suitable
is.

erters from the
Mountain.

ering to the south

ir consort, a vessel
which they shortened
the Spanish ship
r course as before
sant easterly breeze
ed to a gale so vio-
ry to strike the top
nder the storm stay
panied with a very
n the storm sudden

an officer was dis-
he usual ceremonie
or not having saluted
first visit to this Pro-
Dædalus and Chas-
ections having been
ed up to our naviga-
of the province was
taking any steps to
rive. Nor did the

in the afternoon, as
ation. Here they found
thoro on the evening
ory account was given
and consequences of the
covery. And after the
ally satisfied, the cap-
Mr. Puget, that he
their former friend Sen-
residio, who then, as
lated as governor dur-

erect the tents or observatory on shore for the
same reason, considering it more respectful to sub-
mit these matters to the approbation of Don Diego
Borica himself, than to Senr. Arguello the de-
puty governor; from whom they only solicited
wood and water, and to obtain some necessary
refreshments.

On Sunday part of the ship's company were
indulged with a run on shore; and on Monday
the 10th they were busily employed in procuring
water. On the 11th Sen. Don Diego Borica
reached the Presidio, where, the next morning,
Captain Vancouver waited upon him, accompa-
nied by most of the officers of both vessels, to
congratulate him on his arrival; and to commu-
nicate to him his reasons for visiting the countries
under his jurisdiction: these attentions afforded
pleasure to the governor, and were thought per-
fectly consistent with the respective stations that
each of the parties had the honour to fill. The
indulgence which had been granted by Senr.
Arguello, was now politely extended by the
governor: with further permission to erect their
tents and observatory on shore, under the direction
of their own officers and guards. He obligingly
added, that he would do every thing in his
power to render their stay as pleasant and agree-
able as their limited society could afford.

They were informed by Senr. Borica, that,
accompanied by his wife and daughter, with a
suitable number of attendants, he had come from
Mexico to this place on horseback; as no other
mode of conveyance could be procured. They
had taken care to provide a small camp equipage,
to be pitched occasionally as a retreat from the
heat of the sun, or for repose during the night.
Upwards of eight months were employed in per-
forming this journey through a solitary country,
where few accommodations could be afforded for
travellers.

An express arrived in the evening from Mexico,
with dispatches from the viceroy of New Spain
to the governor, and the long-expected instruc-

* Though materially engaged in various matters of
business, and in a very debilitated state of health, under
which he had severely laboured during the eight preceding
months, Captain Vancouver was prevailed on to join in a party
to the valley through which the Monterrey river flows;
where he was gratified with the sight of the most extraor-
inary mountain he had ever seen. One side of it re-
sembled a splendid edifice, fallen into decay: the massy
columns, which appeared to have been raised with great
industry, and labour, were elegantly formed from

tions to Senr. Alava, respecting the cession of
Nootka to the crown of Great Britain; but
nothing addressed to Captain Vancouver accom-
panied these credentials. The embarrassment he
had long experienced was now considerably in-
creased, and he knew not what measures to pur-
sue. He was however relieved from this dilemma
the following day by Senr. Alava, who con-
fidentially informed him that part of his in-
structions stated, that no farther altercation
would take place respecting the precise meaning
of the first article of the convention of the 30th
of October, 1790, as the documents transmitted
by Senr. Quadra and himself, had enabled their
respective courts to adjust that business amicably,
and nearly on the terms which the captain had
repeatedly offered to Senr. Quadra in September,
1792.

Having maturely reflected on the several parts
of this intelligence, Captain Vancouver con-
cluded, from the various accidents to which his
future services would render him liable, that
government did not expect they should remain
longer in these seas, than the survey of the Ame-
rican coast might require. The survey of the
coast of North-West America being now ac-
complished, with a perfect reliance on the au-
thenticity of the intelligence he had received
from Senr. Alava, the captain resolved to make
the best of his way towards England, by the
way of Cape Horn, agreeably to his instruc-
tions.

The deserters from the Chatham and Dædalus
had, at the request of the captain, been delivered
up to him, or at least such of them as were the
subjects of Great Britain. An account of the
expences was exhibited against them, but as the
captain did not think himself authorized to dis-
charge this debt, he acquainted Borica that he
would represent the business fully to the board
of Admiralty, and the strictest justice might be
relied upon. With this assurance the governor
seemed perfectly satisfied*.

beautiful cream-coloured stone; between these magnificent
columns were deep excavations, resembling passages into
the supposed interior parts of the structure: the whole
presenting a most sumptuous display of apparent ruins,
from the architectural knowledge and industry of remotest
ages. In this excursion the captain had an opportunity of
seeing, what he had often heard related, that the soil be-
came more rich and fertile as they advanced from the ocean
into the interior country.

All expectations of Mr. Broughton's return to resume the command of the *Chatham* being now abandoned, Captain Vancouver appointed Lieutenant Puget to that situation; and Messrs. Baker and Swaine to be first and second lieutenants of the *Discovery*. To Mr. Thomas Manby he gave the vacant lieutenantcy; and appointed Mr. H. Humphreys to be master of the *Chatham* in his room.

The business with the shore now began to draw towards a conclusion: the yards, topmasts, and top-gallant masts were got up, and the rigging was in a condition for sea-service: but as a sufficient stock of water was not yet obtain-

ed, and a portion of time was required to be allotted for that purpose, the captain dispatched Mr. Swaine, on the 27th of November, with three boats, to the mission of St. Cruz, to procure a supply of vegetables; the continuation of dry weather here having made the usual produce of the gardens extremely scarce. Mr. Swaine returned on the 29th, and had been so successful that, with the live stock, and the other refreshments which Monterrey afforded, they possessed a store of good things for the preservation of health, and for the necessary consumption of the people during a long voyage to a remote country.

SECTION XXVIII.

Quit Monterrey—Account of the Three Marias Islands—Proceed to the Southward.

WITH a fresh breeze from the north-east, attended with fair and pleasant weather, on the 2d of December our navigators quitted Monterrey, bidding adieu to governor Alava, and their other Spanish friends; from whose hospitality and kindness they had derived much happiness, and a prospect of the re-establishment of their health. From Monterrey bay their course was directed to the south-east, but in the evening the gale died away, and after twelve hours calm, it was succeeded by variable adverse winds; which continued till the 4th. The coast of New Albion was still in sight; but this was the last they saw of it. On the evening of the 8th, they beheld the island of Gaudaloupe, which they passed in the night. At day-light on the 9th they saw the island of Cerros, about ten leagues distant, represented in the Spanish charts to be of the length of ten leagues, lying before an extensive bay on the shores of the peninsula.

Though our navigators were too far distant to attempt an accurate delineation of these shores,

* The part of the ocean in which they had now arrived was much frequented by bonitos, albacores, and other fishes of the tropical regions, besides a great number of turtles. These were so regardless of interruption, that Captain Vancouver was induced to send the small boat to collect some of them, and in less than half an hour she returned with thirteen very fine ones, each weighing from

they could nearly ascertain the position of their most prominent points; and from the result of their calculations, the island of Cerros seemed to form on its western side a deep bay, between its north-west and south-west points. Several turtles were about the 10th, on the surface of the sea, one of which was taken by the small-boat of the *Discovery*.*

On the 15th at night, being then twelve leagues from Cape St. Lucas, and in the direction in which the Marias were said to lay, they plied under an easy sail till the next morning, which course, by nine in the forenoon, brought them in sight of those islands: in this direction they instantly steered, but could not gain anchorage before dark; they passed the night preserving their situation with the land, and in the morning steered for the passage between the northernmost and the middle, or Prince George's Island, so distinguished by Dampier. The largest and most northern island of this group is about thirteen miles in length. The south-west side of Prince George's Island is bounded by

seventy to two hundred pounds: some of them were taken into the boat unhurt, but many of them were struck with the turtle-peg. They all proved to be most excellent food. The general face of the country was not very inviting, being almost destitute of trees, and other vegetable productions. At this time the northernmost part of the extensive coast of California bore north-east, distant three leagues.

detache
shores*
The
be prin
chief v
had als
thorny
plants o
the lign
and bro
ous, an
skirts o
hawks o
heads,
smaller
beautiful
pipers w
seen; M
an anim
about th
noticed
dead ma
the pres
of these
pourefact
about te
seemed t
they wer
southerly
by the v
for that
extrem
of the N
splendid
remained
reds of
east on sl
sh, com
ant abou
aring a
was atten
deed su
* The vi
nity of t
quiring a
plain de
not be obs
danger:

s required to be
captain dispatched
November, with
St. Cruz, to pro-
he continuation of
the usual produce
ce. Mr. Swaine
been so successful
the other refresh-
ed, they possessed
the preservation of
y consumption of
oyage to a remote

Southward.

the position of their
from the result of
of Cerros seemed to
up bay, between it
points. Several tur-
the surface of the
by the small-bow
being then twelve
, and in the direc-
re said to lay, the
the next morning
forenoon, brought
s: in this direction
could not gain a
passed the night in
th the land, and in
passage between the
or Prince George
y Dampier. The
and of this group
h. The south-west
land is bounded by

ome of them were taken
them were struck with
be most excellent food
was not very inviting
other vegetable produce
most part of the exterior
distant three leagues
detached

detached rocks at a small distance from its shores*.

The soil of Prince George's Island seemed to be principally of a sandy nature, on which the chief valuable production was *lignum vitæ*. It had also impenetrable thickets of small trees and thorny bushes; with the prickly pear, and several plants of the orange and lemon tribe. Some of the *lignum vitæ* which was cut close to the beach and brought on board, was very hard, ponderous, and of a close black grain. About the skirts of the woods many birds were seen; as hawks of several sorts, green parrots with yellow heads, paroquets, pigeons, and a variety of smaller birds, and many of them of the most beautiful plumage. Pelicans, curlews, and sand-pipers were observed, but no quadrupeds were seen; Mr. Manby indeed noticed the footing of an animal, which he supposed must have been about the size of a fox. Many turtle tracks were noticed on the beach, and about a hundred of dead manatee, or sea-cows were conveyed beyond the present range of the surf. The carcasses of these animals, from their advanced state of putrefaction, were supposed to have been so left about ten or twelve days before; and as they all seemed to be nearly in the same state of decay, they were supposed to be so deposited in a violent southerly storm. They were eagerly devoured by the vultures and other birds of prey assembled for that purpose. Captain Vancouver thought extremely probable, that the carnivorous animals of the Marias are frequently regaled with such splendid repasts; for not only the sea-cows that remained entire, but the skeletons of many hundreds of those or similar animals, had also been cast on shore at different periods. Many sorts of fish, common to the tropical regions, were abundant about the shores: the sharks were the most daring among them; they followed the boats, and attempted to catch the oars; one of them indeed succeeded, but not without the loss of five

* The visit to these islands not having afforded an opportunity of taking an accurate description of their shores, or acquiring any essential information concerning them, the captain declined giving a circumstantial account of them; but he observes, that in navigating near them he observed danger: there are indeed some detached islets and rocks

of its teeth, which were left in the blade of the oar. A few snakes and guannas were perceived.

Such is the amount of the information acquired by calling at these islands, which are about a hundred and sixty leagues from Acapulco, and in the immediate vicinity of Saint Blas. On the 21st of December in the morning, our navigators had a sight of the American coast; but at so remote a distance that they lost every appearance of it by noon. During the two preceding days they had light variable winds from the eastward, with alternate calms and sultry weather. On the surface of the ocean great numbers of turtles were lying asleep in every direction: by lowering down the boat, without impeding the progress of the ship, they could select as many as they required.

The weather, though very clear, continued oppressively hot. Had it not been for their anxiety to get forward, and the extreme heat of the weather, their situation would have been rather enviable: the ocean was tranquil, abounding with a great variety of fish, turtles, and sea-fowls. They had no difficulty in providing for their fourth Christmas day since they had quitted the civilized world; which, with the beef, mutton, and poultry they had brought from Monterrey, the officers' tables exhibited such a scene of luxury as cannot be often seen in such distant regions of the ocean. An extra allowance of grog assisted in the celebration of the day, and to summon to their recollection their friends and favourites at home.

Light baffling winds greatly impeded their progress, and rendered it irksome beyond description. Intelligence was now communicated that some of their water-casks were discovered to have leaked out: in consequence of which Captain Vancouver was under the necessity of restraining the allowance of water to three quarts a man per day.

about the shores, but they are all sufficiently conspicuous to be avoided; and so far as their examination extended, the regularity of the soundings gave them reason to believe, that secure anchorage might be obtained at a commodious distance from the shore.

SECTION XXV.

Proceed to the Island of Cocos—Description of that Island—Pass to the Southward—See Gallipagos Islands—Mention their Situation.

THE wind in the north-western quarter blew a steady breeze, and the heat was less oppressive. The atmosphere was clear, and the sea particularly smooth; dolphins, flying fish, bonitos, and a variety of smaller fish were immensely numerous: of turtles they could easily procure as many as they could dispense with. The two following days they were set to the southward at about half a mile per hour; and on the 7th the wind from the north-eastward became very light, and the process was engaged in for distilling fresh water from the sea. By this process, without much additional expenditure of fuel, about twelve or fourteen gallons of fresh water was procured in one day. If it could not be admitted to be of the first quality, it was perfectly fresh, and applicable to all the purposes of cooking.

As they advanced gently to the south-eastward, the riplings on the surface of the water, which our navigators had observed before, became more frequent, attended with agitation, and a rustling hissing noise; and with these particulars the Chatham was infinitely more affected than the *Discovery*. The soundings were tried, but no bottom was found in these riplings with a hundred and forty to a hundred and seventy fathoms of line.

On the 20th of January, land was supposed to be seen from the mast-head at a great distance, bearing east north-east; which was not admitted to be land, till aided by a gentle breeze and the current the mariners had approached nearer to it, and it was peremptorily pronounced so to be. Concluding it to be the island of Cocos, at the distance of fourteen or sixteen leagues, the joyful tidings were communicated by signal to their little consort. The wind, which had been va-

* Near the place on shore where their operations were performing, evident marks of European visitors were displayed, by the trees having been felled with saws and axes; which the decayed appearance of the remaining stumps proved that they had been a long time cut down. Near a fresh water brook, in this western bay, a bottle was suspended on a tree, containing a note addressed to the commander of any vessel that might happen to visit the

riable, became very light; and Captain Vancouver was not without his apprehensions that the current might force them past the island, before he had made choice of a situation for anchoring. That no time might be lost, Mr. Whidbey was dispatched in the cutter to make the necessary examination. About four o'clock, the captain had the pleasure to be informed by Mr. Whidbey that the shores abounded with excellent water, cocoa-nuts, and plenty of wood for fuel, which might easily be procured: especially in two small bays, both affording commodious anchorage sufficiently sheltered against the prevailing winds of the season. Mr. Whidbey made choice of the most eastern, for which they immediately steered, but could not stem the current till about nine at night, and at length moored in thirty-three fathoms water, good holding ground: the Chatham moored within them, in about twenty six fathoms water.

The ship being secured, Captain Vancouver went on shore, and discovered that a profusion of every requisite might easily be procured. Persons were immediately directed to obtain a supply of these essential articles, and to perform the necessary business on board; where, at noon, the latitude was found to be materially different from that stated in Lord Anson's and other voyages; and the general appearance of this island so little corresponded with the island of Cocos, by Dampier and Wafer; that the captain entertained doubts of its being the identical island so described by those gentlemen. This island, however, did not fail to attract their attention from the many advantages it afforded them; and particularly as the soil appeared to be abundantly capable of affording variety of useful vegetables*.

island, signed "James Colnett;" stating, that the ship *Ratler*, South-Sea whaler, of London, had arrived on the 26th of July, 1793; and after procuring wood, water, and other refreshments, had proceeded on her voyage, and in good health. It also stated, that, previously to her departure, a breed of hogs and goats had been left on the island; and a variety of garden seeds sown.

thward—See

and Captain Vancouver's apprehensions that, past the island, being a situation for another might be lost, Mr. Whidbey, the cutter to make about four o'clock, to be informed by abundance of wood, and plenty of wood, and procured: especially affording commo- neltered against the on. Mr. Whidbey, ern, for which they did not stem the current, and at length, thoms water, good am moored within thoms water.

Captain Vancouver said that a profusion of be procured. Per- and to obtain a sup- and to perform the; where, at noon, materially different Anson's and other appearance of the with the island of fer; that the captain being the identical e gentlemen. This fail to attract their vantages it afforded he soil appeared to affording variety of

stating, that the ship had arrived on the procuring wood, water ded on her voyage; that, previously to her departure had been left on the ed sown.

By the time they reached the vessels it rained very heavily, accompanied with a fresh gale from the south-west. Though this weather continued the whole of the 26th, they made a considerable progress towards completing their water and fuel. By the afternoon they had taken on board thirty-five tons of water, and as much wood as they could find a receptacle for; and having thus terminated their business with the shore, they quitted the island in the evening, in order to proceed to the southward*.

The sketch made by Mr. Whidbey of the island of Cocos, makes it four leagues in circumference, lying in a north-east and south-west direction: its length is about four miles, and its breadth two, with several detached rocks and islets dispersed about the shores. The small bay in which they had anchored at the north-east end of the island, is much preferable to the other westward of it. The western bay is larger, and more exposed; its soundings are less regular, and its bottom is not so good. The climate was thought temperate and salubrious, for though the thermometer was usually between seventy-eight and eighty, they experienced no oppressive heat.

This island has not a pleasant appearance in any point of view, though its inland surface is much diversified by hills and dales. With re-

* It does not appear to whom we are indebted for the discovery of this valuable little island; nor do the several descriptions of the island of Cocos accord much with each other. After taking these, and several other circumstances into consideration, it seems probable that some other island might exist not very remote from this, to which these apparent discordant reports might more properly apply.

† Many of the trees that composed the forest, especially the interior and elevated parts of the island, were of a considerable size, spreading into large branches towards the top. The cocoa-nut trees, which grow not only on the shore, but higher up on the sides of the hills, were the only trees that they had seen bearing fruit; though an unripe guava was picked up in one of the rivulets. Many different sorts of fern presented themselves: some of them bearing a stem of six inches in diameter, and growing to the height of twenty feet. Such were the most general vegetable productions of the island, that fell under their observation; to which our navigators added the seeds of melons, apples, melons, with beans, peas, &c. These were sown by Mr. Swaine, in a spot selected and cleared for that purpose; where it was supposed such articles were likely to thrive.

Fish and fowl seemed to be in great abundance, and were entertained that future visitors may derive some benefit from Captain Colnett's liberality; as a young hog

gard to its future utility, the abundant supply of water it affords is the first object of consideration. This abounds in every part, and can be easily procured. It is perfectly limpid, pure, and free from any unpleasant taste or colour. The soil near the streams that fall into the bays, is of a poor, loose, and sandy nature; but behind the beach, and in the fissures of the rocks, a rich black mould was observed, promising much vegetable nourishment; all its vegetable productions seemed to grow luxuriantly, covering the island in one entire wilderness†.

It is common for sea-faring persons to amuse themselves with these voracious animals, by hooking, or taking one from the others to feast upon; a practice attended with the ill consequences of drawing multitudes of them about the ship: the boatswain and a young gentleman narrowly escaped from being drawn out of the boat, by a very large shark which they had hooked in the midst of about a score of them. This circumstance induced Captain Vancouver to prohibit all further indulgence in this species of entertainment. These sharks appeared to be of three distinct sorts: the major part of them were of the tiger kind, beautifully streaked down their sides; the other sorts were brown and blue. It was, however, singularly remarked, that, though they all voraciously devoured the two

was seen by Mr. Swaine and some of his party; but on his observing them, he hastily retreated into the thicket. White and brown rats were extremely plentiful, and land crabs were almost as numerous. Birds of the oceanic tribe made their appearance in great flocks, and were not despicable food. Hawks, rails, and a species of brown and white herons, black birds, and a few others that chiefly inhabited the woods; with some ducks and teals, seemed principally to compose the feathered race.

Excellent fish frequented the shores in abundance: sharks were also numerous, bold, and voracious; these assembled in the bay in multitudes, and constantly attended on their boats, darting at the oars, and whatever falls, or is thrown overboard. It is remarkable, that when one of their own species was taken, and they saw he could no longer defend himself, he was seized, attacked and devoured by his companions, whilst yet alive; and, though these monsters were greatly annoyed by the harpoons, knives, &c. they were not deterred from renewing the attack upon that which was caught, till every part of the victim's flesh was severed from its bones. It was on this occasion discovered that it is erroneous to suppose the shark must turn on his back to enable him to take his prey, as these sharks generally attained their object without first turning themselves, as has been generally asserted, and as generally believed.

their

former species, when one of the latter was captured, it remained unmolested by the rest, and even when killed, its flesh was abandoned by them*.

Having put to sea from the island of Cocos on the 27th of January, and having no intention of stopping short of the island of Juan Fernandez, or some other port to recruit their water and firewood, the ship's course was directed southerly. On the first of February the weather was pleasant, and the wind blew a steady breeze, which encouraged a belief that our navigators had at length reached the regular trade wind. The infinite numbers of fish that still attended them afforded a very profitable amusement, and many birds continued to accompany them.

Land was discovered on the 2d, to the west south-west, that had the appearance of being a small island; after which another island was discovered. In passing between these islands they perceived neither danger nor obstruction: the largest, which is the southernmost, seemed to be about four miles in circumference, and the northernmost about half a league. The navigators advanced so slowly from these islands, that at sun-set the southernmost of them continued within their view. Standing to the south-eastward, at day-light on the 6th, they discovered a more extensive quantity of land than the islands they had just passed: this seemed to be very lofty, at a great distance, and to consist of three or more islands. In the afternoon a breeze sprung up from the south-westward, and before sun-set they saw clearly that what they had for some hours before considered to be two islands, was all connected by depressed land, that had

also appeared like a small island; and at a considerable distance beyond this low land to the southward, an extensive table mountain was visible.

On reference to the relative position of the land to which their attention had been directed since the 6th, the delineation of its shores will be found to bear a striking resemblance to the of the westernmost of the Gallipagos, as laid down in Captain Cook's general chart. The climate of that part of the Gallipagos islands the were now about to leave, seemed remarkably temperate for an equatorial country; the atmosphere felt light and exhilarating, and the wind which was principally from the southern quarter was cool and refreshing. The shores were steep and bold, and free from shoals or hidden dangers. Some riplings were observed, which were attributed to the meeting of currents. The lofty mountains, of which most of the land is composed, seemed in general to descend regularly from a flat summit, and to terminate at the base on very low level land; so that a distant view of each of these mountains has the appearance of an island: hence the different statements of former visitors respecting the number of the group of islands, is in some degree accountable for.

Some assert that these islands afford large streams, and even rivers of fresh water, and others have more than intimated that they are scantily supplied with it. This is, however, of no importance, as from their vicinity to Cocos, where perpetual springs enrich every part of the island, vessels may at all times procure a sufficient quantity to answer all their purposes.

SECTION XXVI.

Progress to the Southward—Discovery Springs her Main Mast—The Scurvy became prevalent—Crew affected with the Scurvy—Pass Massafuero and Juan Fernandez—Arrive at Valparaiso—Visit St. Jago.

OUR navigators had now taken a final leave of the North Pacific Ocean; and as they had been long absent from their native soil, con-

cerning which they had recently received pleasant intelligence, they wished to make the best of their way towards those regions, wh-

* To commemorate their visit to the island of Cocos, Captain Vancouver directed that the date of their arrival,

with the names of the vessels and the commanders, should be cut on the rock where the other inscription was found.

and; and at a con-
low land to the
ble mountain was

ve position of the
had been directed
of its shores with
resemblance to the
Gallipagos, as laid
ral chart. The cli-
lipagos islands the
seemed remarkable
country; the almost
ting, and the wind
the southern quarter
the shores were steep
ls or hidden dangers
ed, which were a
currents. The lofti-
of the land is con-
o descend regularly
terminate at the base
that a distant view
has the appearance
fferent statements
the number of the
ne degree account

islands afford large
of fresh water, and
imated that they are
This is, however, in
ir vicinity to Cocos
rich every part of the
times procure a suffi-
all their purposes.

y became prevalent
rive at Valparaiso-

recently received in-
wished to make the
those regions, which

d the commanders, show-
er inscription was found

their services in another line might probably be
more advantageous to their country.

The bad sailing of the Chatham had, through-
out the voyage, greatly retarded the progress of
their labours: and more particularly since their
last departure from Monterey; Captain Van-
couver therefore thought some advantages might
be derived to the service from his preceding her:
he therefore informed Mr. Puget, that he should,
without delay, proceed with the Discovery to-
wards the island of Juan Fernandez; and if he
(Mr. Puget) should not arrive there before his
departure, he was provided with further instruc-
tions, which, with such others as might be left
for him at that station, would be sufficient for
his future government. After digesting their ar-
rangements, the captain made sail in the Dis-
covery, with a pleasant gale from the south-
west. Many oceanic birds, and vast quan-
tities of fish attended them; some of the latter
fortunately falling to their share. By the even-
ing the Chatham was considerably astern, and
by the forenoon on Monday the 16th, she was
out of sight from the mast-head.

Their progress was equally pleasant and expe-
ditious; and the wind blew a steady favourable
breeze, was light and variable; and on the 1st of
March they appeared to have reached the va-
lue winds, having a fresh breeze, with a heavy
dew from the north-westward. From this time
their progress was considerably retarded by an
adverse wind: the weather, however, was fair
and pleasant till the morning of the 8th, when
the gale freshened, accompanied with showers

* On the 14th of March, Captain Vancouver was astonish-
ed to hear from Mr. Menzies, that the sea-scurvy had made
its appearance among the crew. This was a circumstance
which he was unable to account, as he had been par-
ticularly careful to adopt every salutary measure that could
be devised for the preservation of that most valuable of all
possessions, health. All his endeavours, however, had been
entirely ineffectual, for the number of their scorbutic
patients continued to increase. This was the second time it
made its appearance during the voyage: the first was
occasioned by the seamen having been many months exposed
to a very arduous and fatiguing service to most inclement
weather, with only a small portion of refreshments. These
causes not existing at this time, the captain was under the
greatest perplexity respecting its origin, till at length it ap-
peared to have been derived from a disobedience of his posi-
tive injunctions, on the part of the cook, "who had been
strictly forbidden, on any account whatever, to allow the skim-
mings of the boiling salted meat to be eaten by the people."

Voi. I. No. XLI.

and squalls; in one of the latter, the head of the
main-mast was discovered to have been much
sprung, about five feet below the rigging, and
seven feet above. The sails on the main-mast
being taken in, and the wound further examined,
the head of the mast was found to be in a weak
and shattered condition. No time was lost in
applying such remedies to the defect in the mast
which they possessed; and, on the 9th, it being
as secure as they were capable of rendering it,
the mizentop-mast was substituted for a maintop-
mast, and the maintop-gallant mast was got up
for a mizentop-mast. By this accident their
quantity of canvas was so reduced, that their
progress towards their rendezvous was much
impeded*.

At day-light in the morning of the 18th, a
strange sail was discovered astern; and as she
had the appearance of being a brig, she was
naturally supposed to be the Chatham: that
opinion was confirmed about four in the after-
noon by her answering the private signal; and
as she had now the advantage of them in point
of sailing, they did not shorten sail, but left her
to overtake them, which did not happen till the
20th, when Mr. Puget came on board, and the
two commanders were reciprocally informed that
very fine weather, had attended them ever since
their separation. From the commander of a
British vessel, Mr. Puget had been informed
that the anchorage of Juan Fernandez was con-
sidered as very bad, and much exposed; that a
Spanish frigate had lately been lost there; and
that the island was almost destitute of refresh-
ments: he therefore recommended, if the Chat-

Of this disobedience, the ship's cook made a voluntary
confession; and, on his examination, attempted in some
degree to justify himself by saying, the practice had fre-
quently been defended by some of the people on board, who
seemed to be acquainted with the opinions of the president
of the Royal Society, and who urged, that pulse with any
kind of grease was not only a wholesome food, but also
very antiscorbutic.

The manner in which the cook acknowledged his trans-
gression, and his contrition for having thus departed from
his duty, entitled him to the captain's full forgiveness, on
his solemn promising that he would faithfully attend to his
directions in future; which promise he believes he punc-
tually performed. But though all their antiseptics were
resorted to, the number of scorbutic patients continued
much on the increase; whence it was probable that the
pernicious indulgence which had produced the disease, had
been generally adopted among the crew.

6 H

ham

ham had occasion for naval stores, that it would be most prudent to repair to the port of Valparaiso, as the most probable place of procuring such supplies of any on the coast of Chili.

The damaged and unserviceable state of the *Discovery's* main-mast demanded immediate repair; especially as the head of it appeared to be extremely rotten: a defect of so serious a nature admitted of no delay: and notwithstanding the strong injunctions contained in the captain's instructions, not to visit any of the Spanish settlements, but in cases of absolute necessity, he thought it expedient to submit to Mr. Puget, and the principal officers of the *Discovery*, the state and condition of the mast, &c. And this matter having been taken maturely into their consideration, they were unanimously of opinion, that for the good of his Majesty's service, and for the preservation of his Majesty's ship, it was indispensably necessary, that the *Discovery* should repair to the nearest port, for the purpose of procuring a new main-mast; since the disabled one, even after it was repaired, must be very inadequate to the services that might be demanded of it in those tempestuous seas, which, at this season of the year, they must naturally expect to encounter in passing round Cape Horn.

The port of Valparaiso seeming to be the most calculated to supply their wants, and being the nearest to them, their course was directed thither with a fresh northerly breeze. At four in the afternoon the island of Massafuero was seen at eleven or twelve leagues distant: at midnight they passed within four leagues of the southern side. This island appeared to be about three leagues in circumference, with a rugged, hilly, and uneven surface, terminating abruptly in rocky cliffs near the water's edge. During the night they had a fresh breeze, with some squalls. On the 21st, the jury maintop-sail yard was carried away, not from a press of sail, but from being exhausted and rotten. This was immediately replaced with another, of the stability of which they were extremely doubtful*.

At ten in the morning on the 25th, they stood in for the land, which was very indistinctly seen, it being then enveloped in a dense haze; in the

forenoon they were in with the shores, but saw no circumstance that could indicate their being in the neighbourhood of Valparaiso. Not thinking it prudent, in their crippled situation to risk a disappointment, they stood off shore till an observation from the latitude could be procured, which was accomplished about eleven o'clock. The view they had gained of the coast of Chili did not much excite the curiosity, or attract the attention of strangers. A considerable part of the sea shore was composed of rude cliffs and rocky precipices; against which the western swell broke with violence. A few stunted shrubs and bushes were thinly scattered, but nothing like a tree was to be seen; and the landscape bounded by the frozen summits of the towering Andes, exhibited a dreary, desolate, and inhospitable picture. As they proceeded they beheld a bluff point of land about three leagues distant, which proved to be the western point of entrance into Valparaiso Bay.

About two in the afternoon they were abreast of the point of Angels, off which some rocks extended to the distance of about half a cable length. In sailing round this point, the country expanded upon them, and presented a scene very different from that which they had lately beheld: the whole of the bay, terminated by a sandy beach, now presented itself; near the upper margin of which, situated on the sides of the adjacent hills, the town of Valparaiso was displayed; and though not remarkable for the pleasantness of its situation, it was neat, regular, and of considerable extent. The churches and forts were not deficient in point of elegance; and clearly announced that they were again approaching towards the civilized world.

In the bay several sail of merchant ships were observed; to and from which boats were constantly passing and repassing to the shore, where a busy scene of men and cattle was represented, pointing out that commercial intercourse between distant countries, which the arts and civilization alone can effect. The wind from the south was blowing out of the bay, they sought a proper situation for anchoring, which they obtained about three in the afternoon, in ten fathoms

* In the afternoon they passed the south-side of Juan Fernandez, at the distance of about fourteen miles, but it was too indistinctly seen to enable the beholder to delineate its shores; its aspect from this point was by no means in-

viting: the whole composing a group of broken irregular hills, forming as grotesque a scene as the imagination can conceive. In the forenoon of the 24th they gained a distant view of the lofty coast of Chili to the eastward.

in the shores, but could indicate their Valparaiso. No crippled situation to food off shore till made could be proposed about eleven gained about eleven the curiosity, or. A considerable posed of rude cliffs which the western few stunted shrubs entered, but nothing and the landscape of the towering isolate, and inhospitable they beheld three leagues distant point of entrance

on they were abreast of which some rocks about half a cable's point, the country presented a scene very different from what they had lately beheld. The bay was terminated by a sand bar, and the water off; near the upper end of the bay, on the sides of the hills, the city of Valparaiso was displayed. The bay was remarkable for the number of islands; it was neat, regular, and fertile. The churches and convents were a point of elegance, and the houses were again approached by a series of terraces. The world.

merchant ships were
which boats were com
g to the shore, wh
attle was represent
al intercourse betwe
e arts and civilizati
d from the southwa
they sought a prop
which they obtain
oon, in ten fath

group of broken irreg-
ne as the imagination
24th they gained a dis-
the eastward.

water. An officer was instantly dispatched to inform the governor of their arrival, the object of their visit, and the assistance they should require. A ship that had been seen in the morning, anchored soon after them; and, with the *Discovery* and *Chatham*, made ten sail of vessels riding in the bay. A Spanish officer then came on board with congratulations on their arrival, from Senior Don Lewis Alava, governor of the port, and brother to their friend of that name at Monterey. But from a Mr. Cook, who commanded the *Lightning* of Bristol, a South-Sea Whaler, they received little encouragement to expect a favourable reception at Valparaiso.

The message from Senior Don Lewis Alava, contained strong assurances from him, that every assistance they might require, which was in his power to bestow, might absolutely be depended on, and that he hoped speedily to have the pleasure of seeing the captain and his officers on shore, where they could depend upon receiving every civility. It was difficult to reconcile two such very opposite reports, though Captain Vancouver was most inclined to give credit to the former; especially as the first representation was received from a person not perfectly sober. On the return of Mr. Manby, who had been dispatched to the governor to announce their arrival, he was confirmed in his opinion: he assured the captain, that if those on board the Lightning had been disagreeably restricted by the governor, it must be solely attributed to their indiscretion and improper conduct, which had rendered such coercive measures, on the part of the commanding officer, so indispensibly necessary for the preservation of good order.

Mr. Manby informed the captain, that Senior

* On these favourable communications being made, thearrison was saluted with thirteen guns, a compliment which was punctually returned; after which Captain Vancouver sailed upon the governor. And, on Thursday the 26th, accompanied by Mr. Puget and several of the officers, he paid his formal visit to Governor Alaya, and was received with every mark of politeness and attention: accompanied with repeated assurances that nothing should be wanting, on his part, to relieve their wants, and render Valparaiso agreeable as its circumstances would allow. At the conclusion of these ceremonies they returned to their vessels, where their visit was immediately repaid by the governor, attended by his principal officers, and the inhabitants of the town: and on their coming on board they were saluted with thirteen guns. Pressing intracies were also received from these gentlemen to visit their families; which were attended to with the utmost cordiality.

Alaya had stated to him, that though he did not entertain the least doubt that the president and captain general of the kingdom of Chili would conform to all the promises he then made, yet it would be proper to obtain his excellency's sanction for their being carried into effect. For this purpose he should dispatch a courier that evening, to St. Jago de Chili, the residence of the president, and he hoped the captain would make some communication to his excellency by the same conveyance, on the subject of their visit, and the succours they should require. With this request the captain instantly complied: the messenger was then dispatched, and intimation given that a reply might be expected without delay. In the mean time the officers were not restrained from visiting the town; the markets were open to them to procure refreshments, and they were perfectly at liberty to increase their stock of wood and water*.

The town of Valparaiso being destitute of taverns or places of accommodation for strangers, our navigators were obliged to intrude on the hospitality of many of its inhabitants. Among the first of whom they were indebted to, in these respects, was Don Juan Barrara, the collector of the king's duties, and Don Praeta, the captain of the port; but as their habitations could not conveniently contain more than their respective families, a lodging on shore was not easily to be procured. The impaired state of the captain's health, however, rendered it necessary for him to sleep on shore, and take as much exercise as his strength would permit. He applied to the governor to allot him apartments for himself, and a few of the officers in some of the public buildings of the town, with which he very

The captain now directed his thoughts towards procuring a supply of the abundant refreshments which the luxuriant country afforded : but his principal object was immediately to adopt efficacious measures for eradicating the scorbutic disorder which now prevailed, and which had alarmingly increased among the crews of both vessels. It did not appear, however, that the unwholesome indulgence connived at by the cook, had been practised so much on board the Chatham as it had been on board the Discovery. From this information, Captain Vancouver thought it expedient that the crews of both vessels should, besides the regular allowance of fresh beef and greens, and new soft bread from the shore, be daily served with a reasonable quantity of grapes, apples, and onions ; and he soon perceived that this salutary diet was attended with the desired effect, by perfectly eradicating the disease.

obligingly

obligingly complied, and the Casa de Exercicios was appointed for their residence, relying on the approbation of the president of Chili.

On the 28th the courier returned, and Captain Vancouver received from his Excellency Senr. Don Ambrosio Higgins de Vallenar, the president, the most ample confirmation of all the liberal offers they had received from Governor Alave, with a letter of congratulation on their having thus far accomplished the great object of their expedition, and having at length arrived in a country, where nothing should be wanting within the reach of his power to supply. These obliging offers were accompanied by a communication to governor Alave, that if the captain and some of the principal officers would choose to visit the capital, they had his Excellency's permission for that purpose; and should they take a journey to St. Jago, the governor was required by the president to see that they were properly provided for the excursion.

On the mast of the Discovery being examined, the damage it had sustained proved to be greater than had been expected, as it was sprung almost two-thirds through, a little below the hounds. Having no resource but that of applying the best remedy in their possession, two stout *cheeks* made of spare anchor stocks, together with two strong fishes, were fixed to the mast below the partners of the main deck, and continued up to its head; and even with these additional securities, it was a precarious stick to depend upon: they were therefore compelled to make the best shift in their power, and to act with the utmost caution in their passage*.

* The several services were arranged, and in a regular train of execution; but as the following day was the anniversary of their departure from Falmouth, and the commencement of the fifth year of their labours, they devoted it to mirth and festivity. Each man had a double allowance of grog, and an excellent dinner, consisting of a variety of the good things which the country so abundantly afforded. Having reviewed his several arrangements, Captain Vancouver determined to avail himself of the obliging permission of the president to visit the capital of Chili, and ordered the necessary preparations to be made for an excursion to Saint Jago.

† The town of Valparaiso is situated on a narrow tract of land at the foot of rocky precipices near the shores at the water side. There is no pass immediately into the country but for foot passengers: for the main road, which is the avenue into the interior parts of the country, passes through the villages of Almandrel, and approaches the sea-

Their party was proposed to consist of Mr. Puget and Lieutenant Johnstone of the Chatham, and Lieutenants Baker and Swaine, and Mr. Menzies of the Discovery. The captain having informed governor Alave of his intention of visiting St. Jago, he very obligingly gave directions at Valparaiso, that a proper number of horses and mules should be provided for the expedition: the former for their riding, and the latter for the conveyance of their luggage. It further appeared that his excellency the president had also sent two dragoons from St. Jago, who were natives of Ireland, in his Catholic Majesty's service, to attend them as guides and interpreters.

The necessary preparations being made, they began their journey early on the 3d of April, with a numerous cavalcade; for though the country had been long settled, they were informed that no accommodations could be found on the road, between the two principal towns of the kingdom of Chili; excepting such as might be met with in villages; which only consisted of a shed or uninhabited house. A supply of provisions might probably be procured, but there were no necessary articles or utensils to prepare them for the table: all these, as well as the cook, they were obliged to take with them: and fearing to be disappointed of the promised shelter, they were provided with a tent, packed in convenient travelling trunks, and carried on the backs of the mules†.

The apparent sterility of the wide waste which now encompassed them on every side, excited their astonishment, when they reflected on the

shore: and to this route they were indispensably confined. This village is situated on an extensive border of low land bounded behind by steep and almost barren hills. The valleys and plains, however, in its vicinity, are fertile and large gardens are cultivated for profit, and decorated for amusement. From Almandrel a tolerably good road has been made in a zig-zag way over a ridge of hills, the summit of which occupied them about two hours in reaching. The party were informed by their guides that the whole of the new road was not finished, but was then in progressive state towards completion.

In the Missionary Voyage, page 107, are given the following particulars concerning a lady at Tongataboo: "This morning a woman of rank paid us a visit; she was attended by many chiefs, and a vast number of females, who were all officious in their care of the old lady, whose amazing corpulence rendered her coming on board rather difficult. After her there came four stout fellows carrying

the
daily
of p
water
char
neigh
now
and
grove
each
a few
its su
fabric
shade
whisp

By
which
of po
the tr
their a
variati
sideral
village
Here t
pose fo
too mu
Cas
about
with so
an agre
through
urate
who, h
gave th
ise of
had so
nately

carrying
of them
form t
fully s
not be q
riding
however,
fish, by
pel for
ly, and
sem fro
ected in
e highes
d firm
At o
raiso, c
l accom
Vol. I

o consist of Mr.
e of the Chatham,
Swaine, and Mr.
he captain having
his intention of
givingly gave direc-
proper number of
provided for the ex-
air riding, and the
their luggage. In
loney the president
rom St. Jago, who
Catholic Majesty's
guides and inter-

being made, they
the 3d of April
; for though this
they were inform-
ould be found on
incipal towns of the
g such as might be
only consisted of

A supply of pro-
cured, but there
utensils to prepare
as well as the cook
with them; and
of the promise
with a tent, packed
aks, and carried on

f the wide waste
n on every side, ex-
hen they reflected on

a indispensably confined
sive border of low land
most barren hills. The
ts vicinity, are fertile
for profit, and decorated
d a tolerably good road
ver a ridge of hills, the
out two hours in reach
by their guides that the
ished, but was then in
on.

age 107, are given the
n lady at Tongataboo
nk paid us a visit; she
and a vast number of
their care of the old lady
ed her coming on board
ame four stout fellows
carrying

the abundant supply of good things they had
daily seen in the market of Valparaiso. Instead
of pleasant villages, fertile pastures, and culti-
vated fields, which they expected to have been
charmed with, after passing over the hills in the
neighbourhood of the shore, an extensive desert
now appeared before them, destitute of wood,
and almost of verdure: a few stunted trees and
groveling shrubs excepted, widely scattered from
each other. Amidst this poverty of vegetation,
a few miserable inhabitants, barely existing on
its surface, inhabited wretched huts, or hovels,
fabricated of mud; seeming hardly to afford a
shade against the rays of the sun, or the rude
whispers of the wind*.

By adding to their own stores, the supplies
which some of these hovels afforded, consisting
of poultry, eggs, onions, potatoes, and fruit,
the travellers made an excellent repast, whilst
their animals were refreshing themselves. Little
variation in the scenery was observed for a con-
siderable time: at length they arrived at the
village of *Caso Blanco*; or the *White-House*.
Here their guides recommended a profound re-
pose for the night, and the rest of the party were
too much fatigued to object to the proposal.

Caso Blanco is a hamlet, containing a church and
about forty houses in its neighbourhood; which,
with some inclosures of cultivated land, formed
an agreeable contrast to the barren naked country
through which they had previously passed. The
curate was the principal person of the village,
who, having been informed of their approach,
gave them a hospitable reception. In the exer-
cise of his urbanity, he seemed unhappy that he
had so little to bestow; but as the travellers for-
tunately required no other assistance from him

carrying a bundle of cloth, not quite so large but that two
of them might have borne it with ease: this was presented
to form to the captain, who gave her in return such things
as fully satisfied her. The ship being under sail, we could
not be quite so attentive to this great personage, as, ac-
cording to their ideas of ceremony, they might expect;
however, any omission of ours they found means to dispense
with, by regaling themselves in the cabin over the kava
for about two hours.—The respect paid to this old
lady, and to many of her sex in Tongataboo, distinguishes
them from the servile condition to which females are sub-
jected in other savage states or tribes. Here they possess
the highest degrees of rank, and support it with a dignity
and firmness equal to the men."

* At one of these abodes, about five leagues from Val-
paraiso, they stopped to dine; when they found the inter-
nal accommodations well assorted with the external appear-
Vol. I. No. XLII.

than that of procuring them a lodging, they soon
relieved him from his embarrassment. This
gentleman, without hesitation, instantly provided
for them a house, precisely of that description
which they had understood were situated on the
road for their accommodation.

The walls of this house were composed of
dried pieces of earth cut square, nearly resem-
bling bricks, which had been placed on each
other in a wet state, and plastered over with a
similar substance; but, being irregularly dried,
the general appearance of the respective sub-
divisions acquired the aspect of deformity. The
inside of this mansion consisted but of one apart-
ment; which was found barely capacious enough
to receive their baggage; for had the weather
been rainy, the travellers would have had but
very imperfect shelter for themselves. Whilst
their supper was preparing, they visited the in-
habitants in the village, by whom they were re-
ceived with cheerfulness and affability. Some of
the faces, among the younger females, would
have been thought pretty, even among those of
our fair country-women, had they not destroyed
the natural delicacy of their complexion, by the
intolerable custom of painting red and white.

The houses of this village gave it a pleasing
appearance, at the first view, and induced the
party to suppose that they should meet with such
as were more commodious in other respects; but,
on their accepting the invitations of the principal
people, they saw the same want of cleanliness
prevailed, and were confirmed in their opinion
that wretchedness, indolence, and superstition
were exhibited here, in as great a degree as among
the cottagers in the desert†.

The new road was here directed across the less
elevated

ance of the mansion: a dirty table, a stool, a wretched bed,
and five or six crosses constituted all its furniture. This
residence, however, was not without some decorations of
a religious nature; and, what was more extraordinary,
the inhabitants apparently indulged in the luxury of taking
the *mattee*, an infusion of an herb procured from Paraguay:
Still to add to their surprise, they perceived that the very
few utensils they possessed for common domestic purposes,
were principally made of silver. The land surrounding
these miserable cabins is in a perfect state of nature, with-
out the vestige of any labour having been bestowed upon it.
The very few wretched inhabitants of this dreary wild
seemed to rely, without any exertion of their own, on the
bountiful hand of Providence for their subsistence: In-
dolence and superstition seemed entirely to influence their
conduct.

† Their time passed agreeably till supper was served,
61 when

elevated part of the ridge, and here our travellers saw the labourers engaged progressively in that work. They could not avoid remarking, however, that their inactivity in this business, could be equalled only by the humble means they possessed for its execution. Three hundred and fifty men were employed with pick-axes and shovels; and to supply the place of wheel-barrows for the removal of the earth, the hide of an ox was spread upon the ground, and when as much earth was thrown upon it as would require the strength of two men to remove, the corners of the hide were drawn together, and dragged to the depressed side of the road, and emptied where it was thought requisite. The whole plan of proceeding in the construction of this new road, was indeed ridiculous beyond conception. The labourers received their provisions, and a rial and a half per day, which made the amount of their daily wages about seven pence sterling, and their food was estimated at about four pence. Hence it appeared extraordinary to our navigators, that more persons were not employed in agriculture, and other rural improvement; especially as the soil and climate seemed so well adapted for cultivation. By the introduction of more of the necessaries of life, and a proper share of its comforts, a general spirit for exertion would be diffused among the lower orders of the people, who might thus be encouraged to prefer a life of diligence to one of inactivity, which at present disgraces the greater part of the community.

After breakfast the party proceeded on their journey along a very narrow path, and at four in the afternoon stopped at a mud hovel within five miles of the mountain of Praow. The country they had passed through had little to entertain, and less to interest the traveller, being ex-

when they were favoured with the company of every inhabitant of the village: the superior persons partook of the repast, whilst the others enjoyed the peculiar gratification of beholding a scene so novel and unexpected in their region. The glass circulated briskly, and the new friends did not retire till the night had far advanced. The blankets for the party were then spread, but their rest was tormentingly disturbed by the vermin, generated by the filth of former inhabitants, which indulged their revenge upon these strangers, for having endeavoured to dispossess them of their strong holds by sweeping out the place. They rose the next morning, without having received much refreshment, having been so violently annoyed by myriads of bugs and fleas.

actly similar to that which they had passed before, but without any striking objects to vary the scene. Being much fatigued with travelling, and the heat of the weather, the advice of the dragoons to make this their resting-place for the night, was readily acceded to by all parties. Lamb and poultry were procured, and dressed by their own cook for dinner, and both articles proved very excellent. Their table was spread under the shade of some vines, and they were attended by a few peasants drawn thither by curiosity, who conducted themselves respectfully. They retired early to their blankets, which, as before, were spread upon the ground in the hovel.

They rose early the next morning, and reached in a reasonable time the lofty summits of Praow; from the top of which the landscape was extremely interesting. To the eastward the travellers beheld the extensive valley in which St. Jago is situated, and which was terminated by the lofty Andes whose towering heights exhibit perpetual winter. In the opposite direction innumerable mud hovels were discerned, which had escaped their notice during the journey. They descended Praow to the north-east, after which the road continued almost in an eastern direction, and was nearly as broad, and in as good a condition as many of the turnpike-roads in England. Several orchards, and a few plantations of pasture land, on which cattle were grazing under the shade of a few scattered trees, were seen on either side; but the general dearth of cultivation occasioned a gloomy wild appearance, without hardly a single feature to indicate their near approach, to so large and populous a city as that of Saint Jago*.

Having finished their breakfast they resumed their journey: the road was level, firm, and broad; and, as they advanced, plantations and

* They stopped to breakfast at the distance of about fifteen miles from the capital, whose lofty spires overtopped the numerous houses of that extensive city: but notwithstanding their present vicinity to such an emporium mud hovels were still the only receptacle for travellers; no improvement appeared in any of the building, or in any other respect, that might add to the comfort and convenience of life; the same want of cleanliness still debased the character of the inhabitants, who, notwithstanding their extreme wretchedness and misery, possessed cheerful countenances, and manifested content in their deportment. Their natural disposition to oblige was highly grateful to the feelings of our navigators, though their excessive indolence demanded their censure as well as pity.

y had passed before, to vary the scene, travelling, and the ice of the dragons for the night, was parties. Lamb and dressed by their own articles proved very spread under the they were attended by r by curiosity, who fully. They retired ch, as before, were ie hovel.

morning, and reached summits of Praow; dscape was extreme ward the travellers n which St. Jago is minated by the lofty exhibit perpetual rection innumerable which had escaped ey. They descended after which the road stern direction, and as good a condition roads in England plantations of pas were grazing unde l trees, were seen o dearth of cultivation appearance, without dicate their near ap ulous a city as that o

breakfast they resumed was level, firm, and ced, plantations and

at the distance of about hose lofty spires over-top extensive city; but uity to such an emporetacle for travellers; n of the building, or in any to the comfort and con t of cleanliness still d and misery, possessed fested content in their dition to oblige was high vigators, though their censure as well as pity. vineyard

vineyards were seen on both sides; in each of which a white house was generally situated at a little distance from the road. At length they arrived at a habitation about a mile from the capital, where they unanimously agreed to halt, as well for the purpose of taking rest and refreshment, as to be able to equip themselves for the ceremonious visit to the captain-general. One of the dragoons was immediately dispatched with a letter to his excellency, announcing their arrival in the vicinity of the capital, and stating that they intended to do themselves the honour of paying their respects to him at the palace in the evening. Captain Vancouver also directed the dragoon to engage carriages at St. Jago, sufficient to convey the whole party thither. In the midst of these endeavours to make as smart an appearance as they could contrive, the dragoon returned, accompanied by an officer from the Captain General, whom he sent to congratulate them on their arrival, requesting they would immediately repair to the palace, on horses properly caparisoned for conveying them in a suitable manner to the capital.

Fearing they could not decline making this public entry, without giving offence to the president, they endeavoured to equip themselves as well as they were able in their old rotten uniforms. The fresh horses which had been sent from St. Jago, they expected would have been of the docile kind; instead of which they were now furnished with high-bred animals, decorated with elegant saddles and bridles, and richly fringed and embellished with a profusion of gold and silver lace. The captain's objections to a

public entry were now greatly increased; he therefore requested they might be permitted to visit St. Jago in a more private manner. But on a representation of this circumstance to the officers, instead of yielding to this proposal, whips and spurs were instantly produced, and also required to be worn; expostulating with them on the glaring impropriety of appearing without them. But all their expostulations could not surmount their objections, and they presumed to mount without these additional equipments*.

A capacious room was allotted to Captain Vancouver in the palace, and a large contiguous apartment was appropriated to the use of Mr. Puget and the rest of the officers, in which were a number of beds for the party. The two dragoons were ordered to attend as servants. The politeness of the president did not end here; for he introduced to their acquaintance Don Ramon de Rosas, the corregidor, and Don Francis Cas-sada, a captain of dragoons, who received the president's orders to shew them all the curiosities in St. Jago, and introduce them to all the principal families in that city†.

When they retired to rest, they found their beds were tolerably good, but with the filth in their apartments they were exceedingly disgusted. Their dragoons were applied to respecting some brooms or brushes to remove the nuisance; but, to their great mortification they were informed, that such things were not in common use at St. Jago: the only alleviation that could be obtained was a proper quantity of water to sprinkle the dust.

Every Sunday morning the president has a levee,

* The crowds of people who assembled to see the cavalcade, added to their embarrassment, which was occasioned by the slow and solemn pace in which they moved, till they arrived at the palace. On their alighting they were received by a guard, and formally conducted to the audience chamber. Here they were received by his excellency Don Ambrosio Higgins de Vallener with an unaffected welcome: they were now informed, by Don Ambrosio himself, that he was a native of Ireland, from whence he had been absent about forty years; and that at an early period of life he had entered into the English army, but not having been promoted according to his own estimation of his merit, he had embraced more advantageous offers on the continent. His first commission in the service of his Catholic Majesty was in the corps of engineers, after which he was introduced among the dragoons, and became a lieutenant-colonel. He afterwards obtained the distinguished post of military commander on the frontiers of Chili, and governor of Concepcion. In this service he remained twelve years, and had the good fortune and address to subdue the natural

fierceness of the inhabitants, and induce them to submit to the government of Spain. For this service he was promoted, in 1783, to the exalted station he now fills. His Catholic Majesty has since honoured him with repeated marks of approbation, having conferred on him the orders of Charles the Third and Saint James, with the rank of Lieutenant General in the Spanish army.

† The supper, which consisted of an elegant variety, was served up on silver, at which no one was permitted to be present but Don Ambrosio, Don Ramon de Rosas, and themselves. Ceremony was totally laid aside, and every individual considered himself as much at home, as if he had been partaking of a repast in England among particular friends. Supper being ended, several ladies appeared at the iron-grating which protected the windows of the palace, begging the company would accept of nosegays, and requesting they would join the rest of their party assembled near the palace; but their obliging invitation was declined till a future day.

which

which is usually attended by the military people, and the principal inhabitants of the city and its environs. In order to be formally introduced at this levee, they decorated their persons with the best apparel the exhausted state of their wardrobes would allow, and then repaired to the audience chamber. At the upper end of this spacious room, which was neatly but not extravagantly furnished, a small stage was raised a few feet from the floor, upon which was placed a chair of state, ornamented with a canopy of red damask; portraits of their Catholic Majesties being placed on each side of the president's chair. The levee was attended by about one hundred and twenty persons, and all superbly clothed. In such a company the thread-bare uniforms of our navigators suffered much by comparison; but his excellency kindly apologized for the reduced state of their apparel, by enumerating the hardships they had suffered during their absence from a civilized world. After they had severally paid their compliments to the president, the levee broke up, and they followed the rest of the party to the levee of the bishop of Chili, which always commences on the termination of the president's.

Here our navigators were again received with that politeness which had marked their reception at Don Ambrosio's. The bishop resides in a magnificent palace, and is the next person, in point of rank and consequence, to the president. Though the furniture was rather gaudy than elegant, it manifested the exalted station of the illustrious owner. The bishop appeared in a loose clerical garment of purple silk, buttoned close, a sort of apron surrounding his waist, and descending to his knees. Many priests attended the levee, one of whom always conducted to the bishop the person who was to be introduced, who bent one knee on receiving the benediction of the church. On this occasion, the bishop

* From the bishop's palace, they were conducted to the houses of the judges and great officers of state; and about two o'clock they returned to the palace, where the president was waiting their arrival for dinner, which was served up on a plain deal table, not in the least corresponding with the magnificence of the dinner service, which consisted entirely of plate. After taking coffee, which is always brought as soon as the cloth is removed, every one retired to his private apartments: between the hours of three and six in the afternoon, not a person is seen in the streets, the shops are shut up, and stillness prevails as if it were actually night.

† The ladies of St. Jago are not deficient of personal

with one hand imitated the figure of a cross over the person introduced, and presented a ring which he wore on the finger of the other, to receive an additional homage, paid by touching it with the lips, in imitation of the act of kissing.

Accompanied by their new friends, our navigators were introduced in the evening to the family of Senr. Cotappa's, an eminent Spanish merchant. The house of this gentleman, like most of the principal habitations, formed a quadrangle, inclosing an open area of about thirty yards square, one side of which is a dead wall running parallel to the street. As none of the houses exceed one story in height, this wall totally conceals every appearance of the buildings within. The entrance from the street into the fore-court, was through a gateway in the wall, whilst the wings, or two remaining sides of the square to the right and left, were divided into offices for servants and sleeping apartments. This gentleman's house consisted of an anti-chamber, a spacious dining room, and a bed-chamber: all the rooms, if not superbly, were finely finished; but in the principal one, two chandeliers were suspended from the ceiling, the subjects of which were selected from the sacred writings. The company they met here were divided into two parties; the ladies sitting on cushions on one side of the room, and the gentlemen opposite to them on chairs, among whom our navigators obtained a place. The entertainments of the evening consisted of concert and ball, in both of which the ladies particularly shone, as they appeared to excel in the accomplishments of music and dancing. The concert was performed entirely by the ladies; one led the band on the piano-forte, and the other filled up the accompaniments on the flutes, violin, and the harp. The whole was capitally conducted, and afforded our navigators a musical treat to which they had been long strangers†.

charms, and many of them may be considered handsome; they are principally brunettes, with expressive black eyes and regular features; but a want of that neatness, so much the pride of English women, was conspicuous in many particulars; especially in the neglect of their teeth, which were suffered to become extremely dirty. They were generally sprightly and unreserved: it must indeed be admitted that such a degree of levity is observable in their conduct not only in dancing, but on other occasions, as to induce strangers, particularly Englishmen, to have no very exalted opinion of their virtue: though our navigators could discover nothing that could impeach the fidelity of the married women, nor sully the character of the single ladies.

The

ture of a cross over
presented a ring
of the other, to re-
paid by touching
the act of kissing
friends, our naviga-
ening to the family
Spanish merchant
like most of the
a quadrangle, in-
thirty yards square,
all running parallel
houses exceed one
ally conceals every
within. The en-
the fore-court, was
all, whilst the wings
square to the right
offices for servants
This gentleman
chamber, a spacious
ber: all the rooms
finished; but in the
ers were suspended
s of which were se-
ings. The compan-
into two parties; the
one side of the room
to them on chairs
ers obtained a place
evening consisted of
which the ladies par-
eared to excel in the
and dancing. The
ly by the ladies; on
forte, and the other
on the flutes, violins
capitally conducted
s a musical treat to
rangers†.

he considered handsome
th expressive black eyes
of that neatness, so much
as conspicuous in many
ect of their teeth, which
dirty. They were good
must indeed be admitted
ervable in their conduct
r occasions, as to induce
, to have no very exalted
our navigators could do
the fidelity of the marriage
f the single ladies.

The city of St. Jago, including the suburbs, is upwards of three miles in circumference. It is well supplied with water from the river Mapocho, which has its source in the mountains at a distance from the capital; and is ingeniously conducted through the principal streets of the town. This river, from whence the city is thus supplied, overflowed its banks in June, 1783, in consequence of an inundation, and rushed down towards St. Jago with such fury, that it demolished all the dams which defended the country. Every individual was thrown into the utmost consternation lest a second inundation should succeed. In which case, as the city had been left defenceless by these unexampled torrents, it was reasonably apprehended, that not a single edifice would be left standing in the capital.

It was not, however, till January, 1792, that a new dam or wall was erected to defend the city from the river. This wall is said to have a foundation fourteen feet below, and to rise fourteen feet above the surface of the water. It is strongly constructed, and capable of resisting any weight of water that may come against it. Besides giving the most perfect security to the town, it affords an agreeable walk for the recreation of the inhabitants. The whole is built of brick; and on the commencement of it, an obelisk was erected, in imitation of that in St. Peter's square in Rome; on the pedestal of which is the following inscription in Spanish.

" D. O. M.
" In the Reign of Charles the Fourth,
" and
" During the Government of this Kingdom,
" by
" Don Ambrosio Higgins
" de
" Vallendar:
" Who ordered
" These Dams to be constructed
" in the Year
" 1792."

Two very sumptuous fabrics were then building at St. Jago; the Cessa de Moneda, or the *Money-House*, and a cathedral. A large church is also constructing with bricks: the front is of the Doric order, with two large towers. The inside

* On account of frequent earthquakes that happen in South-America, the houses consist of the ground floor only, like those of St. Jago. The walls are built with mud, and covered with a preparation of lime. In the town, and the

is of the Ionic order: it is to contain three aisles, and seven chapels.

The gaols here being in a falling state, and incapable of securing prisoners, a building of the Tuscan order was erected, and appropriated to that purpose.

St. Jago, the capital of Chili, was founded in 1541: it is the residence of the President, who is Captain-General of the whole kingdom, and presiding judge of the audience-chamber, or court of justice. The number of its inhabitants is estimated at thirty thousand five hundred. The subordinate cities are, Coquimbo, Chillan, Concepcion, and Valdivia; and the principal towns are Valparaiso, Capiapo, Vallenar, St. Francisco de Borja, St. Raphael de la Rosa, La Ligua, Quillota, Los Andes, Melipilla, St. Joseph, Anconcague, St. Ferdinand, Curico, Talca, Linares, Nueva, Bilbao, Cauçeres, and others of less importance. The exterior commerce of the kingdom is principally carried on from the sea-ports of Concepcion, Coquimbo, and Valparaiso; but the latter, from its central situation, has the greatest share of trade.

Supposing the time our navigators had been absent from the vessels, had been sufficient for the completion of the services Captain Vancouver had directed to be performed, preparations were made for their return to Valparaiso; and, after expressing their grateful acknowledgments for the numerous obligations conferred upon them, they took their leave, and proceeded from St. Jago towards Valparaiso. On their arrival at Valparaiso they found their business in a very advanced state; but a serious disaster having happened to the main-mast, by its becoming rotten and unfit for service, Captain Vancouver gave up the thoughts of recommencing his survey of the coast to the southward of the islands of Chiloe, as there was not a probability of getting it repaired, or of procuring another to supply its place. He therefore determined on making the best of his way from this port round Cape Horn to St. Helena; and he was even afraid the vessel was too much crippled to encounter the boisterous seas in this passage, though every means was resorted to to render the repairs as permanent as possible*.

village of Almandrel there are six churches, under the direction of a vicar, who is amenable for his conduct to the archbishop. All civil and military causes are heard at St. Jago. Capital offences are seldom committed.

Being anxious to make his departure, Captain Vancouver gave orders for the observatory and instruments to be received on board, and the vessels to be made ready for proceeding to sea the first favourable opportunity: but it was not till the 5th of May that they had sufficient wind to encourage them to unmoor, which was done about six in the morning, with a light breeze from the south. This dying away, they returned nearly to the place from whence they had come: on a fresh breeze springing up the next day, they unmoored, and after saluting the fort with thirteen guns, and taking a respectful

leave of governor Alava, and their other hospitable friends at Valparaiso, they made sail from the port, in company with the Chatham and a Spanish brig and schooner.

The trade of this port is carried on in vessels from two hundred to seven hundred tons burthen; in which is annually exported to Lima, about fifteen thousand tons of wheat and wheat flour, small cordage, dried salt-fish, and large quantities of apples, pears, and peaches. Vegetables, and a great variety of fruits, were here produced in abundance; and were all excellent of their kind and very cheap.

SECTION XXVII.

Depart from Valparaiso—Pass the South of Cape Horn—Arrival at St. Helena—Leave St. Helena—Capture the Macassar Dutch India-man—Join the Convoy, and proceed with it to the Shannon—Proceed to the River Thames.

HAVING settled with Mr. Puget the next rendezvous to be at St. Helena, Captain Vancouver left the bay of Valparaiso on the 7th of May, and passed the point of Angels. The weather was clear and pleasant, but a heavy swell from the south south-west indicated boisterous storms from that quarter. From the worn-out state of their sails, the foretop-mast stay-sail split; and on a further survey, they were under the necessity of condemning a best bower cable, a foretop-sail, and maintop-mast stay-sail; which were unbent, and replaced by others, that were not perhaps in a much more serviceable condition.

On the 9th the wind blew a fresh gale from the north-west, when they would have been enabled to have made great progress to the southward, had not the Discovery been repeatedly under the necessity of shortening sail for the Chatham, which was considerably astern. Some petrels and pintados were seen about the ship on the 12th, and two days afterwards several albatrosses were observed. As they proceeded to the southward, the weather gradually changed for the worse; and the wind, which had hitherto been generally favourable, now became turbulent, and sometimes blew in very heavy squalls: in one of these on the 22d, they carried away the maintop-sail sheet; this obliged them to take in the sail: the starboard binnacle was also carried away, and the wind continued to blow

with great violence. False fires were burnt during the night as signals to the Chatham.

On the 23d, after lowering the topsails, in a heavy squall of wind and hail, they wore the ship to wait for their consort. In the afternoon the weather became more moderate; but that favourable change was not of long duration, for on the 26th the gale increased with so much violence, that they were under the necessity of landing their topsails, and getting the topgallant yards and masts down upon deck, to relieve the masts, and to make the ship as snug as possible. In the morning of the 27th, the wind changed to the south-west, and the weather became sufficiently moderate for them to get up the topgallant yards and masts, and to set their reefed topsails. Though, at this time, there was little pressure on any part of the rigging, their principal ropes and sails were so extremely rotten, that their starboard maintop-sail sheet broke, the gib-boom snapped short off near the middle, and the wind split the mizentop-sail.

Thinking they were now sufficiently advanced to the southward to avoid inconvenience from the islands which lie off Cape Horn, the captain determined to shape such a course to the north-eastward as might afford him an opportunity of determining the Isla Grande. On the 30th they were again visited by strong gales and heavy squalls of wind, and on the 1st of June the captain ordered the foretop-sail to be taken in, to

westward.

westward. On the 25th they crossed the equator; after which nothing occurred, worthy of remark, till the 5th of August, when one of the Cape de Verde islands was seen. At four in the afternoon of the 20th, three vessels were perceived to the northward, and at eight in the evening eight sail were seen from the mast-head. At daylight the next morning five ships only were in sight, but at seven in the morning, nine sail of large vessels were so clearly discerned as to remove all doubt of their being a part of the fleet for which they had so anxiously looked out, under the convoy of the Sceptre, commanded by Captain Essington. At five in the afternoon, a boat from the General Goddard East-Indiaman came on board, and confirmed them in the opinion they had formed. On this information, Captain Vancouver ordered a boat to be hoisted out, and waited upon Captain Essington, by whom he was politely and respectfully received. After putting himself under Captain Essington's orders, and receiving such instructions as were thought necessary, he repaired on board the Discovery, and by spreading an additional quantity of canvas, had the pleasure of speedily joining company with the Sceptre.

Though their progress was much retarded by the convoy, the time glided pleasantly away, as they had the comforts of a friendly intercourse with their surrounding countrymen; from the pleasures of whose society they had been long since estranged. Nothing material occurred till the 1st of September; when, after contending with a fresh gale, which had been attended with some heavy squalls of wind and rain, one of the Dutch prizes made a signal of distress. They immediately hove to, and Captain Vancouver sent the cutter to her assistance, but she was found to be almost a wreck; and was therefore abandoned, by order of Captain Essington, and set on fire in the evening.

About five o'clock in the morning of Saturday the 12th of September, a signal was made by one of the headmost ships, denoting she was within sight of land; and soon afterwards the glad

tidings were announced from the mast head. At eleven it was known to be the western coast of Ireland, and arrangements were made by the Sceptre for entering the Shannon; where Captain Essington proposed to remain with his convoy till a force could be procured equal to the protection of the valuable fleet. Captain Vancouver having communicated to Captain Essington such parts of his directions from the lords of the Admiralty, as applied to the government of his conduct on the present occasion, he received his orders to repair immediately to London; and the following day, after having seen the Discovery safely moored in the Shannon, and given proper instructions to his first lieutenant Mr. Baker, he resigned the command of the Discovery into his hands, with such books, papers, and charts as had been previously collected. In the course of a few days afterwards he arrived at the Admiralty, where he deposited his several documents.

There were few objects more particularly attended to by Captain Vancouver, than that of avoiding such a conduct towards the several tribes of Indians, as should lead to measures that might endanger the lives of a people, whose real intentions might possibly be misunderstood from the want of a perfect knowledge of the respective dialects. He had fondly hoped to have completed his researches in those regions without the loss of life to a single individual among them. In this anxious concern for the cause of humanity, he was, however, disappointed. The number of Indians from Traitor's Cove, which fell in the attack upon the Europeans boats, on the 12th of August 1793, cannot be ascertained; but, excepting that unfortunate affair, it does not appear that more than two men afterwards lost their lives in consequence of the expeditions from the Discovery or Chatham. These events, however, gave the captain infinite regret, from which he could find no relief but in the consoling reflection, "that nothing but the most urgent necessity for the own preservation, would have compelled them to have adopted coercive measures *."

* The captain had the singular happiness of beholding the successful return on board the Discovery to the river Shannon, in perfect health, as had sailed with him from the Thames; excepting such as had been officially sent home, or had been promoted to the Chatham, and the seventeen seamen left at St. Helena; with the individuals who were unhappily lost in the course of the expedition.

John Brown, carpenter's mate, drowned off the South

Foreland.—Neil Coll, marine, died of the flux, at Cape of Good Hope.—Joseph Murgatroyd, one of Carpenter's Crew, missing at sea, January 21st, 1793.—John Carter, seaman, poisoned by eating muscles, 15th June, 1793.—Isaac Wooden, drowned by accident, Wooden's Rock.—Richard Jones, drowned between port of Valparaiso, and the Island of St. Helena, 21st June, 1795.

MISSIONARY VOYAGE

TO THE

SOUTH PACIFIC OCEAN:

Performed in the Years 1796, 1797, 1798,

IN THE SHIP DUFF,

COMMANDED BY

CAPTAIN JAMES WILSON.

From the Journals of the Officers and the Missionaries: the Contents of which is principally the Composition of Mr. William Wilson, from the Captain's Papers, and the Missionaries' Reports.

THIS work is inscribed to his Majesty; and the dedication, which is prefixed to it, expatiates on the inducements which stimulated the *Missionary Society* "to endeavour to deliver mankind from the greatest possible portion of misery which begets them, and to confer upon them the most abundant measure of felicity which our nature is capable of enjoying." They were conscious this could only be effected by the gospel of the grace of God preached among all nations, as far as their opportunities or abilities might extend. For this end their meetings became frequent, and their plans were gradually matured for execution. "A Missionary Society was in consequence formed in England, and zealously seconded by their brethren in North Britain."

The laudable motives of the Society cannot be more emphatically displayed, than by a recital of their own words, in their **DEDICATION TO THE KING:** which are the following. "SIRE, To whom can the Missionary Society so properly dedicate these first fruits of their labours as to your Majesty, by whose order the voyages of discovery were first undertaken, which have brought into view the numerous islands dispersed over the Pacific Ocean? The reports made concerning them attracted the general attention of European nations; and your Majesty's subjects felt themselves peculiarly interested, whether their views led them to consider these discoveries as tending to enlarge the bounds of science, or as opening a field of commercial

speculation. A nobler object, Sire, has engaged the attention of the Missionary Society, who, believing CHRISTIANITY to be the greatest blessing ever imparted to mankind, desired to communicate that inestimable gift, with all its happy effects, to these un-enlightened regions."

The situation of this untutored race, their mental ignorance, and moral depravity, strongly impressed on the minds of this Society, the obligation they lay under to endeavour to call them from darkness into marvellous light. The miseries, and diseases, which their intercourse with the Europeans had occasioned, seemed to upbraid their neglect of repairing, if possible, these injuries; but, above all, they longed to send to them the everlasting gospel, the first and most distinguished of blessings.

On submitting their intentions to the public, the Society met a spirit of zeal and liberality highly encouraging; applications manifold were poured in of candidates for the mission, with subscriptions adequate to the undertaking. Only the most select for piety were to be admitted. A committee of ministers, approved for evangelical principles and ability, was appointed to examine the candidates respecting their views, capacity, and knowledge in the mysteries of godliness. Many were rejected, and only those received who had the strongest recommendations from the ministers and congregations, with whom they had been joined in communion, and of whose intelligence and devotedness to the work they had

the fullest evidence. Thirty men, six women, and three children, were approved, and presented to the directors for the commencement of the mission*.

The Missionary Society very highly approved of the missionaries, and wished their selection of mariners had been equally choice; they had the satisfaction, however, of having been tolerably successful in that department. Captain Wilson, and the first mate, his nephew, were persons perfectly qualified for the undertaking, and as hearty in the work as the missionaries themselves. Several of the sailors were of a similar disposition; and about half of them were communicants.

During the first six weeks that they were detained in harbour, one of the missionaries, who continued with them daily, and often ministered unto them, declared he never heard the name of God blasphemed, a passionate word spoken, or saw an unbecoming action in any of the mariners; many of whom joined in the exercises of prayer and praise with the most cordial devotion. Surrounded as they then were by king's ships in the harbour, this excited no inconsiderable surprise at its novelty. The songs of Zion were daily heard over the deep.

The preparations being completed, and all the stores on board, a solemn designation of the ministers to their office was made. The prosecution of the voyage, for the accomplishment of the benevolent and evangelical purposes of the society, will, it is presumed, be found interesting to the navigator, the naturalist, and the politician; but, above all, will engage the peculiar attention of those who glory in the name of christian, and long to see, what they fully expect, the coming of the kingdom of the Lord, and of his Christ, when "the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and the nations shall flow unto it."

On the 10th of August 1796, at six in the morning, they weighed anchor, and hoisted the missionary flag: the morning was serene, and a gentle breeze blew from the north north-west.

* In this list of Missionaries, who embarked on board the Duff at Blackwall, there were four ordained ministers; viz. the Rev. James Fleet Cover, aged 34 years; the Rev. John Eyre, aged 28 years; the Rev. John Jefferson, aged 36 years; and the Rev. Thomas Lewis, aged 31 years. The gentleman last mentioned had attended the hospitals and dispensaries, and understands printing. Among the six

All was still and quiet; furnishing a favourable season for contemplation to those whose hearts were warmed with benevolence and ardour, for the extension of the Redeemer's kingdom. The hymn, "Jesus at thy command we launch into the deep, &c." was sung by upwards of a hundred voices, producing a pleasing and solemn sensation. The sailors in the ships they passed, heard them with silent astonishment; and their friends, who lined the banks of the river, waved their hands, and bid a last adieu!

At Woolwich a vast concourse of people were assembled on the shore, to salute them as they passed. The breeze freshening, they arrived at Gravesend before noon, and employed the remainder of the day in clearing the decks, which had been incommoded by the eagerness of a multitude of individuals from the neighbouring towns; who crowded every part of the ship, bringing various articles of refreshment, anxious to contribute to the comfort of the missionaries. The Rev. Dr. Haweis, the Rev. Mr. Wilks, and the Rev. Mr. Brooksbank, directors of the Society, had come on board at Blackwall; the two latter intending to go down the channel with their brethren to Portsmouth, and the former to remain with them till they should leave England. Captain Wilson, Mr. Hardcastle, and Mr. Fenn came on board from London, and settled with the crew for their river pay, and their bounty†.

On the 11th of August, at seven in the evening, they weighed anchor, and turned down into the Lower Hope, when they took an affectionate leave of Mr. Cox; to whose ability and unwearied diligence they must ever acknowledge themselves indebted, both, for forwarding their departure, and for his care in providing all things comfortable for those who had to perform so long a voyage.

At eight in the morning of the 12th, they weighed from Hope Point with a fresh gale at east south-east. As they were plying down, they were met by some kind friends from Sheerness, bringing with them three sheep, a hog, and some fowls for sea stock. Proceeding on

women, are Mary Cover, the wife of the Rev. Mr. Cover, and Elizabeth, the wife of the Rev. Mr. Eyre.

† The Duff's crew consisted of twenty-one men, and a boy; James Wilson was the commander; William Wilson, Thomas Godsal, and James Falconer, were next in command; and Thomas Robson was gunner.

...shing a favourable
those whose hearts
ce and ardour, for
r's kingdom. The
and we launch into
upwards of a hun-
easing and solemn
e ships they passed,
ishment; and their
of the river, waved
ieu!

...urse of people were
salute them as they
ing, they arrived at
employed the re-
g the decks, which
the eagerness of a
m the neighbouring
part of the ship,
refreshment, anxious
of the missionaries,
ev. Mr. Wilks, and
directors of the
at Blackwall; the
own the channel with
, and the former to
ould leave England,
astle, and Mr. Fene-
on, and settled with
and their bounty.
at seven in the even-
and turned down
n they took an af-
x; to whose ability
y must ever acknow-
both, for forwarding
care in providing all
who had to perform

...of the 12th, they
with a fresh gale at
were plying down,
friends from Sheer-
three sheep, a hog,
ock. Proceeding on

...e of the Rev. Mr. Corer
y, Mr. Eyre.
twenty-one men, and a
ander; William Wilson,
oner, were next in com-
anner.

their

...their voyage, they came to a little below the
Nore at midnight. This day Dr. Haweis, Mr.
Wilks; and Mr. Brooksbank, the directors then
on board, assembled the missionaries, and re-
quired them to elect by ballot four persons, to
constitute a committee, in pursuance of the print-
ed instructions of the body of the directors; in
consequence of which the following gentlemen
were chosen and admitted to that office by the
directors; viz. the Rev. James Cover, John
Eyre, John Jefferson, and Thomas Lewis*.

On the 12th at four in the morning they weigh-
ed, ran through the Five Fathom Channel, and
passed through the Downs. At one in the after-
noon they rounded the South Foreland, and had
little wind during the remainder of the day.
Calms and breezes from the westward alternately
succeeded on the 14th, and but little way was
made. It being sabbath-day, Dr. Haweis
preached in the morning, Mr. Brooksbank in the
afternoon, and Mr. Wilks in the evening, on the
quarter-deck.

At eight in the morning on the 16th they an-
chored at Spithead, where they were speedily
visited by the Rev. Mr. Griffin, of Portsea, and
other friends of the mission, who manifested the
most fraternal affection, and furnished them
with salutary supplies. Here Captain Wilson
arrived, and took the command of the Duff.

Mrs. Hudden was so much affected by the sea,
that she fell into an extreme dejection of mind,
which induced the Missionaries to send her on
shore, at her request: her husband went with
her, though reluctantly: he was a man of a meek
and quiet spirit, and would probably have been
a useful member of their community; but the
directors thought it would have been improper
to separate man and wife.

Their anxious enquiries respecting their de-
parture, produced authentic information that
they would shortly sail with a convoy for Lisbon
and Gibraltar. Dr. Haweis, with Mr. William
Wilson, went on board the Adamant, Captain
Warre, who received them very politely, and
readily offered to take them under his protection.

* Mr. Wilson, as chief mate, being considered as pre-
sent in the absence of Captain Wilson, who was to join
him at Portsmouth, the committee proposed and establish-
ed the following regulations: viz. That the Rev. John
Jefferson be considered as the missionaries' secretary, and
Wm. Smith his assistant; that the Rev. Thomas Lewis be
appointed librarian, and Wm. Smith his assistant: That

Of this the directors were informed, and they
were ordered to wait the opportunity. The
delay, however, began to weary their patience,
as they all longed for the day of their departure;
and though entertained with the most cordial
welcome by the brethren at Portsmouth and
Gosport, they waited the signal from the Adamant
with eager desire. Yet the stay was not un-
profitable; the same gracious hand which di-
rected them thither, gave them cause to ac-
knowledge his loving kindness; some good, they
hoped, might result from the preaching of many
who visited the ship, and from the missionaries
at Portsea, Gosport, and its vicinity. Here an
ingenious clergyman of Portsmouth furnished
Dr. Haweis and Mr. Greathead, two directors of
the society, with a manuscript vocabulary of the
Otaheitan language, and an account of the
country, which he had preserved from the mu-
tineers who were seized by the Pandora, which
was of inconceivable service to the missionaries.

The missionaries, during this delay, constantly
exercised themselves on board, in rotation, in
preaching, prayer, and praise, which many
attended; and they also usefully employed them-
selves in reading and writing, especially respect-
ing the objects of their mission. In one of their
assemblies, it was unanimously agreed to transmit
to the body of the directors a very affectionate
address; part of which the editor thinks it his
duty to introduce as a specimen of the whole.
“On looking forward to the length of our voy-
age, and deliberating on all the dangers and
difficulties which those who traverse the bosom
of the mighty deep are exposed to, and frequen-
tly meet with, we are by no means discouraged;
but can cheerfully give ourselves up unto him,
who holdeth the wind in his fist, and the waters
in the hollow of his hand. When we extend
our view across the great Atlantic Ocean, and
contemplate the more extensive Southern Sea;
when, in our imagination, we conceive ourselves
landed on our destined islands, surrounded by
multitudes of the inhabitants, earnestly enquiring,
From whence do you come? and what is your

John A. Gilham, surgeon, shall be responsible for the
medical books and instruments; but every missionary may
read them under the library regulations. That John Harris
be appointed to the office of missionaries' steward, to dis-
tribute the provisions, as delivered by him to the ship's
steward, to the different messes.

errand?

errand? We answer, From a distant shore: the friends of God and human kind; touched with compassion at your unhappy state, as represented by our countrymen who formerly have visited you; moved by the spirit of our God, we have forsaken relatives and friends, braved storms and tempests, to teach you the knowledge of Jesus, whom to know is eternal life. Though Satan, and all the host of hell should be stung with indignation and resentment at our boldness in the Lord, and fire the hearts of their deluded votaries with all the fury and madness, which brutal ignorance and savage cruelty are capable of; though our God, in whose name we go—our Saviour, by whose rich grace we are redeemed, should deliver us up to their rage, and permit our bodies to be afflicted, yea, persecuted unto death; yet, trusting to the faithfulness of the Most High, the goodness of our cause, the uprightness of our intentions, the fervency of our affection for Christ our head, and the elect of God, our hearts remain undaunted; and being, by divine mercy, enlisted under the banner of the Great Captain of Salvation, we are desirous to be *accounted worthy to suffer for his sake*, and to endure hardship as becometh good soldiers of Christ."

After the convoy had been detained by delays unknown to our hearty and resolute adventurers, and subsequently by contrary winds, at length the welcome signal was made on the 10th of September: at nine in the morning the commodore and fleet began to weigh, and by ten were all under sail. The adventurers alone were still

at anchor, detained by one of their missionaries. A messenger had been sent on shore, early in the morning, for the time-keeper, and to bring off Mr. John Harris, the absent person; but, after waiting a long time in vain, the officer was obliged to return without him. They afterwards followed the fleet, which was steering for the Needles; but when they had reached Cowes, the fine south-east gale failed them, and veering to the westward, the signal was made to return when they came into their former situation. Mr. Harris now came on board; he had been on a visit to Southampton, and having heard the fleet were sailing, hired a boat and followed them.

Here, from a variety of causes, they were detained thirteen days longer; but they received the most obliging and unremitting kindnesses from the inhabitants of Portsea, Gosport, Southampton; and even from their friends in London. At last the long-desired moment of departure arrived, and the signal was made by the Adamant to drop down to St. Helen's. Nothing could surpass the beauty of the scene; the day was remarkably fine, and the convoy moving on different tacks, with their canvas spread, gave additional splendor to it. As it was a state-holiday the forts and ships of war practised the usual salutes whilst the convoy was under sail, which tended greatly to heighten the grandeur of the spectacle. On the turn of tide they all cast anchor, and waited for their final adieu in the morning*.

SECTION I.

Voyage from Portsmouth to Saint Jago—Run to Rio Janeiro—Reception—and Observations.

TAKING their final departure from Portsmouth, our missionaries launched forth on the great deep. The signal for sailing being given, they all appeared upon deck, with countenances elated with joy, considering it as a summons to commence their great, their benevolent employment. At five in the morning, the commodore and the fleet, consisting of fifty-seven sail of transports and Portugal traders, were

under way; the Fly sloop bringing up the rear. Proceeding with a fine gale, they were off Portsmouth by eight o'clock on the 8th; when the commodore made the signal for the fleet to follow by.

The last sight of Old England, which could probably be enjoyed by several on board, now presented itself; what an awful consideration! But it would have been dastardly in those who

* Dr. Haweis, who had been daily on board, and had often preached to them, now took his sorrowful leave of the adventurers, with an address from *Hebrews* iii. 1; his heart

appearing to be full, while they parted with many tears perhaps to meet no more till they should be re-assembled round the throne of God and of the Lamb.

their missionaries, shore, early in the morning, and to bring off a person; but, after a short time, the officer was informed that they were steering for the Cape of Good Hope, and veering to the southward. As made to return to the former situation; he had been ordered to have heard the boat and followed

houses, they were distressed; but they received a comforting kindness from the sea, Gosport, South America, friends in London, and the day of departure was made by the Adamanians. Nothing could be done; the day was rainy, moving on different points, spread, gave advice, it was a state-holiday, practised the usual, as under sail, which the grandeur of the tide they all cast and a final adieu in the

and Observations.

bringing up the rear, they were off Falmouth the 8th; when the fleet to

England, which could not be on board, no awful consideration, and sturdily in those

parted with many tears, they should be re-assembled the Lamb.

parted with country and friends, and taken the cross to look behind; every one was therefore happy with his destination. Fresh breezes on the 25th, and a large easterly swell, occasioned the ship to roll, and many of the brethren experienced a severe sea-sickness, but their fortitude remained unshaken, knowing such temporary inconveniences were naturally attendant on travellers by sea.

In crossing the Bay of Biscay, they had favourable winds, and they perceived, by a comparative view of their ship, and those of a cruising squadron which they then beheld, that the Duff was a more rapid sailor than any among them. This was, indeed, a pleasing circumstance, as they had a long voyage to perform; and encouraged them to hope, that, should they be chased by an enemy, there might be a probability of their effecting their escape by sailing*.

The fleet soon disappeared, and a meeting of prayer and thanksgiving ensued among the brethren: praising God for his past mercies, and committing themselves to his protection, who had promised, "when we pass through the waters I will be with you."

Sunday, the first of October, Mr. Jefferson preached in the morning, and with his other brethren administered the communion. Surrounded now only with the sea and sky, the missionaries seemed to have taken their leave of the abodes of the living, to approach the nearer to their heavenly father, drinking out of the overflowing fountain of his love.

Seeing a large ship on the 3d, they took care to pass to windward of her, lest she should prove an enemy; but the display of an American flag removed their apprehensions. On the 6th the sun rose refulgently, and they saw the island of Madeira; a spot celebrated all over the world for its wines: many excellent descriptions of it are given by different authors, which render other accounts unnecessary.

They passed Madeira, intending to touch at St. Jago, the principal of the Cape de Verd Islands, in order to be recruited with water, and other

refreshments. On the night of the 6th, and the following day, they had frequent and very heavy showers of rain, which enabled them to fill some of their water-casks. On the 11th they crossed the tropic of Cancer, and saw several flying fish about them, which excited much surprise and admiration.

The 12th had been appointed a solemn day of fasting and humiliation, to prepare the missionaries for their great work, and to beg of God to forgive them whatever his pure eyes had seen amiss in them. Proceeding to the southward on the 13th, about nine in the morning they descried Sal, the northernmost of the Cape de Verd isles, which had a sun-burnt appearance. At four in the afternoon Bona Vista came in sight; a white haze, common to these islands, so far obscures the prospect of it, that it cannot be distinctly seen at the distance of two or three leagues. It has a good harbour on its west side.

At the dawn of day on the 14th, they saw the isle of Mayo, and the two dangerous rocks which lie off its north end. The sea broke upon them with great violence. A brig and a schooner were lying in Mayo road, waiting perhaps for cargoes of salt; abundance of which is annually shipped from these islands. By eleven in the morning they lost sight of Mayo, though they were at no great distance from it, occasioned by the hazy atmosphere already noticed: at the same time they could perceive St. Jago off the deck. At half after one in the afternoon, they came to within the small bower in eight fathoms, the south end of Green Island bearing west south-west.

They had now safely reached the first port for refreshment, after a pleasant voyage of three weeks from St. Helena. As soon as the sails were furled, the first mate was dispatched from the captain to the governor, to request his permission to water and purchase refreshments, which he kindly and politely granted. He was informed that live stock, vegetables, &c. could not be purchased that evening; but as intelligence of the ship's arrival would be speedily circulated, the natives would resort early in the morning

mercy."—As the greatest danger was now over, and the missionaries would go but little further with the convoy without deviating widely from their course, they hoisted their ensign to signify their intention, when they were answered by the commodore, and making all sail, were followed by a South-Sea whaler, and two other vessels.

The sea-sick missionaries being somewhat recovered on the 22nd, they applied themselves to the study of the Otaian language, and other useful pursuits. A hawk, this day, sought an asylum by resting himself on our rigging, was caught; when it was pertinently remarked by a missionary, "So might my poor soul, wandering from its home, be lost, if not graciously prevented by divine

within the walls of the fort where the market is usually held; and as each individual would naturally furnish with him such articles as he possessed, he might readily procure whatever the island afforded. This being the case, they could only proceed with their watering, which is here attended with much trouble; and when it is procured, it is brackish and very indifferent. That which is obtained for the use of the fort, is brought on asses or camels, from a distance of three or four miles*.

In the morning of the 15th, the missionaries were considerably disappointed, the market not being so well furnished as they expected; few of the country people being apprised of their arrival. All that they could procure for the cabin was one turkey, five fowls, an equal number of pigs, a quantity of oranges; and a quarter of a cask of Madeira wine, for the missionaries. For these articles they were indebted to the liberality of the captain of an American brig, that lay in the port. In return for this civility, Captain Wilson sent him a cheese, and some tea and sugar.

Their water being completed, at five in the afternoon, a gun was fired from the ship, a signal for the absentees to repair on board, and by seven they were clear of the harbour. St. Jago is the most fertile and populous of all the Cape de Verd Islands, notwithstanding it is very mountainous, and has a great deal of unprolific land. The principal town, which is named after the island, is situated against the side of two mountains, between which there is a deep valley two hundred yards in width, extending almost to the sea. An irregular street appears in that part of

* The deputy-governor, who resides at Port Praya, had long laboured under a very obstinate complaint, from which he was now recovering; but, fearing a relapse, Dr. Gillam was applied to when he appeared on shore: his opinion agreeing with what had before been prescribed by the surgeon of an Indianman, his services were gladly accepted: and he afterwards administered medical relief to the Governor and his lady, who were also indisposed. Their disorders were chiefly intermittents, diseases of the liver, and anasarca. Though the place is generally thought unhealthy, one of the inhabitants was, at that time, upwards of one hundred and ten years of age.

† Though their stay was short, their brethren on shore were not inattentive to their first object: the following is a simple narrative of what occurred on this occasion. The missionary was meditating on the great goodness of God to him an unworthy creature, when he met with a native black man, who invited him to his house. His mind was

the valley next the sea, with a rivulet at the bottom; which glides into a fine cove, where the sea is generally so very smooth that ships ride very safely in it. A small fort is erected near the landing-place of this bay, where a guard is constantly kept; and near it is a feeble battery of small cannon.

Port Praya is a small bay, about the middle of the south side of the island: Green Island lies on the west side of the bay; it has steep rocky sides but is not very high. From this island to the west point of the bay lie sunken rocks, on which the sea continually breaks. It is customary for East-India men, Guinea traders, and others bound to the southward, to touch here for refreshments†.

Having completed their purpose of landing at Port Praya, a fine breeze sprang up at a little distance off the island, but afterwards gradually declined to calms and light airs alternately. At one in the afternoon they saw a sail to the westward, and at five in the evening she had gone within a mile of them. She then hoisted English colours, and fired a gun to bring her to. The Duff also fired, and displayed her colours. The stranger was so much her superior in force, that the Duff must inevitably have fallen into her hands, had she been an enemy; but, on her being hailed, all their apprehensions vanished: her name was the Jack Park of Liverpool, bound to Africa. It was spontaneously ejaculated by one of the missionaries, on this occasion—"The Lord is better to us than all our fears!"

At sun-rising on the 19th, the sea was calm and serene, and the sky most beautiful. At a distance were beheld some water-spouts, extending from the clouds to the sea, forming a very

greatly impressed with the ignorance and superstition of the poor fellow; he therefore consented to accompany him and found him extremely friendly. He was sufficiently acquainted with the English language to make himself understood; and, being asked what religion he was of, he said he was a Roman Catholic. After explaining himself, as well as he could, the missionary replied, "I fear you are wrong, God cannot be worshipped through the medium of Images;" and pointed out several passages of God's word which forbade such worship. Before parting from him, he desired him to read over the passages he had pointed out to him; for he had an old bible, and could read a little; he entreated him "to compare the word of God with the sentiments he had been taught, and to pray to God without images set before him, as they are an abomination to the Lord." Thus, after a few more words, they separated, and the missionary humbly hoped that the labour would not be in vain in the Lord.

wonderful objects. A palamist, may who go down the works of the Lord.

From the 18th sailed through exhibits a brilliant circumfence. Some assert that by animalcules their shining particles turbulence of the a large shoal of fine extending much noise and they crossed the these latitudes burning suns, inful breeze; and clouds and a hcessive than wh—"How great

On the 31st, the island of F west north-west presented some which had the It has two harb of the greatest has the preference goodness of bot the north and v periodical, and

The porter boposed half a pin missionaries, w On the 2d of N anguese men of each about a foot like worms. The bladders in the arising to the sun like little ships. like nettles.

Met on the evening united prayers v for a blessing of labours. On the part of the Abre

* A number of ships, two of them each in length: aft

wonderful

wonderful object. The beautiful words of the Psalmist, may aptly be applied here. "They who go down to the sea in ships, &c. they see the works of the Lord, and his wonders in the deep*."

From the 18th to the 22d of the month they sailed through a part of the sea, which in the night exhibits a brilliant appearance, the ship's whole circumference seeming grandly illuminated. Some assert that this phenomenon is occasioned by animalcules, which thus glow in the dark, their shining parts being turned upwards by the turbulence of the waves. On the 29th they saw a large shoal of porpoises, rising in a straight line extending about half a mile, occasioning much noise and ruffle in the sea. About midnight they crossed the equator in long. 30° W. In these latitudes they expected to meet calms and burning suns, instead of which they had a delightful breeze; and the sun-beams being broken by clouds and a haze, the heat was not more excessive than what they had often felt in England.

"How great is his mercy!"

On the 31st, at six in the morning, they saw the island of Fernando de Noronha, bearing west north-west nine leagues. This island represented some detached hills, the largest of which had the appearance of a church-steeple. It has two harbours, capable of receiving ships of the greatest burthen: that on the north side has the preference for shelter, capacity, and goodness of bottom; but both are exposed to the north and west: these winds, however, are periodical, and not of long continuance.

The porter being exhausted, the captain proposed half a pint of Madeira wine to each of the missionaries, which was thankfully accepted. On the 2d of November, they caught two Portuguese men of war in a bucket. They were each about a foot long, having innumerable arms like worms. They are beautiful pink-coloured bladders in the shape of a curious shell. After rising to the surface, they scud before the wind like little ships. On being touched, they sting like nettles.

Met on the evening of the 7th to send up their united prayers with their brethren in England, for a blessing on this and all other missionary labours. On the 9th they sounded in the outer part of the Abrolhos banks in eighteen fathoms.

* A number of sharks being observed playing round the ships, two of them were caught, measuring about five feet each in length: after they were cut in pieces, and the en-

On the 11th, at eight in the morning, they saw the scattered islands which lie to the northward of Cape Frio. At half past two it set into rain very hard, with brisk gales from the north-east; in consequence of which they put the ship under a snug sail, intending to pass the night betwixt the Cape and the entrance of Rio de Janeiro. On the 12th, at day-light, they made sail and ran for the harbour; but the breeze failing, it was one in the afternoon before they reached the entrance. When nearly there, a pilot boat came alongside, with the head harbour-master, who took charge of the ship. They came to with their small bower in seven fathoms, and moored with a kedge to the northward, the Monastery bearing south-west by south. As soon as they had anchored, a guard-boat came along-side, and other precautions were taken to prevent smuggling. The captain was obliged to land when he first entered the port, attended by a military officer from Santa Cruz.

Being now, on the 13th of November, safely moored, after a passage of five thousand miles, and through malignant climates, they poured forth thanks with grateful hearts for God's abundant goodness displayed in their favour. This day, being the sabbath, incumbent duties were observed as at sea: the officer of the guard-boat attended, behaved with great propriety, and at the close of the worship, expressed his approbation. When he became more familiar, he declared he had never before seen people conduct themselves so peaceably and soberly on their first arrival; drunkenness, swearing, and noise, having been always prevalent.

Since the captain was on shore, on their first arrival, no individual was permitted to quit the ship till he had been regularly examined by superior officers, whose visit they were patiently to attend. At four in the afternoon, on the 14th, these examiners arrived in the master-attendant's boat: they consisted of some military officers, the chief Justice, a Physician, the captain of a ship, and an interpreter. Their business appeared to be extremely trifling; and as the questions now asked were not deemed sufficiently conclusive, the captain, and some others, were ordered to attend at the Viceroy's palace, there to answer a similar string of interrogations:

trails taken out, their heads jumped about upon the deck for a considerable time.

as whence they came? whither they were bound? the motive of their voyage? what political intelligence they had to communicate? When these particulars were written and signed, the party was informed that the papers would be sent to Lisbon; and that such scrutinies were the common practice of the colony.

This ceremony being ended, the party was permitted to go on shore whenever they thought proper, taking with them a soldier in the boat; and, as soon as they landed, another soldier picked them up, and followed them through the town; watching them closely till they returned to the boat.

From Monday till Saturday the party was employed in refitting their rigging, watering the ship, and procuring live stock, &c. for sea-store. On the 19th, at four in the morning, they unmoored, and about noon the sea-wind set in with a thick fog. At seven in the morning on the 20th, they weighed with a light breeze in their favour; but when they got abreast of fort Santa Cruz, it changed against them: they kept plying, however, to windward, and, having made a few tacks, the master-attendant took his leave. At three in the afternoon they passed between Razor Island and Round Island, when a fresh breeze springing up, wafted them speedily out of the sight of land.

The city of Rio de Janeiro is now the capital of Brazil, and since the diamond mines have been discovered in its vicinity, has been the residence of the viceroy. It is defended by cannon planted on the tops of the eminences, which command its entrance: it has also four regular forts, of which only Santa Cruz and Losia have much strength; and upon the whole, it is not so well fortified as it appears to be*.

* The inhabitants, which are a mixture of Portuguese, Mulattoes, and Negroes, amount to about two hundred thousand, including the city and the suburbs. The churches, monasteries, convents, and some of the private houses, are splendid. The streets are narrow, straight, and regular. The government is extremely active in preventing the inhabitants from having any intercourse with strangers, without leave first obtained from the viceroy. This capital aims at surpassing all Roman Catholic cities in the parade of religion: the corner of every street is decorated with a figure of our Saviour and the Virgin, placed in a niche, with a curtain and glass window before it. When sabbath night arrives, the spot is illuminated with candles; and many assemble there to practice their devotions; their chantings to these images being successively continued during

Here the missionaries began to observe marks of the superstition of the inhabitants; for the cross was erected on the tops of the hills, and on their forts. On the Lord's day the Portuguese and Indians, who attended the brethren, looked on attentively during their worship, and behaved seriously, though unacquainted with the language; whilst those who remained in the boat, though it was Sunday, amused themselves with cards †.

The viceroy's garden was rendered beautiful by a picturesque assemblage of orange, lemon, and lime trees. A crocodile spouted water in the midst of some curious shell-work; and from the mouth of a tortoise issued a copious stream, though confined within the arms of a boy. From one of the terraces, the harbour has a most magnificent appearance.

Visiting the palace next, they were politely attended by the colonel commandant and his lady; and they regretted that they could make no acknowledgments in return: especially when they observed their rooted superstition, with beads and crucifixes hanging about their necks; bowing, and crossing themselves as they past the objects of their idolatry. A grand procession of priests, nuns, &c. demanded their attention, as they were entering one of their cathedrals, which was hung with black, and magnificently illuminated. The prayers were chanted, and chorusses sung, accompanied by a band of music. The brethren were afflicted to behold such external pomp of worship, without discovering a trace of the pure undefiled religion of Jesus.

With the substance of a letter, addressed by the missionaries to the directors, we shall close the transactions at Dio de Janeiro.

the remainder of the night. Even the common beggar strut about with a crucifix at his breast, which may be purchased for a trifle; at which the poorer sort cross themselves, and the beggar blesses them; but, like the Pope, he expects to be paid for his benediction.

† A party of the missionaries going on shore, were permitted to see the town, accompanied by two officers. On their landing, they were shocked at beholding a poor slave enfeebled with disease and labour, crawling to the water's edge. Shortly after, a scene disgusting to humanity presented itself; it was a cargo of naked human beings, exposed for sale in the market-place: whilst others, in small companies, chained together, were traversing the streets with burthens; suffering flagellation, like dogs or horses, according to the caprice of their unfeeling driver.

*On board the Duff, Harbour of Rio de Janeiro,
November 15, 1796.*

AND HONOURABLE BRETHREN,

WE arrived at this place on the 11th inst. after a passage of seven weeks and one day. The Almighty has been singularly favourable to us, since our departure from our country and dear connections therein. The winds and waves in the hands of God have been propitious to us. The scorching heat of the day has been mercifully checked by intervening winds, or refreshing gales; so that we have thus passed commodiously through the burning season. Our visitation of sickness has been partial and transient. We have carefully perused the

accounts of the islands of the South-Sea, and acquired some knowledge of the Otaheitean language; and we have not sinfully omitted the worship of the most high. The whole body of missionaries present their "christian love to the body of directors, the society, and all true lovers of Christ, and his gospel. We pray the continuance of an interest in your fervent prayers for us, and for our undertaking; that we may acquit ourselves as men, faithful to the cause in which we are engaged, and be rendered mighty instruments, in the hands of God, for the conversion of the heathens of the South Sea." *The Epistle, of which this a concise extract, is signed John Jefferson, Secretary.*

SECTION II.

Departure from Rio Janeiro, and Progress to Otaheite—Occurrences at that Place.

THE Missionaries proceeded on their voyage, the captain having previously laid in a fresh store of provisions. On the 20th, which was Lord's day, brothers Eyre and Jefferson preached. In leaving this harbour, and again reaching into the deep, they ruminated on the promises of God, who had hitherto conducted them in safety through the pathless ocean: how happy therefore were they to trust in him for the future!

On the 24th they began to find it colder as they went to the south; the atmosphere was free from clouds, and the breeze was moderate; but in the evening of the 29th, the sky which had been so serene and bright was covered with sombre clouds, and the lightning came in quick and vivid flashes. But, blessed be God! within the space of two hours the storm abated. "See what the Lord can do! Let all the earth fear the Lord; let all the inhabitants stand in awe of him."

In the morning of the 3d, the sea ran exceedingly

After some vicissitudes of weather, a strong gale set in to the south, and the sea ran high on the 30th, when most of the missionaries were visited with the sea-sickness. On the 1st of December the gale moderated, the waves were violent, and a few of the sick recovered. The cow had died much in the late gale, from repeated falls, and no milk had been procured at Rio Janeiro; it was therefore thought expedient to kill the poor lean animal; which was instantly assented to, as her milk had been found ser-

ving high, and the wind blew a complete storm. Several of the live stock died, either by the cold or the spray of the sea. Not only many of the missionaries were sea-sick, but also some of the seamen: even the crew felt the uncomfortable effects of such bad weather; the captain therefore apprehended, that in endeavouring to double Cape Horn, this raw unseasoned company of landmen, women, and children, might fall victims to the repeated storms and colder weather, which might be reasonably expected. After deliberately weighing these, and the connected circumstances, he prudently adopted the resolution of going the eastern passage; to pass a few degrees south of the Cape of Good Hope, and to sail to the southward of the south of Cape of New Holland, keeping in the track of the westerly winds till near the meridian of Otaheite, and then to steer northward for that island.

The sea running tremendously high, they shaped their course right before it, steering north-east by east, and north-east till it gradually

became viable to the women and children. In the course of the night they experienced a less violent gale, but it was accompanied with rain, thunder, and lightning. At daylight they had more favourable weather, and the sea was remarkably smooth, though considerably discoloured, occasioned, it is said, by the out-set of the tide from the great river of Rio de la Plata. They sounded, but found no bottom, with a hundred fathom of line.

became smoother. But, to particularize the various circumstances of so long a passage, would occasion a tedious repetition of winds and weather. The Missionary Journal will fill up the chasm.

On the 8th they had a great head sea; several whales were observed playing around, approaching so near the missionaries that they could observe them distinctly, when they rose to the surface to breathe; when they threw up the water to a vast height, producing a tremendous noise. "How manifold are thy works, O God! Heaven, earth, and sea, declare thy glory!" The climate here, though advancing to the midst of summer, seemed as cold to the missionaries, as the depth of winter is in England.

The gale still blew with violence, the sea running mountains high; the clouds low, thick, and gloomy; the ship scudding swiftly before the wind. They now truly saw the wonders of the Lord in the great deep. Sometimes the vessel appeared between two lofty mountains of water, and then ascended to the immense summit. Sometimes the towering billows were viewed with astonishment, following each other with their foaming tops, and seeming to threaten the destruction of the beholders: but so far from injuring them, they only pushed them on with the greater velocity to their desired haven. The brethren were unable to celebrate the Lord's Supper, through the agitation of the vessel; a meeting of prayer was therefore determined on between decks: in that situation, deprived of the light of the sun, and the sea often making a way over the ship, the Lord supplied every want, by vouchsafing his gracious presence.

The immense shoals of fishes around them, both astonished and amused them; the larger advancing in great pomp, followed by a more diminutive train; the flying-fish, after their aerial ascent, often falling on board the vessel: one of these soaring adventurers flew against their bell, and was consequently captured and eaten. Thousands of birds, about the size of pigeons, also skimmed around them.

* As the directors held the doctrinal articles of the church of England, in the sense usually termed Calvinistic; it was an original decision, that none should be sent out as missionaries, who did not make an explicit confession of their faith, agreeable to this rule. It was supposed that all the missionaries were of one mind; but it now appeared that two out of the thirty entertained principles different from the rest. Supposing this difference of opinion might pro-

On the 24th, Christmas-eve, some of the brethren passed a comfortable evening together, impressed with the remembrance of their dear absent friends.

The missionaries were now closely applying themselves to the Otaheitean language; a part of the day being also appropriated to reading Mr. Greathead's account of the South-Sea Islands. A difference of opinion now arose as to the propriety of their separating, and of the most eligible groups for the present itineraries to settle in. Some preferred the Friendly Isles; others proposed Otaheite. John Harris alone was strenuous in favour of the Marquesas. In consequence of the probability of such separation taking place, a meeting of the missionaries was held, when it was moved, that eight persons, and the chairman, (the Captain) be chosen to draw up a code of church government. This motion being carried, the following persons were then chosen by ballot to compose the committee: viz. Boswell, Buchanan, Covey, Henry, Jefferson, Lewis, Main, and Shelly.

At another meeting it was moved and carried, that, "On every Tuesday and Thursday, an hour and a half be appointed for the discussion of some doctrinal part of God's word. The person to be named by a moderator, duly elected." Mr. Lewis was chosen first moderator. It was also voted that Messrs. Henry and Kelso do, in conjunction with the ordained ministers, join in the regular dispensation of the word of God.

On the 1st of January, 1797, it was remarked by some of the missionaries, that they had sailed twelve thousand miles since the commencement of the preceding year. They were advancing rapidly towards the desired island; nothing very remarkable occurred. The birds which had daily visited them, seemed to have deserted them. Whales frolicked round the ship, and might probably have been taken had they been the object of their voyage. Mr. Smith, watching an opportunity, succeeded in striking a porpoise, the blubber of which produced four gallons of good oil*.

duce unhappy effects, it became a subject of discussion whether the two persons of different sentiments ought to be continued as fellow helpers in the great work; but, after a variety of conferences on the subject, with the greatest calmness, the two seceders acknowledged they had received conviction from the arguments of their brethren, and admitted the impropriety of their conduct, and were restored to friendship in the most ample manner.

On the 17th they had the heaviest and severest storm they had ever experienced. The sea ran mountains high; but the incomparable bark, with which God had blessed them, mounted over the waves. A calm and serene state of mind enabled the missionaries to cast their care upon God, which they did in a sweet prayer, meeting between decks. In the evening the wind subsided, and the stars displayed their brilliant faces.

On the 21st, the articles and rules being completed, they were approved and signed by the brethren.

Ninety-seven days had now elapsed since they left Rio Janeiro, and, with the exception of small vessels, they had not seen ship or shore in all this time, though they had sailed thirteen thousand, eight hundred and twenty miles. Tired with so long beholding a vacant horizon, and the familiar objects the sea daily presented to their view, they began eagerly to look out for a South Sea Island; and the time was now arriving when this curiosity would in part be gratified. At seven in the morning Toobouai was descried from the fore-yard by one of the seamen, bearing south-east by east, about nine leagues off, appearing at that distance like two separate islands, but on their nearer approach, they perceived the low lands which connected the hills.

It having now been fourteen weeks since they last saw the land, they thought it a delightful prospect. The wind blew fresh from Toobouai, and the captain had no intention of going near this island; but, to oblige some who were desirous of seeing it, they tacked to windward, and towards evening came within a few miles of it. They thought it imprudent to land there, as the natives were prejudiced against the English, on account of the mutineers of the ship *Bounty*, who had destroyed about a hundred of them. At some future time, however, they meant to visit them, to remove their pre-

judice with the glad tidings of the gospel of peace. A fine breeze continuing the whole night, they saw no more of Toobouai.

The adventurers having now been seven months penned together, since their embarkation at Blackwall, became well acquainted with each other's disposition; and reciprocal regard and friendship was naturally entertained. Several of the brethren having intimated a preference of a certain group of islands, the subject of the separation of the brethren among the Marquesas, the Society, and the Friendly Islands, was again started, and a meeting of the Society appointed on the 27th of February. A meeting was held accordingly, when there appeared for each group the list of the names in the following statement*.

Their passage from Toobouai was much longer than they expected, variable winds and unsettled weather militating against them. On the 1st of March, from two in the afternoon till four, it rained excessively. From four till seven an interval of fair weather succeeded: it then rained heavier than before from nine till midnight, accompanied with vivid lightning and awful claps of thunder. Though the sea was not remarkably high, nor the wind extremely violent, the darkness and conflict of the elements formed a sight so truly dismal, that all on board acknowledged they had never witnessed any event so tremendous.

After this storm nothing material occurred till March the 4th, when the island of Otaheite delighted their anxious eyes; but the distance was considerable. At noon the extremity of the lesser peninsula bore from north by west, twelve or fourteen leagues off: they stood towards it till ten at night, then tacked about four miles south of the reefs off Atahooro, and standing off and on till day-light, steered to pass between the west end of the island and Eimeo.

The business being thus far settled, the captain intimated to those intended for Otaheite, that it was necessary to choose their committee and president. This suggestion was attended to; Mr. Jefferson was elected president by a great majority, and Messrs. Cover, Lewis, Henry, and Broomhall, to compose the committee. Mr. Cover was also appointed Secretary and store-keeper, and Mr. Lewis Librarian. It was further agreed, that the president, secretary, &c. should possess their respective offices for six months, and that the committee should go out by rotation, one every three months.

* Otaheite.—1. Rev. I. F. Cover, 2. Rev. John Eyre, 3. Rev. John Jefferson, 4. Rev. Thomas Lewis, 5. H. Bicknell, 6. B. Broomhall, 7. J. Cock, 8. S. Clode, 9. J. A. Gillam, 10. William Henry, 11. P. Hodges, 12. R. Hassell, 13. E. Main, 14. H. Nott, 15. F. Oakes, 16. J. Puckey, 17. W. Puckey, 18. W. Smith; which, with five women and two children, make twenty-five for Otaheite.

Tongataboo.—1. Mr. B. Bowell, 2. J. Buchanan, 3. James Cooper, 4. S. Harper, 5. S. Kelso, 6. J. Nobbs, 7. W. Shelly, 8. G. Veeon, 9. J. Wilkinson, 10. Gaulton, a probationer.

Santa Christina.—1. Mr. J. Harris, 2. W. Crook.

With

With a gentle breeze, on Sunday March 5, the missionaries were abreast of the district of Atahooroo by seven in the morning, whence several canoes were seen putting off, and paddling rapidly towards them: a calm ensuing, seventy-four canoes surrounded them; many of which were double, with about twenty persons in each. The multitude was so great, that their exertions were necessary to prevent their crowding on board: but, in spite of all their efforts to prevent it, upwards of one hundred of them were soon perceived dancing and capering like frantic persons about the decks crying *tayo! tayo!*—At the same time repeating a few broken sentences of English.

They had no weapons among them; but, in order to keep them in awe, some of the great guns were hoisted out of the hold, whilst they, without seeming apprehensive of any thing hostile was intended, cheerfully agreed to place them on their carriages. The first ceremonies being over, the missionaries began to view their new friends with some attention: their wild disorderly behaviour, the offensive odour produced by their cocoa-nut oil, and other unpleasant circumstances, contributed to lessen the favourable opinion they had formed of them: neither could they discern that beauty and elegance in the women, for which they had been so much celebrated. But this depreciation of their merits was gradually removed by their cheerfulness, good-nature, and generosity. A very old person, who called himself the priest of Eatooa, was very importunate to be *tayo* with the captain; others, pretending to be chiefs, selected those who had the appearance of officers for their *tayos*; but as they bore no marks of distinction, and did not seem to exercise any acts of authority, their proposals were declined till further particulars were known concerning them. They were, indeed, astonished at this treatment, and more particularly so when they perceived their indifference respecting the hogs, fowls, and fruit, of which they brought abundance.

In vain the missionaries endeavoured to make them understand that this was the day of the

Eatooa. At length many of the natives departed of their own accord, several were driven away by the old man, and others by one named Mauroa, who now assumed a little authority. Those who remained were chiefly arreoies from Ulitea, amounting to about forty; and, being reduced to order, divine service was performed upon the quarter deck. Mr. Cover officiated, and was perhaps the first that mentioned the Saviour's name to these poor heathens*.

It afterwards appeared that Manne Manne, the old man, who was so desirous of having the captain for a *tayo*, had formerly been king of Ulitea; that he was nearly related to the royal family, and of considerable importance in the islands, being chief priest over Otaheite and Eimeo. On this information, Manne was invited into the cabin, and treated very respectfully. He now repeated his solicitations to be considered by the captain as a friend, when he requested he might be allowed a day to consider of the propriety of it.

The missionaries were further informed, that the former Otoo had transferred his name and title of king to his son, and had now taken the name of Pomarre: that, in a contest about twenty months before with Temarre, the chief of the south side of the greater peninsula, Pomarre's party prevailed, and reduced his adversary to a state of dependance, and soon after Tiaraboo was conquered: in consequence of which the whole island became his property, or rather that of his son Otoo, and had ever since remained so. Motuara, the chief of Eimeo, being dead, Pomarre claimed the government of that island; and having only the widow of the deceased to contend with, was, after a few skirmishes, acknowledged as king. The power of Omarre, and his son Otoo, thus became so formidable, that no longer any person dared to question their authority.

About thirty of the natives, and two Swedes who had been left here after the loss of the Matilda, remained on board all the night, and part of the following day, till they anchored in the bay. At the dawn of day the old priest awoke,

* Such hymns as had the most harmonious tunes were selected on this occasion; as, "O'er the gloomy hills of darkness"—"Blow ye the trumpets blow,"—and at the conclusion, "Praise God from whom all blessings flow." The text was from the first epistle general of John, iii. 23. "God is love." During the service the natives were quiet

and pensive; but, when the singing began, they were filled with amazement and delight. If they sometimes forgot themselves, and interrupted with talking or laughing, a nod of the head brought them instantly to order; but, upon the whole, their silence was astonishing.

natives departed
were driven away
one named Mau-
authority. Those
pies from Ulitea,
d, being reduced
formed upon the
ficiated, and was
ed the Saviour's

Manne Manne,
us of having the
rly been king of
ated to the royal
importance in the
er Otaheite and
Manne was in-
ited very respect-
solicitations to be
friend, when he
a day to consider

er informed, that
red his name and
ad now taken the
a contest about
emarre, the chief
er peninsula, Po-
duced his adver-
e, and soon after
a consequence of
me his property,
oo, and had ever
e chief of Eimeo,
the government of
the widow of the
y, after a few skir-
g. The power of
ous became so for-
person dared to

, and two Swedes
ne loss of the Ma-
he night, and part
y anchored in the
old priest awoke,

began, they were filled
they sometimes forgot
alking or laughing, a
stantly to order; but,
tounishing.

and

and, anxious to secure the tayoship with the cap-
tain, awoke him also. His importunities being
no longer to be resisted, they now exchanged
names, and Manne Manne, wrapping a long
piece of cloth round the captain, and placing
a taboota over his head, requested for himself a
monquet, some shot, and gun-powder: but, being
informed that none of these articles were to spare,
and that he should be otherwise amply rewarded
for his kind offices, he seemed perfectly satis-
fied.

At one in the afternoon they came to anchor
in Matavai bay, distant from the beach about
three quarters of a mile; soon after which all
the areoies sprang into the water, and swam to
the shore. Their place, however, was instantly
supplied by others, who surrounded the ship
with hogs, fruit, and other refreshments. About
four o'clock the captain, Manne Manne, the two
Swedes, with Messrs. Cover, Henry, and a few
more of the missionaries, went on shore to
examine a large house on the extremity of Point
Venus, which had been named E. Fwarre no
Pritane (the British House.) It is a large spa-
cious building, said to have been built by Po-
marre for Captain Bligh, who had promised to
come back and reside there. It is one hundred
eight feet long, and forty-eight wide. "Thus,"
exclaimed one of the missionaries, "hath the
Lord appeared to set before us an open door,
which we trust none shall henceforth be able to
shut."

The chief of the district, an old man, named
Piteah, welcomed them to the island, and said
the house should be ready for their reception the
next day. He shewed the picture of Captain
Cook, on the back of which was written the
names of his Majesty's ships, and their com-
manders, who had visited Matavai since that
great navigator's time. The natives on shore
were delighted with the idea of men coming
purposely from Pretane to fix their residence
among them.

Early the next morning arrived, as a present
from Manne Manne to his tayo, three hogs, some

* Manne Manne, the aged high priest, now conducted
one of his wives on board, not one of which exceeded
the age of fifteen years, and requested he might sleep in
the cabin. Complying with the custom of the country, he
sired captain Wilson, his tayo, to take his choice, and
seemed astonished at his declining the offer. A conversa-
tion naturally ensued on the nature of their customs, when

fowls, cocoa-nuts, and a quantity of cloth. He
accompanied the present, and delivered a long
oration on the occasion.

Soon after one of the Swedes, named Peter
arrived from a distant part of the island, with
more fruit, and a very large hog*.

After discussing the subject maturely, it was
at length resolved, that, as Otaheite was the
most eligible island, the first settlement should
be there, and that the friendship and protection
of Pomarre, and his son Otoo, should be courted
by kindness, and the most zealous attention to
their interest; but never to interfere in their wars,
except as mediators.

Torrents of rain discouraged the missionaries
from landing till near eleven in the forenoon;
when the captain, Mr. Jefferson, and a few more
of the missionaries, went on shore, accompanied
by Manne Manne, and Peter. Four or five
hundred of the natives were assembled on the
beach, some of whom ran into the water, and
taking the captain and the missionaries on their
backs, conducted them dry on shore. They
were received by the young king Otoo, and his
wife Tehea, both carried on men's shoulders:
each of them seized the captain by the hand,
surveying him attentively and minutely in the
face, and examining every article of his dress:
the same excess of curiosity was also practised
among the brethren. The queen opened Mr.
Cover's shirt at the breast and sleeves, expressing
her astonishment at the sight of the blue veins.

The captain now informed the king, by Peter
who acted as interpreter, that their only induc-
ement for leaving Pretane to come and visit them
was to do them good; and for that purpose only,
some worthy men of their number intended to
settle among them; requiring, on their part, the
free gift of a piece of land, sufficiently stocked
with bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees; and so large
as to contain a garden, and admit of houses being
built upon it; that this land should be their own;
that they would not intermeddle in their wars,
nor employ their arms but for self-defence; and
at all times should live free and unmolested

the captain explained to the old priest, how little such a
state of polygamy must contribute to happiness; that no
woman could be truly affectionate and faithful, where the
heart was not fixed upon a single object; and that in such
a state only domestic felicity could be promoted. The old
priest did not much approve of his doctrine, though the
ladies admitted that it was very good.

among them; to which if he consented, they would continue on the island; if not, they would go elsewhere. Much pains were taken to make this proposal understood, but as Otoo's physiognomy did not indicate a large share of understanding, he probably did not comprehend half of it; though he signified that the large house was their own, and they might take what land they pleased.

After this, Ianne Manne stood up in the middle of a ring, and pronounced a long speech, passing many high encomiums on Pretane. The king then took the captain by the hand, and led him to the beach; after which, on his request, he was permitted to return on board. Otoo expressed a desire to hear the musquets fired, and, to gratify him, four were discharged twice, with which compliment he appeared very much pleased*.

Understanding there were women and children on board, they expressed a desire of seeing them; and when they exhibited themselves at the ship's side, they set up a cry of astonishment. A smart squall from the north-east came on presently after, attended with heavy rain, lightning, and thunder. The rain ceasing about nine in the morning of the 8th, the missionaries went on shore, with their chests and beds, and took possession of their house. By the captain's desire, Mr. W. Willson followed to assist them in planning their separate apartments. A vast concourse of the natives had gathered on the beach, to observe who should land in the pinnace, among whom was Otoo and his queen, carried on men's shoulders, as before.

Mr. Wilson having intimated that he had business to do within the house, was permitted to depart; but the king first introduced a woman to him named Whyeridde, the sister of Iddeah, and wife of Pomarre, whom he was required to

* Otoo is tall, and well proportioned, and appears to be about seventeen years of age: his queen is handsome, and has seen about the same number of years. Though the captain supposed his majesty had a vacant countenance, some of the missionaries had a more favourable opinion of him. As he paddled round the ship, he was offered the compliment of firing the great guns, which he thought proper to decline, fearing the noise would be offensive to his ears.

† Several of the arreoies of Ulitea having arrived here about this time, willing perhaps to amuse the English strangers, began their heiras. In the afternoon they collected in great numbers before the house, and engaged in a kind of box-fighting or wrestling: first forming a ring,

take as a tayo: in consequence of which names were exchanged, and the usual ceremonies took place.

The first step respecting the house, was to close it round with the thicker sort of bamboo, and to fix a door on each side, to prevent the natives from crowding too much upon them. The several apartments were next planned, and partitions began. In the arrangement the married people had a part of one side to themselves, and the single men the other side. A store-room and a library were then marked out; and a place for the doctor and his medicines. To enclose the whole, a partition was continued from side to side, with two lock doors. The remaining space was left for a chapel: and into it the outer door opened†.

Manne Manne sent the missionaries three hogs ready dressed for dinner, with baked bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, &c. Placing these on a large piece of cloth, he invited them to begin to eat, but not before they had called upon God to bless the provision. They found it very good, though unaccompanied with dish, spoon, knife, fork, table, or chair. Presents in abundance arrived from the different chiefs, who were soliciting their friendship.

The house was crowded with the natives during the day, which induced the brethren to keep a guard over their property, though no symptoms appeared of their having depredation in view. When the evening approached, silence was demanded; and, having sung a hymn, Mr. Jefferson offered up a prayer to our Lord; during which time the natives were very quiet and attentive, and retired peaceably when requested.

The king and queen shook hands with the missionaries, and minutely examined their apparel. In the morning of the 9th, the natives came to their house, boiled their water, and prepared the

within which stood about a dozen stout fellows, with their backs to the crowd, and faces towards each other. The game commenced with an act of defiance or challenge, signified by beating heavy strokes with the flat hand on the leg arm. At length one of them stepped forward to the centre of the circle; another, supposing himself his equal in prowess, advanced to meet him; sometimes only a blow or two takes place, and they fall back again into their respective places. At another time, after advancing and staring at each other in the face, one will probably plump the top of the head into the countenance of his opponent, provoking laughter among the crowd, and causing the sufferers to retire to the dumps.

of which name
ceremonies took

the house, was to
sort of bamboo
de, to prevent the
much upon them
next planned, and
angement the mar
side to themselves
side. A store-room
ed out; and a place
es. To enclose the
inued from side to
the remaining space
o it the outer door

isionaries three hogs
a baked bread-fruit
ese on a large piece
begin to eat, but
upon God to bless
t very good, though
spoon, knife, fork
abundance arrived
who were soliciting

l with the natives
ced the brethren to
property, though
having depredation
approached, silence
sung a hymn, Ma
to our Lord; during
e very quiet and
y when requested,
k hands with the mi
mined their appare
the natives came
er, and prepared the

stout fellows, with
owards each other. T
defiance or challenge,
th the flat hand on the
t forward to the contr
aself his equal in powe
es only a blow or to
again into their respec
advancing and staring
ably plump the top of
his opponent, provok
causing the sufferer to

bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts. In the course of the day the king and queen visited them several times. This morning a visit was also received from Inna Madua, the widow of Oreepiah, accompanied by two chief women. Oreepiah was much attached to the English; and his widow, supposing them grieved for his loss, burst into tears on her entering the cabin. But this scene of sorrow was of short duration; cheerfulness succeeded, and they breakfasted and dined on board, Manne Manne being also present.

Otoo paddled round the ship in his canoe, and calling out for food, the captain sent him, in an English dish, half of a roasted pig, and some biscuit; with which he proceeded towards the shore, seemingly much pleased.

Whilst the business of the house, and other essential matters were going on ashore, the crew were employed in weighing the anchor, and mooring the ship with the two bowers. In the evening innumerable presents were received, not only on board, but at the house, consisting of live hogs, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and cloth. More ready-dressed meat was also brought them than the brethren and the attendant natives could consume.

This day the captain landed to display some gaudy dresses to the king and queen. Intimation being given to his Majesty of what was intended, Peter desired Otoo to walk towards his house, a shed erected for the purpose of being near the brethren. This was complied with, and when the captain came under a certain tree, he ordered the people to form a ring, placing a box which had been brought in the midst. Otoo was desired to alight in order to be dressed, which, after some ridiculous delays, he consented to. The queen also descended from the man's shoulder, and was decorated with what was taken from the box. Equipped in this gaudy attire, the surrounding crowd gazed on them with admiration. She, yielding to the foibles of her sex, appeared exceedingly delighted; but Otoo declared that a musquet, a knife, or a pair of scissars were more valuable; a more sensible remark than was expected from his lips.

At the conclusion of the ceremony, Manne Manne appeared before the house, and calling the captain towards him, clothed him in the Otaheitean dress, putting on an elegant breast-plate over all. They then repaired to the British

house, where the improvements were briskly carrying on. The old priest accompanied the captain on board to dinner. At the house they were very busy in fitting up the apartments for the women, who were intended to be landed in the afternoon. After dinner the pinnace was manned for the women and children, and vast numbers of the natives crowded to the beach to gratify their curiosity. The house was surrounded all the afternoon by the natives, who were much delighted with the two children, and often called upon them and the women to shew themselves at the door.

Manne Manne having already distinguished himself as a useful man, besides bringing several hogs, &c. the captain made him a handsome present. After prayer the brethren retired to rest. Before the Otaheiteans departed, they were informed that no labour would be performed the following day.

The Sunday passed very quietly, not a single canoe approaching the ship; nor was any interruption attempted on shore. A discussion took place among the brethren, respecting the propriety of addressing the natives on the important subject of their mission; when it was agreed that Mr. Jefferson should introduce the business, through the medium of Andrew the Swede, who was qualified to act as interpreter. Accordingly they met at three in the afternoon, several of the natives being present; and when Andrew interpreted the first sentence, which they perceived was directed to them, they became extremely attentive. When they began to comprehend a little of what was said, they asked some very pertinent questions.

Mr. Jefferson, pointing to his brethren, told them that "they were messengers of the only true God; and that, though all men had offended him, he was a merciful God; conferring on those who believed his word great blessings in this life, and after death took them to a state of eternal happiness." Otoo, who was present, was not much affected with this address.

Early the next morning several canoes were seen alongside, in one of which their constant friend Manne Manne was observed; with several chiefs and their wives: but the principal person now to be introduced was the father of Pomarre, Otew, formerly Whappai, a venerable looking man aged about seventy, with grey head, and a

now-

snow-white beard. His name had formerly been Otoo; but, on the birth of his son, in compliance with the general custom, he changed it to Otew. He presented the captain with a piece of cloth and a pig; receiving in return, two axes, four pair of scissors, four knives, two looking-glasses, and two old shirts, which were all the articles he asked for.

After breakfast Otoo and the queen sent off a request to the captain to make them some presents; in consequence of which they sent alongside thirteen live hogs, and three ready dressed, for the king; the present for the queen was six alive, one ready dressed, and a bale of cloth. Their Majesties followed in a large double canoe, accompanied by Otoo's younger brother, now prince of Tiaraboo.

At four in the afternoon Pomarre, and his wife Iddeah, having just arrived from Tiaraboo, paid their first visit to the ship, with a train of attendants. After some ceremony they ascended the side, and coming on to the quarter deck, the king wrapped four pieces of cloth round the captain as his own present; then, taking that off, repeated the operation with an equal quantity, in the name of Iddeah.

The first ceremonies being over, he informed the captain that he would send provisions, and whatever they had occasion for, while they continued at Otaheite. When seated in the cabin he spoke highly of the English, and called King George his friend. On this the interpreter was desired to inform him, that King George loved him, and the earees of Pretane did the same; that out of regard for him and his people, he had sent some worthy men, purposely to do them good; and then desired to know if any of them

* These important matters being thus far settled, the chief began to think of amusements, and asked about rockets, violins, &c. Finding that the brethren had none of these things, many persons seemed dejected; but, to give a little spirit, a few tunes upon the German flute were played by Mr. Bowell, and one of the seamen. Pomarre having intimated a wish to sleep on board, it was granted; the same favour was requested and granted for his wife and servant.

Here it may be necessary to remark that Iddeah, though still considered as the wife of Pomarre, has not, for some time cohabited with him, but with one of her toutous (or servants) by whom she has had a child, and is again pregnant; her younger sister, Whyreede, next cohabited with the chief, but left him for one of much inferior rank; and his present wife is a very stout young woman, though they

should be left on his island. He immediately answered in the affirmative. A piece of land for their use was then mentioned to him, and, after some consideration, he said, that the whole district of Matavai should be given to the English, to do whatever they pleased with it*.

On the 14th, in the morning, Manne Manne, and several others, came on board; all of whom behaved very respectfully to Pomarre. The captain, in order to cultivate his friendship, gave him an excellent metal watch, with which he seemed very much pleased. As he knew not how to manage such a prize, Peter, the Swede, was directed to wind it up for him every day. The captain having checked Manne Manne for indulging in wine immoderately, he replied, that as he was going on shore to sacrifice a man to the Eatooa, he took it to inspire him with courage. The brethren expressing their abhorrence of so cruel a design, he became silent; and his friend Peter desired him never to mention any thing of the kind to them.

In the afternoon Pomarre and Iddeah visited the house, and viewed the improvements made in it with a degree of astonishment. They partook of a dish of tea with the brethren; one of the attendants pouring the tea from the cup to the saucer, and holding it to Pomarre's mouth: this was indeed the custom at every meal, his dignity not permitting him to feed himself. When he had finished, he desired the saucer might be kept for his future use, and that no woman might be permitted to touch it†.

To-day he returned his watch, very much damaged, which was supposed to have been the cause of his absenting himself from the ship; a hatchet would doubtless have been more valuable

could not ascertain of what condition. It is, however, extremely clear that those of rank hesitate little about mixing with the lower orders of the people; if issue should be the consequence of these connections, it seldom happens that the pride of rank suffers the poor infant to live an hour after its birth. At supper, the chief demolished a whole fowl, and two pounds of pork; with which he drank proportionally.

† Among the remarks of the 15th, it appears that Pomarre and his suite attended the brethren at family worship in the house; after which the president informed him of the nature of their mission; "to teach them our God and Saviour: to teach them to read the speaking book of wisdom, and to instruct them in all useful arts; which he much applauded, saying it was my ty, my ty, very good. Adding that "he would send his sons for instruction."

He immediately
A piece of land
ned to him, and
id, that the whole
given to the Eng-
with it*.

g. Manne Manne,
ard; all of whom
Pomarre. The cap-
s friendship, gave
h, with which he
s he knew not how
r, the Swede, was
m every day. The
ne Manne for in-
y, he replied, that
sacrifice a man to
pire him with cou-
ng their abhorrence
me silent; and his
ver to mention any

and Iddeah visited
improvements made
ment. They par-
ne brethren; one of
ea from the cup to
Pomarre's mouth: this
ry meal, his dignity
himself. When he
auder might be kept
no woman might be

watch, very much
ed to have been the
lf from the ship; and
been more valuable

ion. It is, however, ex-
sitate little about mis-
e; if issue should be the
p, it seldom happens that
or infant to live an hour
chief demolished a whole
with which he drank pre-

5th, it appears that Po-
brethren at family wor-
resident informed him
teach them our God
e speaking book of vi-
l useful arts; which
y ty, my ty, very good
ons for instruction."

him, though the glitter of the watch delighted
him much at first.

An alarm of an insurrection of the natives
against the body of Missionaries was now indus-
triously propagated: but after due investigation
of the business, it appeared to be entirely ideal.

The 16th being appointed for the cession, in
the morning, of the district of Matavai to the English,
the captain landed upon Point Venus; where he
was received by the chief, and conducted to the
vicinity of the Missionary house. Most of the
brethren from the ship, and all on shore, were
present at the ceremony; and Peter the Swede,
usual, undertook the office of interpreter. The
ceremony took place before the door of the Mission-
ary house. After many preliminary ceremonies,
which would be thought tedious, were they to
be minutely related, the solemnity concluded
with the formal surrender of the district of Ma-
tavai; and the persons to whom it was ceded
were authorised to take what houses, trees, fruit,
&c. they thought proper. The particulars
of this grant were proclaimed deliberately by the
chief priest.

None of the chiefs came near the ship on the
16th, and but few canoes attended. The young
chief and Pomarre paid a visit at the house,
where Mr. Jefferson addressed him on the educa-
tion of his children; representing it as a matter
of importance, both to them and the people of
Otaheite. Impressed with the truth of what
was said, he immediately spoke to Otoo; who
replied, "he did not wish to learn English."—"I
have a very bad opinion of Otoo," replied Mr.
Jefferson. Great delight was expressed, by the
brethren present, on the garden-engine playing,
conveying water on the thatch of the
house.

In the afternoon of the 18th, Pomarre and
Iddeah came on board, accompanied by Manne
Manne, and Peter to interpret. A present of
food was made the captain; and a large chest
which they brought with them in the canoe,
only intimated that they expected a proper
return. After a little circumlocution, they at
length candidly acknowledged, that the chest

The brethren intended for the Friendly Isles, having
ordained ministers to accompany them, chose from their
number Mr. Seth Kelso to be their pastor, and urged to
be on shore the propriety of ordaining him, and John
G. I. No. XLIV.

was to hold the present which the captain might
be pleased to make to Pomarre and Iddeah. It
was at length suggested by the old priest, who
was always ready to give his opinion, to give ten
axes for Pomarre, and ten for Iddeah; and to
bestow on each five shirts, eight looking-glasses,
six pair of scissors, six knives, fifty nails, and
five combs. To these were added, on his part,
one cast-iron pot, one razor, and a blanket.
The whole was put into the chest, and secured
by a lock and key.

He then acknowledged himself satisfied, but
when he passed between decks, he saw several
things lying loose, and requested something from
every person he saw; but, knowing how well he
had fared in the cabin, they gratified him with
very little*.

It having been made known that the brethren
intended to address the natives on the 19th, in
the morning, numbers of them assembled early
round the dwelling.

At ten o'clock the natives were called together
under the cover of some shady trees, near the
house: a long form had been placed on the spot,
on which Pomarre was requested to seat himself
with the brethren; the rest of the natives stand-
ing or sitting in a circle round them. Mr. Cover
then addressed them from the words of St. John.
"God so loved the world, that he gave his only-
begotten son, that they who believed on him
should not perish, but should have everlasting
life." The Swede was the interpreter as before.

The Otaheiteans were silent and attentive; and,
after service, Pomarre took Mr. Cover by the
hand, and expressed his approbation by the
word *my ty*; *my ty*. Being asked, if he under-
stood what was said, he replied, "There were
no such things before in Otaheite, and that they
were not to be taught at once, but that he would
wait the coming of (the Eatooa) God."

About three the ordination solemnity of the
brethren Kelso and Harris took place: they
were set apart for their work, by the imposition
of hands of their ordained brethren†.

Peter, the Swede having offered to go with
the brethren to the Friendly Islands, the cap-
tain

Harris, previous to their departure. This was readily con-
sented to, and they were accordingly ordained ministers to
the places of their respective destination.

† Pomarre, and all their Saturday's guests, attended on
6 P the

tain consented, thinking he might be serviceable on some occasions, as interpreter. He also purposed taking with him a young woman named Tanno Manno, a man the mutineers had called Tom, and a boy named Harraway. The two last had already made great proficiency in the Otahitean language, and were therefore expected to be useful: on which account they were also permitted to go.

Mr. Puckey coming on board, some conversation took place on the propriety of the brethren's arming themselves on shore, and keeping watch night and day; which those on board disapproved. He replied, that their intention in taking arms was not to injure the natives, or plant the gospel by human power; but merely for the protection of their persons and property during the absence of the ship.

SECTION III.

Short Voyage to Eimeo, and Return—Division of the Missionaries—Voyage to Tongataboo—Occurrences there on the First Visit.

ABOUT an hour before day-light they weighed, with a light air from the south-east. At seven in the afternoon a strong gale sprang up from the north-east, attended with thunder and lightning; by ten o'clock they were off the north-east part of Eimeo, when it again fell little wind. They kept running along the edge of the coral reef, towards Taloo harbour, and had irregular soundings for eight, twelve, and fourteen fathoms. With a light breeze they ran close up to the south-east corner of the harbour, and let go their anchor in ten fathoms water, and moored with a stream cable to a remarkable large tree, standing close to the water's edge.

Taloo harbour is on the north side of the island, and the bottom is so clear, that the coral may be distinctly seen, with all its beautiful branches. The harbour is about a quarter of a mile broad, at the mouth, and the water is of an astonishing depth. This led to a delightful bay of two miles wide and about three deep. This bay is surrounded with trees, and not the least agitation of the water is perceivable on the beach, let the wind blow from what quarter it may. They lay under a mountain ten times the height of a top-gallant mast, and perpendicular;

the 20th, bringing more cloth, and some fowls for sea stock. They staid dinner; the chief, who was fed by his head man, ate heartily, and drank freely of a bottle of wine; he manifested a covetous disposition on this occasion, not willingly permitting Manne Manne to have a glass with him.

* Here a tupapow was seen, the flesh of which was quite gone; the skin remained, extended like parchment over the bones; the natives seemed displeased at seeing it thus examined by strangers. Two posts of the length of about six feet, are let into the ground at each end, on

A fine fresh-water river runs up several miles, which a boat can ascend a mile or two, and ship water very commodiously. It is a very secure harbour. It has a border of low-land, in Otahite, covered with bread fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other trees*.

After dinner, the captain, Mr. Falconer, W. Puckey, and Peter, set off in the pinnace, to see a vessel that was building for Manne Manne, of which they gave a favourable account on the return. In this excursion the captain shot a wild duck, and two small birds, and Mr. Falconer caught a dozen fish with the seine. All the afternoon the ship was surrounded by the natives, among whom were several women, who by their amorous gestures, signified their desire to be taken on board, but had the mortification to meet with no encouragement. Several articles were offered to barter, but no hogs, the rahoo, a peculiar kind of prohibition, was then in force†.

Eight of the brethren, by the permission of the captain, took the jolly-boat to a fresh-water creek at the end of the harbour, for the purpose of washing their linen, but almost instantly returned; suspecting, from the unaccountable

which a broad plank is laid, and the corpse extended wrapped in cloth; a small shed, like a boat inverted, is placed over it to keep out the rain.

† A rahoo is imposed by the chiefs, to repair the dissensions occasioned by inordinate feasting. At this time none of the residents can sell a pig, or kill one for their own consumption: they are permitted, however, to take hogs from those districts that are free, and use them as they please. Sometimes a rahoo is laid upon the natives, which is signified by poles, with a flag at top, stuck in the reefs where they are prohibited.

board, some convey-
propriety of the bre-
shore, and keepin-
those on board di-
at their intention
re the natives, or
power; but mere
persons and property
ip.

to Tongataboo—

ns up several mile
mile or two, and shi-
It is a very secu-
or of low-land, li-
head fruit, cocoa-nu-

Mr. Falconer, W-
ff in the pinnace,
ag for Manne Manne
rable account on the
n the captain shot
l birds, and Mr. F-
with the seine. All
surrounded by the
several women, w-
signified their de-
had the mortifica-
ment. Several arti-
t no hogs, the rabe-
hibition, was then

by the permission
y-boat to a fresh-w-
bour, for the purp-
ut almost instantly
the unaccountable

and the corpse exte-
shed, like a boat inter-
rain.
e chiefs, to repair the de-
the feasts. At this
a pig, or kill one for
permitted, however, to
are free, and use the
oo is laid upon the
h a flag at top, stuck
ed.

have

behaviour of a multitude of the natives, that they
meant to rob them of their bundles, and commit
other atrocities. They were not, however, mo-
lestated.

Soon after they were got on board, a general
meeting of the brethren was held in the cabin,
to debate on the propriety of taking fire-arms on
shore with them at Tongataboo. After much dis-
cussion on the subject, there appeared, on a di-
vision—for taking muskets, brothers Harper,
Kelso, Nobbs, Shelly, Veeson, and Wilkinson—
against it, Bowell, Buchanan, and Cooper.

Some remonstrances were afterwards addressed
to Messrs. Harris and Cook, on their going to
the Marquesas in so small a number; to which
they replied, that they had long since made that
place their choice, and still continued of the
same opinion, not doubting of a favourable re-
ception. On this account they did not think it
necessary for the ship to revisit them, but would
rather, with the captain's approbation, that the
vessel should first go to the Friendly Islands,
and then proceeding to the Marquesas, much
time and expense would be saved, and the cap-
tain be enabled to stay a month, or more, to see
them properly settled. This proposal was ap-
proved, and intended to be adopted*.

At night, about eleven o'clock, the watch saw

* About thirty canoes, containing men and women, kept
paddling round them all the day. Many of the natives,
who had no canoes, diverted themselves in the water several
hours together; and if any trifle was thrown in, they
would dive several fathoms after it, and were almost cer-
tain of bringing it up.

† On the 24th, many natives from different parts of the
island, came to view the ship, and seemed greatly to ad-
mire it. They were unarmed, but manifested a disposition
for plundering. None of them were suffered to come upon
the decks, but they found means to steal the rudder out of
the jolly-boat lying alongside. While the people were at
dinner in the cabin, a tall fellow, getting upon the back of
the rudder, reached his hand up, and snatched away a
hook, plunging instantly into the water. Thinking this
action too atrocious to be overlooked, a few small shot
were fired, which induced them to take to the water, and
skulk behind the canoe. After much difficulty the offender
was taken; and when brought alongside, trembled through
fear of being put to death: a rope being fixed round his
body, he was hoisted on board, and lashed to the rigging,
in sight of his countrymen, who ranged themselves along
the beach, in expectation of seeing him punished. As
Peter was on shore at this time, the delinquent was kept
bound till he returned on board. He was then directed to
inform the man, that as the offence had been committed
before he had been warned of the consequence, he should

a naked native standing in the main chains; who,
when he attempted to seize him, made his
escape, taking with him four yards of electric
chain†.

Orders were issued for keeping a good look-
out during the night, as it was apprehended they
would be visited by thieves: two muskets were
therefore placed in readiness. At two in the
morning, when it was very dark, a man was
heard swimming under the ship's bows, meaning,
it was supposed, to cut the cable; a musket
was fired, and he fled with precipitation‡.

The island itself appears to have suffered great
convulsions, either from earthquakes, or other
violent causes. The low lands are covered with
cocoa-nut, bread-fruit, and other trees, all grow-
ing luxuriantly without culture. Here the cows
remain, which Captain Cook had left, but they
are little attended to: they are said to be so wild
that the natives dare not approach them.

Towards evening they saw Tethuroa, about
twenty-four miles from Otaheite, consisting of
about seven little islets, covered with cocoa-
nuts, but no bread-fruit, which they are not
permitted to cultivate. It belongs to the king,
but Manne Manne claims it. The natives
amounting to about three thousand, are employ-
ed in fishing for the chiefs of Otaheite.

bo set at liberty: but if he should ever be found guilty of
such a crime in future, he should be very severely punished.
He promised never to do the like again, and retired with a
joyful countenance.

The flagrant conduct of the captain's steward having
been frequently experienced, he was turned out of the
cabin before the mast. This evening, going on shore with
others to bathe, he secreted himself, having got some of
his things on shore, unknown to any but the Swede. This
caused the brethren much sorrow of mind, as he had made
a profession of godliness. They were afraid that man,
thus leaving the ship, and indulging in all the abominable
practices of the heathen, would prove a reproach and
plague to them.

‡ On the 25th, at six in the morning, they weighed, and
stood out of Taloo harbour; several of the natives in their
canoes following them to sea, expressing a desire to trade
with them. The brethren could learn but little of the peo-
ple of this island, as they were afraid of trusting them-
selves in small parties on shore, lest they should retaliate
on them the vengeance which Captain Cook inflicted on
them for stealing his goats. They observed, however, that
they were less frank and affable towards strangers, than
the Otaheiteans were in general; and in every point of ci-
vilization was far behind that people. In their persons
they differ little from the Otaheiteans, except in a Jewish
cast of countenance, which is here more general.

On

On the 26th, at four in the afternoon, they tacked the ship close in with One-tree hill, hoisted their colours, and fired a gun. On hearing of which several of the brethren came off in a double canoe, and reported that all was well. The chiefs also were behaving extremely well. They took leave of their friends, hoisted in the pinnace, and made sail for the Friendly Islands, for sending on shore materials for a flat-bottomed boat, to be built during their absence.

The natives were extremely kind and attentive: they daily attended devotions, and heard such addresses as they were able to make to them through an interpreter. This first experiment of the ship's absence had removed all the brethren's fears; and they saw them quit the harbour only with the tenderness of parting friends, who hoped again shortly to meet and rejoice together.

The transactions at Otaheite must now be interrupted to follow their brethren through the deep. The day after their departure from Matavai, they passed to the southward of the Society Islands, in sight of Huaheine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Bolabola. With a fair wind, and pleasant weather, they shaped their course for Palmerston's Island. Accordingly on the 1st of April, at day-break, they saw it bearing west, distant about two leagues. A squall of wind and heavy rain coming on soon after, they returned to the ship, lest any accident should happen to the boats. About eight o'clock the weather cleared up, and a second attempt was made; as on account of the tide of ebb the surface had fallen considerably; but no place was observed where they could land the boats with safety. Cocoa-nut trees covered the islet, to get at which was the object of our adventurers. Otaheitean Tom, the third mate, and one of the seamen, taking with them the end of a line, leaped into the water, and ventured into the surf, where

* Palmerston's Island consists of a group of small islets, eight or nine in number, connected by a reef of coral rocks, and lying in a direction nearly circular. The islet they landed upon is about a mile in circuit, and at high-water not exceeding five feet above the level of the sea. The soil is coral sand, with an upper stratum of blackish mould. The inner area of the islet is covered with cocoa-nut trees; and near the beach are the wherra, and several other trees. Among them were observed plenty of red crabs, dragging after them a shell in the form of a perri-

they effected a footing on the coral rocks, which compose the reef, after receiving several wounds on different parts of their bodies, with the sharp points of the coral. They had still a quarter of a mile to walk before they arrived at the dry beach; so that all the cocoa-nuts they could procure, would not compensate for the difficulty of obtaining them, but about half ebb, they saw an opening in the reef, which they found deep enough to pass clear over the beach; where they could step out dry, and lie within fifty yards of the trees. They now applied themselves to the object in view, and sent both the boats off loaded with cocoa-nuts; keeping the two Otaheiteans on shore to climb the trees. A second load of cocoa-nuts, and grass for the use of the goats, was afterwards procured; and late in the evening they returned on board, hoisted the boats in, and made sail, having acquired five hundred and thirty cocoa-nuts in the course of the day*.

No satisfactory evidence has been adduced of this island having ever been inhabited, though rats have been seen in it, and a piece of a canoe was found upon the beach. It has been suggested by some authors that the animals, as well as the wooden remnant of a boat, might have been drifted there on some low tree or root, and cast upon the shore.

On the 5th of April they saw Savage Island, the natives of which had shewn a ferocious and hostile disposition to Captain Cook and his people in 1774; when he discovered it, and gave it that name.

They now shaped their course for Tongataboo, and on the 9th, about ten in the morning, they saw the land; and at noon the island of Eooa bore south-west, distant about eight leagues. Passing to the northward of Eooa-aje, they steered west south-west to the entrance, followed by several canoes which put off from the eastern part of the main island, and the islets on the reef.

winkle. They also saw the submarine grotto mentioned by Captain Cook in his Third Voyage, which affords a most enchanting prospect. "Its base, which is fixed to the shore, extends so far that it cannot be seen, so that it seems to be suspended in the water. Even this delightful scene was greatly improved by the multitude of fishes that gently glided along." The brethren beheld it with pleasure, and regretted, like many others, that a work so astonishingly elegant should be concealed in a place so seldom explored by the human eye.

In
reef of
nel bu
throu
with a
Maka
anchor
the is
stream
The
on bo
to hav
admitt
of the
import
offered
bread-
articles
deman
a chief
captain
he app
propor
demean
talked
only co
great c
island,
on the
present
other a
He h
Europe
hesitat
miliarly
reme p
spoken
diminish
space o
abandon
ity wo
But as
own acc
One of
was bor
is pare
* This
ention t
gerate th
five from
esting a
VOL.

ral rocks, which
g several wounds
s, with the sharp
still a quarter of
rived at the dry
ts they could pro-
r the difficulty of
lf ebb, they saw
they found deep
each; where they
bin fifty yards of
hemselves to the
e boats off loaded
two Otaheiteans
A second load of
use of the goats,
ate in the evening
ted the boats in,
d five hundred and
of the day*.

been adduced of
inhabited, though
a piece of a canoe
It has been sug-
the animals, as
f oat, might
ow tree or

aw Savage Island,
wn a ferocious and
in Cook and his
discovered it, and

se for Tongataboo,
the morning, they
the island of Eoua
out eight leagues,
po-aje, they steered
nce, followed by
from the eastern
the islets on the

o grotto mentioned by
which affords a most
which is fixed to the
ot be seen, so that it
Even this delightful
multitude of fishes that
n beheld it with plea-
ers, that a work so
ealed in a place so sel-

In

In sailing into the harbour they kept the north reef on board, till they came to the narrow channel bending to the north-west; which they got through after making two or three short tacks, with a tide strong in their favour; then, passing Makahaa, they hauled to the southward, and anchored in nine fathoms, less than a mile from the islet of Pangimodoo, and moored with a stream anchor and cable to the south-west.

Their followers were now all eager to come on board, but thinking they were too numerous to have free access, only twenty of them were admitted; and sentries were placed on each side of the deck to keep off others who were very importunate to obtrude. The commodities they offered for barter consisted of hogs, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, yams, spears, clubs, and various articles ingeniously manufactured; but their demands were extravagantly high. After dinner, a chief named Futtafaihe was introduced to the captain, as a person of eminence at Tongataboo: he appeared to be about forty years of age, well proportioned, of an open countenance, and noble demeanour, though rather too pompous. He talked much in the cabin, but the brethren could only collect from his conversation, that he was a great chief, that several white men were on the island, and that he would bring them with him on the following day. The captain made him a present of an axe, a looking-glass, and some other articles, and he took his leave.

He had hardly quitted the ship, when two Europeans made their appearance. Without hesitation they came alongside, and stepped familiarly on board, giving the brethren the extreme pleasure of hearing their own language spoken by them: but that pleasure was much diminished when they perceived, in the countenance of one of them especially, so much of the abandoned villain, that in England a man of probity would have avoided him as a pestilence. But as they have to act a part in future, their own account of themselves may demand attention. One of them, named Benjamin Ambler, says he was born at Shadwell, near London; and that his parents now keep a public house in Cannon

* This respectable character encouraged the captain to mention to Ambler the purpose of their visit, and to enumerate the benefits which the natives would eventually receive from the talents and character of the missionaries; requesting at the same time, his opinion of persons settling

Street. He is a bold, presuming, loquacious fellow. John Connelly is a native of Cork in Ireland, a cooper by trade, and much less talkative than his comrade. Ambler declares they left London in a vessel called the Otter, in which they sailed to America; and there, to obtain better wages, quitted her to go in an American vessel bound to the north-west coast on the fur trade. On their passage outwards they touched at the islands of St. Paul and Amsterdam, where they remained some time, catching seals. They proceeded thence to the Friendly Islands, hoping to procure refreshments; but having only old iron hoops to barter, they could not get any hogs from the natives. Thus situated, these two men, and four others, were induced to leave the ship, their salt provisions being so extremely bad as to be hardly eatable, and they had the additional mortification of being put upon a short allowance. Dreading further inconveniences, they prevailed upon the captain to discharge them. They afterwards landed upon Anamooka, where an American vessel called soon afterwards, and being in want of seamen, three of their number were engaged. An Irishman, named Morgan, remained at Anamooka, and these two had been thirteen months at Tongataboo. They were both under thirty years of age.

Ambler informed them that Futtafaihe was a great chief, presiding over all the eastern part of the island, but that Tibo Moomooe, an old man, had great power, and was generally considered as king over the island. He added, that he was highly esteemed by his people; and that humanity and hospitality were predominant traits of his character*.

At this time a large double canoe approached, in which were several chiefs, who, either to oblige the brethren, or display their arbitrary power, began driving the canoes from the ship, compelling them to proceed towards the shore as fast as they could paddle. One of these chiefs was Feenou, who was said to be brother to him who was so much attached to Captain Cook. On the approach of night they all retired very quietly.

at this place with such intentions. He replied, that he believed the natives would receive them gladly, and treat them very kindly; but, with respect to property, he could give no assurance of its safety.

In the evening the captain and missionaries held a meeting, when it was agreed, that, if Tibo Moomooe would give them a house, and protect their persons, some of the brethren should land as soon as possible, to examine the place, take a view of the natives in their habitations, and learn how they were likely to behave to them: when they might more easily determine what property they might safely take at first; and also consider the propriety of taking arms.

On the 11th, at day-light, a large double canoe came alongside, having on board several of the chiefs who had visited them the preceding day: they had brought with them two hogs, and a quantity of yams. They entered the cabin without much ceremony, and sat quietly while the brethren breakfasted. They refused to take tea, but seemed to relish the biscuit and butter. About ten in the forenoon, Ambler and Connelly brought three hogs and some yams from Moomooe, informing them that he would speedily follow. Punctual to his promise, the venerable chief was very soon alongside, but took time to consider about ascending the ladder, fearing he was incapable of the task: at length, however, he made an attempt, but was obliged to rest himself at the gangway. With considerable labour and difficulty (having previously been shaved that he might appear decent before the captain) he entered the cabin, followed by twenty-two attendant chiefs and servants: these squatted themselves upon the floor, but the chief was seated in a chair, which he admired so much that he requested it might be given to him. He accurately surveyed the cabin, expressed his admiration of whatever he beheld, and asked a number of very pertinent questions.

The captain took a favourable opportunity of interrogating Moomooe respecting his willingness for them to reside there, and what provision he would be pleased to make for them; he replied, that, for the present, they should have a house near his own, till a more suitable one could be provided: that a piece of land should be appropriated to their use, and he would cause their property and persons to be protected. He

"From this they passed to another large house, which Ambler declared was sacred to the God of Pretano, in which Moomooe sleeps, when indisposed, hoping to obtain a cure. On the floor were seen four large conch shells, serving to alarm the country in times of danger; and on the

added, that, if they thought proper, they might go on shore, and examine the house.

For this purpose four of the missionaries, attended by Ambler, went in the pinnace, and landed about four miles to the westward of where the ship lay. The natives, excited purely by curiosity, crowded the shore, but behaved peaceably, and permitted them to pass unmolested. From the beach they had about half a mile to walk, and when they arrived at the place, they found it surrounded by a fence of reeds six feet high, enclosing upwards of three acres of ground, on which stood five habitations: the largest, intended for the missionaries, was thirty-six feet long, and fifteen feet high. On the inside, hung to the cross-beams, an anchor was perceived of about six hundred weight. It was of English form and perhaps the same which Captain Cook lost in 1774, though Ambler said they had it from Annamooka, where it had been left by an American brig*.

The party, after this survey, returned to the ship, where they found the natives taking their departure from the shore. A meeting of the missionaries was held, to consult on the measures next to be pursued. They approved of the house, but thought the group belonging to it, too small for the purposes of gardening and agriculture. Another difficulty arose, intimating that as Moomooe was an old man, it might be reasonably supposed he would shortly die, when disputes would probably arise, especially among the chiefs, whose property the premises should be, or who should be their next protector. Other difficulties were started, and it was only agreed to go to this house, if they could do no better; but that Ambler should be sent, early in the following morning, to Feenou Toogahowe, to propose their residing with him: and, if he readily embraced the offer, they would immediately land with such of their property as they thought necessary to take with them.

At the dawn of day on the 12th, the canoe hurried off to the ship, each endeavouring to get nearest to trade. Among the visitors of importance was Futtasaihe, who brought Connelly

rafters were exhibited spears, clubs, bows and arrows, to receive supernatural virtue from their imaginary deity, to render them successful against their enemies. The other three houses on this spot are smaller.

proper, they might have been housed.

The missionaries, on the pinnacle, and westward of where they arrived at the house, excited purely by the sight, but believed them to pass un- they had about half they arrived at the house, enclosed by a fence of reeds, and going upwards of three hundred feet high, stood five habitations for the missionaries, and fifteen feet high cross-beams, an area six hundred weight, and perhaps the same in 1774, though Amnamooka, where in a brig*.

They returned to the natives taking their meeting of the missionaries on the measures approved of the house, belonging to it, too, ordering and agriculture, intimating that in, it might be ready to die, especially among the premises should be protected. Other than it was only agreed, could do no better, sent, early in the day, to the natives, Toogahowe, to the natives, and, if he could, they would immediately take their property as they wished them.

On the 12th, the canoe, which endeavoured to bring the visitors of the island, brought Connell

his bows and arrows, their imaginary deity, and their enemies. The other

with him, to ask the captain to place five of the missionaries with him. But they did not approve of living on this part of the island, nor to separate till they were better acquainted with the language and people: a promise to visit him when they settled, afforded him but little satisfaction*.

When he approached the ship the natives readily made way for his canoe, and appeared so much in awe of him as to amount to a kind of confirmation of what they had heard, and led the brethren to consider him as the most proper person for their protector. Ambler had before acquainted him with the nature of their design; but, for the satisfaction of the missionaries, the captain, in their presence, recited the particulars, and what was required of them; observing that their only inducement to come so far was to do them good. But if they were unwilling to receive the brethren, or were not desirous of their stay, the captain would depart in a friendly manner, without landing a man among them.

Toogahowe seemed to comprehend the greater part of what had been mentioned, and said, that if they chose to land, they might live there as they pleased, and nobody should molest them; and that, in the afternoon, he would send a double canoe to take their goods, &c. on shore†.

The truth of Ambler's information was never clearly ascertained: it was said that Feenou was at the head of this plot; being offended that nothing had been given him in return for a pig; but Feenou declared that he had never thought of doing them the least injury. The party, however, had the satisfaction of seeing the canoes disperse, as they contained about three thousand

* At nine Ambler came off with Toogahowe, who had already promised to take all the brethren under his protection: and to give them a house, with land attached to it, for their own use. Ambler declares that Toogahowe is the most powerful chief in the island, and the greatest warrior; that he is a terror to the chiefs of Tongataboo, and to those of the adjacent islands, which he had lately subjugated. That he holds his neighbours in a state of fear; inasmuch, that when Moomoo dies, it is supposed he will be formally chosen into his office of great chief, or king of the island. He is a stout man, about forty years of age, and is sullen and morose. He speaks very little, but, when angry, his voice resembles the roaring of a lion.

† Ambler, with Toogahowe, had not been long on board, when he informed them of a design, which probably would have ended the voyage, if not their lives, at this place. The plot was to attack the ship; and, at that moment, all the men in eight large double canoes, and many hundred

men, each armed with a formidable club or spear; and the party had only thirteen undisciplined men to oppose them.

At this moment Moomoo came alongside with some yams for the captain, in return for which he requested a glass of red wine, saying he had received benefit from drinking a drop of that liquor the day before. As they were all prejudiced in favour of the old chief, they beheld with concern that his dissolution might shortly be expected.

Futafaihe and Mytyle, two great chiefs, came between decks, and joined with the brethren in their devotions; they endeavoured to prevail on them to go with them; but at Ambler's persuasion, and promise to learn them the language, they agreed to fix at his house.

In the afternoon the canoe arrived for the missionaries' goods, with which the boat was immediately loaded; Bowell, Buchanan, Goulton, Harper, Shelley, Veeson, and Wilkinson, accompanied by B. Ambler, embarked in it, and proceeded to a place called Aheefo. A petty chief was ordered by Toogahowe to go with them, to take care that nothing should be lost. Kelso, Cooper, and Nobs, remained on board to prepare the other things.

In the morning of the 13th, finding the natives crowd very much about them, and fearing they would be troublesome, a stream anchor was ordered on board. A passage out of this harbour by the north being desirable, either in case of a strong easterly wind, or an attack from the natives, the captain intended going in search of it; accordingly, with a fine breeze from the eastward, they stretched over towards the small

single ones, were prepared to join as soon as the attack commenced. Though this alarming intelligence was suspected to have been a forgery of Ambler's, it was thought expedient to prepare to repel such an attempt, should it happen to take place: the small arms were therefore laid in readiness, the great guns loaded with grape-shot, and every man stationed at his quarters. All the natives were immediately turned out of the ship, except Toogahowe and his attendants, and the canoes ordered from alongside. Observing an unusual stir upon the decks, and the guns levelled at them, the natives obeyed rather hastily, ranging themselves ahead and astern of the ship, seemingly in expectation of their firing a salute, as former navigators might have done. Finding, at last, that this was not intended, they wanted to come alongside again: but only a few single canoes were suffered to approach; nor would they, ever after, permit the double canoes alongside.

island

island of Fastae, and then stood towards Attataa; where, seeing a canoe coming with some of the brethren in her, they anchored in twelve fathoms broken ground.

About three in the afternoon she got alongside; three of the missionaries were on board of her: they said that Aheefo was farther from the ship than they supposed, and the landing with goods was extremely difficult: and after they had got to the beach, they had upwards of a mile to go to the house: hence the landing of the articles was found extremely troublesome, six hours having been fully employed in delivering them safe. They were not in the least molested; and, though it was dark, not an article of their property was lost. It was near one in the morning before every thing was safe, and the house left to themselves.

In the morning the natives provided a breakfast for them, and about nine they set off for the ship, when, the wind being unfavourable, they were six hours in their passage. Every thing was in readiness, therefore the canoe was instantly dispatched, leaving on board sufficient for another landing. And that they might have whatever was thought necessary, Buchanan and Nobs remained on board to take care that they were got in readiness.

The cargo brough on shore was surrounded by about a hundred persons, which created some alarm; but Mytile ordered the chests into a neighbouring house, and dismissed the people, threatening every one with death who should approach to steal. The brethren then slept, in perfect security, upon mats, till waked by Mytile at one in the morning, to partake of an entertainment of fish, hot yams, &c.*

On the 14th, they expected to have but few visitors; but, on the contrary, several canoes

* Before they weighed this morning, they were visited by a woman of rank, attended by a vast number of chiefs and females. This lady was so extremely corpulent, that it was attended with some difficulty to get her on board: three stout fellows followed her, carrying a bundle of cloth, which was presented to the captain in form; who gave her in return what fully satisfied her. The ship being under sail, perhaps less ceremony was used to this great personage than she expected; but she and her train seemed happily engaged in the cabin over the kava bowl for about two hours; when she was informed that the ship had got a considerable distance from her house, which induced her to hasten into the canoe, and sail instantly towards the shore. Here many females possess the highest degree of rank, and support it with becoming dignity.

followed them quite without the reefs; but, on account of the adventure of the preceding night, none of them were admitted on board but Futtaihe, who presented the captain with a fine turtle. He disapproved greatly of the behaviour of his countrymen; said he knew them, but as they did not belong to that part of the island over which he presided, he was not competent to punish them.

Being now without the shoals, they steered towards the west end to be nearer to the brethren, and, at three in the afternoon, the canoe came alongside, with Shelley and Cooper in her. They reported that all was well, and that themselves and those on shore were pleased with their situation, and that they experienced great favour from the natives. The canoe was loaded with what they thought sufficient for their purposes till their return. After some further conversation they took an affectionate leave of each other.

A fresh gale sprung up, which afterwards increased so much, that they could hardly carry double reefed topsails, and they found the ship was driving fast towards the reefs: by the time they were abreast of Attataa they saw clearly, that, except they could fetch the passage they had found out the day before, they could not escape shipwreck: providentially, however, they just weathered the reef on the west side of the channel, and running through with confidence, were soon in perfect safety, and grateful for so signal a deliverance.

They were now in the harbour, but not deeming it eligible to anchor in so hard a gale, as the wind blew fair for them to proceed in their voyage, they steered for the eastern channel out of the harbour, and were once more alarmed with danger. The captain was aloft looking out, and

About midnight, a canoe with four men was observed, lying a head of the ship. Imagining that mischief was their aim, the brethren determined to drive them off without firing shot; and, for that purpose, a quantity of coconut husks was prepared upon the fore-castle. Under cover of a squall, they soon after dropped under the bow, without making the least noise, a volley of the husks was poured upon their heads; the sudden surprise of which caused them all to plunge into the water, whilst the canoe, totally deserted, drifted astern. To intimidate them still farther, a musket was fired over their heads. It being very dark, they presently lost sight of the men, but thinking the canoe would lead to a discovery of the offenders, they lowered the jolly-boat down, and picked her up.

thought

the reefs; but, on the preceding night, the board but Futta- obtain with a fine y of the behaviour knew them, but as part of the island was not competent

moals, they steered er to the brethren, n, the canoe came ooper in her. They nd that themselves d with their situa- nced great favour e was loaded with for their purposes e further conversa- te leave of each

which afterwards in- could hardly carry ey found the ship reefs: by the time x they saw clearly, n the passage they ore, they could not ally, however, they e west side of the h with confidence, and grateful for so

our, but not deca- hard a gale, as the roceed in their vor- tern channel out of ore alarmed with ft looking out, and

four men was observed, g that mischief was their drive them off without e, a quantity of cocoa- ore-castle. Under cover d under the bow, when, olley of the husks was dden surprise of which water, whilst the canoe. To intimidate them still their heads. It being of the men, but thinking y of the offenders, they icked her up.

thought

thought he saw a shoal on the larboard bow; he called to port the helm, but, the appearance remaining, he ordered it a-starboard. That instant they found themselves close to the reef, and running directly for it. After they had been in the utmost peril, the exertions of the crew contributed greatly to their preservation, and they became clear of danger, and had good sea-room: when steering between Eoo-aije and Eaooa, they

proceeded to make the best of their way to the Marquesas. Thus, after the most imminent perils, and the most providential deliverances, they were preserved for the accomplishment of the great work appointed for them. They had humbly planted a seed of divine truth, which they hoped would take root and flourish to the latest generation.

SECTION IV.

Voyage to the Marquesas—Discoveries made—Transactions at Christiana—Occurrences at the Marquesas.

HAVING extricated themselves from the difficulties which surrounded them in Tonga-hoo harbour, the brethren once more passed into the open sea: for the first five days they had favourable winds; but afterwards, during most of the time that they were to the southward of the tropic, they experienced successive gales from the eastward, with high seas, and extreme cold weather. Their Otaheiteans were much affected with the severity of the cold: Harraway, a boy, indeed kept up his spirits, and Tanno Manoo behaved very well; for by conducting herself modestly, affably, and courteously, she was treated with respect by every person on board. Her understanding was naturally good, and very susceptible of improvement; her talents enabling her to be extremely serviceable to Mook, and others who were learning the language. The captain furnished her with a commodious week-day dress, and a more splendid morning gown and petticoat for Sundays.

Tom was extremely apprehensive of dying before he should again see Otaheite; and, in one of the gales, asked the captain if he did not think the ship would die: he was very low-spirited during his passage, and suffered more than the others from cold; he could not be taught to do any thing, and seemed to be remarkably indolent: while Harraway was a very useful boy in the ship. Hence it appears that Harraway and Tanno Manoo are proofs that the Otaheiteans, when young, are capable of receiving instruction.

On the 23d of May they discovered land; on the 24th, at day-light, they stood towards it, and as they drew near, found it very low, and in the form of a crescent, with a lagoon in the middle; into which the sea broke on the south-west side, though no opening appeared capable of admitting a boat. Perceiving that it was inhabited, when they got within a mile of the north-east side, they hove the ship to, and putting two seamen in the jolly boat, with Peter and Otaheitean Tom (who dressed himself in a piece of his own new cloth on the occasion) they rowed towards the shore, intending to land if the natives appeared to be friendly; and to ingratiate themselves into their favour, took looking-glasses, beads, iron tools, and some English coin to leave with them. But, on their approach, the natives assembled to oppose their landing: as they walked along the shore, the women followed them with spears, which they shook in a menacing manner, and significantly warned them to be gone. Tom shewed them his skin, his cloth, and tatou marks, and spoke to them in his own language, which they seemed not to understand. Perceiving that all their manœuvres to conciliate them were ineffectual, and that, approaching so near them as to be able to give them any thing, might expose them to a stone or a spear, and provoke them to fire upon them, they returned to the ship, and hoisting the boat up, steered for the higher island, distant about ten leagues*.

At noon they left crescent island, and had a fresh

* This was named Crescent Island, on account of its form, and is six or seven miles in circumference. Many of Vol. I. No. XLIV.

the wharra trees grew upon it, and some others of a useless kind. The shore is grey coral sand and stones, thrown up

fresh northerly breeze; at three in the afternoon they directed their course north north-west towards an island with two lofty hills, which are conspicuous even at the distance of fourteen or fifteen leagues: these were distinguished by the appellation of Duff's Mountains.

When within about three leagues, they saw a reef ahead, and the sea breaking very high upon it; they were therefore obliged to alter their course to the north north-west, which they supposed would lead them clear of every danger which lay on the east side of the island; but in this they were mistaken; for, after getting a better view, they discovered that Duff's Mountains were part of an island about three leagues in length, with several of considerable height to the south and south-east of it; the whole forming a group of about six leagues long. Upon this reef were several dry spots, whereon grew clusters of trees. It was now the dusk of the evening; and, being apprehensive that dangers might lie in their way, they resolved to spend the night within the space they already knew; and accordingly hauled their wind to the north-east under an easy sail. The natives on the north end of the island, having observed their approach, made a large fire to alarm their countrymen; which at times presented a very curious phenomenon; and as it was kept burning till almost day-break, it proved very beneficial to the adventurers as a guide; the night being extremely dark, attended with variable winds and heavy rain.

At six in the morning the north part of the islands bore north-west, distant about three leagues: towards the northernmost part of the reef, they observed a small islet, upon which were assembled about fifty natives, armed with spears; they also perceived some boys taking stones off the beach, and assuming attitudes as if they meant to throw them at our adventurers: the men also exhibited tokens of a hostile disposition, but they at length retired behind the trees. The main island, and those scattered about it, are high, and present a view romantic,

by the violence of the sea, forming a wall to the south-east point. The natives whom they saw, were about twenty-five in number, including three or four women with children at their backs. They are of a light copper colour, and of a middling stature. Some of them were quite naked, except a piece of cloth round their middle; others had a piece of cloth thrown over their shoulders, and extending half

wild, and barren: the valleys, however, appeared covered with trees; but of what kind they could not accurately distinguish, though cocoa-nut trees were said to be distinguished among others.

The group was denominated Gambier's Islands in honour of the worthy admiral so named. Duff's Mountains lie in the centre.

The passage from the Friendly Isles having already been longer than was expected, the captain thought it necessary to push on for the Marquesas. On the 26th, at break of day, they thought they saw low land ahead, seemingly very close; they wore ship and stood from it about a quarter of an hour, and tacked towards it again, when the day presented to their view the imminent danger they had escaped; for the part which they were running for, and many others, were even with the water's edge, and they might have struck before they saw the rocks, or heard the sea beat upon them, so little noise was heard. This island is about seventeen miles in length, and nine in breadth, and has several clumps of trees upon it; but no fruit trees or inhabitants were seen.

In the afternoon of the 28th they discovered a low island bearing north-east; as they drew near, they found it a lagoon island, with patches of trees on different parts. On the north-west end some cocoa-nuts were growing, and near them a clump of high dark-coloured trees. In the morning of the 29th, they were farther off than they expected, owing principally to a leewardly current. Shortly after it fell little wind, and they tried to effect a landing by rowing close to the shore; but they found it impracticable, the high surf beating so violently upon the coral rocks. In expectation of finding a better place, they rowed two or three miles more along the shore; but finding it every where the same, they thought proper to return to the ship. Seeing no signs of inhabitants, and despairing of finding a landing place, the captain came to a resolution of proceeding on his voyage.

In the course of the night they passed to the windward of the island, and about six in the

way down the leg. One, who was probably a chief, had a piece of white cloth round his head like a turban. They have neither bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, nor any other fruit tree, nor was any thing perceived on the island to denote that they procured an existence by fishing: they must therefore be either transient visitors, or their situation must be wretched beyond conception.

morning

been once inhabited; but whether the persons had emigrated elsewhere, or were become extinct, could only be a matter of conjecture. One circumstance, however, is very striking, that however small in number the wretched refugees might have been, they considered a morai, or place of worship, as indispensibly necessary.

From this period nothing material occurred till they made the Marquesas; trusting wholly to their time-keeper, they found themselves, after so long a passage, considerably to the westward.

On the 5th of June, when they got within four miles of Resolution bay, they saw two men paddling towards them in a small wretched canoe, which could only be kept above water by constant bailing. Not knowing their intention to come on board, they kept all sail set, and passed close by them with great velocity: this being observed, one of them leaped into the water, caught a rope which was hove to him, and expertly hauled himself hand over hand to the quarter gallery, where they took him in quite naked. At first he surveyed the cabin with surprise, but presently recovered himself and ran upon deck. He was so completely tattooed from head to foot, that his natural colour was hardly to be distinguished. He talked fluently, and was tolerably understood by Crook and the Otaheiteans: the earnestness which he had manifested, was to induce them to tack and pick up his comrade, who was his father; and that if he did not take him in, he could not reach the island in so wretched a canoe, as the wind blew strong. To remove his fears, they took the father on board, and the canoe in tow; but she soon went to pieces and drifted away, a circumstance which seemed to give them little concern. These two natives, by the advice they gave, which was minutely attended to, gave evident proof of their possessing no small degree of nautical skill.

They found it difficult to work up the bay, on account of the heavy gust of wind from the mountains; however, by seven o'clock, they were close up, and let go their small bower anchor in fifteen fathom water. Two females now swam off, expecting perhaps a favourable reception, but, finding they could not be admitted, they kept swimming about the ship for about half an hour, called out in a plaintive tone,

Weheine! Weheine!—Woman! Woman! They then returned to the shore, when two of the ship's company followed them, who were extremely urgent for the captain to permit them to sleep in the ship; which he would readily have complied with, as a reward for their implicit confidence, had it not been to avoid a precedent.

Their first visitors from the shore, on the 6th, were seven beautiful young women, swimming almost naked about the ship; a few green leaves tied round the middle, being their only covering. For about three hours they were thus engaged, vociferating Weheine, till several of the native men had got on board; one of whom being the chief of the island, entreated that his sister might be taken in, which was complied with: she was fair, with a yellowish cast, and had a tint of red glowing on her cheek; she was rather stout, but possessed great symmetry of features, in which particular she was nearly equalled by her companions. Their Otaheitean lady was fair, and comely; but she was greatly eclipsed by these women, and seemed to feel her inferiority in no very small degree: but she was their superior in amiableness of manners, and possessed more of the softness and delicacy of the sex. She was abashed to see a woman quite naked upon the deck, and supplied her with a complete dress of new Otaheitean cloth; which encouraged those in the water, who were now very numerous, to importune for admission. Influenced by compassion, and seeing they would not return, our adventurers took them on board, but they could not all be equally gratified, as clothes could not be provided for them; nor would the mischievous goats permit them to retain their green leaves, free from mutilation.

The chief already noticed is named Tenege, eldest son of Honoo, who was reigning prince in Captain Cook's time: he arrived in a respectable canoe, and introduced himself by presenting the captain with a staff, about eight feet in length, on which a few locks of human hair were neatly plaited: this present was accompanied with a few ornaments for the head and breast. Perceiving a musquet on the quarter-deck, he carefully took it to the captain, and requested him "to put it to sleep." He received an axe, a looking-glass, a neck chain to hang it to, and a pair of scissars. Though the latter

an! Woman! They when two of the men, who were exact to permit them to would readily have l for their implicit to avoid a prece-

the shore, on the 6th, women, swimming; a few green leaves their only covering. were thus engaged, several of the native of whom being the ated that his sister was complied with; wish cast, and had her check; she was great symmetry of lar she was nearly

Their Otaheitean but she was greatly d seemed to feel her degree: but she was ss of manners, and ss and delicacy of to see a woman quite supplied her with a Otaheitean cloth; which ater, who were now e for admission. In- d seeing they would took them on board, equally gratified, as ided for them; nor ts permit them to re- from mutilation.

ed is named Tenae, was reigning prince arrived in a respect- d himself by present- about eight feet in ocks of human hair resent was accompa- s for the head and quet on the quarter- to the captain, and sleep." He received eck chain to hang it. Though the latter article

article is much prized at the Friendly and Society isles, he was perfectly indifferent about it, and entirely ignorant of their use.

This appeared to be a time of scarcity among them, as they were continually complaining of hunger, and requesting food; to some they gave a little, but it was impossible to supply them all. The women were in that wretched state of subjection, that if they were favoured with any thing, and could not find means to conceal it, the men were so destitute of gallantry as to take it from them. Towards evening, those who had not canoes, amounting by far to the greatest number, plunged into the water and swam on shore.

It having been mentioned to the chief by the brethren, that two of them were to settle among them, he seemed exceedingly delighted with the proposal, and declared he would give them a house, and a share of all he had.

After this he went on shore, followed by Mr. Harris, Mr. Crook, Peter, Otaheitean Tom, &c. Tenae received them upon the beach, and conducting them a little way, desired them to stop; when some of the natives formed a ring round them, while those who were nearest the centre were sitting, to enable those behind them to look over their heads. This exhibition continued about a quarter of an hour; after which the adventurers proceeded up the valley, accompanied by the chief, his brother, and several of the young natives. The road was very steep and indifferent; which induced them to rest three times before they reached the chief's mansion, and each time slaked their thirst with excellent water, in cocoa-nut shells from a rivulet that runs down the valley. Tenae conducted them to one of the best houses, intimating that it was for the use of the brethren, and they might occupy it as soon as they pleased. It was twenty-feet long, and about six wide, ten feet high behind, and four feet in front: the door is about the middle, on the low side. The greater part of their houses are miserable hovels.

The inside furniture consisted of floor mat, extending from end to end, some large calabashes, fishing-tackle, and a few spears: at one end the chief kept his principal ornaments which

* It was remarked that honesty is not considered a virtue among the South Sea Islanders, especially if articles are exposed to tempt them. On the night of the 6th, they shifted

he exhibited; among other things, he shewed them two bamboo cases, and two bunches of feathers from the tail of the tropic bird, each of which contained at least a hundred.

Nothing of food was offered, except a few cocoa-nuts; nor was any thing of the kind observed, but those and sour mahie. Some few hogs and fowls, indeed, were seen walking about. Provision was extremely scarce; this was signified when our adventurers first landed, by a fellow who ran to one of the brethren, and stuffed a piece of mahie into his mouth, thinking, that, at this season of scarcity, he was doing him a great kindness.

On their return to the ship, the captain met the two brethren in the cabin, to know their sentiments respecting their settlement upon it. Mr. Crook said they had received encouragement, and the chief had behaved exceedingly well; that he never before nor since his engagement, had comforts in view, and, though there was then a kind of dearth in the island, plentiful seasons might perhaps follow. Mr. Harris's sentiments were entirely contrary to those of Mr. Crook, he disapproved of every thing that had been stated, and declared the scene before him was a very solemn one; his ardour and firmness seemed absolutely to have forsaken him. It was agreed, however, to go on shore the next day, take their beds with them, and make a trial; after which they might return, if events should not answer their expectations*.

In the evening Mr. Crook landed, with his bed and a few clothes; Mr. Harris declined going, having several small parcels to pack up, for the convenience of taking them up the valley. Tenae himself received on the beach, Mr. Crook, and another of the brethren, and treated them with respect and kindness. They proceeded up the valley, followed by a vast concourse of people, some of whom carried the baggage, and deposited it in the house intended for the brethren; and afterwards to another house of larger dimensions, about a hundred yards distant from the first. This house stood on a square platform, raised with stones, with a wall six-feet high, on the lowest side; (all of them being built upon a declivity;) a sort of escutcheon ap-

the glass cover off one of the best compasses, stole the card and needle, and fitted the cover on as before.

pears in the inside in memory of Honoo, the chief's father. A drum, somewhat in the Otaheitean stile, but much longer, adorns each end*.

In the forenoon the captain received a letter from Crook, expressing his approbation of his new lodging. When night drew on, he was left to his repose, and, after recommending himself to the care of the Almighty, he went to rest, laying his clothes upon the ground near his hammock; but when he awoke in the morning, not an article of them was to be seen; he was therefore on the point of uttering very unjust surmises, when the chief entered with every thing that was missing, carefully wrapped up in a bundle.

Soon after the receipt of the letter, Tenae, Crook, and the chief's brother came on board, and were received very kindly in the cabin. The captain made Tenae a present of a decorated crown, which delighted him exceedingly: he also gave him a peice of cloth, a hammer, and some gimlets; a large conch-shell also gave him particular satisfaction; for which they barter eagerly, pigs, or any thing: one of them gave the cook a broad axe for a corch.

Tenae, who was now more familiar than at his first visit, surveyed the cabin with a considerable degree of attention. Happening accidentally to touch the wire of the cabin bell, he was struck with astonishment: he rang it again, and again, each time expressing his wonder whence the tinkling sound proceeded†.

In the afternoon Mr. Godsall landed a chest, and several parcels for the Missionaries, which

* At a little distance, on the same platform, another house presents itself, built on a small eminence, leaving a space in front, where two rude wooden figures of men are placed, nearly as large as life. Against the side of the house, three other escutcheons are placed. The house had no door or opening of any kind; but excited by curiosity, one of the brethren opened a hole on the side of it, and beheld a coffin fixed upon two stakes, about a yard from the ground. At this moment Tenae came up, and seeing he was not angry, he again opened the hole, and pointed to the coffin. He instantly cried Honoo! and repeated it several times, plainly signifying that it was his father, pleased at seeing him notice the honours he had paid to his memory. This sepulchre, Crook's house, the trees, and every thing within the platform, was taboo, and must not be approached by women.

On the 8th, the natives crowded on board; the females

were safely taken to the house. Tom and Haraway remained on shore this night, their service being required by Crook.

On the 9th the pinnacle was sent on shore again, with more necessaries: Crook, resolving to stay, attached himself to the place, began to eat sour mahie, and contented himself with the food the island afforded, though not of a very delicate kind: but he consoled himself with thinking, that he should be able to procure porpoise once or twice a week, with fresh fish as often as he pleased, and regretted not the absence of Otaheitean delicacies. Tenae had adopted him as his son, an act which is ever after held sacred.

On the 10th, at two in the morning, the moon was totally eclipsed, but the roughness of the weather prevented an accurate observation of it. On the 12th the chief and his brothers came on board with Otaheitean Tom, who informed them that the boy, Haraway, had left them, and gone to the other side of the island; and as he had mentioned nothing of his having such an intention, they supposed he meant to remain there, for which Tom censured him severely; but the captain, in order to prove the reality of Tom's pretended great regard for his country, ordered him to put his things into the canoe and go on shore also, at the same time intimating that he was privy to Haraway's elopement. The poor fellow, with tears in his eyes, declared his innocence, collected his trifles, and put them into the canoe, then sorrowfully shook hands with the crew. He put off, full of the most poignant distress, and having gone a little way the captain called him back again, but it was

were as numerous, and at the same time as naked, as before, which induced the brethren to bestow upon each piece of Otaheitean cloth. Let it however, be observed that these women dress decently on shore; but when it is necessary for them to swim, their cloth will not stand in water; it is therefore the general practice to leave it behind and supply its place with a proper quantity of leaves.

† It was interesting to see the seamen, while they were pairing the rigging, attended by a group of the most favoured females, who were employed to pass the ball, carry the tar-bucket, &c. This they performed with the greatest assiduity, often besmearing themselves with the tar in the most novel occupation. No ship's company without a wonderful portion of chastity, could ever have resisted such temptations. Some of them would probably have offended, had they not been over-awed by the jealousy of the officers and the prudent conduct of their messmates.

c. Tom and Har
night, their service

was sent on shore
: Crook, resolving
the place, began to
ed himself with the
ough not of a very
solved himself with
able to procure por
fresh fish as often
t the absence of Ot
had adopted him
after held sacred.
e morning, the moon
he roughness of the
ate observation of
his brothers came
who informed them
had left them, and
he island; and as he
his having such a
he meant to remain
sured him severely
prove the reality
ard for his country
ings into the canoe
same time intimating
araway's elopement
in his eyes, declare
trifles, and put the
owfully shook hands
off, full of the moon
ng gone a little way
ck again, but it was

ame time as naked, as he
n to bestow upon each
it however, he observed
on shore; but when it
ar cloth will not stand
practice to leave it behind
quantity of leaves.
eamen, while they were
group of the most favo
pass the ball, carry it
formed with the greater
selves with the tar in the
company without a word
er have resisted such tempt
obably have offended, b
e jealousy of the other
messmates.

some time before he resumed his usual cheerful-
ness*.

Nothing of importance occurred till the 20th, when Messrs. Harris and Crook came on board, and held a meeting with the captain respecting their stay. Mr. Harris complained of the poverty of the place, declared he could not eat the mahie, &c. Crook expressed a determination to stay, even though Mr. Harris should desert him. The result of this conference was, that both went on shore to make further trial before their departure.

On the 22d a native stole the cook's axe; after the fact he saw the pinnace chasing him, but he paddled to the rocks, ran into the bushes, and got clear off. On the 24th, a fisherman swam off at break of day, and informed them that Mr. Harris had been on the beach all the night with his chest, and had been robbed of several things. This affair was little credited at first; supposing Mr. Harris could not have been so imprudent as to bring his property down without sending notice, that a boat might be ready to receive them. But, on enquiry, the truth was what had been related. He had come down in the evening: and as no person from the ship was on shore, the boats being employed at the anchor, and the ship too far off to hail, he spent the night sitting on his chest: at four in the morning, the natives drove him from the chest, as he supposed, that they might steal his property; and, imagining his life in danger, he fled to the adjacent hills. Mr. Falconer, who went to bring him off, found him in a very pitiable plight, appearing like one almost deprived of his senses. The surf was so high that they could not land, and were therefore obliged to haul the chest and its owner off by a means of a

* While the brethren were at dinner on the 13th, one of the natives stole a pump-bolt, but he was detected and secured by Mr. Godsall. The rest all jumped overboard and escaped. The thief was lashed up, and, being shown a loaded musquet, fully expected to be shot. A man of some consequence, who had come in the same canoe, brought the chief's second brother, with two pigs and a plantain-leaf, to plead for the offender, who was his father, but his suit was rejected. It was affecting to observe the farewell scene between the father and son; but to put a period to their anguish, the musquet was discharged, and the culprit liberated. Dumb gratitude deprived the astonished pair of the power of utterance, they were so completely overwhelmed with joy. A solemn warning was, however, given them, to avoid such practices in future, and they

rope. The principal reasons he gave for leaving his partner so abruptly, besides those already mentioned, were such as he might naturally have expected. Tenae it seems, wished to treat them with an excursion to another valley, to which Crook agreed, but Mr. Harris would not consent. The chief seeing this, and not considering any favour too great, he left him his wife, to be treated as if she were his own, till the chief returned—"Mr. Harris told him, that he did not want the woman; however, she looked up to him as her husband, and finding herself treated with neglect, became doubtful of his sex, and acquainted some of the other females with her suspicion, who accordingly came in the night, when he slept, and satisfied themselves concerning that point, but not in such a peaceable way but that they awoke him. Discovering so many strangers he was greatly terrified; and perceiving what they had been doing, was determined to leave a place where the people were so abandoned and given up to wickedness: a cause which should have excited a contrary resolution."

It having been mentioned to Crook that the captain was preparing for his departure, he remained steadfast in his resolution of staying in the island, desiring only such implements of husbandry, and other things, as would contribute to render him useful among the people; observed that his happiness would have been greater, had his situation been with a friendly and agreeable assistant, who might have comforted him in the time of trouble; but, as the Lord had ordered things otherwise, he would resign himself to his fatherly care, and rest in his promises, rather than quit a station where a door of usefulness was so evidently opened †.

were sent on shore with the pigs, which the brethren would not deign to accept; thus giving them the most convincing proofs that their motives were disinterested.

† Crook is a young man of twenty-two years of age, serious, steady, and ever employed in the improvement of his mind. He applied diligently to the attainment of the language. He is a youth of understanding, and will doubtless contrive many things that will be beneficial to the poor creatures among whom he lives. He has various kinds of garden-seeds, implements, medicines, books, &c. His manly behaviour, on taking an affectionate farewell, did him great credit: the tears glistened in his eyes, but did not fall, "nor did he betray the least sign of fear to enter upon his new work alone."

At four in the morning of the 27th, they weighed, and stood out of the bay, with a light air easterly. Respecting the customs and manners of the people about Resolution Bay, we know little; but Crook, from his knowledge of the language, collected the following few particulars.

Their religious ceremonies resemble those of the Society Islands. They have a morai in each district, where the dead are generally buried under large stones: they have a multitude of deities. They only offer hogs in sacrifice, and never men.

The chief Tenae presides over four districts, Ohitahoo, Taheway, and Innamei, all opening into Resolution Bay, and Onopoho, the adjoining valley to the southward.

There is no regular government, established law, or punishments; but custom is the general rule.

They have no regular meals, but eat when

they are hungry, and not a great quantity at a time. The women are not allowed to eat hogs, and are probably under other prohibitions as at Otaheite. They are employed in making cloth and matting; but not in cookery, except for themselves.

The chief is said to have three wives: the youngest is with him here, the others in different parts of the island. He has several children, some of which live with him here, the others with their mothers.

Their diseases are few, and they are at present happily free from that fatal malady which has made such ravages in the Society Islands.

Their women are rather of low stature, though well proportioned, and their general colour inclining to brown. Some of them were almost as fair as Europeans, on the first arrival of our adventurers; but became afterwards quite dark-coloured, by exposing themselves to the sun in coming off to the ship.

SECTION V.

Return from the Marquesas to Otaheite, with the Transactions during their Absence—Transactions during their Continuance at Otaheite—Return to Tongataboo—Occurrences during their Absence.

ON the 29th of June, the brethren having bent their course for the Society Islands, they proceeded on their voyage with a favourable gale. On the 3d of July they fell in with Tiooke, a lagoon island, many of which are disseminated in this part of the ocean, and render the navigation dangerous in dark weather. Smoke was observed ascending in several parts, and two men were seen following us along shore: they appeared dark coloured, with a piece of cloth tied round their middle, and each had a spear in his hand. When a lieutenant and the two Mr. Forster's landed here, two islanders

received them by touching noses; a common mode of salutation all over the South Sea*.

The following Journal will give an accurate statement of their proceedings while they were absent.

March 26, The ship quitted the bay of Mata via this day, and was soon out of sight. The brethren who last departed from the ship in a canoe, had an unpleasant return, and landed at a distance, but they got to their companions in the evening, and received their canoe and its contents the following day.

27th. Brother Puckey informed the brethren

* At seven in the morning, on the 6th of July, they saw the high land of Otaheite; and at noon, they ran between the Dolphin bank and Point Venus reef, and came to anchor in Matevai bay in thirteen fathoms water. The natives crowded off, all happy to see them; the brethren followed in a flat bottomed boat, which had been prepared for passing the shallow entrance of the river. A report was spread which afforded great satisfaction; they had, in general, enjoyed good health. The natives continued the same respectful behaviour they had hitherto shewn, and

daily supplied them abundantly with provisions. Respecting the purposes of the mission, they could at present only say, that appearances were encouraging. Though rooted in the traditions and prejudices of their ancestors, they supposed them docible; and they had already restrained the natural levity of the natives, and so overawed them that they seldom attempted to perform a heeva within their hearing. When they came near on the Sabbath, they always behaved with decency. In their dress they exhibited much improvement on the side of modesty.

respectful

great quantity at a
allowed to eat hog;
prohibitions as at
d in making cloth
okery, except for

three wives: the
e others in different
several children,
here, the others

they are at present
malady which has
society Islands.
low stature, though
general colour in-
them were almost as
first arrival of our
erwards quite dark-
helves to the sun in

presence—Transactions
ing their Absence.

noses; a common
the South Sea*.

will give an accurate
ings while they were

ted the bay of Mata-
out of sight. The
from the ship in
return, and landed
their companions in
their canoe and its

informed the brethren

with provisions. Respec-
they could at present only
uraging. Though rooted
of their ancestors, they
had already restrained
d so overawed them that
rm a heave within them
on the Sabbath, they
their dress they exhibi-
f modesty.

respecting

respecting Eimeo, and the vessel there which he
had been to examine. As Manne Manne and his
people had been extremely friendly, he recom-
mended that they should launch the vessel, and
bring her to Matavia Bay to be completed.
Puckey and Cock were appointed to go to Eimeo
for this purpose. A consultation was held on
Micklewright's conduct: the majority were of
opinion, that, if he professed repentance, he
should be received. Others thought he ought
to have been wholly separated from them as a
hypocrite.

28th. A large present of provisions received
from Pomarre, and Iddeah, with a promise of
constant supply.

29th. Daily visited by the king, queen, Iddeah,
and many of the natives. Some of the Otaheiti-
ans speak many English words, and are eager
to be taught more. Provisions pour in upon
them; a gracious providence evidently favours
their design.

31st. Complained to the king and queen of the
ravastations committed by rats: four cats were
therefore instantly sent.

April 1. Visited by the king and queen, and
Mawron, the husband of Pomarre's sister: a
man of good sense, and great authority.

2d. Multitudes attended our worship, but for
want of an interpreter they could not address
us: they silently attended our preaching and
administration of the Lord's Supper.

3d. Engaged three Otaheiteans to assist in
cooking, and in the management of the hogs.
The king and queen brought a quantity of cocoa-
nuts to brother Cover and his wife, desiring to
become their adopted children. The quantity of
provisions poured in upon us, is incredible. We
have not less than a waggon-load of fruit, with
multitudes of hogs and poultry. "Surely the
Lord hath done this."

4th. At a quarter past eight, assembled for
our monthly prayer meeting.

5th. The royal visitors have taken up their
abode at Matavia, in order to be near them.

Pomarre and Iddeah came at noon, went into the mar-
ried brethren's apartment, and found them conversing with
arreoies on the crime of murdering infants. Iddeah was
pressed on the subject, who was then pregnant by a
man who cohabited with her: they endeavoured to con-
vince her of the horrid guilt of murder, especially in a
mother, and promised to receive the child immediately.

Vol. I. No. XLV.

6th. Early this morning Otoo sent ten men to
prepare wood for the blacksmith's shop. The
brethren, returning from Eimeo, report that they
have been kindly received by the natives, who
avoided stealing and readily assisted us. Brother
J. Puckey, on the Lord's day, had addressed
them. They heard attentively, and admitted
that it was *very good*, but that it would be useless
for them to change their religion, as the bre-
thren and the *Book* would go away. We pro-
mised to return again to teach them very soon.
They said, if any of the chiefs embraced our
religion, they should follow.

Micklewright's conduct distressed us: regard-
less of remonstrances, he would not keep from
the natives.

8th. One of the arreoies, the tayo of brother
Henry, came to us with his pregnant wife: they
were taking leave of us, to destroy the infant
which should be born, according to the rules of
that diabolical society. The wife, with true
maternal tenderness, wished to spare the infant,
but the brutal chief was resolute to the contrary,
though he acknowledged it a bloody deed. They
offered to erect them a house for their pregnant
women, and to take such children under their
immediate care. For such an unnatural act, they
threatened to exclude them for ever from their
friendship, and assured him that the Eatoo, their
God, would also punish him. The brethren failed
not to open to him the wrath of God against all
ungodliness and unrighteousness of men. On this
he walked off dejected. A few days afterwards
he promised, if the child was born alive, that he
would bring it to them, and, on another visit,
renewed his promise.

9th. Brother Lewis preached from *Thou shalt
not kill*, to the king, and a great number of the
natives, who heard him attentively, and said,
"Good is the word of Britain, not to kill chil-
dren, not to sacrifice men*."

They renewed their attempts with Iddeah, de-
sired her to suffer their women to take care of
her child, and that her example would have the
happiest

She was sullen, and made no reply. They then requested
Pomarre to suppress such acts of inhumanity, and the
offerings of human sacrifices. He said Captain Cook had
declared, that such things ought not to be done, but did
not stay long enough to instruct them. One of the bre-
thren then informed them, that they were come for that ex-
press purpose. He warned them that if they despised their

6 T

Instructions,

happiest effects upon the nation. Knowing her eagerness for European cloth, they promised her three shirts, and many other articles, when the ship arrived, and that they would report her conduct to Queen Charlotte and the British earl ladies. She said, "the child was base born; had it been Pomarre's, it should have lived;"—and marched off with her paramour, who heard the conversation with indifference.

In the afternoon they addressed the natives through the interpreter. Among their auditors was Mawroa, the husband of Pomarre's sister. In conversation he declared, he was resolved to throw away the gods that could neither hear, nor see, nor speak, and worship the English God.

12th. Iddeah appeared again in public, and intelligence was received that she had murdered her new-born babe. The brethren therefore resolved, to shew their detestation of her conduct, that no more presents should be received from her. Commenced a weekly lecture.

13th. Pomarre and Iddeah came with a present of hogs and vegetables. The articles from Pomarre were thankfully accepted; those from Iddeah were rejected, and the reasons assigned. She was much offended, said she had a right to do with her own children as she pleased; and walked off with her *toutou*. Her unnatural crime did not pass wholly unpunished; a dreadful milk abscess brought her under the surgeon's knife. As we refused Iddeah's present, we desired Manne Manne to distribute it to the natives; instead of which he conveyed it to his own house.

This, however, is but one among the many *unnatural crimes* which we dare not name, committed daily without the idea of shame or guilt.

It is remarkable, that Iddeah had not been more than two days absent from our residence, when she appeared as if nothing had ailed her; so little inconvenience arises from the most painful operations of nature in this benign climate.

16th. This day they thrice addressed the natives by their interpreter: they were attentive,

instructions, and continued in their wicked practices, they should leave them and repair to another island, where they could hope for more attention. Pomarre seemed evidently affected with what had been said, and promised to exert his authority to put an end to these practices. Manne Manne came in during this conversation, when he was frankly informed, that if he offered any more human sacrifices, he would forfeit their friendship. He replied, that he certainly

but as soon as they retired, they fell, like children, to their own light amusements. The Lord grant the seed sown may take firmer root in their hearts!

18th. The shop being finished, and brother Hodges and Hassel at work, the natives crowded round them, though much frightened with the sparks, and the hissing of the iron in water. Pomarre was highly delighted with the bellow and forge; and, catching the dirty blacksmith in his arms, heartily joined noses with him.

20th. A native stole a box containing nails, of which he was confined three hours, and afterwards liberated; but severe vengeance was threatened against future thefts.

21st. Two of the brethren went with three natives to procure wood: they went up the valley, which is about seven miles long, and quarter of a mile broad, through which a river on a little descent meanders slowly. High perpendicular mountains appear on each side, covered with shrubs and trees, where parrots, parakeets, and a grey thrush which warbles delightfully, build their nests. The natives are numerous and flourishing, and have provisions in profusion. Several of them, however, are infected with that horrible disease which Europeans have probably left them*.

At their return, brother Henry preached to the natives; and when he had finished his discourse, Manne Manne satirically observed, "they gave them plenty of the word of God but not of many other things."

24th. Drew up rules for every day's work: the bell to ring at six; to be assembled for prayer in half an hour; to employ themselves till ten in various occupations; from ten to the to be devoted to mental improvement; from the till night at their usual employment; bell to ring at seven for prayer.

27th. Five of them went to Eimeo with Manne Manne to finish the vessel. The brethren Eimeo were most hospitably entertained. Having an address translated, brother Cover read it

would not. He was then informed, that the Lord knew his heart, whether he was sincere in his promises.

* Staying at a house till the rest returned, having been little fatigued, the kind inhabitant presented his wife to the brethren. Begging to be excused from that fare he instantly prepared a hog, which was ready when his companions came from the mountains.

they fell, like children, into the arms of the natives. The Lord's root in the

ished, and brother the natives crowded the iron in water with the bellow the dirty blacksmiths with him.

containing nails, for six hours, and after the vengeance was taken.

men went with them, they went up the mountain miles long, and through which a river flows slowly. High peaks on each side, covered where parrots, parrots, which warbles delightfully, the natives are numerous.

have provisions, but, however, are a disease which Europeans

Henry preached, but had finished his course, and was observed, that the word of God was

for every day's work, to be assembled to employ themselves; from ten to the improvement; from the employment; bell to

to Eimeo with Manuel. The brethren were entertained. Having read it

med, that the Lord is in his promises. The rest returned, having been presented his wife, and he excused from that time, which was ready when his

ins.

them; after which they sung, "Salvation, O the joyful Sound, &c." Set off for Otaheite; slept uncomfortably at Popo bay in the canoe*.

2d. Their monthly prayer meeting. On this occasion the following passage was inserted in one of their journals. "O Lord, how greatly hast thou honoured me, that thousands of thy dear children should be praying for me, a worm! Lord, thou hast set me in a heathen land, but a land, if I may so speak, flowing with milk and honey. O put more grace and gratitude into my poor cold heart, and grant that I may never with Jeshurun grow fat and kick."

3d. Visited, and their wants supplied; by the king and queen. Our stock of hogs now increased to seventy. One of the sheep produced a fine young ram lamb, which was much wanted.

5th. Held a meeting preparatory to the communion. Brother Lewis examined every one with great fidelity and tenderness. A happy openness of mind, and melting of heart prevailed. This was a truly profitable meeting: we experienced something of the healing and refreshing presence of God with us.

7. Visited by Temarree, a chief priest from Papara: he is called an Eatooa, and sometimes the man of the Eatooa: he was dressed in a wrapper of Otaheitean cloth, with an officer's coat doubled round him. Being timid, at his approach, he was invited in, and at breakfast asked to partake of the repast; but he first solemnly held out his hand with a bit of plantain, as an offering to the Eatooa, which one of the natives said they must receive. When they had taken it from him, and laid it under the table, he sat down, and made a hearty meal.

Brother Cover read the translated address to the guests, the natives listening with attention, and particularly the priest; but he appeared displeased at the idea of turning away their false gods.

9th. Temarree accompanied the king and

* On the way they saw the tuppapow of Oranah, in a sitting posture, clothed in red cloth; a native constantly attending to offer food to the mouth of the corpse, which not being received, he eats it himself. Reached home after twelve o'clock, very much fatigued.

29th, 30th. Going to the Blacksmith's shop, a chief was observed peeping in; being asked why he did not enter, he said he was terrified, and angry with the fire for spitting at him.

† On their return, brother Bromhall was affected with a cold, and a slight fever; which was said, by one of the

queen, and staid to dine. He is of the royal race, and son of Oberoa. He is also high in esteem as a priest. His name of Eatooa engrossed much of their conversation. They told him the Eatooa could not die, as he must.

14th. The tayo of Puckey returned from Oparre, bringing with him a present; they declined accepting it till the next morning, this being the Lord's day.

15th. Our brethren returned in consequence of their letters.

16th. The account they give is, that they made the circuit of the greater peninsula, and entered Tiaraboo: then they returned by the south, and were every where kindly received. Pomarre, and the king and queen, wished to have detained them, not meaning themselves to return to Matavia till the ship came. Morning and evening the king, or some of the people, reminded them of prayer, and joined with them attentively; but sometimes the natives were noisy and irregular.

Every where they were treated sumptuously, sometimes on a table, in the English fashion. One of the brethren, however, exclaimed, "Yet all this kindness is not the gospel: were we as gods among them, we should be wretched, if they believed not our message".

Entering Tiaraboo, they visited Pomarre's youngest son at Matowee, his district, which is populous, and in high cultivation†.

In this excursion they visited a chief, whose house was stocked with wooden gods, of different denominations: the god of the Sun, Moon, Stars, Men, Women, Children, &c. Each had a sword, axe, or hammer in his hand, to slay those who should offend him, unless they offered a sacrifice or atonement for their crime.

Many succeeding days are only marked with common occurrences: to-day our sister Henry increased our number with a healthy female child, after a safe delivery‡.

29th

priests, to have proceeded from the anger of the Otaheitean Eatooa, who certainly would kill him. Bromhall said, their pretended God was a bad God, that their Jehovah had sent it, and would remove it the next day. The declaration was instantly spread among the natives, and Bromhall began to fear he had spoken too hastily of his recovery, and that God might be dishonoured if his illness increased: he therefore looked up earnestly to God in prayer to heal him. Fortunately he had a refreshing night's sleep, and on the morrow found himself recovered.

‡ 25th. After divine service in the evening, W. Puckey

523

29th. Resolved to erect a building, for Mr. Lewis to print a Vocabulary and Grammar.

30th. Manne Manne sent his tayo, Mr. Cover, a double canoe, three goats, and twenty fowls.

Intimations were given that Micklewright and the Swede intend to seize Manne Manne's vessel, as soon as she is ready for sea, and make for Port Jackson.

June 4th. Enjoyed the ordinance of the Lord's Supper, a large body of natives assembling. Read an address translated by the Swede, which they understood, and expressed their approbation of it.

7th. Natives living with the brethren found to be pilferers: one of them acknowledged having taken a large axe and a checked shirt. Other thefts were committed. Slight punishments and reprimands ensued.

9th. Dr. Gilham had his clothes stole while he was bathing. The thief was pursued, taken, and chained to a pillar of the house, but he contrived to go off with the padlock. He was again recovered but dismissed. Though these wretches will run any risk to steal, they hardly ever use what they get, but lay it up.

11th. Brother Cover baptized the infant daughter of brother Henry, and preached a judicious discourse on the subject. A white woman producing a child among them occasioned much joy; and the natives were very fond of it. A heeva commencing on the other side of the river, the performers were ordered to desist. They immediately left off dancing, declaring they would do so no more, as it was the God of Pretane's day.

They walked up the valley about a mile, and sat down under a tree; the natives also flocked round them and sat down. The brethren sung a hymn, and prayed for the salvation of the heathen, in which themselves joined in attitude *.

says, he walked with a native, and, from the survey of the beautiful scene around them, he took occasion to discourse of him who made all these things. He admitted that the God of Pretane made all things there, but not at Otaheite; that one of their gods ascended, and stuck the stars in the sky; and that Mawwa, a powerful being, limits and regulates the sun with ropes that it may not go faster than he pleases. Puckey endeavoured to ridicule these absurdities of their priests; and, pointing to the house of Oparre, assured him that the Gods there were only the work of men's hands; mere superstitious idols. Such are the pretended great Gods Ooroo, Tane, and Taroo, which are

14th. Visited by Mawroa, with an abundant supply of vegetables, and accompanied by three arroeies, all extremely fat and tattooed all over. This society wander continually from island to island. They are the most personable men that we have seen, and each of them is said to have two or three wives, which they exchange frequently, and inhumanly murder every infant that is produced among them. When they demand any thing, they must not be denied. They never labour, but live by plunder, and are highly respected, as none but persons of rank are permitted among them.

On the 24th, several natives came from other districts where bread-fruit was become scarce, to gather some from the trees in Matavia; when those of the district, considering the brethren as proprietors, complained to them, saying, if such things were permitted there would be no fruit left. Two of their body were dispatched to talk with them on this business, who claimed an exclusive right to all the produce of the trees. The strangers, however, were permitted to take what they had got, on their promise to come no more as invaders.

Visited the morai at Oparre, where the great God resides, represented by a clumsy piece of wood: here the brethren saw several altars, and skulls of men who had been sacrificed.

A native coming into their apartment, a brother entered into conversation with him about God. The Islander admitted that the Otaheitean Gods were bad enough, for they ate men, hogs, bread-fruit, &c. which the Pretane God never did, and was a good fellow. He further observed, that when he spoke to the Pretane God the good rain comes.

26th. Plenty of bread-fruit was brought to day. It is wonderful to see how Providence has furnished this place: when bread-fruit fails in this district, it is ripe in another, so that the na-

stationary there, to whom the deluded people sacrifice in great extremities, when the priests pronounce them angry.

* 12. This evening, when one of the brethren set writing in his birth, a young girl came in, and expressed her astonishment that they should behave so different to them from what all their countrymen had done. He assured her that such practices as she intimated were wicked, and if they indulged in them their God would be angry. "Then," said she, "I'll come to you in the night, when no one can see us." He instantly replied, "Nothing can be hid from our God."

fires never
they are co
get ripe on
ther. Few
destitute of
27th. A
two brethren
consisting of
hogs, &c. v
when wante
28th. A
native.

29th. Ha
should they
with them.

July 1st.

Discharge of
a great thie
others in th
known to b
creatures, th
with the gre
ore rejected.

6th. This
brethren out
great joy th
many of the
the captain o
be crew.

Great was
the ship being
nature was
gun. On
then the pu
atters discu
vision of th
and the party

7th. Four
vide the god
the captain
ed as secr
oidably occ
ted to stay

The result o
de, from the
sared that th
heite, is 12
08. Total,
though it wa
have profess
stances whic
following pa
ol. I. No

never want. With cocoa-nuts and plantain they are constantly supplied: as the evee apples get ripe on one tree, young ones appear in another. Few trees lose their foliage, and are only destitute of fruit for about two months.

27th. A present came from Pomarre for the two brethren who were working at the forge; consisting of a pair of canoes, seven lobsters, two hogs, &c. with an invitation to send for more when wanted.

28th. A looking-glass was stolen by a female native.

29th. Had a breed of six young rabbits: should they prosper, the hills will probably teem with them.

July 1st. Ottoo sent a message requiring the discharge of several persons, whom he described as great thieves; at the same time recommending others in the capacity of servants, who were known to be mischievous, and his abandoned creatures, that they might be enabled to steal with the greater facility. His motion was thereupon rejected.

6th. This morning the natives brought the brethren out of their house, when to their very great joy the white sails shone before them. Many of them went on board, to congratulate the captain on the perfect health and safety of all the crew.

Great was the joy of meeting, but the stay of the ship being no longer necessary, a speedy departure was announced, and every preparation begun. On the 6th of July a meeting was held, when the public journal was read, and many matters discussed; among which was that of the division of the things in the ship, between them and the party at Tongataboo.

7th. Four missionaries being appointed to divide the goods, began their work this morning: the captain superintended, and Mr. Jefferson acted as secretary. As this business would unavoidably occupy much time, the captain consented to stay till the 1st of August. The wives

The result of their tour, and the calculations they had made, from the best oral testimony they could procure, it appeared that the number of men, women, and children in the island, is 12,042. The number of those at Tiaraboo, 208. Total, on the whole island, 16,080.

Though it would be departing from the plan of brevity, we have professed, to relate the numerous extraneous circumstances which occurred in the course of their survey, following particulars may deserve attention. It appears

on. I. No. XLV.

of the missionaries were invited to dine on board, and passed the day happily there. The natives also crowded on board, and few of them came empty-handed: many of them appeared in English dresses, which had been given them by the brethren. Some English phrases also escaped their lips, such as, "Welcome again; glad to see you, Captain Wilson."

8th. Iddeah sent to know if she might be permitted to come to their house; when, after consulting on the propriety of such a measure, brother Cover was desired to speak to her, and if she expressed contrition for her past offence, and promised she would no more be guilty of such conduct they would be glad to receive her. Under such professions, she came and drank tea with Mrs. Cover, and appeared much pleased with her reception.

9th. (Sunday). Not a canoe was seen off in the bay, and the whole district was remarkably quiet. Mr. Cover and Mr. Lewis came on board to act as chaplains for the day. The former preached from the second Epistle of Peter, Chap. iii. v. 18; the latter from Philippians, Chap. i. v. 28.

10th. Andrew the Swede came from Eimeo, and presented the captain with a fine turtle. Mawroa, a kind friend to the Missionaries, brought a hog, and a great quantity of bread-fruit.

Some of the brethren had made a tour of the island, and supposed the number of inhabitants, on both peninsulas, to be about fifty thousand. This amount, though less than a fourth of what Captain Cook had calculated them at, was still thought far exceeding the population; Peter and two of the brethren therefore undertook to take a survey of the island, and to try some method of estimating the number of people in each district. On the 11th, they accordingly set off, having first engaged a man to conduct them across the numerous rivulets, and to carry their necessary baggage*.

July 13th.

ed, in the course of this ramble, that, besides the members of the arroyo society, it is the practice among all ranks to strangle infants when they are born. A perpetrator of this horrid act, was among those whom curiosity drew to visit us. She was a good figure, and thought a perfect beauty by the natives, which were supposed to have been the inducements that tempted her to murder her child. It may be necessary to observe here, that the number of women bear no proportion to the men; in consequence of

6 U

which,

July 13th. The captain and six of the missionaries endeavoured to make choice of an eligible spot in the district of Matavai, for the purpose of building a house; but several being thought equally eligible, no preference was given to any.

14th. The weather serene and pleasant. Information had been conveyed to the ship that the young king was arrived at Matavai; but a report having been propagated that he had sacrificed a man, the missionaries expressed their disapprobation of the horrid deed. This so alarmed the sovereign that he was preparing to set off for Pappara, when the captain landed, and stopped him as he and his queen was running along the beach. Being asked his reason for going away, he said, that as the missionaries were angry, he supposed the captain might be equally so. The latter intimated that he had sacrificed a man, and he denied the fact. The captain besought him to abandon such inhuman practices, and desired him to return, promising to send him a canoe, which he had brought purposely from Tongataboo. At this information he was both pleased and reconciled, and accordingly took up his residence at Matavai.

15th. The captain and four missionaries employed in dividing the goods. Otoo and his wife came alongside: the Friendly island canoe was given to him, with which he appeared much pleased*.

19th. Otoo sent a present of two hogs and some cloth. Whilst at dinner, a native requested the use of the ship's harpoon, to strike a large cavally he had observed: this he performed with much dexterity; but the wounded fish having disengaged the harpoon, the man dived after the

which, those who are thought handsome are courted with great gifts, and are so accustomed to change their husbands, accompany them from place to place, and mingle in the diversions of the island, that, rather than be deprived of these pleasures, they stifle a parent's feelings, and murder their tender offspring. As no odium is attached to this abominable deed, many hundreds are never suffered to behold the light. When either of the parents are disposed to save the child, they may sometimes succeed. More of the males, however, are said to be preserved than the females, which partly accounts for the disproportion of the sexes, and is one of the causes of the thin population.

* 17th. Iddeah came on board, bringing with her two hogs, and two bundles of cloth; one of each was her present, the other that of Pomarre. The murder of her in-

cavally, and brought it up in his arms; it weighed about forty-five pounds.

21st. Mawroa and his wife came early in the morning, and brought with them a pig, some bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, &c. They also brought with them three relations, who each produced a present: one of them was at least seventy years of age, and very infirm. Iddeah was among the day's visitors; they were so numerous that the cabin was crowded with them. They would often make us uncomfortable, did they not plentifully supply us with good things.

23d. Service on board by brothers Henry and Broomhall.

24th. Three of the company made an excursion for two days through Matavai, Oparre, Tetaha, and Attahoo-roo; they were received every where with profuse hospitality, and were entertained with nine roasted pigs at different places. The young king came off in his Tonga toboob canoe, and several times paddled round the ship. The captain gave him a handsome uniform coat of scarlet, but he sullenly refused to wear it.

28th. This morning Andrew the Swede came on board, and was put in confinement; it appearing that he had enticed Tucker from the ship, and was endeavouring to form a party against the missionaries. Peter came also on board, and turning king's evidence, informed them that Matemoo, a native, had concealed Tucker in a thicket of Matavai. In consequence of this information, Smith, Main, and Clove set off in pursuit of him; the captain being anxious to have him, that mischief to the brethren might be prevented, and desertions strenuously discouraged.

29th. No further account of Tucker;

fant was again mentioned and condemned: she apologized as before, and almost attempted a justification.

+ 27th, in the dusk of the evening, William Tucker, seaman, made his escape from the ship. As soon as it was known, the boat was manned to search for him. The sailors landed at Point Venus. The two Swedes, Peter and Andrew, having been absent all the evening, created a suspicion that they had been concerned in the affair. crown the misfortunes of the day, just before they were with the boat, the ram which they had brought from the land, came into the house and died; supposed to have been injured by the natives, as he had been a little mischievous among them. Still, however, they have a prospect of breed, as one of the ewes had a fine ram now in an advanced state.

noon three

pursuit, ve

30th. A

off, calling

well." His

to have m

Tucker; bu

he could no

brought an

veyance we

two of Otoo

the latter th

Otoo for his

had been pr

fed and prot

board, he w

should quit

August 1st

to the Frien

at Matavai,

Eimeo. Th

she was a

her as the si

for sailing,

baggage, on

2d. Iddeah

mourning dre

this day fini

3d. Sent

&c. which

swivels, eigh

derbuss, and

use*.

Unmoored

readiness for

veral of the

of the captai

the afternoo

out of Mata

crowded on b

* The native

of them being

Some of them

and fruit, for

ful and gratify

rope, &c. for

tain could not

that, and many

satisfied, saying

Manne, and w

ervation of th

missionaries: "

noon three missionaries returned from a fruitless pursuit, very much fatigued.

30th. About ten at night a native paddled off, calling out as he approached the ship, "all's well." His business was supposed to have been to have made some communication respecting Tucker; but he was so intoxicated with ava that he could not articulate a word. Another canoe brought an explanation of the matter: in this conveyance were three of the missionaries, Iddeah, two of Otoo's servants, and Tucker in custody; the latter throwing out bitter invectives against Otoo for his treachery. It appeared that Otoo had been privy to the whole affair, and had also fed and protected Tucker. Having got him on board, he was put under confinement till they should quit the island.

August 1st. Purchased two he-goats to take to the Friendly Island. Manne Manne arrived at Matavai, in the vessel he had just built at Eimeo. The Captain, on seeing her, declared she was a wonderful performance, considering her as the first essay. Fired a gun, as a signal for sailing, and received Dr. Gilham, and all his baggage, on board.

2d. Iddeah presented the captain with a mourning dress. The division of the goods was this day finished.

3d. Sent on shore an addition of small arms, &c. which makes their stock amount to two swivels, eight musquets, nine pistols, one blunderbuss, and nine swords, besides those in use*.

Unmoored the ship, and got all things in readiness for sailing, on the following day. Several of the missionaries came off to take leave of the captain, officers, and crew. At eight in the afternoon they weighed anchor; and stood out of Matavai bay. Vast numbers of natives crowded on board, to take leave of their respec-

tive friends, to see what they had more to bestow; it being evident from their general conduct, that they possess an equal share of generosity and selfishness. On parting from their tayos, some of them wept bitterly at one end of the ship, but after walking the length of the deck they became as cheerful as ever. Indeed all their passions are transient and momentary, especially that of grief; their behaviour, on this occasion, was only consistent with their general character and disposition.

After hoisting the pinnace in, they stood off and on, waiting the packets of letters which were brought off at noon, by Cover and others who had not taken leave. After such conversation as the scene suggested, an affectionate farewell was taken, and they parted, perhaps for ever in this world.

It was the intention of the missionaries, as soon as the ship sailed, to change their abode to a more eligible spot, and to protect their premises with a substantial wall. When that is accomplished, they propose building a vessel of a hundred tons, capable of visiting all the islands around them; for which they have plenty of materials, and very able workmen. It is hoped they will have widely diffused the glad tidings of salvation, with which they are sent, by the time that they may visit them again.

They now shaped a direct course to the Society Isles, and by noon on the 5th of August they were not far from Huaheine. As they rounded the south-end, a few canoes came off, in one of which was observed the usual peace-offering, a pig and a green branch. Without hesitation they came on board, and seemed as familiar in their conversation as the Otaheiteans. Some hatchets, knives, and looking-glasses were distributed among them, after which they returned to their canoe, and paddled away †.

From

to the Eatooa, but very few axes, knives, scissors, or cloth."

† When they were to leeward of the island, several canoes came alongside, in one of which was Connor, an Hibernian, one of the Matilda's crew. He had so far forgotten his native tongue, that he could only recollect a few words of it. Both he and the natives entreated them to enter Owharre harbour, but finding they were determined to make no stay, he asked the captain to take him home, which was readily agreed to; as they had reason to suppose, from the conduct of his shipmates of Otaheite, that such as him would prove a hindrance to the mission. He then

* The natives now crowded the ship exceedingly, many of them being very importunate to be taken to Pretane. Some of them laid in a large sea-stock of hogs, fowls, and fruit, for which was returned what was supposed useful and gratifying. Manne Manne was very urgent for sails, ropes, &c. for his vessel; but those were articles the captain could not spare. The captain gave him his own cocked hat, and many other presents, but he still seemed much dissatisfied, saying, "People tell me that you want Manne Manne, and when I come you give me nothing." An observation of the same import as he had once made to the missionaries: "You give me much talk, and much prayers

From Huaheine they steered to go the northward of Otaha, but as it was nearly calm, they were no farther than between Otaha and Borabora the next day to noon. Some canoes came off from both islands, but as it was Sunday, they observed their invariable rule, and had no intercourse with them, except that of giving them a few knives and hatchets, for which nothing was taken in return. But as they lay becalmed, they hung about the ship the greater part of the day.

8th. At noon saw the land bearing north, and supposed it to be the Scilly Islands, discovered by Wallis. They now shaped a course for Palmerston's Islands, where they had some business, and in the morning of the 12th, came in sight of them. Hoisting the pinnace on, they landed at the islet they had formerly visited, but by a different passage. On this day they got about six hundred cocoa-nuts, for the ship's use, and planted thirty-four bread-fruit trees; of which there were none before on this island: if they flourish, some benefit from them may hereafter be found by some poor cast-away islanders, or distressed navigators. The tropic birds were now sitting on their eggs, and were so remarkably tame, that hundreds of them might easily have been taken.

15th. Hazy weather obscured Savage Island. On the 17th they saw Eooa, and next day moored ship in the harbour of Tongataboo. Before they anchored, George Veeson, one of the missionaries, came off to inform them that the brethren were all well, Isaac Nobs excepted; and that from prudential motives, they had separated

then asked the captain's permission to take leave of his wife and child, which was also promised; for which purpose he was conveyed on shore in a canoe, and, with Dr. Gilham, walked to his house through a crowd of natives, which he cautioned them to beware of, lest, for the sake of their clothes, they should contrive mischievous projects: he also requested that they would not go far from him. When he declared his intention of returning to his native country, his wife wept, but he treated her with the utmost indifference, and even declared he did not care what became of her. But when he took his beautiful infant in his arms, about nine months old, his grief was inexpressible, and he seemed almost undetermined whether he should stay, where, on account of the wars, his life would be in continual jeopardy, or extricate himself, and leave his beloved daughter to the mercy of the savages. At length his affection preponderated, and he told the captain that he found it impossible for him to leave his child: a declaration which, for

into small parties, and were now with different chiefs. Bowell and Harper were both with a chief named Vaarjee, who resides at Ardeo; Veeson with Mulicamar, a chief of the district of Ahoge; and Cooper with Mooree at Ahoge: the rest are still at Aheefo. But, before the proceedings of the ship are mentioned, a few extracts from the Journal of the Missionaries may with propriety be inserted, which have been written since their departure.

April 15. Were visited by Toogahowe, who was informed of our want of timber and land, both of which he said we should be instantly supplied with.

Sunday the 16th. About seven o'clock they had a prayer meeting. A cuckoo clock had been fitted up, the striking of which greatly astonished the natives; who considered it as a spirit and refused to touch it, supposing if they stole anything, it would detect them. In the forenoon brother Buchanan preached from JER. xxii. 27. The natives present behaved very quietly. In the afternoon brother Kelso preached, from 2 THESS. iii. 1.

Toogahowe, their patron, made them a present of three pieces of land; two uncultivated, of an acre each; and one about the same extent well stocked with yams and banana trees. In the evening he sent a large quantity of yams, a bundle of cloth, and three baked hogs*.

18th. After family worship, they pursued their different employments; seeds of various sorts were sown, and more land prepared. A chief, named Cosawer, kindly brought a hog, &c. and generously invited the brethren, whenever they

the infant's sake, gave pleasure to every one who heard it.

* 17th. Sent Toogahowe a present of earthen ware, two gimlets, and a parcel of nails. He soon after sent a messenger, requesting the brethren to come and sing to him, before he set off for Noogolliva; but as he was then surrounded by some hundreds, who were drinking their morning kava, they declined going; declaring that singing was a part of their worship, and they did not make a practice of it at other times. He made some enquiries respecting the performance of the clock, but disapproved of such a spirit in his house. In the afternoon, the mother-in-law of Ambler, and her two daughters, made them a visit: her husband is commander in chief of the fleet of Toogahowe, and a most accomplished sailor. She told the brethren that if they should ever be in want of provisions, she would readily supply them. - "Glory to God, we are not likely to know any want, he gives us enough, and to spare."

came ne
plantation
19th.

form the
was surp
since the

After c
was resol
accompa
and Futt

20th. I
brethren
Eooa, of

Their c
tool they
ing spect
muttering
ignorance
rated obje
fortunatel

21st. T
presents
came in th
first appear

count has
gahowe.

22d. T
fourth pa
new empl

excites the
come so t
necessary

are found
brethren
with viole

Sunday
meeting, a
brought a
who had a
any islet th
ed about

* In the
loomooe,
several of hi
strangled at
which he see
as a part
ish to be sh
After the
taken to the
consequence
Vol. I.

with different
both with a
at Ardeo;
of the district
ee at Ahoge:
efore the pro-
ed, a few ex-
issionaries may
ch have been

Toogahowe,
of timber and
should be in-

n o'clock they
clock had been
reatly astonish-
as a spirit and
they stole any
n the forenoon
JER. XXII. 27.
y quietly. In
reached, from

de them a pre-
o uncultivated,
the same extent
mana trees. In
tity of yams, a
hogs*.
they pursued
eds of various
d prepared. A
ught a hog, &c.
b, whenever they

ery one who heard

t of earthen wares,
soon after sent a
me and sing to him,
as he was then sur-
drinking their morn-
g that singing was
ot make a practice
enquiries respecting
approved of such a
the mother-in-law
de them a visit: he
lect of Toogahowe,
old the brethren that
rovisions, she would
, we are not likely
and to spare."

came near his residence, to take whatever his plantation afforded.

19th. Ambler returned this morning, to inform the brethren that the old king Moomooe was surprized that none of them had visited him since their landing, nor sent him a present.

After due consultation among the brethren, it was resolved that brothers Kelso and Buchanan, accompanied with Ambler, should visit Moomooe and Futtafaihe, and carry a present to each.

20th. Mytyle came and requested one of the brethren to shave him; after which he set off for Eooa, of which island he is the supreme chief.

Their clock excites wonderful attention: every tool they have attracts the notice of the surrounding spectators; many of whom are constantly muttering reproaches against themselves for their ignorance of the ingenious arts. A poor ulcerated object applied to the brethren, and was fortunately cured in about two months.

21st. They were visited by several, with small presents of fruit, &c. Leboolo, a petty chief came in the afternoon. He is considered as the first spearman in the country, and on that account has been appointed chief warrior to Toogahowe.

22d. This week was dug and planted about a fourth part of their home plantation. Every new employment they engage in so strongly excites the attention of the natives, that they become so troublesome as frequently to render it necessary to drive them away. The musquitoes are found very unpleasant visitors: some of the brethren are confined with sore feet, attended with violent itching.

Sunday 23d. In the morning had a prayer meeting, as usual. About eight John Connelly brought a hog and some yams from Futtafaihe, who had also empowered him to make an offer of any islet they should choose, among those scattered about Tongataboo. As fish are very plenty

* In the course of their excursion, they visited poor Moomooe, who was dangerously ill, and surrounded by several of his wives, the eldest of whom was devoted to be strangled at his death. They made him a present, with which he seemed well pleased; especially as a piece of soap was a part of it; and when he beheld it, he expressed a wish to be shaved, which was instantly complied with.

After the two brethren Buchanan and Kelso had been taken to the beach by Futtafaihe, he shewed them several islands, any of which, he said, were at their service. In consequence of this general and generous proposal, several

Vol. I. No. XLVI.

at these islets, they will be particularly useful during the hungry season. Brother Buchanan discoursed from John i; before the conclusion of which, an old chief, named Attar, brought some cava, and a bunch of bananas: he sat quietly till the service was ended; after which, being informed the day was sacred, he apologized for intruding, and took his leave.

The admiral of the fleet set sail for Feejee to fetch a spirit (an idol) to cure Moomooe, who was at the point of death. "Oh" said one of the brethren, "may the time be hastened when they shall turn from these vanities, to serve the living God!"

24th. Harper visited Moomooe's Fiatooka, not far from the missionary house at Bunghya, a beautiful solitude surrounded by trees, on which are hung multitudes of large bats: here are two houses, in one of which are contained a quantity of spears and warlike instruments, sacred to the Odooa, or spirit; in the other, a figure of the goddess Eyega; to whom they petition for a favourable season for making cloth.

25th. In the afternoon the brethren were visited by a young chief from Leetooka, called by Captain Cook Leefooga. His name is Foonogge, and he is one of the finest men that has been seen: he speaks several English words very accurately, and seems to have a surprizing facility to learn any thing which is pointed out to him. About ten o'clock, brothers Buchanan and Kelso returned from Noogollifva, bringing with them sugar-cane, pork, fish, and yams*.

27th. A present of a turtle and some yams came in Moomooe's name: this is esteemed a very valuable present. Several of the garden seeds have now appeared, and look extremely well; but the rats and unice have done inconceivable mischief: many crops of peas have fallen a prey to their ravages, and the same disaster is expected to happen to the beans†.

Dreadful

among the cluster were examined, and the preference given to Makkahah; and the few natives, about thirty in number, now became their tenants; from whom they could afterwards draw whatever they wanted of the produce, or demand their fish, if they thought proper; or improve the island, by making what alterations in it they pleased.

† 28th. Great numbers of people arrive daily in the neighbourhood, bringing with them cloth, hogs, yams, &c. to be disposed of at the funeral of Moomooe, whose death is hourly expected. Temporary huts are erecting near Bunghya, and the Fiatooka. One of Moomooe's sons, re-

G X

sident

Dreadful, indeed, is the darkness that envelops the minds of these poor heathens. Well might one of the brethren exclaim, "Oh, when shall the happy period come when they shall say, What have we to do any more with idols!"

29th. Foonogge and Mytyle paid them a visit this morning, the latter bringing intelligence that Moomooe had departed this life at four o'clock in the morning. The people passing from Noogolliva, with their faces bruised, and blood streaming down their cheeks, were numerous: instead of cloth they had matting round them, and a twig of the chesnut-tree encircled their necks. This was said to be their mourning dress. About one o'clock Toogahowe arrived; soon after which Ambler, accompanied by brother Bothwell, went to see him. He sat in a small neat house, giving orders to several chiefs around him, respecting the vast supplies of hogs, &c. that would be consumed at the funeral.

About three o'clock the body of the deceased king was carried near their premises, at a small distance from the beach: it was laid on a bier composed of the boughs of trees, and supported by about twenty men; several of the relatives of the deceased preceded the corpse in their mourning habits, as above described; some of whom had cut their heads with sharks' teeth, till the blood was streaming down their faces: a multitude of persons, of both sexes, followed in procession. A female chief, named Fefene Duatonga, who was remarkably corpulent, was carried on a frame made of two long bamboos, between which she sat on a piece of matting, being borne by four men. Futtafaihe walked next, with two women who were devoted to be

sident in the neighbourhood of his father, was sent for, under pretence of having his little fingers cut off, a custom not uncommon here with a view of appeasing the anger of the Odoos, that the sick person might recover; or, in fact, that he might be strangled. "On the arrival of Colelallo, he was saluted in a cordial manner by his elder brother Toogahowe, and soon after went to see his father, whose attendants seized upon him with a view to strangle him instantly, when he, guessing their intention, said, if they would use gentle means, he would submit to his father's will; but they continuing their violence, he by great exertion beat them off. Three feejee men were then called, and these being joined by a sister of the unfortunate Colelallo, they accomplished his death.

* To the left of the tomb, and without the inclosure, sat about four hundred persons, principally men, for whom yava was brewing. Opposite to these were placed five roasted hogs, twenty baskets of roasted yams, and about

strangled at the funeral; one of them was weeping, but the other did not appear to be much concerned; they had been wives of the deceased. Some of the brethren followed them to the Fiatooka, near which the body was deposited for the present, in a house which had been carried thither for that express purpose, and which was hung round with black cloth. This Fiatooka is situated on a spot of ground of about four acres; a mount rises with a gentle slope about seven feet, on the top of which a handsome house presents itself, of about thirty feet long, and fifteen broad; the roof of which is thatched, and the sides and ends left open. In the centre of this house is the grave; the sides, ends, and bottom of which are of coral stone, with a cover of the same. The etoa, and other trees, grow round the Fiatooka*.

20th. Preaching by brothers Buchanan and Kelso. Many of the natives crowded about the gate, but only a few of them were admitted†.

2d. As this was the day appointed for the funeral, brother Bowell accompanied Ambler to Bunghya, to see the ceremony, where they saw about four thousand people sitting round the area of the fiatooka. Soon after their arrival, they heard a great shouting, and a blowing of conch shells at a distance. About a hundred men then rushed into the area, armed with clubs and spears, and began to cut themselves most dreadfully. Others who had spears, thrust them through their thighs, arms, and cheeks; at the same time calling on the deceased in a most affecting manner. A native of Feejee, who had been a servant of the deceased, entered the area with fire in his hand, and having previously

one hundred pieces of mahie. Not far from the provisions sat about seven men, who were tabooed, and prohibited from cutting themselves. One of these issued orders for the distribution of the hogs, yams, and yava; all that drank of the latter were mentioned by name by a person appointed to that office by Fefene Duatonga, who seemed to be the manager of the funeral. Persons of both sexes seated themselves in different parts of the ground, beating and lacerating their faces immoderately; and, after having drunk the contents of two bowls of yava, they dispersed.

† May 1st. Three roasted hogs were sent to the brethren this morning. Futtafaihe paid them a visit, and was shaved by one of the brethren. Great care was taken, during this operation, lest any of the hair should fall to the ground, in which case not one of them would dare to eat under the roof again: fortunately, however, no accident of that kind happened.

them was weep-
ear to be much
of the deceased.
them to the Fia-
was deposited for
had been carried
y, and which was
This Fiatooka is
l of about four
gentle slope about
which a handsome
thirty feet long,
which is thatched,
n. In the centre
e sides, ends, and
stone, with a cover
other trees, grow

rs Buchanan and
crowded about the
were admitted †.
pointed for the fu-
panied Ambler to
y, where they saw
sitting round the
after their arrival,
and a blowing of
About a hundred
area, armed with
to cut themselves
had spears, thrust
ms, and cheeks; at
deceased in a most
f Feejec, who had
d, entered the area
having previously

far from the provisions
abused, and prohibited
these issued orders for
and yava; all that frank
e by a person appointed
who seemed to be the
s of both sexes sat
he ground, beating and
ly; and, after having
yava, they dispersed.
were sent to the brethren
a visit, and was shared
care was taken, during
should fall to the ground;
ld dare to eat under the
er, no accident of this

oiled

oiled his hair, set it in a flame, and then ran
about while it continued burning. When they
had tormented themselves to their satisfaction,
they sat down, beat their faces with their fists,
and then retired. A second party performed the
same cruelties, and a third entered: four of the
latter held stones, which they employed in knock-
ing out their teeth. One man run a spear through
his arm, just above the elbow; another beat his
head with a club, till the blood flowed down
his shoulders. After this brother Bowell, un-
able to bear the scene any longer, returned home.
Pottafaihe also came to their residence, where
he continued about two hours.

At two in the afternoon, four of the brethren
went to the fiatooka, when the natives were still
employed at the dreadful work of cutting and
mangling themselves. They had not been long
there, when they heard at a distance the most
expressive sounds of sorrow and lamentation.
This proceeded from a party of about one hun-
dred and forty women, marching in single file,
with each a basket of sand: eighty men followed
in the same manner, each having two baskets
of coral sand, singing, at the same time, words
importing, "This is a blessing to the dead;"
and were answered in responses by the women.
Another party of women, with a quantity of
cloth, replied to the above responses. These
three bands walked thus towards the tomb, cover-
ing the place where the corpse lay, and the grave,
with mats and cloth. After some further cere-
mony, the body was conveyed to the grave on a
pile of black cloth. Whilst these services were
performing, more men and women came into
the area, and cut themselves dreadfully. Nine-
teen females then brought each a bag of their
most valuable articles, and twenty-one others
each a fine mat in their hands, all of which
were deposited in the tomb, being denominated
present for the dead. Immediately after came
a present from Toogahowe, consisting of thirty-
two bales of cloth, each bale carried by four
men. Then came another party of mourners,

In the evening Ambler made use of very improper lan-
guage to the brethren, desiring them to quit the abbey, and
sow no more seeds. On this they applied to their patron
Toogahowe, who received them very cordially, and made
him a present of a pig and some yams. When he had
heard their complaint, he was very angry, and sent for
Ambler, who came and attempted to palliate what he had
said; but he received a very severe rebuke from the chief,

sixteen of which had recently cut their little
fingers off. Those who held offices, or were
related to the deceased, inflicted on themselves
the greatest tortures. The grave was covered
with a hewn stone. After this stone had been
suspended with two large ropes, in which two
hundred men assisted, they lowered it slowly:
during which time women and children wept
aloud, or sung to the following purport: "My
Father; My Father, the best of chiefs, &c." More
cloth was then brought to the tomb; and
another party abused themselves as before. These
paroxysms of grief being ended, they sat awhile
in silence. A great shout ensued, which was
answered by a general tearing of the leaves from
the necks of all present; after which they dis-
persed.

4th. Ambler, who had received from us
several articles of wearing apparel, and a box to
preserve them in, pretended to have been robbed
by the natives, and the empty box was brought
back: but he was suspected to have robbed him-
self. One of the women he cohabited with, he
had beat so inhumanly, that she ran away. But,
though this fellow was atrociously wicked, he
rendered the brethren great service, by instruct-
ing them in the language.

6th. Took a walk to Mooco, a fine elevated
spot belonging to Feeou Towago. He made
the brethren a present of a fine American dog*.

7th. About ten in the morning brother Bu-
chanan preached from *Heb. xii. 1*. In the after-
noon brother Kelso from *Cant. 1*. and afterwards
administered the Lord's Supper. Several of the
natives were within the inclosure.

8th. More than twenty double canoes arrived
from the Harby islands, containing about fifty
persons each: in one of them was Morgan Bryan,
an Irishman, the former shipmate of Ambler
and Connelly. As soon as he landed he came
and staid some time, but gave such specimens of
depravity as to excite a wish for him never more
to come under their roof †.

10th. At five in the morning, brother Kelso
being

who told him he had no right to their house, nor any thing
about it. He desired him to let them alone in future.

† 9th. Morgan came again to see the brethren, who were
afraid of having much of his company. After requesting
iron tools of them, which they did not think proper to give,
he joined with Ambler in taking the liberty to upbraid them.
Though Ambler knew that their stock of tools was very
much reduced, he did not scruple to say, that unless his re-
quest

being on watch, saw a man creeping through the fence: he struck the thief repeatedly till he ran off. Mytyle being informed of it, expressed his sorrow that the fellow was not killed. A sister of Toogahowe's, sent them a fine hog, and some yams.

11th. John Connelly informed them, that while the chiefs sat over the yava bowl in the morning, he overheard them laying plans for depriving the brethren of their possessions; but they were for deferring it till the return of the ship, when they would have a greater abundance of articles. This information gave them considerable uneasiness, and led them to consider what steps were the most prudent to be taken. After some debate, it was concluded, that the safest plan would be to separate, and, going two together, put themselves under the protection of the greatest chiefs, and place their property under their care; by which means they might secure their persons, and preserve their books; but that they might have one general place to resort to occasionally, to commune together; yet, in this distribution of themselves, it was thought proper that four of their number should remain with Toogahowe.

In the afternoon brothers **Bowell** and **Veeson**, accompanied by **Connelly**, visited **Toogahowe**, who seemed to discover little concern when this intelligence was communicated to him; but, if they did separate, he wished to have his share of the property. He was therefore invited to their house, and every box was opened in his presence; from each of which he took something by way of tythe, and departed satisfied.

12th. **Toogahowe** wished for them all to remain with him, but the more the brethren deliberated on the subject, the more they were convinced of the impropriety of remaining together; it being much easier for a chief to provide for two or four than for ten; they also supposed that they should acquire the language with greater facility. They consequently waited again upon **Toogahowe**, and acquainted him with their

quest was complied with, means would speedily be adopted to enable him to satisfy himself. Having delivered this menace, he pompously took his leave. May he who said, "Be not dismayed, I am thy God," protect them with his almighty power from the machinations of these wicked men!

* A great heiva, or mai, was performed at the **fiatooka** of **Moomooe**, by women in their best garments; pieces of cloth and silk were added to their other ornaments, and

resolution: he said they might do as they pleased, but appeared somewhat dissatisfied. **Mulcifer**, a chief, was spoken to on this business, who agreed to take any two of the number. **Feenou Allawallo**, who is said to be the greatest chief of her family, said she would gladly take two of them, but that her brother **Toogahowe** was averse to their leaving him; that, as they had landed under his protection, he wished them to remain so; and that he should be offended with any chief who attempted to entice them from him. On this account she advised them only to visit the chiefs at their houses, where their stay might be either short or long; and that, at her house, they should be always welcome. This advice was approved, and they resolved to wait as they were.

14th. **Toogahowe** was this day vested with the name and authority of **Dugonagaboola**, in the room of his father **Moomooe**. His name was also altered from **Feenou Toogahowe** to that of **Talliatattoo**, the god of their family. None of his subjects dare address him by his former name in future, on pain of death.

22d. Prepared a piece of ground for turning, which seem to thrive better than any other seeds.

The men began their diversions at **Moomooe fiatooka**, and practice morning and evening. Next Sunday is fixed for the cartonga labia, or great toomai; after which it is supposed many of the people will disperse.

28th. The great toomai was performed, by men in their finest robes and ornaments, the drums at the same time beating; those around them joining in a chorus. Some of the brethren make a practice of visiting one or other of the great chiefs every day, by whom they are very affectionately treated. Through the week they had a very liberal supply of provisions sent them.

29th. 30th. Two of the brethren were invited by **Futtafaihe** to **Mooa**; they reached that residence on the 30th: they found the abbey and **ladores** of this village in a very ruinous state.

perfumed cocoa-nut oil dropped plentifully from their hair. Two drums were accompanied by a vocal concert of men and women; the latter also danced, performing different evolutions in a very graceful manner. An old chief frequently applauded their performances.

A thief, delighting in iron, stole the wash-tub, took the hoops, and concealed the staves in the grass; thus depriving the brethren of the only utensil of the kind they had in their possession.

do as they pleased; satisfied. Mulcifer, his business, who number. Feenoo, the greatest chief of these places are falling down, they are so sacred that they must not be touched to repair them. Toogahowe was that, as they had he wished them to be offended with entice them from advised them only to s, where their stay; and that, at beys welcome. They resolved to wait

is day vested with Dugonagaboola, in moonoee. His name, hou Toogahowe, the od of their family, address him by the ain of death.

ground for turning an any other seeds, rsions at Moomooe, rning and evening e cartonga labia, e is supposed many e

was performed, b and ornaments, the ating; those around Some of the brethren one or other of the whom they are ver ough the week the y of provisions se

brethren were invite they reached that r ound the abbey's a a very ruinous state

plentifully from their b y a vocal concert of eed, performing diffi nner. An old chief nces.

le the wash-tub, took ves in the grass; thus y utensil of the kind

and the fences much out of repair. In several of the houses, which Connelly said were *spirits'* houses, they saw logs of woods, stones, and bundles of rags, which were considered as spirits, being brought from the Feejee islands. Though these places are falling down, they are so sacred that they must not be touched to repair them. Futtafaihe himself is very superstitious, and is esteemed an odooa, or god: he is also much devoted to pleasure, singing, and dancing; he has several wives, who are the first women of the country: one, the daughter of Moomooe, has features and a complexion like an European, as she seldom ventures out of the house, or exposes her person to the sun or air.

June 1st. The brethren returned to Aheefo, Futtafaihe made them a present of a hog and twenty yams, and accompanied them to the small island of Makkaha, which he had given them*. 5th. Informed by Vaarjee, a great chief, of some of the villainies of Morgan and Ambler, respecting articles which they had stolen: met some women dressed in the things that had been pilfered.

10th. Mytyle had given pleasure to many of the brethren, by his readiness and ingenuity in teaching them the language; they were therefore seriously concerned at detecting him in several petty thefts.

11th. Spent the Lord's day in their usual manner. Futtafaihe paid the brethren a visit, and requested to be shaved. They excused themselves by saying they never performed manual labour on the odooa day.

12th. Foonogge, a young chief, informed them that Morgan and Ambler had endeavoured to irritate the minds of the natives against them, by representing them as some of the meanest of the people. They even encouraged them to attack and plunder them. This being the case, they thought it would have been unsafe to have continued in the same house, and therefore removed to one more spacious, which stood in the enclosure next to Dugonagaboola; that chief having readily consented to such a procedure. Every thing, except the hogs, were taken to that

* Pressing invitations were sent them by several of the chiefs to reside with them; offering them houses, and whatever they can desire: consequently, when they separate, there can be no fear of wanting an asylum.

† 20th. This morning Mytyle sent his servants with one of the lost hogs. In the evening two chiefs brought a fine

residence the same evening; but, in the morning, when the brethren went for them, they found the sty had been broken, and only one of the animals remaining; two more were afterwards found near the spot, and afterwards a single one: their stock was therefore now reduced from nine to four.

14th. Ambler and Morgan having heard that they were suspected of having driven off the hogs, came to the house of the brethren, and uttered the most abusive language, and even proceeded to such unwarrantable lengths as to kick one of the fraternity. Observing their resolution to proceed further, a scuffle ensued: Morgan again struck with his club the person he had before kicked. Finding themselves overpowered, however, they thought proper to desist; but did not fail to utter the most horrid execrations on the brethren and themselves, if they did not prove inveterate enemies, and murder them before morning.

In the evening the brethren met again, to consider further the propriety of remaining together; and, after much conversation, there appeared, on a division, eight for parting, against two. It was then agreed, that a division of the public property should also take place. Dugonagaboola having been informed of this transaction, readily consented, and promised to repair to their house on the 17th, to receive a present which they had provided for him.

15th. A division of the public property now took place. Morgan and Ambler paid another visit, but seemed more peaceably disposed.

16th. Connelly demanded a cloak for Futtafaihe, saying it had been promised before. The brethren refused to comply with the presumptuous demand, no such promise having ever been made; he therefore went away exceedingly displeased. On the following day, he again preferred his petition, and received a similar answer. He swore he would injure them to the utmost of his power, and threatened to murder the first of them that came within his clutches. Thus they experienced perils among the heathen, but more from their own countrymen†.

lad, with his hands tied together: they wanted to barter him for an axo. On enquiring what he had been guilty of, or whether he was a bad boy, they said no; but he was good for roasting of yams, and running of errands. They told them they did not approve of such iniquitous practices as selling their fellow creatures, on which they took him away.

24th. Went to visit the Fiatooka of Feenou Lukolallo at Valoo. Several persons sat round the grave, which was covered with black cloth, and remarkably clean. They sat down to converse with them, for their instruction. They pointed to two logs of wood, wretchedly carved to imitate human figures, which they said were odoos brought from Feejee. The brethren assured them they were not spiritual beings, but mere rude pieces of wood, fit only for the fire: nor did it appear that they had themselves any idea of their great sanctity, by their tossing them about with the greatest irreverence and unconcern. It did not appear that these people have any regular priests, or any stated ceremonial worship; but they entertain many superstitious notions about spirits: and are of opinion that by strangling some relations of the chief when he is indisposed, the deity will be appeased, and the afflicted person recover*.

July 3d. Brother Veeson went to reside with Mulicemar, in the district of Ahoge. The brethren have received pressing invitations to several of the neighbouring islands, which, nothing but their wanting a competent knowledge of the language has prevented them from accepting; but they hope speedily to remove that obstacle, and look for opportunities of promoting the glorious design in which they are engaged, which at first they little expected.

"The Lord's way is in the sea, and his path in the great waters, and his foot-steps are not known."

7th. They were visited by the wife and daughter of Moore, a chief residing at Ahoge, who had been visited by brothers Gaulton and Cooper some time ago; when he gave them a large house and plantation to induce them to reside with him, and to which they had consented: but being since prevented, his impatience urged him to send that message for them.

This evening felt another, but a slighter shock of an earthquake.

8th. Brother Harper called to inform them

* In the morning, a little after three o'clock, the people were alarmed by the shock of an earthquake, which lasted about a minute. It was sensibly felt by the brethren, and the consternation was much increased, by the dreadful shrieks of the natives around them: the surf on the beach produced a greater noise than they had ever heard from it before. Early in the morning, they were visited by many of the natives, to whom they mentioned the earthquake;

that they are comfortable at Ardeo, with Vaarjee who indulges them to the utmost of his power that he has assigned them apartments wholly to themselves, and is equally capable and assiduous in teaching them the language.

12th. (At Ardeo.) Laid out the grass-plot before the house, in the European style, with the garden. Taught Vaarjee's men the method of digging with spades, and planted some pine-apples. Visited Toobooocovaloo, a chief, and a relation of their friend. Were entertained with great hospitality, and received of him a pregnant sow, in return for which was given a few tools and some earthen plates. Having told him that on the Lord's day they did not work, but devoted it entirely to the service of God, he particularly asked whether it was proper to eat on that day? Being answered in the affirmative, he sent them a baked hog.

17th. They were visited by brother Veeson and the son of Mulicemar, who brought a hog and some yams from that chief. Intelligence was received from them of the death of Tamai-fuma on the 13th instant. This being the fourth chief who has departed this life since the arrival of the missionaries, the natives believe that our God, in answer to their prayers, kills them; and do not hesitate to say, that if they continue praying and singing, there will not be a chief left alive. This idea, originating from the father of lies, seems calculated to create some trouble; but it can prevail no farther than is consistent with the gracious design of our heavenly father, who will make his strength perfect in our weakness, so that we may boldly say, "The Lord is our helper, we will not fear what man can do unto us."

18th. The same idea gains ground, and is industriously propagated. On the 22d brother Bowell paid them a visit, and informed them that he had been at Mooa, where the minds of the people had received the same dangerous impression, and that their countrymen were the principal authors of it. Ambler had also

but the impression it made on them was momentary; he imputed it to the odoos, or spirit, ascribing every thing to that which exceeds their comprehension. Ambler says that the fourth shock they have had within about eighteen months. This day brothers Bowell and Harper left the brethren, to go and reside with Vaarjee, a principal chief at Ardeo.

o, with Vaarjee
t of his power
ments wholly
le and assiduous

t the grass-plot
pean style, with
men the method
anted some pine
o, a chief, and
entertained with
of him a preg
was given a few
Having told him
d not work, but
e of God, he jo
proper to eat on
he affirmative, he

brother Veeson
no brought a ho
chief. Intelligence
death of Tamai
is being the four
e since the arriva
s believe that ou
s, kills them; and
if they continue
ill not be a chief
ting from the fa
d to create some
no farther than
esign of our hea
is strength perfe
may boldly say
will not fear wh

s ground, and
n the 22d brother
nd informed them
where the minds o
e same dangerou
countrymen were
bler had also en

was momentary; the
scribing every thing
ion. Ambler says it
within about eight
ll and Harper left
rjee, a principal chief

deavour

deavoured to poison the mind of Dugonagaboola, who heard him with great indignation, and ordered him from his presence. Since that, he is said to be gone to Futtafaihe; so that Morgan, Connelly, and he are all together, and will doubtless be very active in plotting farther mischief. Their machinations were thus far destroyed without the interference of the brethren.

24th. The principal wife of Futtafaihe was delivered of a son the heir of his dominions; on which occasion many presents were made.

25th. The great enude, or natche, described by Captain Cook, was held at Mooa. Men in procession carried a yam, suspended on a pole, &c. Ambler said this was a thanksgiving to the odooa for the late ripe yams. The brethren were invited to join the procession; but they did not choose to qualify themselves by making their shoulders bare as the ceremony required. Particular honour is paid to Futtafaihe on this occasion. The ceremonial closes with a kind of cudgel-playing.

27th. This afternoon a sensible shock of an earthquake was felt at Ardeo, and, as usual, the natives screamed loudly. These shocks, which are said to be very common, are sometimes so violent as to shake down their trees and houses.

August 1st. This morning Cooper and Mooree took their departure. What end the Lord may have in view in thus dispersing us we know not, but hope that it will tend to the advancement of his glory, by a more general diffusion of the gospel over this benighted island. Another shock of an earthquake was felt about sun-set, Ambler is again in the neighbourhood.

On the 3d. brothers Gaulton and Shelly returned from Mooa, where they had met with brother Veeson, who was in health, and high favour with his friends; having lodged one night with him, they received a remonstrance for it next day from Dugonagaboola, who assured them of a hearty welcome at his house, and expected they would make use of no other. Among other conversation, he informed them of

* A small axe was snatched this day from one of the brethren while he was cutting fire-wood; and in the evening some thieves broke into the dwelling, rifled the first box they came to, and took out a quantity of bark, jalap, fire, and other medicines; but as those were not such articles as they delighted in, they left them in the yard, where they were found in the morning. What they really carried off was only a few clothes that lay on the chests.

12th. Dugonagaboola sent them a quantity of provisions,

what their villainous countrymen had said of them in their absence, and expressed his abhorrence of them on that account.

5th. Brother Bowell arrived in the evening, and on Sabbath day brother Buchanan and brother Kelso preached.

7th. Brother Bowell intending to remain with them till their monthly prayer-meeting was over, they held an assembly of their little society the next morning, when a general assembly was agreed to be held the first Monday of every month, in the morning, for prayer and religious conferences; and in the afternoon for reporting progress in the language, consulting on their proceedings, &c. A weekly prayer-meeting, in their respective parties, was also resolved on: and that the anniversary of their embarkation should be observed as a day of public thanksgiving.

9th. In the evening they began their weekly meeting, which brother Kelso opened with praise and prayer. He then read the second chapter of the First of Peter, and spoke from a part of it: after which the other brothers spoke in rotation.

10th. The anniversary of their embarkation completes the first year of their mission, and the most remarkable of their lives; wherein the Lord has for the accomplishment of his gracious purposes, given them innumerable manifestations of his almighty power, and infinite wisdom. While upon the mighty waters, they were the peculiar objects of providential care and bounty. They were all brought in safe to their desired haven, where his hand has been most wonderfully "stretched out still" in opening a door of access for them, in giving them favour in the sight of the heathen, and in frustrating the machinations of their more heathenish countrymen. These are a part of his ways, but the tongue is unable to express all the wonderful things he has done for them. "O that men would therefore praise the Lord for his goodness, and declare his wonderful work to the children of men*."

On the 21st. early, several of the chiefs came

which was very acceptable; but in the course of the day they were informed, that this great friend of theirs had accepted of the large axe from the person who stole it; and after complimenting him on his dexterity in taking it, had sent him off to Vavao, to be out of the way when the ship arrived. This action gave them a strange idea of their great patron and noble friend; and yet, strange as the contradiction seemed, all their goods were every day in his power if he chose to plunder them.

on board, among whom was Futtasaihe; who, observing brother Buchanan, renewed his solicitations for him to go and live with him.

22d. Brother Gaulton went to Aheefo, to bring his chest, and other things, to Mooa, where Futtasaihe had given them their choice of several handsome dwellings, situated between his house and the lagoon. After choosing one about two hundred yards from his own, they returned on board*.

Brother Wilkinson brought off some turnips

of their first crop, but many of them had been much mangled by the rats. A trap was made, by which a great many were caught; these were given to the women at their request, and eaten raw as delicate food.

26th. The noble lady visited the ship this day, with several female attendants; the captain delighted her exceedingly, by sending her on shore in an elegant English dress, which had been reserved for such an occasion.

SECTION VI.

Description of Tongatabooa—Passage from Tongatabooa to China—Occurrences at China and Voyage home.

THIS island bears an unrivalled sovereignty over the whole group, Feejee not excepted. The inhabitants of Feejee, having long ago discovered it, frequently invaded it, and committed great cruelties; but in a late expedition against the Tonga people, under the command of Toogahowe, and others, they completely routed them, and brought them into subjection; so that they now pay tribute to Tongatabooa on certain occasions, the same as other islands. Tongatabooa is divided into three large districts, viz. Aheefo, over which Dugonagaboola reigns with absolute sway. Mooa is under the same subjection to Futtasaihe; and Ahohe is governed in the same manner by Vaharlo: each of these sovereigns claiming a right of disposal over the lives and property of his own subjects, which the brethren have seen exercised most despotically. These districts are subdivided into those of smaller extent, which have their respective chiefs presiding over them, to whom they are, in some cases accountable for their conduct: the whole has some

analogy to the ancient feudal system of our ancestors.

These people possess many excellent qualities, which, were they enlightened with the knowledge of the gospel, would render them truly amiable: their bounty and liberality to strangers is exemplary, and their generosity to each other unequalled. After suffering extreme hunger, if they are so fortunate to receive a morsel, they instantly divide it among as many as are present, the first receiver generally leaving himself the smallest share, and often none at all. When they kill a hog, or dress a favourite dish, a portion of it is always sent to their friends, who are equally anxious to return the favour as soon as their circumstances will admit of it†.

Their marriages are attended with little ceremony: that of Vaarjee, with whom brother *Bowell* and *Harper* had resided some time, was thus conducted: a young female having excited his partiality in her favour, he informed his mother that he wished to add her to the number of

washing the snow-white decoration from her hair, before they paddled on shore from their canoe.

† Their honesty among themselves seems unimpeachable: it is to be wished that as much could be truly said with regard to their probity with strangers. The murder of children, and other horrid practices, which prevail among the *Otaheiteans*, are unheard of here. Their children are indulged, and old age honoured. Female chastity, indeed, is little regarded among the lower orders, it being a common practice with the chiefs, to offer to their male visitors some of their females to sleep with them.

* Fefene Duatonga, the principal woman of the island, came on board, with her first lady in waiting: their hair was plastered up with a composition resembling the powder and pomatum, much used by the London *Belles* a few years ago. In token of homage, her feet are kissed by all who approach her; and so exalted are her ideas of her own dignity, that no man can aspire to the honour of being her fixed husband; but she cohabits with such of the chiefs as she pleases to select, and has several children. A fine boy, aged about twelve years, attended her on board. Some presents of scissars were made, and thankfully received; and, on their leaving the ship, they jumped overboard,

them had been
trap was made,
ght; these were
uest, and eaten

he ship this day,
the captain de-
ing her on shore
ich had been re-

es at China and

ystem of our an-

xcellent qualities,
with the know-
render them truly
erality to strangers
ty to each other un-
me hunger, if they
rself, they instantly
e present, the first
mself the smallest
When they kill a
a portion of it is
who are equally
s soon as their cir-

ed with little cere-
h whom brothers
ed some time, was
ale having excited
e informed his mo-
to the number of

from her hair, before
oe.

seems unimpeachable;
be truly said with re-
The murder of chil-
which prevail among the
Their children are in-
emale chastity, indeed,
ders, it being a common
their male visitors some

his wives. This intelligence was instantly com-
municated to the damsel's father, who, approv-
ing of the proposed alliance, clothed her in a
new garment, and with attendants, and such a
quantity of baked hogs, yams, yava-root, &c.
as he could afford, she was sent to her intended
spouse; who being apprised of her coming,
prepared himself in his house, and received her as
he would have done any other visitor. Feasting
on the provisions, and a good draught of yava
concluded the whole; and the bride might either
return to her father till again sent for, or take
up her residence with her husband; which, in
this instance, she preferred. Polygamy is in
common practice among the chiefs, each of them
taking as many wives as he pleases; but they are
strangers to domestic broils, owing perhaps to
the absolute authority of the man, the wife be-
ing so much at his disposal that he may discard
her at his pleasure.

Their deities are numerous; every district has
its own, and every family of note has one, whom
they consider as their peculiar patron, each of
which deities are sometimes represented by the se-
veral chiefs of those districts; so that their natches
and other annual exhibitions, are not mere pub-
lic amusements, but religious observances. They
have two natches in the year, one to procure the
favour of Futtasaihe when their yams are set;
and the other to express their gratitude when
they gather them in. They suppose the winds
to be under the control of a female, called Calla
Fiatonga, who, they say, is very powerful, but
being little regarded by them, she is sometimes
provoked to blow down their cocoa-nut and
other trees, to oblige them to bring offerings to
a house sacred to her.

No person among the natives pretends to be
religious, or to profess even the appearance of
sanctity; there does not appear to be any such
character as a priest among them. In all the of-
ferings they make, each man kills and presents
his own sacrifice. The frequent earthquakes
among them are thus accounted for: they sup-
pose the island rests upon the shoulders of a po-
tent deity called Mowee, who has supported it
for many ages. This heavy burthen sometimes
exhausts his patience, and he vainly attempts to
shake it off; which excites a horrid outcry
over the whole country. Tongaloer, the God

VOL. I. NO. XLVII.

of the sky, and Fenoulonga, of the rain, they
suppose to be females. They have many other
Gods, of both sexes, whose names can hardly
be enumerated, each acting in their proper
sphere, and sometimes counteracting each other
as caprice or interest may lead them. They also
acknowledge the existence of a number of
strange Gods. They imagine every individual
to be under the control of a spirit peculiar to
himself, which they call odooa, who is interested
in all his concerns; but is little regarded till he
is angry, when they suppose he inflicts upon
them all the disorders to which they are subject;
and then, in order to appease him, the relations
of the afflicted person, especially if he be a chief,
have recourse to cutting off their little fingers,
beating their faces, and tabooing themselves from
certain kinds of food.

They believe the immortality of the soul,
which at death, they say, is conveyed in a rapid-
sailing canoe to a distant country called Doo-
bludka, which they describe as a paradise.

In the morning of the 7th of September, they
weighed, and sailing from Tongataboo by the
northern passage, passed the small islands of
Honga Harpy and Honga Tonga; these are both
moderately high, and appear fertile. On the
morning of the 10th passed providence reef,
which is a small spot, bearing east from the
south end of Danger Island. They afterwards
passed the north-east reef, where they appeared
to have a clear sea. Table and Danger Islands,
of which they had the nearest view, had the ap-
pearance of fertility, having the loftiest hills covered
with trees to their summits.

On the 12th at noon they saw land bearing
south, for which they hauled up, wishing to
have some intercourse with the natives. The
wind bearing east-south-east, they just weath-
ered a reef lying eastward from a small high
island: and standing a little further, tacked ship
close to the north-east of what they called Sir
Charles Middleton's Island, and chose a spot to
spend the night in, having the bearings of several
islands whereby to direct them clear of the
surrounding danger.

At day-break on the 13th they bore away, and
ran along the north-side of Sir Charles Middle-
ton's Island. As they ran to the windward,
compass bearings were taken of the islands and
reefs,

reefs, to ascertain their relative situations. Leaving Middleton's Island, they passed close by what they called Direction Island; where they beheld some natives on the beach with spears in their hands: the island, which was moderately high, seemed to abound in the common produce, and was quite surrounded by a reef. Sailing thence west-north-west, about six leagues further, they came near the east end of an island, called Ross Island, where they saw vast numbers of the natives assembled upon the beach; but they were perfectly secure, being strongly fortified with a surrounding reef.

From the mast-head they observed a reef tending to the north east, to weather which they hauled their wind to the northward; and, passing it, stood towards some islands, which they called the Clusters. Night approaching, and being surrounded with reefs and islands, they put the ship under an easy sail, and chose the clearest place to make tacks in till the next morning. At nine, no danger appearing, they thought themselves safe; but they were presently alarmed by the ship striking on a coral reef, upon which the sea hardly broke to give the least warning. All hands were instantly upon deck, and, as she stuck fast, became under great apprehensions of being ship-wrecked: a misfortune greatly to be dreaded, as the Feejees were cannibals of a fierce disposition, from whom no favour could be expected. Supposing it to be a weather reef they were on, the moment she struck the sails were hove aback, and in the course of a few minutes they perceived that she came astern, and soon after was quite afloat; when they were relieved from their fears, and the vessel seemed to have received no injury. They could not ascertain at sea, what damage had been sustained, as she made no water; but, on her coming into dock, they saw how wonderfully they had been preserved. The coral rock on which they struck was providentially directed exactly

against one of the timbers. The force of the blow had beat in the copper, greatly wounded the plank, and beat it to shivers. Had the stroke happened between the ribs of the ship, it must have gone through, and they perhaps would never have returned to adore the author of their mercies.

When the day had manifested the dangers which lay hid around them, it appeared wonderful that they had escaped so well; and seemed extremely desirous to get clear of them as fast as possible. With this view they steered between several reefs, which seemed to extend on both sides as far as the eye could reach. When they had passed these, and began to bring the islands astern, they thought themselves quite clear, and regretted that they should have no intercourse with the inhabitants. At nine in the morning another island came in sight to the south-west, for which they shaped their course, to try if anchorage could be found near it. At length, however, coming to the north-west point, they saw a shoal close to them, and a large flat ran south-east off the island: upon which they hauled their wind; and this being the last they saw of this dangerous group, they gave it the name of Farewell Island*.

At day-light on the 17th they bore away, and at half past eight they were opposite the north-east end of the island of Rotoma, when several canoes came off, containing from about three to seven persons each. At first they approached the ship with some degree of shyness, but presently grew bolder, and ventured alongside: one of them, with a fowl in his hand, took hold of a rope, dropped himself into the water, and was hauled on board. He informed them by signs, that he expected an axe for the fowl, by which they knew there must have been some intercourse between them and Captain Edwards of the Pandora, who discovered this island in August 1791. It is probable, however, that they have been

* These are probably the cluster which Tasman got entangled among, and which he calls Prince William's Islands. They are probably connected with those which the people at Tongataboo call the Feejees, as they lie in the direction pointed out by them.

Coral reefs surround every island; and though there appeared to them no openings through the reefs to the respective islands they enclose, it is probable that by a more diligent search both openings and anchorage might be found. But as the captain had to reach China at a specified date,

much time could not prudently be spared in search of an uncertainty. Where they passed close, they saw many inhabitants. The natives of the Friendly Islands acknowledge that the Feejees excel them in many ingenious works, though they abhor them for their detestable practice of eating their unfortunate prisoners. They use bows and arrows in war; and from the blackness of their complexion, and the disparity of their language and manners, they seem a distinct race from the natives of those groups where missions are now established.

sited by
them wit
day happ
not barten
man an
things, w
others, en
him, and
would do
serving th
island, th
intimate t
anchor.
highest bl
island; a h
steepish on
lie three of
seems split
earthquake
Their c
Islands, bu
completely
the brethro
and pointe
The natives
the British
fowls are, I
from the f
cheerful an
it may bee
wanting ref
From R
west, and v
the morning
mast-head.
fire in the c
they found
separate isla
considerable
towards the
approached w
They brand
wood in a
many extra

• The main
er in the spac
were counted
unaccounted by
ould be distin
landers, exc

force of the
tly wounded
s. Had the
f the ship, it
they perhaps
the author of

the dangers
appeared won-
; and seemed
them as fast as
ered between
tend on both
When they
ing the islands
uite clear, and
no intercourse
n the morning
the south-west,
e, to try if an-
t. At length,
est point, they
large flat ran-
ich they hauled
ast they saw of
it the name of

bore away, and
posite the north-
a, when several
about three to
they approached
yness, but pre-
alongside: one
d, took hold of
water, and was
them by sign-
fowl, by which
some intercourse
ards of the Pa-
in August 1791.
ey have been vi-

ared in search of
they saw many
ly Islands acknow-
ny ingenious work-
able practice of ex-
by use bows and
of their complexion
manners, they saw
e groups where

sited by none besides, as they seemed to behold them with astonishment and surprise. As this day happened to be Sunday, the brethren could not barter with these people; but they gave this man an axe, a few fish-hooks, and some other things, which made him leap for joy. Three others, encouraged by his success, ventured after him, and were equally fortunate. Many more would doubtless have come on board, but observing the brethren steered rather from the island, they pointed towards a bay, seeming to intimate that they wished they would come to anchor. This bay lays to windward of the highest bluff hill, on the west end of the main island; a higher islet much resembles it, both being steepish on the north side; westward of this last lie three other small islets, the largest of which seems split in the middle, as if broken by an earthquake*.

Their canoes were like those of the Friendly Islands, but not so well proportioned, nor so completely finished. The only weapons seen by the brethren, were spears ingeniously carved, and pointed with the bone of the sting-ray. The natives were much surprised at the sight of the British sheep, goats, and cats. Hogs and fowls are, however, abundant in this island; and from the fertility of the spot, and the seeming cheerful and friendly disposition of the natives, it may become a very eligible place for ships wanting refreshments to touch at.

From Rotumah they steered north-west by west, and west by south eight days. At eight in the morning on the 25th, they saw land from the mast-head, and immediately steered for it. At five in the evening as they drew near to the land they found it consisted of about half a score separate islands, two or three of which were of considerable size; and saw a canoe advancing towards them, in which were two men: they approached within hail, but would come no nearer. They brandished their paddles, hooped and hallooed in a harsh and dissonant tone, and used many extravagant gestures, not in the way of

* The main island seems extremely populous and fertile; in the space of a mile, upwards of two hundred houses were counted near the beach, besides what were probably concealed by the trees. In their figures, little difference could be distinguished between the natives and the Friendly Islanders, except that they appeared to be of a lighter colour,

menace or defiance, but to manifest surprize at so extraordinary a sight, having perhaps never beheld a ship before. They had baskets of fruit in the canoe, to which they frequently pointed, as if they wanted to barter them; or perhaps they meant them as offerings. Whatever they might have intended, fear kept them at a distance, though the brethren used every method to allure them alongside. Nine other canoes were now seen coming off, but they all acted with the same caution and fear, keeping all together astern of the ship. Afterwards the brethren were making towards the largest of the islands, when a heavy squall of wind and rain coming on, and obliging them to bear before it, they were so near running over some of them, that the men in one small canoe jumped overboard and swam to another. The squall being over, and the deserted canoe not being far from the ship, they stood close to her and picked her up, hoping to have an opportunity of returning her the next day.

The length of this canoe was about twelve or fourteen feet, and the breadth fifteen inches; made of one tree, sharpened at the ends, and ornamented on the upper part.

Having put the ship under a snug sail, they stood to the eastward all the night, and at day-break found they had drifted considerably to the southward: but, still expecting some intercourse with the natives, they set sail, and plied to windward. At eleven in the forenoon they were near the largest island, when five canoes ventured off but acted with the same caution as before. Perceiving that their fears prevailed over their curiosity, and that there was little probability of their having any intercourse with them, they lowered the jolly-boat down, and intended to tow the canoe close to the shore, and there leave her with some of their articles in her. But observing that the ship could not get near enough to aid the boat in case of an attack, this design was relinquished, and they immediately bore away.

and their tattooing is somewhat different; many of these having the resemblance of birds and fishes; with circles and spots upon their arms and shoulders. The women wear their hair long, and have it dyed of a reddish colour; and with a pigment of the same, mixed with cocoonut oil, they rub their neck and breasts.

The

The largest of this group was named Disappointment Island, and the whole cluster was denominated Duff's Group; they are about eleven in number, lying in a direction south-east and north-west; in the middle are two larger islands, about six miles in circumference, with a small islet between, and to the eastward three islets; on the north-west part of the group are five or six more. The small islands are apparently barren, but the two largest are entirely covered with wood, among which were several cocoa-nut trees. The natives are stout, and have copper-coloured complexions*.

From six in the morning till noon they steered west by north twenty-three miles. From noon they steered west north-west twenty-eight miles, and could just discern Volcano Island through the haze. Had the weather been clearer, they probably might have seen it much farther off; though even now they were distant from it about twenty leagues.

About noon they passed to the southward of Stewart's Islands, which are five in number, small, and low. On the following day they passed in sight of New Georgia, and saw no more land for several days. On the 10th of October they crossed the equator in longitude 152° E.

On the 25th they saw a low island bearing west by north, and presently observed some canoes coming towards them. About nine in the morning one of them came alongside without fear or hesitation, and by their frequent mention of the term "Capitaine," they were supposed to have been acquainted with Europeans before. These first were followed by many more, who exchanged their fishing-hooks, lines, and rope for any thing that was given them. Several of them were admitted on board and, for a considerable time, shewed no inclination to steal; but those in the canoes soon gave very convincing proofs of their strong propensity to it by taking the rudder rings; and one fellow was

detecting handing a pump-spear into his canoe. As the brethren had been accustomed to such matters, they only drove them off the decks for these first depredations: but whilst they were sitting at dinner in the cabin, they were heard trying to knock off the bolt-head of the rudder-rings; when the captain instantly fired some small shot amongst them, and made them sheer off with precipitation. At this moment William Tucker and John Connelly were seen swimming close under the stern, hoping to make their escape to the canoes, and to skulk away without being fired at; but the captain, enraged at the former for his ingratitude and deceit, and desirous of parting with the latter, told them, that if they chose to go they might, for he would not fire at them. Connelly replied, "thank you Sir," and they both swam to the canoes, and were received by the savages with loud shoutings. Soon after, a breeze springing up from the north-east, they resumed their course, and left them behind. Connelly had been forcibly brought from Tongataboo for threatening the missionaries. Whilst he continued on board he behaved quietly, and being rated in the ship's books as an ordinary seaman, seemed happy in his situation, till the last transaction proved his hypocrisy. Tucker had also been reinstated, after running from the ship at Otaheite, and he had also frequently said he was happy in his present situation; it is probable that he had been seduced by Connelly. If the latter was really a botany-bay convict, as they have since heard, he may be supposed to have been actuated by two motives, the fear of work, and the fear of punishment if discovered in England. Tucker's conduct had long made it evident that he was under the absolute guidance of his sensual passions.

This spot, on which they continued three days, is a small island on the bosom of the deep, about three miles in circumference; where the necessities of life appeared to be so extremely scarce

* From Duff's Group they steered west by south thirteen or fourteen leagues, and on the following day again saw land in the south-west quarter, which proved to be Swallow Is. and Volcano Island. Further to the south-west they could discover Egmont Island; and a low island which lies about south-west from Volcano Island. As the moon was now just setting, and as running in the dark would be extremely dangerous, they hove to with the ship's head towards Volcano Island. Captain Carteret in-

forms us, in his narrative, "that they saw smoke, but no flame, issuing from this volcano; but when the brethren passed close to it, and even when they were at a distance they beheld it emitting a large brilliant flame every five minutes, which was truly gratifying to all on board, who till then had never seen so grand a phenomenon. The height of this volcano from the surface of the sea is upwards of two thousand feet; and its height is to its base in the proportion of one to three.

into his canoe. accustomed to such off the decks for whilst they were they were heard of the rudder-fired some small them sheer off with William Tucker swimming close to their escape to day without being raged at the force, and desirous old them, that if for he would not ed, "thank you to the canoes, and with loud shout- springing up from their course, and had been forcibly or threatening the inued on board he rated in the ship's b, seemed happy in ansaction proved his so been reinstated, at Otaheite, and he was happy in his bable that he had If the latter was as they have since have been actuated work, and the fear n England. Tucker's evident that he was of his sensual pas-

continued three days n of the deep, about e; where the neces- so extremely scarce

they saw smoke, but but when the brethren they were at a distance brilliant flame every ng to all on board, the phenomenon. The height of the sea is upwards of it is to its base in the

little could be procured by the natives but fish roots, and cocoa-nuts*.

With light airs of wind from the north-east they proceeded on their course, leaving Tucker and his companion to ponder over the unhappy choice they had made, a choice replete with wretchedness: but, such is the prevalence of habit; and the enervating influence of idleness over the mind, that another fellow named Andrew Cornelius Lind, prevailed on the captain to set him on shore upon the next island they should discover.

At four in the morning on the 26th, they saw no islands, and as the day broke shortly after, they counted six more; for the most southerly of these they steered, and soon had several canoes about the ship, into one of which Andrew, after having taken leave of his shipmates, went, and was joyfully received by the savages†.

About ten in the morning of the 27th, they came in sight of another low island; here many of the natives came off, and trafficked with them. They thought it remarkable that hitherto, in their range among these islands, no females had appeared. At day-break on the 29th, when it was calm, they counted six islands, and seven boats, to the whole of which they gave the name of the Thirteen islands. About sixty canoes came off at first, and afterwards one hundred and fifty appeared in sight; each of which, on an average, containing about seven men, making together one thousand and fifty. From these and other circumstances, it was moderately calculated that the population of this group alone would amount to 3150. Here, for the first time, some of their women appeared, about a dozen of them coming off in three canoes: in two they were accompanied by men; the third was freighted by young women only. For some time they kept aloof, while they were attentively observed by their own men; but seeing they were not particularly noticed by the strangers, they permitted them to approach within a

* The natives are not a stout race; they have a dark copper complexion, and lively dispositions. No women were seen. Their canoes are raised high at each end, and painted red. Their sails resemble those in the single dug canoes of the Friendly Islands. Reflecting on the conduct of the run-away, they named this Tucker's red.

† As the canoe paddled away with him, he stood up and waved his hand, seemingly more elated than depressed by the change of situation. Before his departure, the captain

few yards of the ship, which they appeared to survey with delight. Some of them had good features: their lips were thick, but not in the extreme: nor were their faces remarkably broad. Their hair is long and black. Their complexion differs from that of the men, by a sickly kind of whitishness, mixed with the natural olive. Though they were now beheld almost naked, their behaviour was singularly modest and decent. Most of the men were also naked: some had a sash mat wrapped round their middle; others an ornamental belt. Some of them had a broad conical hat, somewhat in the Chinese taste. Their fishing tackle differs little from what the brethren had seen in the eastern islands, but their matting is remarkably curious, being wove in the form of a Spanish sash, with a fancy border at each end. The natural colour of these sashes is white: but many of them are dyed of a beautiful yellow: it is impossible to behold these elegant sashes, without wishing to know how they came by the art. Turtle is, among the articles of their subsistence; as the adventurers were supplied with an old iron hoop, one that weighed of twenty pounds.

After having taken leave of the Carolines, for the islands, they saw no more of the islands, and their course to the Pelew rather a tedious passage, owing to the winds. November the 5th, they ought they saw land in the distance, but could not be certain, as the weather at that time prevailed. However, that they were at no great distance from the islands, they shortened sail, and steered south-east. During the night the weather was equally and rainy weather; but at eight in the morning of the 6th, it became more settled, and they got sight of the land, distant about ten or eleven leagues‡.

With a brisk gale from the southward, they continued their course till three in the afternoon, when they were within two miles of the reef ex-

posed to give him two handsaws, two hatchets, a hammer, ten looking-glasses, two razors, eighteen knives, and three hundred deck nails; with several other trifles. These, and what he had of his own, particularly a bible, will doubtless make him an acquisition to the natives.

‡ Steering towards it, they were suddenly alarmed by the cook's caboose catching fire. Every man exerted himself to suppress the flames, and happily they were soon extinguished. The fire was occasioned by the cook's incautious method of melting his fat.

tending almost to the shore of the largest island, called Babelthoup, divided into several districts, governed each by a separate chief, acknowledging the supreme authority of Abba Thulle. When they hove to they was opposite to the southern part of the district of Artingall. About two hundred persons were collected upon the beach, and not less than a dozen canoes were seen upon the water; but, as the weather then wore a gloomy aspect, only three of them came far enough to get alongside. The natives in these, having a piece of white cloth tied upon a stick, approached without fear or hesitation, and spoke to them very familiarly, but their language was wholly unintelligible; they kept talking, however, with great volubility, accompanying their words with violent and sudden gestures of the hands and body. As their comrades in the canoes bawled loudly for those alongside to rejoin them, the captain presented them with a few knives, looking-glasses, &c. when they hastily though reluctantly, took their leave; but before they paddled off, they endeavoured to shew their gratitude, by throwing a couple of cocoa-nuts upon their decks, which were all they had. This was the whole of the intercourse the missionaries had with the Pelew-Islanders; a circumstance which they much regretted, as they would have been happy to have mentioned the expediency of settling a mission among them; but, for the present voyage, they supposed every thing of this nature at an end, and proceeded to make the best of their way to China.

Soon after they bore away, and fell in with an extensive reef, trending north-east, about two leagues from Babelthoup, and perceived three small islands lying further to the north*.

From November 7th, when the brethren quitted the Pelew Islands, till their arrival on the coast of China, no interesting events occurred. The winds were so unsettled, that they hardly experienced any thing like the north-east monsoon, till within about three days sail of the

* Were the missionaries to admit the few Pelew Islanders they saw to be a specimen of the whole, they think them, in external appearance, inferior to the Marquesans, the Society, or Friendly Islanders. They are deficient in stature and symmetry to the two first, and fall short of the muscular, bold, and manly appearance of the latter. Among some customs, which they seem to have in common at both places, is that of slitting the ear, through which some large vegetable ornaments are placed. In tattooing at Pelew, their legs and thighs are represented of a blueish

Bashees, the most southern of which they saw the evening of the 17th. At day-break, supposing then they could clear the northern rocks they bore away west, and, altering their course a little, sailed close past the northernmost island.

On the 20th, they got into soundings, and passed some Chinese fishing boats. At seven in the morning a pilot came on board, who asked one hundred dollars to take them to Macao road; but afterwards accepted of thirteen besides making the brethren a present of two fine fish.

21st. At ten in the morning they passed between the Grand Lamma and Potoy, and leaving all the islands but Lingting to the south of them they sailed through with a fine easterly breeze. At three they came in sight of Macao, and a half past four anchored in the road, the tower bearing west two leagues. The pilot was then discharged, and a signal made for another. They were anxious to learn what European ships were at Canton, but had the mortification to be informed that none were yet arrived, and consequently there could be no letters for them. They had, however, sent their boat on shore with an officer, for provisions: which brought them a variety of refreshments, of which they were not however so much in need as many preceding navigators had been, who had been so long at sea as themselves. From the time of leaving England, they had run upwards of thirty-four thousand miles, and had been out fourteen months, eleven of them at sea; yet, in all this time, they had hardly experienced any sickness, and were now all in good health. They used no antiscorbutics, as malt, spruce, &c. but their crew consisting of only a small number to what are usually on board ships on voyages of discovery, they usually procured a sufficient stock of fresh provisions to last, with economy, till more could be obtained: by this mode the seamen had fresh meat at least twice a week; and during almost half the time they were in the

black, as if they had been dyed, the same as at the Carolinas. They appeared before the spectators perfectly naked, unconscious of any shame; and they shewed great kindness and hospitality, by the earnest and repeated invitations given to strangers to visit their habitations.

† The Bashees consist of six or seven islands: two to the south-east are high; some are of a moderate height; the most northern, except one, is high and craggy; and between these lie two small rocks above water.

South Seas, they lived entirely upon the hogs of the different islands.

Captain Wilson observes, on his arrival in port, that, "he was exceedingly shocked at hearing around him, once more, that great and awful name blasphemed, which, for fourteen months, he had never heard mentioned but with reverence."

On the 22d of November, early in the morning, Captain Wilson went in the pinnace to Macao, hoping to get the obstacles to their going removed, while the crew were employed in painting and repairing the ship; and in the course of a few hours they had the pleasure to see her look almost as smart as when she left Spithead. They next morning were happy to embrace the opportunity of the windward tide to weigh their anchors, and run into the harbour of the Typa; mooring close to the Britannia, Captain Dennet.

On the 25th the Britannia left the Typa; and that their ship might be in readiness, they began to strip the rigging off the mast-heads, and found it necessary to put new cheeks to the main-mast. The whole of the rigging was examined and thoroughly repaired; and while this work was upon the finish on the 9th of December, the captain arrived with permission for the ship to go up the river. On the 13th they moored at Whampoa, where they found ships of different nations. Among others was the Arniston, belonging to the East-India Company, which had two or three days before arrived from England, having touched at the Cape of Good Hope; and by her they were informed of many particulars relative to their native country.

They expected to remain here three months at least before they should be sent home; but the supercargoes having determined to dispatch the Glatton, Boddam, and Amazon packet, they ordered an immediate survey to be made of their ship, and the report of the committee being,

"That the Duff was in excellent order, and fit to receive a cargo," Mr. R. Hall, the head supercargo, informed their captain, that if he could take in their lading, and be ready to depart in five or six days, he would dispatch them. This the captain promised to perform;

* The singularity of manners, observable among the missionaries, did not fail to attract notice; and as all immorality was utterly discountenanced, not an oath escaped the lips of any one, and an unusual appearance of devotion

but though the ship was in all respects in very good order, they had many difficulties to encounter; however, on the 31st of December they were completely laden; and having, by the kindness of the supercargoes, got over the obstacles which the Chinese are continually throwing in the way, they ran down the river the same day, and joined the other ships at a place called the Second Bar, just as they were getting under sail*.

On the 2nd of January, 1798, they got down to Macao, where they found three English men of war, and seven Bombay cotton ships at anchor, waiting for them to sail with them.

The Company's ship Glatton, commanded by Captain Drummond, was appointed to convoy them home, to take the country ships bound to Bombay under his care; and the Fox and La Sibylle were to accompany them some leagues down the China Sea. Early on the 5th they put to sea, with a fresh gale from the north, when the Duff was found fully competent to keep up with them. Their passage down the China Sea, was as favourable as they could have wished: in the course of the night the frigates left them, and they saw them no more.

On the 10th they passed Pulo Sapata, and at ten in the morning of the 14th, they came in sight of the Malay coast; at the same time they saw a strange sail a-head. A report having been spread that an enemy's squadron was cruising in the straits, the commodore made the signal for the fleet to prepare for action, and that one of the fastest sailing ships should chase. She was soon recognized, however, to be a Portuguese vessel which had left Macao three days before them. The straits of Malacca are thought dangerous to navigate in the dark; but, as the wind was fair, the commodore ventured to keep the fleet running all the night.

Next day they had calms, which obliged them to anchor; but a breeze springing up at north-east they soon weighed, and the wind increasing at midnight, they passed the Water Islands, and at two in the morning of the 16th, came to with the small bower at Malacca road, in seven fathoms. They touched at this place to fill up their water, and obtain information for the

was supported; the company they had now joined pleasantly rebaptized the Duff, and named her *The Tin Commandments*.

safety

safety of the fleet; but they were disappointed in the hope of intelligence, as there was none of later date than what they had received at China. As this spoke only of war, it was their duty to prepare for all events on the passage.

On the 17th they received about four tons of water; and they also received an addition to their live stock, and were ready for sea that evening, had the large ships completed their water. One of the fleet, however, which had lain several months laden at Whampoa, had sprung a leak, when much time was expended to find out the place where the water entered. This was at length discovered, and deserves to be noticed as a hint to shipwrights, and to those who are interested: by ripping the copper off the under wales, a bolt-hole was found, left without the bolt; an act of negligence which might have been of the most fatal consequence, had it not been discovered*.

On the 20th, they sailed with the fleet, and proceeded down the strait till they came in sight of Pulo Pinang, when the Bombay ships left them, and steered for that island. Their fleet was now reduced, consisting only of the Glatton, Boddam, Amazon, and their own ship.

On the 31st they finished the last of their rams, which had plentifully supplied them for five months. They had a good passage, with few gales of wind, and met with no disaster. They did not even see a strange sail to alarm them till the sixteenth of March, when, in the morning, they made the Cape land, and fell in with two transports from Amboyna, which joined them †.

At three in the afternoon they anchored in the bay, where they found a squadron of men of war, under the command of Admiral Christian; two outward-bound East-Indiamen, and several other vessels. In the evening the health-boat came to examine the state of the crew, and

* Malacca has nothing prepossessing in its appearance: the houses, excepting a few, have a mean appearance; and the best, though convenient, are small and inelegant. The fortifications which surround the town, have originally been strong, but are now too weak to stand the shock of cannon planted upon them. To supply this defect, since the place came into their possession, our countrymen have strengthened the lines and outworks, so that they are now enabled to make a good defence. The streets within the ramparts cross each other at right-angles. The shops present for sale nothing that is enticing to an European. Till the English made a settlement upon Pulo Pinang, or Prince

finding them all well, gave permission for free communication with the shore. Then the admiral's boat upon guard took an account of the ship, whence she came, &c. They afterwards left the admiral's excellent directions, and departed.

On the 1st of April the signal for sailing was made, and the missionaries put to sea, with the addition of the transports Bellona to their fleet. The same day they shaped their course for the island of St. Helena, where they arrived on the 15th. Seven India-men, and two South-Sea Whalers, lay in the bay, all homeward bound.

On the 1st of May they sailed. As Captain Drummond was the senior in command, he had the charge of the fleet, consisting of twenty sail. In their passage they only saw two or three strange ships. In Latitude 20° N. they fell in with a Spanish vessel from Cadiz, bound to Vera Cruz. She was made a prize by the commodore.

On the 22d of June they beheld the coast of Ireland, west of Kinsale; and on the following day put into Cork harbour for a convoy. The Ethalion, Captain Countess, was appointed for that purpose by admiral Kingsmill; and, after eight days' detention by contrary winds, they set sail, and on the 4th of July saw the coast of England. On the 8th they passed the Downs; and on the 11th came to anchor in the river Thames.

Thus finished a voyage in which the Missionary Society, and their Christian brethren in connection with them are so deeply interested. Their prayers for them have been heard, and success beyond their expectations have crowned their endeavours, in every place where missions have been settled. They lost not an individual in all their extended voyage, and landed every missionary in perfect health. Every seaman was also restored to his country on the return of the

of Wales's Island, this city was the only place of trade in the strait, and has long been represented as of great importance. They export tin, canes, nutmegs, &c. Provisions are scarce and dear. The inhabitants are a mixture of Dutch, Malays, and Chinese. The garrison, at this time, is English.

† At day-break on the 17th, one of their boys, going up to the main shrouds to fouse the main-top-gallant-sail, fell into the sea; the jolly-boat was instantly lowered from the stern, and providentially got him on board: though fatigued, he soon recovered.

mission for free
Then the ad-
n account of the
They afterwards
ctions, and de-

al for sailing was
to sea, with the
ona to their fleet.
r course for the
ey arrived on the
two South-Sea
omeward bound.

led. As Captain
command, he had
ing of twenty sail,
aw two or three
0° N. they fell in
iz, bound to Vera
e by the commo-

held the coast of
d on the following
r a convoy. The
was appointed for
gsmill; and, after
ntrary winds, they
ly saw the coast of
passed the Downs;
nchor in the river

which the Mission-
an brethren in con-
ly interested. Their
heard, and success
ave crowned their
here missions have
an individual in all
landed every mis-
Every seamen was
on the return of the

the only place of trade
resented as of great im-
es, nutmegs, &c. Pro-
nhabitants are a mixture
The garrison, at the

of their boys, going up to
top-gallant-sail, fell into
antly lowered from the
on board: though the

ship. Many who peruse these pages will join
the missionaries in acknowledging the gracious
providence, that hath supported them hitherto.
The road into the Southern Ocean is now open,
and the facilities for enlarging the missionary
labours considerably increased. "The generous

and humane conductors of this benevolent under-
taking, will doubtless be animated by the suc-
cesses which hath attended their first attempt, to
pursue with increasing energy an object which
appears so fraught with blessings to mankind."

SUPPLEMENT.

Containing some Account of the Country of Otaheite, and its Inhabitants.

THE island of Otaheite consists of two pen-
insulas, connected by a low isthmus about
three miles across, covered with trees and shrubs
but wholly uncultivated. The larger, or Ota-
heite Nooe, is about ninety miles in circumse-
rence; the lesser, or Tiaraboo, is about thirty
miles. They are divided into a variety of dis-
tricts. The soil of the low lands, and of the
valleys, is remarkably fertile: the mountains
afford a great variety of trees of all sorts; and
are, in many places, covered to their very tops
with wood, in others with bamboos, and in others
with fern and reed. The hills rise very steep, and
swell into mountains almost inaccessible. In
these higher regions only is to be found the
precious sandal wood, of two kinds, yellow and
dark coloured, from whence the natives draw the
perfume for the cocoa-nut oil, with which they
anoint themselves.

This country exhibits a mountainous aspect,
interspersed by narrow valleys, which receive
innumerable streams from the hills; some of
which fall in beautiful cascades, and fill the
rivers which meander through them amidst the
verdant scenery to the sea. During the rainy
seasons, these swell into torrents, and sometimes
loosen rocks and trees from the precipices, and
convey them into the valleys, which they over-
flow, and occasion much damage. When the
trade wind gets far so the south, and blows
fresh, it generally rains on the south side of the
island, bringing the clouds from the mountains
of Tiaraboo, and giving their contents to Pap-
para and the adjacent islands.

The hills afford a blackish stone, which seems
a lava, in pieces from eight to ten feet long, and
from four to ten inches thick, of which they for-
merly made their stone tools. The mountains

are, in some parts, bare, and full of precipices,
broken, as if by earthquakes. In the bosom of
those mountains which bound the district Vyeo-
rede, there is a very large fresh-water lake, called
Vyeheera, which they say cannot be sounded by
any line, and contains eels of a very monstrous
size. The bay of Batavia affords safe anchor-
age eight months in the year, but is dangerous
from December to March. The only harbour
to the westward is that of Oparre: water is con-
venient and abundant in all parts of the island.

The government of Otaheite is monarchical,
and hereditary in one family; of which there are
two branches. Temarree, the son of Oberea and
Oamma, reigned when Wallis first visited this
island: he was then a child, and Oberea his mo-
ther was regent, Oamma and she having quar-
relled and separated. On Temarree's accession,
Oamma had retired to a private station in his
own district of Pappara, and left his wife in
trust with the reins of government for her son.
Oamma was son of Tenai, who since has as-
sumed the name of Otey. Whappoi's son Otoo
was then a child of seven years old, Tootaha,
their younger brother, was chief of Attahooroo.

Wars, and various changes, appear to have
preceded the last grand revolution, when the
partisans of Otoo, with the assistance of the mu-
tineers, recovered the royal maro from the men
of Attahooroo. By one of these intestine wars
Temarree, the Tirridirri of Cook, had been pre-
viously deposed, and Otoo, the present Pomarree,
advanced to the dignity of carree rahai. After
which he was invested with the royal maro, like
a coronation. The royal maro, worn only that
day, was afterwards deposited in its place in the
morai. The feasting and heivas, on this occa-
sion, continued two months.

Otoo, the present king, is about seventeen and very large limbed. Though he is absolute, he lives in the greatest familiarity with the lowest of his subjects: he is differently represented; some pronounce him serious and thoughtful; others accuse him of stupidity. His queen, Tetua, is nearly of his own age. Her countenance is pleasing and open, but masculine, and widened by the usual method of pressure, called *touroume**.

The next in rank to the king is his own father, Pomarre, who acts as regent for his son. He is the largest man on the island, being about six feet four inches high, and strong in proportion: his wife, Iddeah, is a woman of a very masculine appearance: they live together in great harmony, though they have ceased to cohabit. The next in dignity are the chiefs in the several districts; some of whom are supreme in more than one district. Next to these are the towhas, the near relations, or younger brethren, or tayos, of the chiefs. The next in rank is the rattira, who has one share to the towha's three. The lowest class in society, after the rattira, is the manahoune; they cultivate the land, and resemble our cottagers†.

The Otaheiteans are friendly and generous, even to excess: they seldom refuse any thing to each other, if importuned: their presents are liberal, even to profusion. They have no writings, or records, respecting property; but they have their land-marks; every man knows his own, and he would be thought of all characters the basest, who should attempt to infringe on his neighbour.

The natural colour of the inhabitants is olive, inclining to copper: those who expose themselves to the sun and sea are darker; but the women, who carefully clothe themselves, and avoid the sun, are not very much darker than an European brunette. Their eyes are black and spark-

ling; their teeth white and even; their skin soft, their limbs finely turned, and their hair jetty. Still, however, their features did not appear beautiful, for they widen the face, and flatten the nose and forehead, by continual pressure with their hands. Their manners are affable and engaging, and their steps easy, firm, and graceful; their tempers mild, gentle, and unaffected; slow to take offence, easily pacified, and seldom retaining resentment or revenge. The women here, as in all hot climates, come earlier to puberty, and fade sooner than in more northern countries.

As wives, the women are, in private life, affectionate, tender and obedient to their husbands; extravagantly fond of their children, nursing them with the utmost care and caution: a cripple is hardly ever seen among them in early life. The men in general exceed the common size, and the chiefs are much larger; few of them being less than six feet high, and proportionably bulky.

The dress of both sexes is nearly the same, excepting that the men wear a narrow piece of cloth, which, passing round the waist, goes between the thighs, and is tucked in before, named the marro, and may be called their breeches. An oblong piece, not unlike a piece of printed calico, near a yard wide, with a hole in the middle, to admit the head, hangs down before and behind, with the sides open, falling loose to the knees, and leaving the arms quite uncovered: this is the teboota. A square piece of cloth, doubled sufficient to pass once and a half round the waist of men, and above the breasts of the women, under the taboota, is called paru: this falls down only to the knees of the man, but to the mid-leg, or ankles of the woman. The women also wear a piece of cloth, which they throw tastily over all, by way of cloak. Instead of the marro, worn by the men,

* It is considered as the distinctive mark of their regal dignity, to be every where carried about on men's shoulders. The king and queen were always attended by a number of men, as carriers, domestics, or favourites, who were sacred, living without families, and attending only on the royal pair; and are all adepts in thievery, plunder, and impurity. The queen has not at present any child, nor is it probable that she will have any, as she is said to be a perfect Messaline, and lives in a promiscuous intercourse with all her porters. The mode of carrying the king and queen is with their legs hanging down before, seated on the shoulders,

and leaning on the head of their carriers: They very frequently amuse themselves with picking out the vermin, which there abound. It is the singular privilege of the queen, that she alone may eat them, which privilege she never fails to exercise.

† The servants of every class are called *toutou*; and such of them as wait wholly on the women, *tuti*. There remains a set of men of the most execrable cast, called *hoo*, who affect the manner, dress, gestures, and voice of females, and are too horrid to be further mentioned.

en; their skin soft,
d their hair jetty.
s did not appear
e face, and flatten
continual pressure
ners are affable and
, firm, and grace-
le, and unaffected;
sified, and seldom
nge. The women
ome earlier to pu-
in more northern

in private life, af-
ficient to their hus-
of their children,
st care and caution;
among them in early
xceed the common
larger; few of them
and proportionably

nearly the same, ex-
arrow piece of cloth,
waist, goes between
in before, named
lled their breeches,
ke a piece of print-
de, with a hole in
head, hangs down
he sides open, fall-
d leaving the arms
teboota. A square
fficient to pass once
of men, and above
under the taboota, is
only to the knees of
eg, or ankles of the
ear a piece of cloth.
ver all, by way of
ro, worn by the men,

carriers: They very
picking out the ver-
singular privilege of
them, which privilege

are called *toutou*; and such
women, *tuti*. There is
excecrable cast, called
dress, gestures, and
be further mentioned.

the women have a small paru, beneath the larger,
as an under petticoat*.

The operation of the tattooing, however
painful it may be, is generally persevered in, but
if the anguish should be very great, the patient
is admitted to cry out, as a kind of temporary
relief.

No children are brought into the world with
less pain or danger than those of Otaheite: the
women have little or no confinement within
doors. The infant soon crawls, and begins to
walk; presently after it begins to swim. They
run about entirely naked, and are remarkably
healthy and active.

Their voice and speech are soft and harmoni-
ous, and their dialect is the Italian of the South
Seas; it abounds with vowels, and expels every
harsh and guttural sound from the alphabet.
The ingenuity of all their works, considering
the tools they possess, is marvellous†.

They have no partitions in their houses; but
they have, in many instances, very refined ideas
of decency: a long resident among them scru-
ples not to declare, that he never saw any appe-
tite, hunger and thirst excepted, gratified in
public.

The deities of Otaheite are almost as numer-
ous as the persons of the inhabitants. Every
family has its *tee*, or guardian spirit, whom they
set up and worship at the morai; but they have
a great god, or gods of a superior order, deno-
minated FWHANOW Po. The general name for
deity is Eatooa. Three are held supreme. To
these they only address their prayers on very ex-
traordinary occasions, supposing them to be too
exalted to be troubled with the affairs of less mo-
ment than the illness of a chief, storms, war, or
some other great calamity.

The *tee*, or guardian spirit, is supposed to be
one of their departed relatives, who, for his su-
perior excellencies, has been exalted to an Eatooa.

They suppose this spirit can occasion sickness, or
remove it; and that he can preserve them from
a malignant deity, who is solely employed in
mischief‡.

They suppose the stars were the children of
the sun and moon. With respect to their wor-
ship, the Otaheitean never draws near the
Eatooa with carelessness and inattention; he is
all devotion: he approaches the sacred place
with reverential awe; uncovers when he treads
the ground, and prays with becoming fervour.
They put great confidence in dreams, supposing
in sleep the soul leaves the body under the care
of the guardian angel, and ranges at large
through the regions of spirits.

The priests of the Society Islands are a nu-
merous body; they are in every district. Manne
Manne appears to be the first among them, for
knowledge and traditionary information. The
priests have plenty of employment, being called
in on all occasions, births, deaths, or sickness;
and are physicians as well as divines. They af-
fect to possess extraordinary powers. When a
priest denounces the necessity of a human sacri-
fice, the manner of selecting them is by a coun-
cil of the chief with the rattiras. If the chief,
&c. on the requisition of the priest, declare they
can find none deserving death in their district, or
refuse to provide a human sacrifice, a hog may
be substituted in his place. A woman cannot be
offered at the Society Islands, though they are
the chief victims at the Friendly Islands. The
sacred ground around the morais afford a sanc-
tuary for criminals. Thither they may flee for
protection, and cannot thence be taken by force,
though they are sometimes seduced to quit their
asylum. The habitations of the British Mis-
sionaries will afford them an assured exemption;
and the whole district of Matavai being ceded to

* The women uncover their shoulders and breasts in the
presence of a chief, or on passing the sacred ground.
Both sexes wear garlands of flowers, and feathers. They
sometimes dress with a garland of cocoa-nut fibres, deco-
rated with bits of pearl shell, and the nails of the thumb
and fingers of their deceased relations. The women have
no morai, nor place of worship; nor are they ever present
at their solemnities; but they suppose they shall be admitted
to happiness with the Eatooa, as well as the men.

† The common habitations are about eighteen feet in the
edge-tree, oblong, and rounded at the ends. Their furni-
ture consists of a few wooden trays and stools for making their
dreadings, posts to hang their baskets on, and a large chest
in which the master and mistress of the house sometimes
repose. Their pillow is a little wooden stool, neatly form-

ed; or they use the stool they sit on in their canoes. Their
usual seat is on the ground, cross-legged, but they have
seats for the accommodation of strangers. The houses are
full of fleas, which harbour in the floor, and are extremely
troublesome. One of the missionaries declares, he has
been obliged to get up at midnight, and run into the sea to
cool himself; and to get rid of a swarm of such disagree-
able companions.

‡ They suppose no person perishes, or becomes extinct
after death; nor do they admit of any punishment after
death, but are rewarded with degrees of eminence and fe-
licity, as men have been more or less pleasing to the deity.
They consider the spirits of their ancestors, male and fe-
male, as exalted into Eatooas, and their favour to be ob-
tained by prayers and offerings.

them, no more human sacrifices will probably be demanded from them,

Both sexes go naked till they are six or seven years of age: they begin tattooing the males at thirteen or fourteen, and the females at an earlier period. They bathe three times a-day in the fresh water, and always wash themselves in it after coming out of the sea; and though the men and women wash together promiscuously, not the least immodesty is permitted. In their dances, indecency escapes censure. The single young men, who in the heivas indulge indecent gestures, would not presume to do so at any other time; and, however strangely the women act in public dances, no woman of character would admit of improper liberties elsewhere. They extract every hair from the nose, armpits, &c. to prevent its harbouring any dust or foulness. They trim their beards with shells, and wear their hair short or long, as fancy dictates. They form their eye-brows into regular arches; and the men are not less attentive to these matters than the women. The fragrant oil supplies the place of pomatum; and powder and civet can hardly furnish greater beauties. The ears of both sexes are bored, for the purpose of decorating them with beads, pearls, or other ornaments; and sometimes the aperture of the ear is stuck with an odoriferous flower. They never suffer a fly to touch their food, if they can by any means prevent it: should they happen to find one dead among their provisions, they throw it instantly to the hogs. To prevent the intrusion of these insects, they all carry fly-flaps, which are usually made of feathers, and fixed to a handle of wood ten or twelve inches long. Whenever you enter a house or place where provisions are preparing, this is the first thing they offer you.

Here, as well as elsewhere, there are some who make a trade of beauty, and know how to make it turn to their advantage; they have procurers, nominal relations, who agree for and receive the price of prostitution. The women of rank allow themselves greater liberties than their inferiors; and many of the arreo women pride themselves on the number of their admirers.

They delight in dogs, especially those with a bushy tail, the hair of which they use in their fine breast-plates; the women not only fondle the puppies, but often suckle them at their breasts. The women must not eat with the men, nor drink out of the same cup; and many kinds

of food are utterly forbidden them. If a man touch their peculiar food, they are obliged to throw it away.

They are not accustomed to regular meals, but usually eat as soon as they rise at day-break. Some are extremely voracious, especially the chiefs, who all live luxuriously. They have more wives than one, amidst the scarcity of women; they drink the yava daily: and when they are asleep, they are fanned and chafed by their women. Their mode of salutation differs considerably from ours; they touch noses; and wonder at our expressing affection by wetting each other's faces with the lips.

Swimming in the surf affords singular delight to the Otaheiteans: at this sport both sexes are extremely dexterous; and the diversion is reckoned great in proportion as the surf runs highest, and breaks with the greatest violence. In the course of this amusement they sometimes run foul of each other, when many are swimming together, those who are coming on being unable to stop their motion, and those moving the contrary way, incapable of keeping their sufficient distance: they are frequently conveyed together by the rushing wave, and hurled on shore before they can disengage themselves. The women are excellent in this sport, and Iddeah, the queen's mother, is said to be the most expert in the whole island. The children take the same diversion in a weaker surf, learning to swim almost as soon as they can walk; and seldom meet with any accident, except that of being dashed upon the beach.

Their amusements on shore are, throwing the spear or javelin; shooting with bows and arrows, wrestling, dancing, and several other games; in all of which the women engage as well as the men. They frequently exercise with quarter-staff; and practise the sling for amusement, as well as employ it in battle. Their dances are various. The houses in which the heivas are performed are open at the ends and in front. Any number of women may perform once; but as the dress is very expensive, seldom more than two or four dance. The pounamu or evening dance, is performed by any number of women, of any age, who choose to attend the place appointed, which is usually the cool shade. They appear in their best apparel, and their heads are ornamented with wreaths of flowers.

them. If a man
y are obliged to

o regular meats,
rise at day-break.
n, especially the
usly. They have
ne scarcity of wo-
y: and when they
d chased by their
ation differs consi-
noses; and won-
n by wetting each

ds singular delight
port both sexes are
diversion is reckon-
surf runs highest,
violence. In the
ey sometimes run
any are swimming
ng on being unable
se moving the con-
ing their sufficien-
conveyed together
cl on shore before
elves. The women
and Iddeah, the
the most expert in
dren take the same
earning to swim al-
; and seldom meet
at of being dashed

e are, throwing the
with bows and ar-
and several other
e women engage a-
equently exercise a-
he sling for amuse-
t in battle. Their
houses in which the
en at the ends and in
men may perform a
y expensive, seldom
nce. The pouna-
med by any number
o choose to attend
is usually the co-
their best appare-
ated with wreath



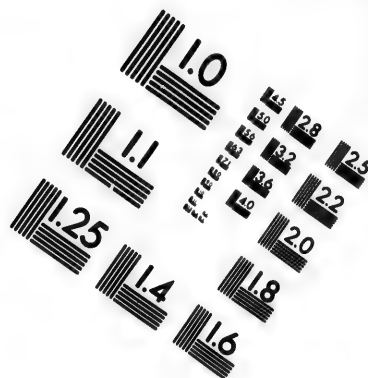
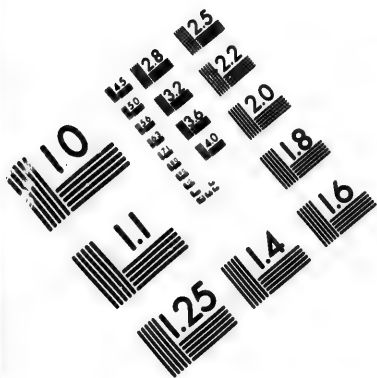
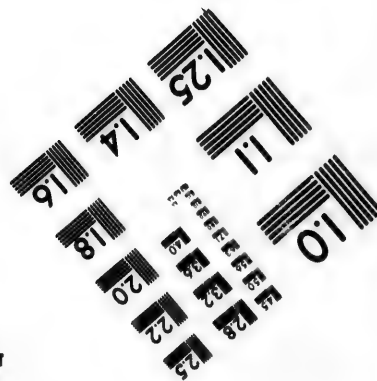
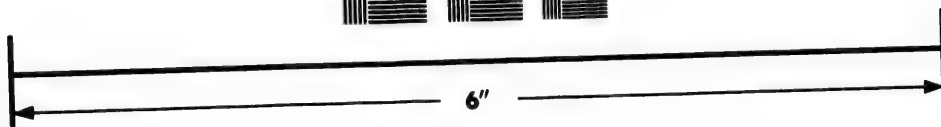
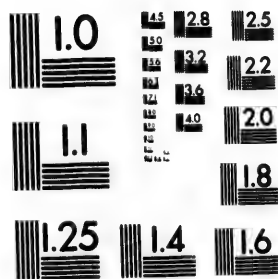


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

28 25
22 20

10
01



Including
Tartary.
and the E

Abridged ch
Bath, his
Sir Ena
the Emba

LORD MA
reputation
ty, and aptitud
ined in a gro
perhaps the on
tura from a h
parties in the
and his friends
ing his eulog
the two great
Commons
ty's envoy
advantageous
twenty years.
both prudenc
vantage, in d
had subsequen
ment-general
and the profit
mendation of
court, of Pek
commonly inv
ardent and, no
stimulation, he
it behoved th
to select a pe
experience in
Vol. I. N

AN ACCOUNT
OF THE
EARL OF MACARTNEY'S EMBASSY
FROM
THE KING OF GREAT BRITAIN,
TO THE
EMPEROR OF CHINA.

Including Observations made in travelling through that ancient Empire, and a Part of Chinese Tartary. Together with a Relation of the Voyage undertaken on the Occasion, by the LION and the HINDOSTAN; as well as of their Return to Europe.

Abridged chiefly from the Papers of his Excellency the EARL OF MACARTNEY, Knight of the Bath, his Majesty's Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary to the Emperor of China; SIR ERASMUS GOWER, Commander of the Expedition, and of other Gentlemen appointed in the Embassy. By SIR GEORGE STAUNTON, Baronet, Secretary to the Embassy.

LORD MACARTNEY was a nobleman whose reputation was established for talent, integrity, and aptitude for business. Few men had been tried in a greater variety of situations; he was perhaps the only man whose conduct (on his return from a high station in India) the opposite parties in the legislature, united in applauding, and his friends enjoyed the satisfaction of hearing his eulogy pronounced, from the mouths of the two great opposite leaders in the House of Commons. When he was formerly his Majesty's envoy at Petersburg, he concluded an advantageous commercial treaty to subsist for twenty years. His lordship afterwards exerted both prudence and address, for the public advantage, in different quarters of the globe. He had subsequently indeed declined the government-general of Bengal, of which the power and the profit exceed any other within the recommendation of the ministry. But a visit to the court of Pekin was, on many accounts, so uncommonly inviting, and presented so much to an ardent and inquisitive mind, that, upon the first intimation, he readily engaged in the attempt. It behoved the British administration, therefore, to select a person of tried prudence, and of long experience in distant courts and countries, to en-

ter upon a business of so much delicacy and difficulty.

His lordship made no stipulation with government, on accepting this employment; but he was permitted to select a friend to accompany his lordship, as his Majesty's secretary to the embassy, and eventual successor to the Ambassador. His lordship's recommendations were accepted in every other department of the embassy. Though Pekin lies on the same side of the equator as London, with a difference of only eleven degrees of latitude, the passage by sea was thought most practicable, though it is so circuitous as to be more than thrice the actual distance between China and Great Britain.

On this occasion the first Lord of the Admiralty, supposing one of his Majesty's ships could not be better employed in time of peace, determined that a sixty-four gun ship should carry the Ambassador out and home; and gave his lordship the privilege of nominating the commander. To every branch of the sea-service, Captain, now Sir Erasmus Gower, was generally known to be equal. Independently of the military exertions of this spirited and able officer, he had twice been round the world at an early age, and materially contributed to surmount the

evils incident to such perilous and protracted voyages. At Lord Macartney's desire, he was appointed to the command of the *Lion* Man of War, and gratified with a selection of his own officers. Innumerable applications were made to serve under him on this occasion: and young gentlemen of the most respectable families, glowing with all the ardour and enterprize of youth, were admitted in the *Lion*, considerably beyond the usual complement of midshipmen.

A military guard was also appointed to attend the person of the Ambassador, as practised in eastern embassies, not so much for the purposes of safety, as to add dignity to the mission; consisting of picked men from the infantry and artillery, in order to convey some idea of the European art of war, and be an interesting spectacle to the emperor of China. It was, however, an indispensable precaution to maintain strict discipline among these men to prevent their being guilty of any excesses, which might appear flagrant in the eyes of the orderly Chinese, and tend to confirm the prejudices already imbibed against the English.

This object was secured, by putting the guard chosen for this purpose, under the command of good and attentive officers. There were also attached to the embassy, a professed painter and draughtsman. In Dr. Gillan, the embassy was provided with a skilful physician, a desirable circumstance for persons destined to pass through a variety of climates; especially as the Chinese are supposed to be far behind Europeans, in every kind of science. The doctor was also deeply versed in chemistry. Dr. Scot, a gentleman of abilities and experience was appointed surgeon, having long served in that capacity in the navy. Dr. Dinwiddie, and Mr. Barrow, were conversant in many branches of the mathematics, and well qualified to be useful on such an expedition. Two botanic gardeners were provided at the public expence, and one at the expence of an individual of the embassy, principally for the purpose of collecting specimens of whatever productions nature might furnish in the course of the expedition.

A Chinese interpreter and translator was now much wanted, but they knew not where to procure a person capable of serving in that capacity. After much difficulty and enquiry, however, Sir William Hamilton, his majesty's minister at Na-

ples procured two Chinese of amiable manners, and of a virtuous and candid disposition, as well as perfectly qualified to interpret between their native language and the Latin and Italian, which the Ambassador understood, who accompanied the secretary of the embassy on his return to England, in May 1792, to embark for China.

They began, from what they knew of their own country, to suggest some of the fittest preparations for an expedition thither. In the choice of presents, for the emperor and his court, they mentioned what they conceived would be most acceptable; as extraordinary pieces of ingenious mechanism, set in frames of precious metal, studded with jewels, &c. Most of these expensive articles found their way, finally into the palaces of the Emperor, and his ministers; having been obtained by the Mandarines of Canton for the promise of protection to their inferiors, they were, after some time, transmitted by them to Pekin, in expectation of procuring the favour of their superiors.

The East India Company appointed one of the most commodious ships in the service, under the command of Captain Mackintosh to carry out such presents, and such persons, belonging to the embassy, as could not be conveniently accommodated on board the *Lion*; and a smaller vessel was provided as a tender. Three commissioners had lately been selected by the East India Company, to regulate their affairs at Canton, who were to communicate there with due solemnity, the intended mission of Lord Macartney, and to deliver a letter, expressive of this intention, from Sir Francis Baring, Chairman of the Court of Directors, in so public a manner to the viceroy of Canton, as to prevent its being kept from the knowledge of the Emperor, if the viceroy should be so inclined.

This letter of Sir Francis stated, that "his sovereign, having heard that it had been expected his subjects, settled at Canton, should have sent a deputation to the court of Pekin, to congratulate the Emperor on his entering the eightieth year of his age; but that such deputation not having been dispatched, he expressed great displeasure thereat; and, being desirous of cultivating the friendship of the emperor of China, and of improving the connection and intercourse between the courts of London and Pekin, and extending the commerce between their respective subjects,

had resolved to send Lord Macartney, as his ambassador, to the Emperor of China, to represent his desire that a British ship might be established in the British Empire, with his attendance on the voyage; and, from the Emperor, to be conveyed to the great distance, should procure the Emperor of China, as near the Emperor of China, the letter thus given, to be expecting that for the proper Britain's ships, as soon as they neighbouring countries. The presents choice and valuable, supposed extraordinary public, the diplomatic prejudice of the not to attribute to East India Company, whole trade of other foreigners; to avert the evil. The general mission, cannot Majesty's private in which it is objects, than of a long trading in intercourse between empire had been followed, by sovereign. Other, who, from their great ingenuity, whilst they on of their faithful of the while the E

manners,
as well
between their
n, which
accompanied
return to
China.

of their
ttest pre-
In the
and his
conceived
ordinary
frames of
c. Most
r way, fi-
and his mi-
standarines
on to their
ransmitted
procuring

one of the
under the
carry out
onging to
niently ac-
a smaller
ee commis-
East India
at Canton
h due so-
rd Macart-
of this in-
hairman of
manner to
being kept
if the vice-

at "his so-
on expected
have sent
ongratulate
fifth year of
not having
displeasure
ivating the
and of in-
se between
e extending
ve subjects

had resolved to send his cousin and counsellor Lord Macartney, a nobleman of great virtue and ability, as his Ambassador to the Emperor of China, represent his person, and to express a desire that a perpetual harmony and alliance might be established between the Emperor and his Britannic Majesty; and that the Ambassador, with his attendants, should soon set out upon the voyage; and, having several presents for the Emperor, from his Britannic majesty, which, from the nicety of their mechanism, could not be conveyed through the interior of China, to so great a distance, without the risk of damage, he should proceed directly, in one of his Majesty's ships, properly attended to the port of Tien-sing, as near as possible to the residence of the Emperor of China." And Sir Francis concludes the letter by requesting "the information thus given, to be conveyed to the court of Peking, expecting that imperial orders would be issued for the proper reception of the King of Great Britain's ships, with his Ambassador and suite, as soon as they should appear at Tien-sing, or the neighbouring coasts."

The presents mentioned in that letter were so choice and valuable, that they were, to some persons, supposed to be calculated for some very extraordinary purpose. One of the members of the diplomatic corps, still holding the exploded prejudice of the jealousy of commerce, failed not to attribute to the British administration, and East India Company, a design of engrossing the whole trade of China, by the exclusion of all other foreigners; and proposed a counter embassy to avert the evil.

The general scope, however, of the present mission, cannot be better ascertained than by his Majesty's private instruction to the Ambassador, in which it is observed, that "more of his subjects, than of any other Europeans, had been long trading in China; that the commercial intercourse between other nations and that great empire had been preceded, accompanied, or followed, by special communications with its sovereign. Others had the support of missionaries, who, from their eminence in science, or their great ingenuity, had been frequently admitted to the familiarity of a polished court, and whilst they were zealous for the propagation of their faith, were supposed not to be unkindful of the views and interest of their country; while the English traders remained unaided,

and at a distance so remote, as to admit of a misrepresentation of the national character and importance. That, under these circumstances, it became incumbent on his Majesty to extend his paternal regard to these his distant subjects, and to claim the Emperor of China's protection for them, with that weight which is due to the requisition of one great sovereign from another; that, a free communication with a singular people, among whom civilization had existed, and the arts been cultivated, through a long series of ages, was worthy of being sought by the British nation;" but that, in seeking to improve a connection with China, no views were entertained but those of the general interests of humanity, the natural benefit of both nations, and the protection of commerce under the Chinese government."

With equal candour, it is said in his Majesty's letter to the emperor of China, that, "the disposition of a great and benevolent sovereign, like his imperial Majesty, whom Providence had graciously seated upon the throne for the good of mankind, was to protect the peace and security of his dominions, and disseminate happiness, virtue, and knowledge among his subjects; extending the same beneficence, with all the peaceful arts, as far as he was able, to the whole human race." That, "his Britannic Majesty, ever impressed with such sentiments, when he found his people engaged in war, had granted to his enemies, after obtaining many victories over them, the blessings of peace, upon the most equitable conditions." That, "since that period, not satisfied with promoting the prosperity of his own subjects, he had also taken various opportunities of fitting out ships, and sending ingenious men in them, for the discovery of distant and unknown regions, not with a view of enlarging his dominions, nor for the purpose of acquiring wealth, but for the sake of increasing the knowledge of the habitable globe; and for communicating the arts and comforts of life, to those parts, where they had hitherto been but little known: that he felt, above all, an ardent desire to become acquainted with those institutions of his Chinese Majesty's populous and extensive empire, which had excited the admiration of all surrounding nations." That "his Britannic Majesty, being then at peace with all the world, thought no time could be so propitious for extending the bounds of friendship and benevolence,

lence, and for proposing reciprocal benefits which must naturally arise from an amicable intercourse between such great and civilized nations as China and Great Britain.

The object of this embassy was, indeed, so little limited to mercantile concerns at Canton, that Lord Macartney had discretionary power to visit every other country in the Chinese Archipelago, from whence important information could be derived; he was therefore furnished with ambassadorial powers addressed to the Emperor of Japan, and the King of Cochin-china, with a general commission to all princes and states, where he might occasionally touch in the Chinese seas.

Every thing, at length, being ready, and the

ships at Portsmouth, all those persons who were in the suite of the Ambassador, to the amount of about one hundred persons, including musicians, artificers, &c. joined his excellency there in September 1792, in order for embarkation. This collection of individuals had just quitted their former stations, and closest connections, to engage in a hazardous, but interesting enterprise, impelled by the strong incentive of curiosity, and eager to indulge the spirit of enquiry, they contemplated China at a distance. They willingly withdrew from the consideration of Europe and its events; feeling no regret but where the affections of nature intervened, when it was announced that the wind and weather were favourable for departure.

SECTION II.

Passage to Madeira—Observations on that Island—Passage to Teneriffe, and to St. Jago—Remarks on those Islands.

THE Lion and Hindostan, freighted with the Ambassador and his suite, set sail from Portsmouth on the 26th of September, 1792; as did the Jackall brig, intended to serve as a tender to the Lion. The course of the voyage to China, immediately from Portsmouth, leading through the British Channel to the westward, required a wind which blows less frequently than others, and for a shorter continuance. Sir Erasmus Gower availed himself of such a wind, as soon as it took place, and the Ambassador, anxious to have the whole benefit of it, to clear the channel, opposed his own inclination, though an invitation had been sent to him to stop at Weymouth, where their majesties then were. The weather, however, did not long continue moderate. The ships, in the darkness of

the night, soon lost company of the tender, and they were themselves compelled to take shelter in Torbay. In the delay of two days here, which an adverse wind made necessary, the arrangements for the future voyage were made, to the general satisfaction*.

It must be admitted, indeed, that landsmen reflecting on their situation when at sea, are conscious of their inferiority to seamen on this new element. They are unacquainted with the structure of the complicated machine which holds them, on the solidity and success of which depend the preservation of their lives. Such reflections as these, however, are slight and transitory, and hardly damp that happiness of which a passenger's life at sea is certainly susceptible †.

* In the vessels now devoted to the service of the Embassy, every comfort was provided. In the Lion, though burthened with the baggage and usual incumbrances of travellers, warlike-stores, and those required for navigation, sustenance for four hundred men including passengers and crew, for a considerable time to come, yet room was reserved for procuring many advantages of a residence upon land. Apartments were allotted and distributed among the principal passengers and officers, where they might partake of society, or withdraw to privacy, at their option; and the deck formed an open area, sufficiently capacious to allow the full enjoyment of air and exercise.

† Though the weather was extremely rough, very few were affected with sickness among the passengers in the Lion and Hindostan. A distinction appeared, on these occasions, in the temperaments of men, which their appearance did not in the least denote. The two gentlemen who suffered most from sickness, were of an adult-age, of frame sufficiently robust, had generally been healthy, and had already been at sea; while the honourable Mr. Wedd who was going in the Lion, to try the climate of Madeira for a consumption, was not affected with the most violent agitation of the ship.

On the 1
Torbay, and
of Devonsh
flat isle of
land for ni
such a situ
awful spect
the mind co
munity of m
ticular fossi
through the

The Eng
apprehend
age was not
or to avoid
tinued to st
rection para
of Gibraltar
Sir Erasmus
Europe to l
a current or
bay, formed
terre, and int
observations,
poses such
south-east, a
The ships
mate, assiste
observations,
October in
Soon afterw
the Desertas
most distant

* Sir Erasmus
Madeira, to en
and then proce
the road of Fu
of the norther
mistaken for a
but without so
Madeira. The
before, or on
island an acco
stopping there
their boats to v
ited by the pr
formation whe
board. The m
sels that are c
the visiting off
clandestinely,
of war salute
with an equal

† On the 6
Vol. I.

On the 1st of October the ships set sail from Torbay, and stretching over from the hilly coast of Devonshire, soon beheld Britany, and the flat isle of Ushant; after which they saw no land for nine successive days. However usual such a situation is to every navigator, it is an awful spectacle for him for the first time; and the mind contemplates with admiration the ingenuity of man, in applying the quality of a particular fossil to the purpose of directing his way through the trackless ocean.

The English having at that time no enemy to apprehend or to attack, the progress of the voyage was not impeded by efforts to approach to, or to avoid them; and Sir Erasmus Gower, continued to steer, with favourable gales, in a direction parallel to Spain, Portugal, the Straits of Gibraltar, and the northern parts of Africa. Sir Erasmus observed, that all ships bound from Europe to Madeira, will perceive their way by a current or set, from the western ocean into the bay, formed between Ushant and Cape Finisterre, and into the Mediterranean. And from his observations, in five visits to Madeira, he supposes such current should be estimated to set south-east, about eleven miles in fifty leagues.

The ships steering their course by this estimate, assisted by several time-keepers and lunar observations, found themselves on the 10th of October in sight of Porto Santo and Madeira. Soon afterward three very small islands, called the Desertas, were observed, of which the two most distant were little more than pointed rugged

* Sir Erasmus advises, "all ships bound for the island of Madeira, to endeavour to make or steer for Porto Santo, and then proceed for the Brazen-head, or eastern point of the road of Funchal, by going between it and the Desertas; of the northernmost of which is a high rock, frequently mistaken for a sail. The passage is about nine miles wide, but without soundings, except in very deep water, close to Madeira. The regulations of the port require all ships, before, or on entering, to send to the governor of the island an account of what they are, and their reasons for stopping there. Men of war are not permitted to send their boats to vessels coming into the road, till they are visited by the pratique-boat, whose business is to procure information whether any infectious disorder should be on board. The same caution is to be observed respecting vessels that are departing, which must not be boarded after the visiting officer has searched for natives leaving the island clandestinely, or for having prohibited goods. English men of war salute with thirteen guns, and are complimented with an equal number in return.

† On the first view, the island of Madeira appeared

rocks. The third, named the Table Deserta, was elevated, but flat and in some degree cultivated: near it a rock rises perpendicularly out of the sea*.

The British government allows the contractors five shillings a ton for water, and sixpence a pound for beef for the use of the ships of war. The contract wine is too weak in quality to admit of keeping: the price is sixteen pounds for a ton, containing one hundred and twenty gallons. A fleet of twenty sail of men of war, may be completely supplied with refreshments here in the course of nine or ten days. Ships which are obliged to winter in Funchal road, should not be inattentive to the dark gloomy appearance of the weather to the southward, with a swell setting in, it being extremely dangerous to remain at anchor with those prognostics†.

Every honour and attention was paid, by order of the Portuguese governor, to the Ambassador, as well on board the Lion, as after he was landed. His excellency declined a military guard; but yielding to the solicitation of the governor, he partook of an entertainment which was truly sumptuous, and to which were also invited the gentlemen in the suite of the Ambassador, the officers of the Lion and Hindostan, the merchants of the British factory, and several of the principal inhabitants of the island; amounting in the whole to about two hundred persons; but not one lady was present upon the occasion, except, in the beginning, the governor's daughter, a child of about ten years of age,

rocky, barren, and uncultivated; but on a nearer approach, its beauties expanded to the eye, and all was inviting and picturesque. The town is situated in a verdant valley, in which churches, and other white structures are interspersed, forming an agreeable contrast with the ever-green trees and plantations. Spring and summer are said to be the only seasons here, as heat and cold are seldom known to be so extreme as to be unpleasant. Having left England in the beginning of October, when vegetation, in many instances, began to fade, and announced the speedy droop of nature, its wild luxuriance in Madeira was the more striking, so soon afterwards, in that island: the whole creation seemed alive; myriads of insects were seen buzzing in the air; and swarms of lizards frisked along the ground in every direction. Hardly a plant was visible without fruit or flowers; every tree was in leaf; many of the humble herbs of Europe, approaching here to the size of shrubs. Nothing appeared languid or declining except man might be so considered. The common people had dark complexions, forbidding features, and were under the middle size of Europeans.

made her appearance, dressed in all the formality of a matron, and performed the honours of the table without embarrassment. At the desert, indeed, for which purpose fresh and cool apartments were appropriated, the governor's wife presided, she having been too much indisposed to endure the whole ceremonious task. She was addressed by the name of Donna Louisa, and her daughter by that of Donna Maria.

In the hall of the government house, the popular but doubtful story of the first discovery of Madeira was painted, by an Englishman, named Robert Macham, who lived near the conclusion of the reign of the third Edward. The particulars of this strange story, have, indeed, the testimony of Alcafarado, but de Barros, the Livy of the Portuguese, ascribes the Discovery of Madeira entirely to Gonzales Zarco, and Frisian Vas. The popular story, therefore, seems not entitled to a repetition.

Another native of Great Britain, Mr. William Johnstone, lately a merchant of Madeira, says the mean length of this island is about thirty-seven miles, and the mean breadth eleven miles, containing an area of 407 square miles, or 260,480 acres. It is divided into thirty-seven parishes, and contains about eighty thousand inhabitants. A considerable part of Madeira, however, seems incapable of cultivation; the sides of many of the hills being steep and rugged, and nearly destitute of soil*.

The chief produce of this island is the grape, from which are annually made about twenty-five thousand pipes of wine; half of which is exported to England, North America, and the East and West Indies: the remainder is consumed by the natives, either in its original state, or in spirit distilled from it. The grape of this island is generally white, and produces a white juice, but there are others that yield a deeper coloured juice, forming a red wine of the name of Tinto, of which a small proportion gives a

* Indolence is very prevalent in this island, particularly among the men, who are often basking in the sun, or stretching at their length upon their floors; while their wives and daughters are dispatched to a considerable distance upon the mountains, to cut down broom, which they load themselves with to sell at Funchal for fuel. Though the roads are wonderfully rough here, these women travel constantly bare-footed: the poverty of their food, consisting principally of pumpkins and salt-fish, added to their ex-

darker tinge to the whiter juice. There is also a red skinned grape, called Bastarda, of which the juice is white: and, in some few soils, another grape is raised, from which the celebrated Malmsey wine is produced. The average price of every kind of wine is about fourteen pounds, which reduces the whole export value under two hundred thousand pounds; part of which is applied in the payment of manufactures from Great Britain, flour and salt-fish from America, and corn from the Western Isles, belonging, as well as Madeira, to the crown of Portugal.

The tyranny of the Inquisition is not upheld here as formerly; even the women are said to be less religious: none of them have taken the veil in Madeira for the last twenty years, though the influence of the Portuguese clergy was formerly so unbounded, that they governed every private family. The British factory has ever been protected from the attacks of the Inquisition; and is on the best terms with the governor and chief judge, to each of whom a small salary is allowed by way of compliment.

The commercial houses in Madeira are open for the reception of all passengers, stopping for refreshment there, in their progress to Asia or America, if furnished with the slightest recommendation from any friend in Europe; and on the arrival of fleets, with many passengers, a continued round of entertainments and festivity ensues†.

Noxious animals, of any kind, are not known to exist in Madeira; no serpents, whether venomous or innocent; no hares or foxes. Salted cod, imported from America, is the common food among the poor, which it is supposed contributes much to the scorbutic eruptions on the skin, so common among the lower classes of the people here; who are also much afflicted with rheumatic complaints. The middle and higher classes experience paralytic affections, supposed to have been produced by indolence, repletion,

treme labour, together with the warmth of the climate, give them all the appearance of age at a very early period of life.

† Among the most esteemed food at Madeira the hog must certainly be noticed: these animals are permitted to range wild amidst the mountains; when young, having been previously marked by their respective owners; they feed on nutritious roots, and are captured by dogs.

and the neglected are not known marshes to pro-

Sometimes the mountains on the violence as to which they have stones upon the danger of their streets. Such gallants from the mother country latticed window

To Dr. Gillard several craters had taken place: this was a Brazen-head.

appearance can v the body of the sidered as the from whence, a canic matter was of Porto Santo joined to it, but been separated spaces have been

The rocky shore surge continual defence against to the capital, v mile along the b depth, consists at the eastern ex This fort is so le shipping. It is Lorenzo, near th an irregular w and a battery to each. This is governor. A t ted on a hill, own, distant at difficult of a when the hill ab able resistance outh fort, w

* The town ha rough the streets, contain about mail, has lately tation are upon t

and the neglect of exercise. Intermittent fevers are not known in the island, where there are no marshes to produce them.

Sometimes the gusts of wind come down the mountains on the town of Funchal, with such violence as to unroof the houses; to prevent which they have a method of placing heavy stones upon the tiles, without reflecting on the danger of their rolling upon the people in the streets. Such perils, however, never intimidate gallants from giving, according to the custom of the mother country, nightly serenades under the latticed windows of a fair inhabitant*.

To Dr. Gillan it appeared that there had been several craters in the island, and that eruptions had taken place from them at very distant intervals: this was particularly manifest near the Brazen-head. As far, indeed, as external appearance can warrant a reasonable conjecture, the body of the island of Madeira may be considered as the summit of a primary mountain, from whence, at many subsequent periods, volcanic matter was exploded. The smaller islands of Porto Santo and the Desertas were originally joined to it, but have in a variety of convulsions been separated from it, and the intermediate spaces have been covered with the sea.

The rocky shore of this island, and the violent surge continually beating on it, form a natural defence against invasion. What art had added to the capital, which extends three quarters of a mile along the beach, and nearly half a mile in depth, consists of four small forts; one situated at the eastern extremity of the beach of Funchal. This fort is so low as to be exposed to the fire of shipping. It is called Saint Jago: that of St. Lorenzo, near the western extremity of the town, is an irregular work, having three small bastions, and a battery towards the sea, and flanking the beach. This is occupied as the residence of the governor. A third, called Peak-Castle, is situated on a hill, at the north-west angle of the town, distant about a mile from the shore. It is difficult of access from the southward; but, when the hill above it is once gained, no formidable resistance could be expected from it. The fourth fort, which stands upon Loo rock,

* The town has the advantage of streams running through the streets, but it is not kept very clean; it is said to contain about fifteen thousand people. An Almeyda, a small, has lately been finished here. Population and cultivation are upon the increase, but the seasons are uncer-

though higher than the largest ships, is not sufficiently so.

The Peak-castle seems, however, to afford the principal defence; being well built, and in tolerable repair; but it has no ditch. About twelve guns are mounted on it, of old English make, of different callibres and constructions. Peak-castle has a small armoury, containing about one hundred and fifty stand of arms, and three brass field pieces.

The forces on the island are one hundred and fifty artillery, and as many infantry; with two thousand militia. The regular troops are partly composed of the natives of Angola, a Portuguese settlement on the coast of Africa; pressed into the service from the most idle and disorderly inhabitants of the place.

Fresh meat, vegetables, a stock of good water, and wood for fuel, were procured within a single week for the Lion and Hindostan. The Jackall tender, which lost their company in the channel, had not yet joined them, but the Ambassador wished to pursue his route without delay. His excellency and suite, intent upon the object of arriving soon in China, quitted, with less regret, their amusements in Madeira. And, instructions being left for the Jackall, to proceed with all convenient expedition to Port Praya, in the island of Saint Jago, they embarked from Funchal, on the 18th of October, 1792.

Not far from the coast of Africa there are several clusters of islands and rocks, besides those mentioned in the preceding section, situated in different degrees of latitude, and near enough to the continent to be supposed to have been, at a very remote period, joined to it. The first cluster, which occurs in a southerly course from Madeira are little more than rocks, called the Salvages, which are to be carefully avoided. Within one day's farther sail, lie another cluster, which the ancients named the Fortunate Isles, from the abundant fertility of the soil, as well as the salubrity of the climate: Without having lost the good qualities, significantly at first given them, they are now denominated the Canary Islands, belonging to the crown of Spain.

Next to them in succession, though far distant,

tain; the crop sometimes fails, and plunges the farmer into debt; but the lenient laws of this country, though they seize the property of the debtors, do not deprive them of their liberty.

are the Cape Verde Islands, so named from their vicinity to a continental cape with that appellation: the whole of which are subject to the king of Portugal. One of these islands is named St. Jago, where the Jackall tender had been ordered to follow Sir Erasmus Gower; and, to allow her time to overtake him there, as well as to procure better wine for the seamen of the Lion, than Sir Erasmus could get in Madeira at the contract price, he resolved to touch, in his way to Saint Jago, at Santa Cruz, in the island of Teneriffe, one of the Canaries. In proceeding to Teneriffe, Sir Erasmus Gower observed a constant current setting to the southward, at about the rate of one third of a mile an hour, being equal to twenty-five miles in the distance between that island and Madeira.

On the 20th of October, the Island of Teneriffe was seen through the haze, by the people of the Lion. The ships did not approach the land till the afternoon of the following day. The north-east of Teneriffe, called Punto de Nago, appeared, at about four leagues distance, to be a steep bluff point, not unlike the Brazen-head going into Funchal, though it is higher. The land, north or north-west, was rocky and irregular. And three rocky islands appeared detached from the main land. The island, called the Grand Canary, was seen lying to the south; and, to the south-east, the road and town of Santa Cruz. The Lion anchored in twenty fathoms, the south-east point of the island open. With the castle point bearing south-west by west, distant off shore about a quarter of a mile. The anchoring ground being very bad, in general, it is advisable, for ships that call at this place in the winter months, merely to procure refreshments, not to come to an anchor, but to

* Two or three days being required for shipping a necessary supply of wine for the Lion, several of the passengers from that ship, as well as from the Hindostan, visited as much of the island as they could. The town of Santa Cruz, which is pleasantly situated, appeared not to be so crowded with inhabitants as that of Funchal, but it was clearer, better laid out, and more compact. The well-built pier, stretching into the sea, the almeida along the quay, shaded with rows of trees, and the fountain adorned with marble statues in the square, denote a government attentive to the improvement of the place. The walks and rides in the neighbourhood of Santa Cruz, were more level and agreeable, than those in the vicinity of Funchal; and, from the lightness and purity of the air they breathed, they felt they were in a fortunate island. A person, with whom some of

stand off and on, sending a boat on shore to procure the necessary forms with the governor, and to order supplies on board. Even in the summer months, it is necessary to buoy the cables.

This place is defended by batteries, and a line of musquetry towards the sea, and the surge is generally so high as to render it almost inaccessible to the boats. There is a good mole or pier, where boats may conveniently land in all seasons: the pier is also defended by a square fort, which appears in good condition; and there are forts and small batteries to the northward and southward of the mole.

Agreeably to the regulations of the port, no communication is allowed between the ships and shore, from the setting to the rising of the sun. Beef, mutton, pork, goats, poultry, fruit, and vegetables are good and reasonable. This place affords many advantages; the wine is of a stronger quality, and may be had at a cheaper rate than at Madeira*.

The markets here are stocked with a profusion of red grapes, though but few of white ones were seen; yet the wine, exported from Teneriffe, is generally of that colour. The season of vintage excites cheerfulness and activity, and the people of the streets partook of the general gaiety. This city is situated on an eminence, in an extensive and fertile plain. From higher grounds water is conveyed in fountains to Laguna, in an aqueduct composed of wooden troughs, and supported by poles properly fixed. The town of Tidoronte, with several adjacent little villages, formed a scene perfectly picturesque. The bosoms of the mountains were well cultivated, and their sides decorated with spontaneous plants of warm regions.

A heavy shower of rain overtook these travellers.

These gentlemen entered into conversation, mentioned, as received opinion, that the island contained several rich mines of gold; but that the king of Spain had commanded the search for them to be discontinued, lest they should prove a temptation to the English to get possession of the island.

The principal party from the ship took another compass into the country, and visited the capital of the island called Saint Christopher de Laguna. Here the courts of justice are held, though the governor now resides at Santa Cruz. The prisons of this capital were principally occupied by young females, who were accused of incontinency, a crime which the softness of the climate precipitates into the commission of, though it is rigidly pursued by the ecclesiastical jurisdiction.

her, amid the
being driven fo
village, one
that a similar
there almost a
the bottom of
the Peak of
the sea-port of
tant. The fir
of landed pro
commerce is c
portation of w
From Orata
wards the Pe
time of the ye
unfavourable
cent was not
opportunity to
able recur, an
ry their clanc
3d, was seren
day. The hu
above the fleec
city of Orata
The party set
through a plea
they soon bega
of a deep valle
chestnut-trees w
were scattered
almost conceal
surrounded the
Having pas
they arrived at
mountain, on y

* Throughout
ations resembling
being now sett
usual path: t
ometer having f
vultures propos
distance farther,
aces were emplo
for another ho
rain, the cold
mt. The travel
and been named
they were extro
each the summit
ble. The guide
approaching, in
nger must abse
spot, where
ow of a projec

amid the mountains, a little before noon: being driven for shelter among the habitations of a village, one of the occupiers informed them, that a similar shower falls about the same hour there almost every day throughout the year. At the bottom of these mountains, out of which rises the Peak of Teneriffe, is the villa or city, and the sea-port of Oratava is about three miles distant. The first is inhabited chiefly by persons of landed property; and at the second much commerce is carried on, principally for the exportation of wine.

From Oratava, the ascent of the mountain towards the Peak, is generally attempted. The time of the year, late in October, was, indeed, unfavourable to such an undertaking; but the ascent was not declared to be impossible. The opportunity to the same persons, would not probably recur, and they came to a determination to try their chance. The morning of October the 23d, was serene, and seemed to promise a good day. The huge cone of the Peak, towering above the fleecy clouds, seemed to overhang the city of Oratava, though several miles distant. The party set out about noon, and proceeded through a pleasant vale, covered with vineyards: they soon began the ascent along the sloping side of a deep valley, on which a number of large chesnut-trees were observed; a few solitary huts were scattered on the edge of the mountain, almost concealed in the thick shrubbery which surrounded them.

Having passed the valley of chesnut-trees, they arrived at the summit of the Green, or first mountain, on which they found a level extensive

plain, covered with lofty heath, interspersed with myrtle, laurel, and whortleberry shrub, all in great luxuriance, but no cultivation appeared to have been attempted by man: nor was any human habitation to be seen. At the termination of this plain a second mountain commenced, the sides of which were steep, barren, and craggy. The road lay along a dangerous ascent on the brink of precipices: little verdure appeared, and a few pine trees were thinly scattered on its sides. Wild goats were the only quadrupeds which seemed to have residence on these mountains. The party continued to ascend, by rugged narrow paths, depending on the sure-footed mules for safety, till they arrived at the watering-place in the hollow of a huge rock, under the shade of a solitary pine.

Thibaut, a native of Turin, and an ingenious mathematical instrument-maker, attended the party, and found by the barometer that they had ascended, late in the afternoon, near six thousand feet above the town they quitted in the morning. But now the mountain began to be over-cast with clouds, from the hollows which intervened between the basis of the great cone and the second mountain, impetuous gusts of wind forcing and combating with each other, and seeming to prohibit any approach towards them*.

The party rose on the approach of day, little refreshed by repose, their clothes dripping with the rain which had fallen upon them. The summit of the mountain appeared only at a little distance, but the weather was tremendous; the wind being extremely boisterous, accompanied with deluging drops of rain. The point of the

* Throughout this second mountain were observed excavations resembling small craters of extinct volcanoes. Evening being now setting in, it became more difficult to trace out the usual path: the cold began to be unpleasant, the thermometer having fallen twenty-six degrees. The guides and volunteers proposed to halt; pronouncing it dangerous to advance farther, at least for that night. Promises and motives were employed to induce them to proceed; they did so for another hour, to very little purpose; if then began to rain, the cold was more intense, and the wind more violent. The travellers were still at some distance from what had been named the Resting Place of the English. Thither they were extremely anxious to arrive, that they might reach the summit of the cone the next afternoon, if practicable. The guides, however, perceiving a tempest then approaching, in which they declared every unsheltered passenger must absolutely perish, insisted upon stopping on a spot, where they could secure themselves under the shadow of a projecting rock. One of the party, endeavoured

to proceed up the hill on his mule, but finding it impossible to resist the impetuosity of the storm, thought it necessary to return to his companions. They had been supplied with a quantity of refreshments from Oratava, but they could only strew the ground with leafy branches of the Spanish broom, by way of beds to sleep on. They were a little sheltered from the wind, but not from the rain, which was frequent, but not violent: the air was keen, the thermometer at forty five degrees; but the branches of the cystus, which grew on this dreary mountain, proved to be excellent fuel, and readily produced a cheering blaze. An awful scene presented itself around them, as they lay under the grand canopy of heaven: the moon, then in its second quarter, shone with brilliancy, and the zenith happened to be clear, towards which the peak upreared its high and tapering point; whilst the base was lost in opaque rolling clouds, which whirled impetuously from thence into the vallies far below, reaching at last the ocean, over which some remained suspended, whilst others seemed incorporated with the waters.

upper cone was clear, but the conical frustum which supported it, was enveloped in thick clouds, rolling in rapid succession along its sides.

Some of the party, concurring in opinion with their guides, proposed to abandon the idea of proceeding farther; but Dr. Gillan, Dr. Scot, Mr. Barrow, and Mr. Hamilton, of the Hindostan, were strenuous for persevering in their attempt. The rest of them, however, all turned their eyes to Orotava, except a youth of about eleven years of age, who reluctantly separated from his more adventurous companions, to follow the retrograde steps of the person who had the care of him. Of the two guides, belonging to the party, one conducted the gentlemen going to Orotava, who, as they descended from the mountain, experienced a rapid change of climate as they approached the genial atmosphere below; such a change being little less astonishing than if, in that short space of time, they had suddenly been transported from Greenland, into the warm latitudes of the Pacific ocean; so much quicker is the transition, with regard to its effect, in a vertical than in an horizontal direction.

Before the travellers had reached the sea-port of Orotava, they passed through the city, or upper town, of the same name, neatly built of stone. Taking the dimensions of a large dragon's blood tree, growing near it, they found its trunk, at the height of ten feet from the ground, measured thirty-six feet in girth; at the height of fifteen feet, this trunk divided itself into about a dozen branches, sprouting regularly, in an oblique direction upwards. Concerning this tree there was a tradition, very current in the island, that it existed, of no inconsiderable dimensions, when the Spaniards conquered Teneriffe, about three centuries ago; and that it was then, what it still remains, a land-mark to distinguish the boundaries of landed possessions in its vicinity.

The gentlemen who were anxious to pursue their journey upwards, were accompanied by the second guide. This man was a descendant of the Guanches, or original inhabitants, when invaded by the Spaniards in the fifteenth century. With this conductor, the four gentlemen above named,

soon gained the summit of the mountain, from whence the great cone arose. On this summit another extensive plain appeared, not clothed with verdure, but loaded with huge masses of irregular black lava. The wind blew violently the rain increased, and the apex of the peak began to be obscured with clouds. It now became extremely difficult for the mules to stem the current of the wind, or for the riders to insure their seats.

Having ascended about two thousand feet above the place where they had passed the night, the muleteers became refractory, and would not suffer the animals to be encouraged to proceed the cold and sleet being then so excessive, that the reins could not be managed with steadiness or precision. By the violence of the tempest Mr. Hamilton was literally blown from his horse. Dr. Scot, being extremely well mounted, boldly pushed forward, till he was lost to the rest, in the thickness of the mist. Dr. Gillan, in endeavouring to follow, had his mule forced by the wind to the edge of a steep precipice, where it fell into a bed of volcanic ashes, or both mules have inevitably perished. No efforts could afterwards stimulate the animal to move forwards a step. Another ran under the shelter of a mass of lava, where he remained equally immovable. As a last resource now left, the horses and mules were tied to the neighbouring rocks (the muleteers and guide having already disappeared) and they proceeded on foot, along a valley, whose ascent was gradual to the bottom of the great pyramid, from whence the peak arose, as from a second cone; but the difficulty of getting farther on, to persons already exhausted, was found to be insurmountable. Under all these circumstances they returned to the place where they had left the cattle; whose faces were no sooner turned down the hill, than their ardour was found as difficult to restrain, as it had been to push them forward.

The party soon found themselves in the midst of very dense clouds, the contents of which were discharged upon them in torrents of heavy rain, which fell for about three hours: the weather soon afterwards cleared up, and the upper part of the peak appeared covered with snow*.

fatigues he had undergone; but care and attention in the hospitable house of Mr. Little, soon restored him to

From this point, Cruz, and the rest, in a direct line, at the foot of the volcano, in the pure water, exposed to the sun, are filled with a

The great heat on which the ice, gives the belows an opportunity to cool the water. This is collected at the summit of the volcano, where the cones are conveyed, in a places on the coast.

The exterior dependency of the reaches, absorb otherwise be a construction. Relieve the gentry of seldom seen out the churches at observance of in the Canaries, net revenue of expences of amounts to about The monopolies greatest grievance

In his excursion, Dr. Gillan, volcanic formations and striking of the beach,

other gentlemen, their former sufferings, some agreeable trip day the travellers

The excursion attempt, and so with less difficulty, and extensive, to intercept the visitated, but the Within the summit itself about eighty descended, and the face is covered.

* As soon as they had reached Orotava, a fever confined Dr. Gillan to his bed, which had been brought on by the

From this place they saw the town of Santa Cruz, and the shipping in the road, though distant, in a direct line, about twenty-five miles. At the foot of the Peak there were several caverns, in the midst of lava; some filled with pure water, extremely frozen, others, in winter, are filled with snow*.

The great height of the mountain of Teneriffe on which the intense cold produces abundance of ice, gives the inhabitants of the warmer climate belows an opportunity of using that substance to cool the wines for their own consumption. This is collected by the peasants, in winter, near the summit of the Peak, and preserved in caves where the cone begins to rise, from whence it is conveyed, in summer, to Orotava, and other places on the coast.

The exterior practices of devotion, in every dependency of Spain where the inquisition reaches, absorb much of the time which might otherwise be employed for the purposes of instruction. Religion is the principal business of the gentry of both sexes. Ladies of rank are seldom seen out of their own families, except in the churches at mass, matins, and vespers. The observance of religious duties is little interrupted in the Canaries, by pursuits of commerce. The net revenue of the crown, after defraying the expenses of administration, of all the Canaries, amounts to about sixty thousand pounds a year. The monopolies, not the taxes, are said to be the greatest grievances of the inhabitants.

In his excursion through the island of Teneriffe, Dr. Gillan says, the appearances in it for volcanic formation and origin are more numerous and striking than at Madeira: all the stones of the beach, all the ground and rocks in the

neighbourhood of Santa Cruz, are manifestly volcanic.

Teneriffe is about seventy miles in length, and twenty-two in breadth; the number of its inhabitants being calculated at about one hundred thousand; of whom, however, there is annually a drain to the Spanish colonies in South America, to increase the number of foreign settlers there. The poor of Teneriffe, being very scantily paid for their labour, are easily persuaded to emigrate, and they have not the resource of manufactures, except an insignificant one in silk. Besides corn and roots the subsistence of the common people is principally confined to cod-fish. They are not, however, very subject to disease; and instances of longevity, even to a hundred years, are not uncommon among them: the air is dry, and remarkably pure.

The native Canary bird is greyish, with a few yellow feathers on his breast, which increase in size and number with the age of the bird. But the Canary birds usually sold in England, are principally bred in Germany, and by domestication, are greatly altered from the wild natives of the Canaries; their notes are also less pleasing. Teneriffe is not the largest, though probably the most fertile of the Canary Islands.

On the 27th of October, the Lion and Hindostan continued their route from Santa Cruz towards Port Praya in the island of St. Jago. They met immediately with the trade winds, which blew over the ocean constantly from the eastward. The ships were therefore rapidly wafted beyond that portion of the globe, which was considered as dividing the temperate from the torrid zone: the latter would indeed deserve the name of uninhabitable, were it not for

other gentlemen partook of a ball in the evening, where their former sufferings were rewarded with the company of some agreeable English and Spanish ladies. On the following day the travellers returned to Santa Cruz.

The excursion to the Peak, sometimes so fatiguing in the attempt, and so difficult to accomplish, is often attended with less difficulty. The prospect from the Peak is romantic and extensive, no other hill being of sufficient altitude to intercept the view: the north-west coast seems well cultivated, but the south-east appears dreary and barren. Within the summit an excavation or cauldron presents itself about eighty feet in depth, into which the gentlemen descended, and gathered some sulphur, with which the surface is covered. In many parts the foot cannot continue

above a minute on the same spot, the heat penetrates so rapidly through the shoe; smoke also frequently issues from the earth. In the cauldron the sulphureous odour is very offensive.

* The storm experienced on the Peak of Teneriffe by this party, and which impeded their ascent at that time, was severely felt in the roads of Santa Cruz. "The winter," says Sir Erasmus Gower, "appeared to be there set in, but its approach was premature by at least a month. Several merchant vessels drove, or were dragged, from their anchoring ground, together with their anchors. The Hindostan lost two anchors, and, had the gale continued, might have been in danger of driving against the rocks."

those

those regular breezes which moderate the heat.

On the 2d of November in the afternoon the Isle of May appeared in sight: the north-east end of it was extremely low, not much above the level of the sea; the land rises, gradually, till it arrives at a volcanic mountain. At six the following morning the island of Saint Jago was discovered, and at noon the Lion anchored in Praya bay, in seven fathoms water. English men of war salute with eleven guns, relying on the return of an equal number. This bay has long been frequented by ships bound to the southward; as bullocks, sheep, hogs, goats, poultry, and fruit are plenty and reasonable. Fish was also caught in abundance with the seine. An excellent kind of rock-cod, was likewise taken from among the rocks with the rod and line.

From the ships' decks, the island now bore a brown appearance, but the verdure of the large leaves of the cocoa-nut, and other trees in the sand behind the beach, contributed to give it somewhat of the air of cheerfulness; but, as soon as the ships' boats had landed, a ghastly figure was seen, gliding hastily along the shore, which demonstrated the wretched situation of the island. It proved to be an English sailor, who had formerly been employed on board a Dutch East-Indiaman, but had, by some accident, been left behind at Saint Jago. The island, he said, was absolutely in a state of famine; that very little rain had fallen there for three years before, and the rivers were all nearly dry. The surface of the earth was almost destitute of herbage, and the principal part of the cattle had already perished for want of sustenance; many of the inhabitants had emigrated, and others were absolutely famished. Even the figure of the miserable narrator was a striking confirmation, of the extreme distress he was attempting to describe. He admitted that he had not been long upon the island, but he had already suffered severely by the general want. He

* On a sandy beach, a little to the right of Saint Jago, close to the rock at the foot of an elevated plain, are the ruins of a once elegant Romish chapel, perhaps erected there by the grateful piety of some person who had providentially escaped shipwreck. On the same plain the town or hamlet of Praya is situated, the residence of the governor-general for the crown of Portugal. It contains about one hundred small habitations, one story high, promiscu-

ously scattered. Not being commanded by any neighbouring eminence it had been thought a situation capable of defence, and was now a sort of battery, nearly in a state of ruins. The militia consisted of three regiments, of about seven hundred men each, of whom the officers were chiefly negroes or mulattoes. The prison was the most superb building, and next to that the church, of which a dark-coloured mulatto officiated as priest.

was without money, and had no occupation on shore. Of his scanty stock of common seaman's clothes, he gladly exchanged the chief articles, for roots, or any thing eatable, to support a wretched existence. English vessels, which called at Praya bay, since his arrival, refused to take him on board, because he had entered into foreign service. By a humane regulation of the British navy, a British sailor, left in foreign parts by British ships, is received on board any of his majesty's ships which touch there; but this poor man was in a predicament which deprived him of that resource*.

The governor inhabits a small wooded barrack at the extremity of the plain, commanding a pleasant view of the bay and shipping. He received the Ambassador, on his landing, with all the honours due to his dignified character, advancing a considerable distance to meet his excellency and conduct him to his residence. But having partook of the general distress of the country, arising from the drought which had so long prevailed, and rendered almost as barren as a rock, he had neither wine nor any other refreshments to present. Whatever was the cause, which thus arrested the bountiful hand of nature, by withdrawing the sources of fertility, it was remarkable that some few trees and plants continued to flourish luxuriantly, though a proper portion of humidity for the purpose of vegetable life was partially denied to others. A few verdant palm-trees, notwithstanding a general devastation, continued to flourish amidst the burning sands. The *Asclepias gigantea*, remarkable for its milky but corrosive juice, was rich in flower, and undisturbed: the *jatropha curcas*, or physic nut tree, not improperly called by the French West Indians *bols immortal*, had received no check. Some indigo plants, in shaded vales, were still cultivated with success, and a few cotton shrubs experienced great indulgence. The mimosa, or sensitive plant, growing to the magnitude of trees, did not appear to languish; and the annona, or sugar apple-tree, remained

ously scattered. Not being commanded by any neighbouring eminence it had been thought a situation capable of defence, and was now a sort of battery, nearly in a state of ruins. The militia consisted of three regiments, of about seven hundred men each, of whom the officers were chiefly negroes or mulattoes. The prison was the most superb building, and next to that the church, of which a dark-coloured mulatto officiated as priest.

to perfect vegetation, in some places expanded in a bottom still exhibited in vegetation the name of Adam's Bread Tree. Fifty-six feet in circumference, two vast branches in circumference six*.

Some of the territory's garden towards, crossing former capital called St. Jago seemed natural of tillage, but ravages of fire hardly capable of punishment than nourishment of surface of the river almost dried stream losing. On each side of the remaining of the fragments of the ceilings of the elegance now deserted miles, at present population; t

Pass

THE settlement in Africa generally, which

* The governor from the Lion they were agreeable, shaded by rough and deep entire long leaves, where

VOL. I. N.

to perfect verdure. The borassus, or great fan palm, in some places, reared its lofty head, and expanded leaves with undiminished beauty. In a bottom, behind the town of Praya, was still exhibited, in a healthy state, a phenomenon in vegetation, a tree known to botanists by the name of adansonia, and in England by the Monkey Bread Tree. Its trunk measured, at the base, fifty-six feet in girth, which soon divided into two vast branches, one measuring forty-two feet in circumference, and the other about twenty-six*.

Some of the party, who had visited the secretary's garden, made a longer excursion afterwards, crossing the country, to the town and former capital of the island, and which is also called St. Jago. The soil, as far as they went, seemed naturally fertile, and exhibited the marks of tillage, but looked as if it had suffered by the ravages of fire. A few lank meagre cattle, hardly capable of moving, excited their astonishment that they should still exist, so little nourishment could they derive from the scorched surface of the earth. They traversed a small river almost dried up, the little remaining of the stream losing itself gradually among the pebbles. On each side of this little stream structures are still remaining of considerable solidity and size; and the fragments of glass lustres, still hanging from the ceilings of the principal apartments, point out the elegance which was once displayed in these now deserted mansions. About half a dozen families, at present constitute the whole of their population; the rest had perished, or abandoned

their situation, though almost hopeless of procuring a better.

Amidst the ruins of Saint Jago they found a Portuguese, to whom one of the party was recommended, who hospitably received them all in his house, and treated them with variety of tropical fruits. But all the islands of Cape de Verde had experienced a similar state of desolation: they are about twenty-two in number, and their present reduced population hardly exceeds forty-two thousand: of whom twelve thousand are supposed to be contained in the island of Saint Jago; eight thousand in Bonavista; seven thousand in the isle of May; six thousand in that of Saint Nicholas; four thousand in San Antonio; about the same number in San Phelippe de Fuego; five hundred in the isle of Brava; and still fewer in the remaining isles, not specified.

The scanty supply of provisions they had to dispose of to the Lion and the Hindostan, could be no inducement to delay: the water was not good, nor easily to be procured; it was drawn from wells, and that which afforded the best was at least five hundred yards from the beach. Sir Erasmus Gower recommends it to be drawn early in the morning, as it is soon afterwards disturbed by the neighbouring inhabitants; who take considerable quantities of it away.

They had now been five days at Praya bay, and the Jackall had not made her appearance. It was therefore determined to prosecute the voyage without her; and on the 8th of November the two ships accordingly set sail for the island of Saint Jago.

SECTION III.

Passage of the Line—Course across the Atlantic—Harbour, City, and Country of Rio de Janeiro.

THE settlements on the coast of South America generally afford abundance of refreshments, which are not always to be met with in

* The governor's secretary invited some of the gentlemen from the Lion to his gardens, distant about two miles. They were agreeably surprised with beholding a small clear stream, shaded by a fine fig-tree, not that of Europe with rough and deep indented leaves, but another species with entire long leaves, and of which the fruit was perfectly delicious. Wherever the transparent current ran, every spe-

cies of vegetable near it flourished: among others, the maniot, or cassadre tree, made its appearance, whose express juice from the root is deadly poison, while the root itself is salutary food; as is also the sediment, deposited from the poisonous juice, being the substance sold in England under the name of tapioca.

every advantage. The weather continued hazy and sultry for some time, and many of the seamen, who suffered in Praya bay, were still indisposed on board. They had not much rain nor lightning to clear the atmosphere: hence mortality often rages; and ships of war, thronged with men, frequently lose no inconsiderable proportion of their complement. But Sir Erasmus Gower established such methods and regulations for ensuring cleanliness, and a constant circulation of fresh air, as contributed materially to preserve his people. Attention was also paid to the people's diet, by mixing a due proportion of vegetable matter with their animal food; and no spirituous liquors were allowed without a reasonable admixture of water with them.

The steadiness of the trade left little to occupy the hands or attention of the seamen, respecting the manoeuvres of navigation; other means were therefore had recourse to, that moderate exercise might not be omitted: some were employed in working the several ventilators, and others in cleaning every apartment and division of the ship. Many were employed in sewing new sails, or piecing those which had been torn; and some in repairing their own apparel; combining thus the oeconomy of individuals with that of the public service.

By these employments and amusements the men gradually recovered, and were in a condition to enjoy the festivities usual on the passage of the line. The lower orders of mankind, who know little of life except its labours, are not easily forgetful of any occasion, recurring to them so seldom, of enjoying a momentary gleam of happiness, which reconciles them to subsequent subordination. This consideration induced Sir Erasmus Gower to permit the ship's company

* To keep up the charter, however, some novitiates are usually fixed on as victims for the ceremonial. It consisted of an ablution, to be performed in one of the ship's boats, filled with water, into which the party is plunged blindfold. After he has suffered a complete ducking, he is lathered and shaved by Neptune's tonsor, with a wooden razor. This operation is performed so solemnly and scientifically, as to excite, in the by-standers, the most convulsive peals of laughter.

In the neighbourhood of the line a stagnated atmosphere often suffers the equinoctial heat to act forcibly on the human frame; but in the present voyage there was very little calm: the south-eastern breeze was steady: the horizon appeared nearer to the eye, and the clouds descended to

to indulge themselves on this occasion: the navigators arrived under the equator, about eleven o'clock on Sunday the 18th of November, when the amusements on the passage of the line began. A sailor of a good appearance and a manly countenance, habited in imitation of the sea-god Neptune, and armed with a trident, his garments dripping with the element over which he reigned, appeared standing at the ship's head, as if he had just risen from the ocean. With an audible voice, he demanded the name of the vessel which was thus encroaching upon his dominions. An answer being given from the quarter-deck, where the ambassador, Sir Erasmus Gower, the officers and passengers were all assembled, announced the ship's name, and purport of the voyage. After which Neptune, properly attended, advances with great solemnity towards them, and addressing his excellency, presents him a fish recently caught, as part of the produce of the deity's domains. His godhead was very respectfully treated by the whole company, and silver offerings were voluntarily made to him, for himself and his companions, by those who had crossed the line before; but which were rigorously exacted from others who had not, under the penalty of going through ceremonies not a little ludicrous. A plentiful repast, accompanied with the music of the bagpipe, and copious libations of exhilarating liquor, terminated this aquatic ceremony*.

Rio de Janeiro is hardly to be excelled for the extent and security of its harbour, or its convenience for commerce, as well as the fertility of the circumjacent country. The shores of the harbour are diversified and embellished with villages, farms, and plantations, separated by rivulets, and ridges of rocks, the whole terminated, in distant prospect, by an amphitheatre

the proximity of the ocean; they seemed to approach towards, and to attract a part of its contents in the form of water-spouts. Few birds were observed in this passage and very few fish were caught; a shark indeed was harpooned, whose wide-gaping jaws denoted the voracity of its nature, but it was destitute of lungs. A beautiful dolphin, which was conveyed on board, demonstrated how wonderfully this fish varies in colours, from yellow to blue and purple, in the several gradations of the agonies of death.

The equator was crossed in the 25th degree of western longitude from Greenwich, with a fresh breeze from the south-east.

of moun
whose s
The o
place, a
magazin
ture: eve
dition of
duals wa
tions wer
and mar
the clim
public l
also seve
opposite
delights
Men o
wear clo
never ap
their hai
with ribb
heads are
gular in
matins a
usually a
them hav
temences,
is the har

* The cit
projecting
the harbour
manding th
jetting into
Cobras, or
storehouses
Round its s
which frequ
improved;
hewn stone
attention bei
to procure
ains embel
considerabl
cooling and
at the foun
of it. Sir
to be remar
of Captain
in the cask
+ The to
circumstanc
are. It is
hills covere
ent a free
in the morn
som stagna
determined

occasion: the na-
or, about eleven
November, when
f the line began
ce and a manly
n of the sea-goe
ent, his garments
which he reigned
s head, as if he
With an audible
the vessel which
dominions. At
arter-deck, where
pwer, the officers
bled, announced
of the voyage
ly attended, ad-
wards them, and
sents him a fish
e produce of the
was very respect-
pany, and silver
to him, for him-
those who had
which were rigour-
p had not, under
ceremonies not
ast, accompanied
and copious li-
terminated this

he excelled for the
bour, or its con-
as the fertility of
he shores of the
embellished with
ns, separated by
the whole termi-
an amphitheatre

med to approach to
contents in the form
rved in this passage
mark indeed was hap-
noted the voracity
gs. A beautiful dol-
d, demonstrated how
from yellow to bla-
ns of the agonies of

with degree of western
fresh breeze from the

of mountains, rising in a vast variety of forms, whose summit are covered with trees*.

The opulence and commercial importance of the place, appears by its Manchester manufactures, magazines, and every species of British manufacture: every thing at Rio denoted the thriving condition of the place, and the appearance of individuals was that of ease and comfort. Their habitations were, for the most part, in good condition, and many of them judiciously calculated for the climate. Besides the aqueduct, and other public buildings, already mentioned, here are also several public walks: and upon the beach, opposite the palace, a spacious quay of granite delights the observer†.

Men of the lower classes of society generally wear cloaks: the middling and higher ranks never appear without swords. The ladies wear their hair hanging down, in double tresses, tied with ribbands, and adorned with flowers: their heads are uncovered. They are extremely regular in their visits to the churches, both at matins and vespers: at other times they are usually at their windows or balconies. Many of them have fine dark eyes, with animated countenances, and their favourite musical instrument is the harpsichord or the guitar. The doors and

* The city of St. Sebastian, called also Rio, is built on a projecting tongue of land, four miles to the westward of the harbour. A convent of Benedictines, and a fort commanding the town, are situated on the extreme point, jetting into the harbour. Opposite to this is the Ilheo dos Cobras, or Serpent Island; and upon this island naval storehouses, and magazines are found in great abundance. Round its shores are the usual anchoring places for shipping which frequent the port. Rio has lately been considerably improved; many modern structures having been erected of brown stone. The streets are well paved; particular attention being paid to the introduction of narrow foot-paths to procure the shade in so hot a climate. Refreshing fountains embellish and improve the squares; an aqueduct of considerable length supplying those fountains with the cooling and transparent fluid. A guard constantly attends at the fountains throughout Rio, to regulate the distribution of it. Sir Erasmus Gower admits the quality of this water to be remarkably good, and attributes the contrary opinion of Captain Cook to some accidental impurities remaining in the casks.

† The town is, however, thought insalubrious from local circumstances, and instances of longevity are extremely rare. It is situated on a plain, and nearly surrounded with hills covered with thick forest trees; which not only prevent a free circulation of the air, but occasion humidity in the mornings and evenings. From this cause, as well as from stagnant water in marshes near the town, arise putrid intermittent fevers.

windows, on these occasions, are thrown open for the admission of cool air, and they sometimes shew instances of extreme levity. If a stranger happens to make a pause to listen to the music, it is not uncommon for the father, husband, or brother of the lady who is playing, to step out and politely invite him to walk in. Ladies sometimes appeared with bunches of flowers in their hands, which they would exchange with gentlemen who are passing by: this may probably be in imitation of the Lisbon ladies, who, on what are called *days of intrusion*, throw nosegays from their balconies at persons walking under them. Company often met at a public garden, at one extremity of the town, near the sea-side. This garden was enriched with shrubberies and parterres, interspersed with spreading trees, and decorated with arched alcoves, jessamines, and other fragrant plants and flowers. In these recesses, during the dry season of the year, the gay society of Rio, after their evening promenade, partook of banquets, rendered more enchanting by vocal and instrumental harmony, accompanied with the display of artificial fire-works. Near the centre of the garden a large fountain of rock-work, with sculptural figures of two alligators, spout-

No real or imaginary danger, however, curbs the propensity of society here towards pleasure. The city contains three convents for men, and two for the other sex; but none of them are remarkable for the austerity and self-denial supposed to have been intended by their original institution. Though the conquest of the country originally was undertaken for the avowed purpose of converting the natives to christianity, and ample endowments have been made for maintaining friars to preach the gospel to these infidels, yet not one of the former was now engaged in such a troublesome, unsafe, and perhaps hopeless enterprise. Neither the friars, nor the nuns of this place seemed disposed to run into the gloomy recesses of devotion; and nothing could be more gay or sprightly than the conversation of the latter, with strangers at the convent gates. There were but two booksellers in Rio; and their shops contained only books of medicine and divinity. But the religious system which once held its empire here, was now slackened and wearing out: no inquisition, or tribunal of the holy office, as it is called, was established in the Brazils. The ceremonies of religion, indeed, were strictly observed, and an addition had been made to them by ringing of bells, and the launching of sky-rockets, announcing, at every hour, some solemnity performing in the churches; and after sun-set the streets were crowded with processions. At every corner was stuck up, in a glass case, the image of the Virgin Mary, to which homage was regularly paid by those who approached it.

ing water into a marble basin, arrested the attention of the multitude; in which aquatic birds, well imitated in bronze, were seen sportively indulging themselves.

At the extremities of the terrace on the side of the garden next the sea, two summer-houses were erected. Paintings representing views of the harbour, and of the whale fishery that was formerly carried on within it, were observed. The ceilings were ornamented with various designs, and the cornices exhibited the several species of fish peculiar to the country, in shell-work. On the walls are eight large paintings, though indifferently executed, emblematic of the principal productions which raised that country to its opulence, including views of the diamond and gold mines, and the manner in which they were worked; of the cultivation of the sugarcane, with the processes for extracting its juice, and granulating it into sugar.

Contiguous to the shore, and not far from the town, another garden is exhibited, intended originally for promoting the progress of botany, but now principally curious for a small manufacture of cochineal. It was supposed that the insect which forms this dye at Rio, is not the same as that noticed by Linnaeus, under the name of *coccus cacti coccinelliferi*, which is described as flat on the back, with black legs, and tapering or awl-shaped horns or antenna. The insect of Rio is convex, with legs of a bright red, in both male and female, and the antenna moniform, or bead-like. The male is a beautiful insect, the colour of the whole body of a bright red: the breast is elliptical, and slightly attached to the head; the legs are of a more brilliant red than that of the other parts; two fine white filaments, about three times the length of the insect, project from the extremity of its abdomen. The wings, which are erect, are two, of a faint straw colour, and of a delicate texture. The female has no wings, is of an elliptic form, and convex on both sides, but more so at the back, which is

* The conversion of the insects into cochineal, is a very simple process; but if in corporeal sufferance, *the poor beetle feels a pang as great as if a giant dies*, the process is as cruel as it is simple. They are placed alive, in a flat earthen dish, over a charcoal fire, where they are slowly roasted till the downy covering disappears, and the aqueous juices of the animal are totally evaporated. During this operation they are continually stirred about with a tin

covered with a white downy substance resembling very fine cotton. The mouth is situated in the breast, having a brown beak, inclining to a purple tint, which penetrates the plant the insect feeds upon. It becomes pregnant about twenty days after its birth, and dies after bringing forth an innumerable minute offspring. For the space of about twenty-four hours they appear without life or motion, but soon afterwards shew signs of animation, and move with some agility over the surface of the leaf, on which they had been deposited by the mother. At this time they appear, through a magnifier, like small specks of red unshapen matter. With the increase of size they decrease in motion; and when they arrive at their full growth they adhere to the leaf in a torpid state. At this period they are taken from the plant for use: if they are suffered to remain, they will deposit their young, as already mentioned. Various cells, of a cylindrical form, standing perpendicularly on the surface of the leaf, are discovered among the clusters of these insects, enveloped in their cotton. These cells are the chrysalides of the male, out of which the wings, in their nascent state, make their first appearance, and are visible about three days before the insect is in a state of completion or maturity. It enjoys existence, in that state, only three or four days, during which it impregnates the females. The plant, on which this insect feeds, is a species of the cactus, or prickly pear; probably the *cactus opuntia* of Linnaeus*.

Within the harbour, and opposite the town, another species of manufacture is carried on, of which an exclusive privilege was given to a company on paying a fifth of its profits to the crown. It is for converting the blubber of whales into oil. The white whale, which supplies the spermaceti, is often sought for as far as the Pacific Ocean; an English ship from those seas, lately came into Rio harbour for refreshments. She had taken sixty-nine whales, each worth, on an average, two hundred pounds.

ladle, and sometimes water is sprinkled upon them, to prevent absolute torrefaction, which would destroy the colour, and reduce the insect to ashes. The garden of Rio produces annually about thirty pounds weight of this commodity; though by proper treatment, from the same number of plants, ten times the quantity might be obtained. The insects breed, and are collected in dry weather, from October till March.

At a place of the harbour reception and Benguela, twenty thousand of the whole of the which the sterling each head is paid there; the weight and pounds and privy purse. assigned to colonies, born who were: t dred thousand whites in Rio.

Whatever plantations, exhibited no frame feels to encounter one. The speed food more remunerates. They and active d to their situation pleasure come were the producten thousand mines. They upon their p

In the vicinity able many n appears to h of the soil e It consisted for the whi blacks.

The cultivation, si nol, surround

* The origin to be reducible sic habits of c Brazilians have motives of cur common pains, but whatever stantly returned out retaining their passions d

At

VOL. I. N

At a place called Val Longo, in another part of the harbour of Rio, are warehouses for the reception and sale of slaves from Angola and Benguela, on the coast of Africa. Out of twenty thousand, purchased annually for the whole of the Brazils, Rio took five thousand, of which the average price was twenty pounds sterling each. A duty of ten thousand rees a head is paid to the Queen of Portugal's agent there; the whole amounting to about sixty thousand pounds per annum, which goes into her privy purse. The whole of the Brazils are supposed to contain about two hundred thousand slaves, born in Africa, or descended from those who were: the whites are estimated at two hundred thousand. The proportion of blacks to whites in Rio was supposed to be much greater.

Whatever may be the sufferings of slaves upon plantations, those who are resident in this town exhibited no proofs of wretchedness. The human frame feels fewer wants, and has fewer miseries to encounter in a warm climate than in a cold one. The spontaneous bounty of nature supplies food more readily in warmer, than in colder climates. The Africans seem naturally of a gay and active disposition, and are easily reconciled to their situation, and enjoy whatever share of pleasure comes within their reach. Many slaves were the property of the crown, of whom about ten thousand were employed in the Diamond mines. The Benedictines alone had a thousand upon their plantations*.

In the vicinity of Rio the roads were not passable many miles for carriages. Little industry appears to have been exerted in the cultivation of the soil or the improvement of the country. It consisted chiefly in raising garden vegetables for the whites, and rice and manioc for the blacks.

The cultivated valley of Tijouca merits observation, situated in a kind of bottom of a funnel, surrounded on all sides by mountains, ex-

cepting to the southward, where a small opening admitted an arm of the sea. This valley is watered by a clear stream, which precipitated down a steep and broad rock of granite, forming a magnificent cascade. Very little labour was required to encourage the plantations of Tijouca: almost without toil this fertile spot produced, growing promiscuously and spontaneously, in the space of a few yards—indigo, coffee, manioc, sugar canes, plantains, and orange and lime trees. The temperature of the valley was excessively hot, from its very confined situation, and the reflection of the sun's rays from the sides of the mountains, which in many places were rocky.

Several districts of the government of Rio produced sugar, coffee, cotton, rice, pepper, and tobacco, in great abundance. The vine also flourished, but the grape is not permitted to be pressed for wine, as such a process might interfere with the sale of that article in Portugal. The whole of the Brazils is divided into eight independent governments, beside that of Rio de Janeiro, of which the governor retains only the name of the viceroy of the Brazils. The revenue is estimated at a million sterling; of which one third is consumed in the expenses of the administration. The principal seat of government, and chief mart for commerce, was formerly at Bahia dos Todos os Santos; but the discovery and improvement of the gold and diamond mines, within about one hundred leagues of Rio de Janeiro, and communicating immediately with it, gave a decided preponderancy to the latter.

The project of removing the seat of the Portuguese government to the Brazils, was once seriously in contemplation with the Marquis de Pombal, when that country was invaded by the Spanish forces in 1761, and means were proposed for conducting the royal family across the Atlantic, together with the principal officers of the court, and their attendants. That pro-

* The original inhabitants of the Brazils are found not to be reducible to a state of slavery, or even to the domestic habits of civilized society. Many of the children of Brazilians have been taken into Portuguese families, from motives of curiosity, as well as of benevolence, and uncommon pains have been bestowed upon their education; but whatever improvements they had acquired, they constantly returned to their original habits of savage life, without retaining any of the principles which might regulate their passions or caprice.

The original inhabitants of Brazil are somewhat under the middle size, muscular, stout, and active, of a light brown complexion, strong black and straight hair, with very little beard, and long dark eyes; their looks are expressive, intelligent, and distinct, and the turn of their features is remote from vulgarity. They entertain an implacable antipathy to the invaders of their country; they shun the settlements of the Portuguese; but massacre individuals without remorse, wherever they are found scattered or unprotected.

ject, however, vanished with the danger that gave birth to it; and the Brazils continued to be considered as a colony exclusively destined to enrich the parent state.

One fifth of the gold extracted from the mines is exacted by the government, and whenever diamonds happen to be found in a gold mine, they are prohibited from searching any more for that metal; all diamond mines being seized as exclusively belonging to the crown.

The people of Rio were lately prohibited from working up even the gold of their own mines; and the tools and instruments used by artificers for such purposes, were seized and confiscated by the gripe of arbitrary power. The taxes were thought very oppressive, especially in the interior provinces, where the carriage and transit duties raised the price of every article so enormously, that a bottle of port wine cost the consumer ten shillings sterling*.

Rio is protected by several small forts and batteries, detached from each other, but so judiciously disposed as to impede the progress of an enemy. Its military establishment consists of two squadrons of cavalry, two regiments of artillery, six regiments of infantry, two battalions of disciplined militia, and two hundred disci-

plined free negroes; making, in the whole, a body of at least ten thousand men, exclusive of a numerous undisciplined militia. The entrance of the harbour which is hardly a mile from point to point, is crossed in every direction by heavy batteries†.

Whatever may be the political fate of Rio de Janeiro, its natural appearance must always attract notice. Its harbour, mountains, rocks, and woods, seem to be perfectly on a grand scale and its productions flourish.

The gentlemen of the embassy were indulged with greater liberty than is usually given at Rio to any strangers. The viceroy dispatched his own barge to convey them round the harbour and testified a desire of shewing every mark of respect and attention to the Ambassador: he received him with distinguished honours on shore, provided accommodations for him and his suite, and offered a guard to attend upon his person.

His Excellency, who had been much indisposed at sea, recovered his health within a fortnight after his arrival on shore.

When the two ships had completed their wood and water, they weighed their anchors, and on the 17th of December, 1792, proceeded on their voyage.

SECTION IV.

Passage to the southern Part of the Atlantic, and of the Indian Ocean—View of the Islands of Tristan d'Acunhu—and of the Islands of St. Paul and Amsterdam—Entrance into the Straits of Sunda—Visit to Batavia and Bantam, in the Island of Java—View of the southern Extremity of Sumatra—Passage through the Straits of Banka to Pulo Condore.

THOUGH the influence of the land of South America often counteracts, in some degree,

* These, and other hardships led, not long since, to a conspiracy against the parent country, which was indeed formidable and remarkable; some of the principal officers of the government, in which were clergy as well as laity, having entered into it. The troops sent from Portugal were seldom afterwards called home. The civil officers, except the viceroy, were also allowed to be stationary. These persons, though principally natives of Portugal, soon changed their affection for their mother country, into an attachment to that where there was a probability of spending their days; and were sometimes induced to sacrifice to their own, the interest of their employers. Their views, however, were happily discovered, and timely prevented. Clemency and good policy awarded capital punishment to only one person, who was the chief conspirator on this occasion. The rest were banished to the Portuguese settlements on the coast of Africa.

the general tendency of the trade winds, the effect is more conspicuous at a still greater dis-

† The fort of Santa Cruz is the principal defence of the harbour; its general height being from twenty four to thirty feet. It mounts twenty-three guns towards the sea and thirty-three to the westward and northward. It is flanked by batteries to the eastward and westward, and protected by a regular front for musquetry, which runs between the hills. But the city of Rio is supposed to depend chiefly on the works erected on Serpent Island. The highest part of which is eighty feet above the water; and it is constructed a small square fort. The length of the island is about three hundred yards; it mounts forty-six guns, facing different points of the compass. The parapet-wall, now building along the front of the town, will afford a good line for musquetry and light guns.

tance than Rio from the line; the Lion and Hindostan, therefore, in order to secure the trade winds, took a southerly direction from thence, till they got into the 37th degree of southern latitude, where the westerly winds are most prevalent; to favour a direct course to Asia. In those latitudes distant from the line, the winds are frequently as tempestuous as they are variable, and every precaution is necessary to be taken to guard against the danger, by putting the ships, while they remained in the harbour of Rio, in a condition to bear foul weather.

Every part of the Lion was carefully examined, and whatever injury had been suffered in the course of the voyage out, was substantially repaired; some of the suspected masts were changed, and others fished or strengthened. The sails, thinned and weakened by long use, were no longer able to resist rude blasts, and were laid by, and replaced by canvas yet unworn.

During the continuance of strong gales, a gentleman who had suffered by sea-sickness, was again affected by the increased agitation of the ship by the waves. Another of the passengers was affected, but in a less degree. The rest not only bore the voyage extremely well, but continued in health and in good spirits. Their minds were not corroded with present cares, and they had an object of desire constantly present to their imagination. To avoid that languor which often hangs upon passengers for want of occupation, it was recommended for each to fix himself a task, the performance of which would employ every moment of his leisure. The youngest followed the example of the midshipmen, in endeavouring to become acquainted with the name of every mast, yard, rope, and sail belonging to the ship, as well as the theory of navigation. He was also employed, as well as a few other gentlemen, in obtaining from the Chinese interpreters, some instruction in the language of the country where they hoped speedily to arrive. Most of the others had recourse to books for information and amusement, of which the Ambassador, Sir Erasmus Gower, and another person on board, had provided a considerable store.

In a ship of war the rank of every man belonging to it is maintained with appropriate distinctions: the windward side is always considered as a post of honour. This side is reserved for the

captain, who is an absolute monarch while on board: and for his lieutenants, the master, surgeon, purser, and cabin passengers. The opposite, or leeward side, is free for midshipmen, surgeons' and masters' mates, and some other petty officers: the main deck and fore-castle are occupied by the remainder of the crew.

The navigation was continued in the parallel of thirty-seven degrees for several days, with a favourable breeze from the westward; and on the 31st of December, 1792, the islands of Tristan d'Acunha came in sight. The largest only, however, bears that name, the others are distinguished by the appellations of *Inaccessible* and *Nightingale* Islands. *Inaccessible*, as Sir Erasmus Gower observes, seems to deserve that name, being a high, bluff, and apparently barren plain, about nine miles in circumference, with a very forbidden appearance, and may be seen at the distance of twelve or fourteen leagues. It is described as having anchorage on the north-east side. Its latitude is thirty seven degrees twenty nine minutes south, and longitude eleven degrees forty eight minutes west from Greenwich. *Nightingale* Island is irregular in form, having a hollow in the middle, and is about seven miles in circumference; with small rocky isles at its southern extremity. Its latitude is thirty-seven degrees, twenty-nine minutes; its longitude eleven degrees forty-eight minutes west, and may be seen at the distance of seven or eight leagues.

The largest of the islands, which comparatively may be called the great Isle of Tristan d'Acunha, is very high, and discoverable at the distance of twenty-five leagues: it appears to be about fifteen miles in circumference. Towards the north part of this island there is an elevation, apparently a thousand feet perpendicular from the sea. A level then commences, forming, in the sea-phrase, table land, reaching to the centre of the island; and afterwards becomes a conical mountain, not very dissimilar to the peak at Teneriffe, as seen from the bay of Santa Cruz. Having examined the shore for a convenient place to land and water, the Lion stood in, and anchored in the evening on the north side in thirty fathoms water, one mile from the shore. The ship, when anchored, was overshadowed by the dark mass of that part of the island, whose sides appeared to rise like a moss-grown wall, immediately from the ocean. On the right the elevation

tion was not so rapid, and between the rising part and the sea, a flat was left of some extent, covered with sedge-grass, interspersed with shrubs. The sea-coast abounded with sea lions and seals, penguins, and albatrosses: one of the latter, which was brought on board, had wings that measured ten feet from tip to tip; but others are seen much larger*.

These islands are fifteen hundred miles distant from any land to the westward or northward of them. A settlement in Tristan d'Acunha has twice been under the contemplation of adventurers, but has not yet been carried into execution. One project was to render it a mart for the light manufactures of Hindostan, suited to warm climates for the silver of the Spanish settlements in South America. The other as a convenient situation for drying and preparing the furs of sea-lions and seals, and for extracting the spermaceti of the white whale, and the whalebone and oil of the black species. Whales were seen sporting about here in great abundance, particularly near the setting of the sun; their enormous snouts sometimes elevated above the waves, with a fountain spouting through an aperture in the skull. Sometimes their huge curved backs appeared like rocks in the ocean, and sometimes they expanded their tails like fans, flapping them upon the surface of the water†.

The weather was now moderately warm, suitable to the season; January in this hemisphere being a part of summer. Those who usually reside on the other side of the equator must consider that pleasantness and vigour are to be transferred from May to December; and he who wishes to describe a chilling aspect, must point directly to the south; while, on the contrary, the north inspires cheerfulness and joy. As the ship approached the shore, two human figures were perceived moving upon the land. They exhibited a signal, by tying a handkerchief to a

* This island was left unexplored on account of an accident; a sudden gust of wind starting forced the Lion's anchor, and obliged her for safety to put to sea; but the spot where the Lion lay was determined to be thirty-seven degrees six minutes, south latitude, and eleven degrees forty-three minutes west longitude. In war time, an excellent rendezvous might be settled here, for ships which only require a supply of water. When circumstances demand particular dispatch, they may come from England to Tristan d'Acunha, without stopping in the way, and afterwards to the end of the voyage to India or China.

pole, and waving it in one of his hands. It was reasonably supposed that these two persons had survived some shipwreck upon this desert coast, and conceived a desire of rendering them assistance. The Lion anchored in twenty-five fathoms water, about a mile from shore. Here, by a boat entering into the bason, it was very practicable to get on shore. When the gentlemen from the Lion landed, they were not only received by the two men they discovered on the heights, but also by three others who were their companions. Two of them were English, and the rest French. One of the latter, named Peron, was very intelligent and communicative, and gave the following account: He said that himself and two of the others, were natives of France; England gave birth to the other two: the latter were bred in the British navy, but afterwards became Americans, sailing usually out of Boston. They came last in a trading vessel from the Isle of France, and had been left there for the purpose of providing a cargo of twenty-five thousand seal skins, of which they had already procured eight thousand, for the Canton market; which they hoped to complete in about ten months more, having already procured near eight thousand.

This vessel was now gone to Nootka Sound, on the north-west coast of America, in order to bring a quantity of sea-otter skins to China; proceeding thus, alternately between Nootka and Amsterdam island.

The Chinese have a particular art in dressing seal-skins; depriving them of the long coarse hair, and permitting only the soft fur, or under down to remain. The price of those skins at Canton differed from one to three dollars, or more, according to their quality, and the demand for them. The trade was, probably, well worth pursuing, to judge by the eagerness with which so many persons had engaged in it. Per-

† On the 5th of January, 1793, the Lion crossed the meridian of London, at a distance from that capital of about ninety degrees of latitude. Sir Erasmus Gower observed, that throughout the whole of this passage to Rio, as well as farther on to the eastward, within four degrees of the Cape of Good Hope, a small current set constantly to the south-eastward; which was proved by solar and lunar observations, as well as by time-pieces, when within two hundred leagues of the islands of St. Paul and Amsterdam, in the Indian ocean.

* Nothing could be supposed together with the occupation of the atmosphere. All appeared to be a chaotic confusion in Vol. I.

lands. It was
persons had
desert coast,
ing them assist-
twenty-five fa-
shore. Here,
n, it was very
then the gentle-
re not only re-
covered on the
who were their
English, and
er, named Per-
nunicative, and
said that him-
ere natives of
the other two;
h navy, but af-
ng usually out
trading vessel
been left there
argo of twenty-
ch they had al-
for the Canton
complete in about
y procured near

Nootka Sound,
ica, in order to
to China; pro-
en Nootka and

art in dressing
the long coarse
t fur, or under
those skins at
three dollars, or
ty, and the de-
probably, well
e eagerness with
ged in it. Per-

e Lion crossed the
om that capital of
Brasmas Gower ob-
this passage to Rio,
within four degrees
rrent set constantly
ved by solar and lu-
pieces, when within
t. Paul and Am-
ron

son had a share in the adventure, but the people
with him were paid in proportion to their dili-
gence and expertness*.

The seals, which are thus become a material
article of commerce, are found in greater num-
bers in summer than in winter, when they usually
keep in deep water, and under the weeds, to
protect themselves from the inclemency of the
weather. Little of the oil, which these animals
might furnish, is collected, from a deficiency of
casks to put it in: part of the best is boiled, and
serves the people for butter. The seal of Am-
sterdam is the *phoca urstna* of Linnæus. The
male was much larger than the female: the latter
usually weighs from seventy-five to one hundred
and twenty pounds, and is from three to five feet
in length. These animals are not shy; sometimes,
indeed, they plunge immediately into the water
upon any one's approach; but, at other times,
they remain steadily on the rocks, bark, and as-
sume a menacing appearance. The blow of a
stick upon the nose is generally found sufficient
to dispatch them. During the winter here are a
number of sea-lions, *phoca leonina*; some of
them, eighteen feet in length, crawl out of the
sea, making a horrid howling. Even the hollow
mournful cry of the seals may be heard at the
anchorage, though more than a mile distant from
the shore. Whales are frequently here in the
winter season.

The seal-catchers have erected a hut here on
the border of an elliptical cove, or bason: the
bank next the sea is low, and has recently been
divided in the middle by a shallow communica-
tion with the sea. Van Fleming, who visited
this island in 1697, reports that there was no
such thing at that time: close to this now inter-
rupted causeway, the land on each side rises
suddenly from the bason, and is continued round
to the height of about seven hundred feet. In

* Nothing but the prospect of considerable advantage
could be supposed to induce human beings to reside fifteen
months together, in a country so unpromising, and in an
occupation so disgusting. They killed the seals as they
were basking in the sun, upon the stones along the shore,
and round the large bason. The skins being their only ob-
ject, they left the carcasses on the spot to putrify at leisure;
shocking spectacle was thus exhibited at every step, and
the atmosphere was infected with the smell.

All appearances seemed to confirm the assertion of Dr.
Allan, "that the Island of Amsterdam was the product of
terraneous fire, and bore evident marks of volcanic
operations in every part of it. The eruptions that took

almost every part of the slanting sides of the
funnel near the water's edge, and in the cause-
way which divides it from the sea, several springs
of hot-water were discovered. Fahrenheit's ther-
mometer, which in the air stood at sixty-two de-
grees, on being immersed into one of those hot
springs, ascended immediately to one hundred
and ninety-six: in another, it rose to two hundred
and four. On various trials, in several springs,
it appeared that the general standard of heat was
that of two hundred and twelve degrees.

One of the gentlemen of the party, with a
hook and line, caught some of the fish out of
the bason, and let them fall into the hot spring
adjoining, when in the space of fifteen minutes
they were boiled fit for eating†.

All the springs, or reservoirs of hot-water,
except one, are brackish. One spring whose
source is in the high ground, or ridges of the
crater, is a strong chalybeate; small incrusta-
tions of ochre being seen adhering to the sides of
the rock, whence it issues, as well as in the ca-
vity into which it falls.

This island lies in thirty-eight degrees forty-
two minutes south latitude, and seventy-six de-
grees fifty-four minutes east longitude. The
length of the island, from north to south, exceeds
four miles, and its breadth from east to west,
two miles and a half, comprehending a surface
of about eight square miles, almost the whole of
which is covered with a fertile soil. This island
is inaccessible except on the east side, where the
great crater forms a harbour; the entrance to
which continues deepening annually, and might,
by the assistance of art, be made fit for the pas-
sage of large ships.

The small vessel, in which the present inha-
bitants of the island were brought to it in the
preceding September, remained at anchor, or in
the offing for eight weeks; during which time a

place, at different periods, appear here distinctly marked
by the different layers that are found with regular divisions
between them, the glassy lava being undermost; the com-
pact next; the cellula lava next above; over it the volcanic
ashes and lighter substances, and a layer of vegetable mould
covering the whole."

The volcanic inflammation is perceptible, in the day-
time, only by its smoke, but at night from the ship's decks
were observed, several fires, issuing from the crevices of
the earth, resembling, in some respects, but far exceeding
the nightly flames at Pietra Mala, in the mountains be-
tween Florence and Bologna.

boat was only able to land twice, and they were left with so scanty a supply of provisions that they must have perished, had not the island furnished them with plenty of fish and fowl. The sea supplies it with excellent fish, particularly a kind of cod, which was held in great estimation whether fresh or salted. Cray fish were caught in abundance upon the bar, by the hand; and at the ship's anchorage in baskets. A shark was captured, measuring eleven feet in length, and five in circumference, and in his maw a penguin was found*.

The island of St. Paul lay in sight, and to the northward of Amsterdam: it exhibited no very high land, nor any rising in a conic form. It was overspread with shrubs and trees, and was reported to abound with fresh water; but it has no good anchorage, nor any convenient landing place. In the evening of the 2d of February, 1793, the ships got under way, and lost sight of both those islands.

After having sailed a considerable time in high southern latitudes, the ambassador, and other passengers of the *Lion* and *Hindustan* began, at length, to indulge the hope of getting soon into a track, where they might obtain intelligence, through the homeward bound ships from China, what impression the notification of the embassy had made there. By taking an oblique course to the north-east, in order to get into the straits of Sunda, there was a probability of falling in with ships homeward bound.

While the breeze was fresh, the weather, notwithstanding the sun's vertical heat, was always pleasant. The tropic birds, remarkable for their very high flight, began to appear again; and the porpoises to frisk upon the waters; while the flying fish were seen in numbers, escaping from their finny pursuers to become a prey to the winged tribe, watching to dart upon them as soon as they rose above the water. Several water spouts were now observed, some resembling jets

* Respecting the birds there was a less variety: of the larger kind were several species of the albatrosses, and the fierce voracious black petrel. One of the latter, however, soon grew tame on board the *Lion*, quietly eating whatever offal was set before it, and taking great delight in bathing in a tub of sea water. This bird is a more fatal enemy to the blue petrel of Amsterdam, or *procellaria forsteri*, than to the albatross. It devours only the heart and liver of the former, leaving the rest untouched: many of them, thus

d'caus, and others towering towards the clouds, not unlike the blowing of a whale.

Scurbutic symptoms now began to affect the crews of both the ships, though every measure was taken for the preservation of their health. Marinated cabbage, called sour crout, was mixed with their general aliments, and a beverage administered to them from the essence of malt. They were also much gratified by the indulgence allowed them of tobacco. The air of land, to which they were now approaching, and the use of fresh vegetables to be found, seemed to pre-empt effectual remedies. The next day, being the 25th of February, they came in sight of the most westerly point of the island of Java, called Java head; and, soon afterwards, Prince's Island was seen, at the entrance of the straits of Sunda.

The great island of Sumatra, by its south-east, and that of Java by its north-west extremity, form the straits between them, which are interspersed with a number of small isles; displaying a scenery, hardly inferior to the lofty range of mountains round the harbour of Rio de Janeiro. The two great islands, Sumatra and Java, are low, and marshy in many places towards the shore, but afterwards rise gradually to the interior of the country; admitting, in their ascent, every variety of situation, and all the different tints of verdure. Of the smaller islands, a few have steep and naked sides. In the middle of the strait is a little island, which the English navigators have named, Thwart-the-way; and two smaller, are, from their figures, appropriately named Cape and Button; but most of the others are level, founded upon beds of coral, and covered with trees.

One of these coralline productions is North Island, where the *Lion* found the *Hindustan* at anchor. The latter met, near the mouth of the Straits, with one of the East India Company's ships, returning from China. She had brought

eviscerated, were found lying on the ground, throughout the island. But the most beautiful of the feathered tribe inhabiting or visiting Amsterdam, is the silver bird or *stercorarius*, about the size of a large swallow, with a forked tail. These birds range about in considerable numbers, little apprehensive of danger; but when a young one was taken, the others fluttered about the captor for a considerable time, making a great noise, and seeming determined to dart upon his head to make him relinquish his prize.

dispatched

dispatched
Canton
ship had
Batavia,
Of the
pendently
lands, a
only at the
numerous
the holot
many insta
mal life,
nibility, to
bility, wh
pear to me
On the
Batavia ro
south latit
fifty one m
tion of the
westward
via several
fixed to so
A circul
of Batavia
a safe anc
enough to
of Good H
els lying b
to be their
seat of the
the buildin
ble from th
church; th
the large
brageous t
The em
mented on
ernment,
distinguished
created the
tendency, b
apprehensi
istration
States Gen
ary, on be
porant of
ions of c
ay in thei
late instr

* The uni

dispatches from the Company's Commissioners at Canton to the ambassador; which, after the ship had waited ten days for his excellency at Batavia, were left there for him.

Of the great variety of aquatic animals, independently of those which produce the coral islands, a large proportion is doomed to move only at the bottom of the sea, of which the most numerous here were the sea urchin, star fish, and the holothuria. These are some, among the many instances, of the regular gradations of animal life, from rapid motion, and exquisite sensibility, to the borders of mere vegetable irritability, where those two kingdoms of nature appear to meet, and to be confounded together.

On the 6th of March the ships anchored in Batavia road, situated in six degrees ten minutes south latitude, and one hundred and six degrees fifty one minutes, eastern longitude; the variation of the compass about half a degree to the westward of the Pole. In this passage to Batavia several shoals are noticed, and beacons are fixed to some to point out the danger.

A circular range of islands protects the roads of Batavia from any heavy swell, and renders it a safe anchorage for shipping; and it is large enough to receive all those that double the Cape of Good Hope. The vast quantity of Dutch vessels lying before the city, clearly pronounced it to be their chief place of trade, as well as the seat of their chief government in Asia. Few of the buildings in the city of Batavia, were visible from the road, except the dome of the great church; the rest being shaded or concealed by the large leaves of lofty palms, and other umbrageous trees.

The ambassador, after having been complimented on board, on the part of the Dutch government, was also received on shore with distinguished honours; though his mission had created there some very strong alarms. His Excellency, however, endeavoured to remove their apprehensions by assuring them, that the administration of Great Britain had offered to the States General its mediatorial assistance, if necessary, on behalf of their trade. The council, ignorant of this proffer, acknowledged their intentions of counteracting the embassy, as much as lay in their power, and resolved to send immediate instructions to Canton, for uniting with,

instead of opposing the efforts of the ambassador; whence it was hoped and expected, that every European nation, trading to China, would be ultimately benefited.

The dispatches which his Excellency received here, from the commissioners of the English East India Company, at Canton, argued favourably for his honourable reception at Pekin: The commissioners set forth that, "having applied to two of the principal Chinese merchants, to solicit an audience from the Fouyen or Governor of Canton, in the absence of the viceroy, to deliver a letter to him from the chairman of the court of directors of the East India Company, those merchants guessed that the letter related to the embassy, and expressed some degree of apprehension lest the measure might affect the trade, property, or security of the merchants of Canton; but that the commissioners assured them it would rather be productive of good than ill consequences to the trading part of the community; that the motives of the embassy were enquired into, on the part of government, as a preliminary step to the audience required by the commissioners; who declared that nothing farther was intended than to effect a stricter friendship between the courts of London and Pekin, and an increase of that intercourse, which had been carried on for many years, to the advantage of both nations."

After many suggestions of similar import, the commissioners added, that, the impression looked for from the embassy, had already taken place on the officers of government at Canton. Less interruption to foreign trade, and a more ready attention to the representations of the commissioners were very apparent; and the Hoppo was already said to have in contemplation to abolish the extravagant charges at Macao, by which means one of the principal impositions upon foreigners would be suppressed."

The communication of these dispatches to the Batavian government, which now felt interested in the present embassy, induced them to celebrate the anniversary of the birth of the prince of Orange, Stadtholder of the United Provinces, with additional festivities. A salute of twenty-one guns was fired from the Lion, on the 8th of March, on the occasion; and it was on that day that his Excellency first went on shore*.

But

* The united luxuries of Dutch and Eastern entertain-

ment, to which the Ambassador and his suite were invited, were

But notwithstanding these occasional scenes of merriment, the Dutch settlers in Batavia appeared languid, wan, and weak, as if labouring with the "disease of death." Their place of residence, indeed, is situated in the midst of swamps and stagnated pools, from whence they are every morning saluted with an assemblage of pestilential vapours, whenever the sea breeze sets in, and blows over the morass. The meridian sun raises from the muddy canals, which intersect the town, deleterious miasmata into the air; and the trees which crowd the quay and streets, emit noxious exhalations in the night.

Dr. Gillan says, that there were but few examples of strangers remaining in Batavia long without being attacked by fever, which is there the general denomination for illness of every kind. Europeans, soon after their arrival, first become languid and feeble; and in a few weeks, sometimes in a few days, are taken ill. The disorder, at first, is usually a tertian ague, which, after two or three paroxysms, becomes a double tertian, and then a continued remittent, which frequently carries off the patient in a short time. It is supposed that of the Europeans, of all classes, who come to settle in Batavia, not always half the number survives the year. The place resembles, in that respect, a field of battle, or a town besieged. The frequency of deaths renders familiar the mention of them, and little surprise is shewn on hearing that the companion of yesterday, is to-day no more. Female Europeans, however, suffer less at Batavia than the men. The former seldom expose themselves to the heat of the sun, make frequent use of the cold bath, and pay more attention to temperance*.

The established opinion of the unhealthiness

displayed upon the occasion. The entertainment took place at the house of the Governor-General, a little way out of the town; the road to it leading through an avenue of trees, bordered by canals. On one side were exhibited the humours of a Flemish fair, for the amusement of the people; while, on the other, a Dramatic Performance was represented by several Chinese actors. A grand ball preceded the banquet, and fire-works, with splendid illuminations, were displayed throughout the garden till the morning.

* But of the fatal effects of the climate upon both sexes, the following assertion was made by a young lady there. That out of eleven persons of her family, who came to Batavia only ten months before, her father, brother-in-law, and six sisters, had already paid the debt of nature. There are constitutions, however, so formed, as to be little affected by causes fatal to many others.

of Batavia for Europeans, deters most of those, who can reside comfortable at home, from coming to it, notwithstanding the inducement of a rapid acquisition of a fortune. Hence the preposterous unfitness, with which offices and professions are filled and personated, may be accounted for. There were two men in the place, who had been originally barbers, that now moved in a more exalted line of life; one of them being a reverend clergyman, and the other a respectable physician.

The most salutary season here is from March to November; the sea breeze commences about ten o'clock in the morning, and continues till four or five in the afternoon. A calm then succeeds till about seven or eight, when the land breeze sets in, and continues, at intervals, till day-break, followed by a calm for the remaining hours of the twenty-four. Fahrenheit's thermometer was, in Batavia road, during the Lion's remaining there, from eighty-six to eighty-eight degrees†.

The defences of the river were the water fort, situated at its entrance. It consisted of a parapet, originally well constructed. This fort was protected, on the land side, by a noxious swamp, and towards the sea, on the north-west, by extensive flats, over which no boats could pass. The next work upon the river, was a battery, mounting seven guns; opposite to which was another of six guns. A little above was the castle, a regular square fort, but without ravelins, or other out-works. It had no ditch, but a canal surrounded it at some distance. Not far from the town, three or four small star forts of earth are erected in particular passes, perhaps for defence against the inhabitants of the island.

The establishment of regular troops is twelve

† Diseases of the teeth, so prevalent in the northern parts of Europe, are strangers to the native Javanese, who principally feed on vegetable food. Yet such is the caprice of taste, that jet black is the favourite colour, and the standard of beauty for the teeth among them; comparing those to monkeys who keep them of their natural colour. All their teeth, except the two middle-ones, which they cover with gold-leaf, are painted of the deepest black. The operation is performed as often as it is found necessary.

Its fortifications are not such as would be deemed formidable in Europe; though it was rather pertinently observed by Mr. Parish, "that the most effectual protection of that settlement from an European enemy proceeded from its climate."

hundred

hundred Europeans, of whom three hundred are to be artillery, and the rest infantry. There were also three hundred volunteers of the town, formed into two companies, but they were not disciplined. Their regulars were very numerous, consisting of enrolled natives of Java, who were never embodied, and of Chinese, of whom the Dutch were so jealous, that they armed them with lances only. In addition to these, every man who comes to settle in Batavia, is compelled to take up arms in its defence.

The castle is constructed of coral rock, brought from some of the adjoining islands; and part of the town wall consists of dense lava, resembling that of Vesuvius. No stone, of any denomination, is to be found for many miles behind the city of Java: Marble and granite are brought thither from China, in vessels belonging to that country, usually called junks, which sail from the ports of the provinces of Canton and Fokien, and are generally laden with tea, silks, and porcelain*.

Immediately before dinner, two men slaves go round with Madeira wine, when every guest is served with a bumper of it, as a tonic or whetter of the appetite. Then follow three females, one holding a silver jar containing water, or sometimes rose water to wash with—a second with an empty silver basin and low cover of the same metal, pierced with holes to receive the water after using; and the third, laden with towels for wiping the hands. Other female slaves wait at table, which is covered with a great variety of dishes. A band of music, the performers being all slaves, play at a small distance, during the repast. Coffee immediately follows dinner. The

* The Dutch settlers here, acquiring wealth and influence under the company, neglect their former habits of industry and temperance, and too frequently sacrifice health and life to indolence and voluptuousness. Convivial pleasures are pursued with avidity in many respectable houses throughout the settlement: besides tea, coffee, and chocolate, fish and flesh are served for breakfast; after which Madeira, Claret, Gin, Dutch small-beer, and English port are placed in the portico before the great hall, when pipes and tobacco are presented to every guest, with a right brass jar provided for the reception of the saliva. This occupation continues, sometimes, with little interruption, till near the hour of dinner, which is one o'clock.

† Few of these are natives of Europe, but many are descended from Dutch settlers here, and most of them have been very carefully educated. The features and contour of their faces are wholly European, but their complexion,

twenty-four hours are here divided, as to the manner of living, into two days and two nights; each person retiring, soon after drinking coffee, to a bed, consisting of a mattress, bolster, pillow, and chintz counterpane, but no sheets; and puts on his night dress, or muslin cap and loose long cotton gown. If the person is a bachelor, which is most frequently the case, a female slave attends to fan him while he sleeps. About six they rise, and dress, drink tea, take an airing in their carriages, and form parties to pass the evening together till a very late hour. The morning meetings consist generally of men, the ladies seldom choosing to attend till the evening†.

Every native lady is constantly attended by a female slave, handsomely dressed, who, on her mistress being seated, sits before her on the floor, holding in her hand her mistress's gold or silver box, divided into compartments, to contain areca nut, cardamon seeds, pepper, tobacco, and slacked lime; all which, rolled within a betel-leaf, constitute a masticatory of a very pungent taste, and in very general use among the ladies.

When, in the public assemblies, the ladies feel themselves incommoded with heat, they retire to relieve themselves by changing their inconvenient robes for lighter attire. The gentlemen follow the example, and substitute white jackets, sometimes indeed embellished with diamond buttons, for their heavy formal vestments: the elderly gentlemen, when thus circumstanced, quit their periwigs for night-caps. Except in these moments, the members of the government, combine their personal gratification with the eastern policy of striking vulgar minds with reverential awe, by the assumption of exterior and exclu-

character, and mode of life, approach more to those of the natives of Java. A pale languor overspreads the countenance, and every tint of the rose is an alien to the cheek. While they continue in their houses, they are clothed like their slaves, in a long red chequered cotton gown, descending to the ancles, with large wide sleeves. They plait their hair, and fasten it with a silver bodkin on the top of the head, like many of the female peasants of Switzerland. The general colour of their hair is black, which they anoint with the oil of the cocoa-nut, and decorate it with chaplets of flowers. When they go abroad on morning visits, or to take an airing in their carriages, more especially in their evening parties, they dress splendidly, in gold and silver spangled muslin robes, with a profusion of jewels in their hair, which, however, is worn without powder. They are not solicitous in forming the shape from any fancied idea of elegance, or any standard of fashion.

sive distinctions. They are the only persons, for instance, who are privileged to appear abroad in crimson velvet; their carriages are distinguished by heraldic ornaments, and others meeting, are obliged to stop and pay them homage. They are, indeed, successful in supporting absolute sway over the aborigines of the country, as well as over the slaves imported into it, and of the Chinese attracted thither in the hope of gain.

The native Javanese are too remote from civilization, to have any wants that are not easily satisfied in a warm and fertile climate. The sultan of Mataram rules to the east, the King of Bantam to the west, and the Emperor of Java in the centre; while the coast and effective power almost entirely belong to Holland. The other sovereigns are the descendants of foreigners, who imported the Mahometan religion into Java, and acquired the dominion of the country, a few inhabitants in the mountains excepted, who have preserved their independence and their faith; and, among other articles, that of the transmigration of souls.

The emperor is said to maintain his authority by an army of many thousand men, dispersed throughout his territories, and by a numerous female guard attending about his person. These heroines are trained to a domestic, as well as a military life; among whom many from mental accomplishments, are the companions, as well as the attendants of his imperial majesty. This singular institution may owe its origin to the facility of obtaining recruits, if the same accounts be correct, that the number of female births in Java, far exceeds that of the males*.

When they are determined to pursue revenge, they have a method of acquiring artificial courage, by swallowing a more than ordinary dose

* The slaves imported into it are principally from Celebes, and other eastern islands. They are not forced to excessive labour, nor are they deprived of proper sustenance; but many of the males among them, who had lived an independent life till they had been made captives in their wars, have been known to take offence against their masters upon very trivial occasions, and to avenge themselves by assassination. Under this apprehension it is that female slaves are preferred in Batavia, for every use to which they can possibly be applied; and their number, of course, surpasses that of the males.

+ They have, however, the highest veneration for such of their ancestors as have paid the debt of nature: a cemetery is appropriated for their remains, and much expence incurred in erecting monuments to their memory. Every re-

of opium, which renders them equally desperate and frantic. In this state, they not only stab the object of their hatred, but sally forth, and attack at random, every person they meet, till self-preservation renders it necessary to destroy them.

The Chinese are much attached to gaming, as well as opium; but the habits of moderation, in which they are bred, and the cautious principles instilled into them, prevent them from falling into similar excesses. They are, indeed, much more capable of forming designs against the government; and in the year 1740, they joined in a revolt against the Europeans, under the command of a pretended descendant of the Emperor of China; but they were repulsed and disarmed. The alarm, notwithstanding, was so great that, under the orders of the Dutch, all the heads of the Chinese families, were massacred, and their effects seized. The directors of the company in Holland execrated the horrid deed: and much apprehension being entertained that the fact would excite the indignation of the emperor of China, deputies were sent to him the following year, to apologize for the measure, as founded upon necessity, and were agreeably surprised when he returned them the following answer, that, "he was little solicitous for the fate of unworthy subjects, who, in the pursuit of lucre, had quitted their country, and abandoned the tombs of their ancestors†."

On the day of interment the whole family are collected, and the corpse is conveyed to the grave with much solemn pomp. In the first procession persons, bearing images of men and women, relatives of the family, (as among the ancient Romans) and even images of animals, with wax tapers and incensories. Then follow the priests,

spectable family has a separate vault, generally surrounded by a wall. When a Chinese of rank departs this life, his nearest relations announce the melancholy event to the surviving relatives. The body of the deceased is washed, perfumed, and clothed in his best apparel; it is then seated in a chair, before which his wives, children, and relations present themselves, and usually weep most immoderately. On the third day it is put into a coffin, and placed in one of the best apartments, hung round, on this occasion, with *white-linen*, the emblem of their mourning. An altar is erected in the middle of the apartment, and on it the portrait of the deceased is placed, with incense burning near it. The sons, dressed in coarse white, stand near the coffin, manifesting every token of sorrow, while the mother, and female relations, are heard lamenting behind the curtain.

equally desperate
not only stab the
ly forth, and at-
they meet, till self-
sary to destroy

ed to gaming, as
of moderation, in
cautious principles
them from falling
re, indeed, much
us against the go-
O, they joined in a
nder the command
the Emperor of
sed and disarmed.
was so great that,
o, all the heads of
ssacred, and their
of the company in
deed: and much
ed that the fact
of the emperor of
him the following
asure, as founded
greably surprised
following answer,
for the fate of un-
e pursuit of lucre,
nd abandoned the

ne whole family are
nveyed to the grave
In the first proces-
of men and women,
among the ancient
animals, with wags
follow the priests,

t, generally surrounded
ink departs this life, an
ncholy event to the sur-
deceased is washed, per-
arel; it is then scented
dren, and relations pre-
most immoderately. On
, and placed in one of
on this occasion, with
mourning. An altar
ent, and on it the pa-
h incense burning near
e, stand near the coffin
, while the mother, ac-
ng behind the curtain,

accompanied

accompanied with musical instruments, and after
them the corpse is borne upon a bier, attended
by the sons of the deceased, clothed in white,
and leaning upon crutches, as if unable, from
extreme sorrow, of supporting themselves in an
erect position. The female relatives are carried
in chairs, encircled in white silk to conceal them
from view: but their lamentations are so far from
being suppressed, that they are very distinctly
heard. To these were added some hired per-
sons, trained to utter the loudest shrieks and la-
mentations with mimic sorrow.

The Chinese, from their industry and inge-
nuity, have become so necessary to the Dutch,
that they almost acknowledge the settlement
could hardly subsist without them. Their resi-
dence at Batavia is in the suburbs; their houses
are low, built principally of wood, and crowded
with inhabitants. They are expert in all me-
chanical employments: in town they become clerks,
agents, or hucksters; and in the country, they
commence farmers, particularly in the cultiva-
tion of the sugar cane.

The shops of Batavia, like those of brokers
dealing in second-hand articles, were thinly sup-
plied with British merchandize; a plain demon-
stration that the interior inhabitants of Java are
either unable or unwilling to purchase curious or
costly manufactures. But there are large maga-
zines for holding the rich products of the Mo-
lucca or spice islands, to be distributed from
hence to every part of the world; besides coffee,
pepper, sugar and arrack.

The Dutch Company, from an immoderate
thirst for gain, wished to monopolize the whole
of the spice trade to themselves. To effect this,
as well as to prevent even their own commodi-
ties from over-stocking the market, they em-
ployed a set of men, under the name of *extir-
pators*, for the purpose of actually rooting out
from every place where they could penetrate,
every tree which bears those valuable produc-
tions; hoping thus to counteract the bountiful in-
tent of nature, and to secure to themselves the
exclusive sale and property of those articles.
The nutmeg-tree had been accordingly destroyed

* With respect to the supposed *upas*, or poison tree of
Java: it was believed to be nothing more than a bold attempt
to impose on the credulity of the public. One of the
keepers of the medical garden at Batavia, however, assured
Dr. Gillan, that a tree distilling a poisonous juice was in

by the *extirpators*, in all the Moluccas, except
Banda; and a dreadful eruption of a volcano in
that island, a very few years ago, so effectually
buried in its ashes, or otherwise injured the ve-
getable productions there, that, for some time,
no slight apprehension was entertained of a great
diminution in the supply of that valuable spice.

The medical garden, at Batavia, is now well
stocked with spice-trees, and the Delegates are
become more liberal in their ideas. The nutmeg
tree is a beautiful vegetable: the stem, with a
smooth brown bark, rises perfectly straight; its
fruit, when fresh, is nearly the size of a common
nectarine. The upper, and outer surface of the
leaf is smooth, and of a deep green: the whole
leaf is characterized by its fragrant odour. What
is known by the name of nutmeg, is the kernel
within the shell. The same medical garden at
Batavia contains a clove-tree. The clove is only
the germ of the fruit, with the flower-cup con-
taining it. The leaf is oval, smooth, small,
narrow, tender, and aromatic. The camphor
tree bears leaves not unlike those of the clove,
but stronger. The pepper, is a creeping plant,
or vine, generally supported on a living tree.
The pepper grows in clusters, like the grape,
but of a much smaller size*.

The whole country abounds with esculent fruits,
which, like all places within the tropics, may be
gathered throughout the whole circle of the
year. The mangosteen, about the size of a nou-
pareil, considered as the most delicious of all
fruits, was ripe in March. It abounds in Java.
It consists of a dark red, thick, and firm rind,
containing from five to seven seeds, of which a
white pulp that covers them is the only part that
is eaten. It is of a delicate subacid taste, not
much differing from the same sort of pulpy sub-
stance, which incloses the sour-sop in the West
Indies. Pine apples are planted here in large
fields; they are carried to market, like turnips
upon carts, and sold for less than a penny each.
Sugar sold for about five-pence a pound; and
provisions of all kinds, were remarkably cheap.
The ships' crews, fed on fresh meat every day.

In a place so low, warm, and marshy, noxious

that collection, but its qualities were not made known to
the people in the settlement, lest the knowledge of them
should be communicated to the slaves, who might be tempt-
ed to make an improper use of such information.

animals

animals are expected to be numerous: but not many accidents arose from them. The lacerto, or guana, an inoffensive land animal, is exteriorly formed like the *lacerto crocodilus*, or crocodile which frequents the canals and rivers of this country. From being an object of fear, by a transition of sentiment, it became an object of veneration, and offerings are now made to it, as to a deity. When the Javanese feels himself diseased, he builds a kind of coop, and fills it with such eatables as he supposes will be most agreeable to the crocodiles. He places the coop on the bank of the river or canal, confidently expecting that, by the means of such offerings, he shall get rid of his complaints; should any person prove so wicked as to take away these viands, that person would then draw upon himself the malady. The inhabitants, in the environs of Thebes, and the lake Moeris, are fully persuaded of their sanctity. Both these tribes bring up and tame the crocodile, adorning his ears with earrings of precious stone, and gold, and fixing ornamental chains about his fore-feet. They also supply him regularly with victuals, offer victims to him, treat him respectfully while he is living, and embalm and bury him in a consecrated coffin*.

In the midst of such gloomy prospects, their attention to their guests was not diminished. The ambassador, and his suite, were treated with every mark of attention and respect. His excellency, being indisposed, was intreated to pass a few days at one of the governor's houses, in a healthy spot amidst the mountains; but, wishing to proceed upon his mission as soon as possible, he waved the invitation, and left Batavia on the seventeenth of March, intending to proceed to the Straits of Banca.

* In the districts round Batavia, subject to the Dutch, it is calculated that about fifty thousand families are settled, containing six persons, upon an average, to a family, or three hundred thousand persons in the whole. The city of Batavia, with the suburbs, contains about eight thousand houses. Those of the Chinese are low, and crammed with people: those inhabited by the Dutch, are clean and spacious, and their construction adapted to the climate: the doors and windows are wide and lofty, and the ground floors are laid with marble. Many of these houses, however, were uninhabited, which indicated a declension of their commerce. The company's vessels were lying useless in the road, for want of cargoes to fill, or men to navigate them. They had no ships of war to protect their commerce, even against pirates, who attacked their vessels sometimes in the sight of Batavia road.

In her passage from Batavia, the Lion touched upon a small unnoticed sunken rock, with three fathoms depth of water over it, with six or seven round its base. This circumstance pointed out the necessity of such a tender as the Jackall, and, as the company's commissioners at Canton had been disappointed in sending two small vessels to precede the Lion and Hindostan, in order to sound the depth of water in suspected places, his excellency sent back to Batavia, to purchase such a one as the service required, and named her, out of respect to his Royal-Highness, the Duke of Clarence.

The little squadron then proceeded towards the opening which leads to the Straits of Banca. The island of Sumatra, on its eastern side, forming the western side of those Straits, as its southern extremity forms the northern side of the Straits of Sunda. The depth of water near that island is very irregular, shoaling, in some spots, from twelve to seven fathoms, and in others from seven to four.

Soon after the Lion's return to this spot, the long lost Jackall appeared in sight. It had been supposed that in the stormy night, in which she lost company of the ships, or in her attempt to follow them, some misfortune had happened to her. She had unfortunately arrived, both at Madeira and St. Jago, a few days after the Lion had quitted them. She experienced many difficulties in her passage, but she was soon ready to proceed to sea†.

Having afterwards occasion to visit the small islands of the Cap and Button, they observed in the Cap two caverns, which ran horizontally into the side of a rock, and in these they also beheld a number of birds-nests, which are much sought after by the Chinese epicures. They are con-

† The monsoon being still adverse, and the crews of both ships sickly, the ships kept moving along the coasts of Java and Sumatra, to make choice of the coolest and healthiest spots, where they might wait for the favourable moment of proceeding farther. During this period observations were taken to ascertain the accuracy of former charts. On this occasion, an alarming circumstance occurred. As Dr. Dinwiddie was preparing to apply his face close to a tree, to be in a proper position to observe a passing star, while some other person was to have his eye fixed upon the time-keeper, a snake of some magnitude, which had crept along the trunk of the tree, and within the bark that had been loosened from it, luckily displayed its head soon enough to put the gentlemen on their guard, and to make choice of another tree for pursuing their observations.

struck

the Lion touched rock, with three with six or seven once pointed out the Jackall, and, at Canton had small vessels to tan, in order to bected places, his to purchase such and named her, out ss, the Duke of

proceeded towards Straits of Banca, eastern side, for-raits, as its south-ern side of the of water near that ag, in some spots, and in others from

to this spot, the ight. It had been ight, in which she in her attempt to had happened to arrived, both at days after the Lion rience many diffi- was soon ready to

n to visit the small , they observed in n horizontally into se they also beheld h are much sought . They are con-

se, and the crews of oving along the coast oice of the coolest and wait for the favourable rring this period obser- he accuracy of former ming circumstance oc- paring to apply his fa- position to observe a son was to have his eye ke of some magnitude of the tree, and while m it, luckily displayed ntlomen on their guard for pursuing their ob-

structed

structed by the small grey swallow, of which great numbers were perceived flying about. These nests not only adhere to each other, but also to the sides of the cavern, almost in regular rows. They seem to be composed of fine filaments, cemented by the transparent viscous matter resembling those gelatinous animal substances found floating on every coast. They feed on insects, which they find hovering over stagnated pools, and for catching which, their wide-opening beaks are particularly adapted. They prepare their nests from the best remnants of their food. Their greatest enemy is the kite, who frequently interrupts them in their passage to and from the caverns. The nests are a considerable object of traffic among the Javanese; many are occupied in it from their infancy. The birds, after they have completed their nests, lay only a couple of eggs, which are hatched in about fifteen days, and the proper time for taking the nests is, when the young ones are become fledged.

The Javanese go regularly three times a year to take them; but the operation is attended with much danger, and several break their necks in the attempt. The inhabitants of the mountains, usually employed in it, commence by sacrificing a buffalo, a custom constantly observed by the Javanese on the eve of every extraordinary enterprise. They also pronounce prayers, anoint themselves with scented oil, and smoke the entrance of the cavern with gum benjamin. Near some of those caverns a tutelar goddess is worshipped.

The natives of this part, as well as at most of the islands in the Chinese seas, are called Malays; they are remarkable for vindictiveness, indolence, and indocility. They are low in stature; have broad faces, wide mouths, brown complexions, long black hair, and very little beards. The southern extremity of Sumatra is thinly peopled by a set of them, who seem to lead an indolent and miserable life. Their dwellings near the shore, are little more than sheds, in which they cannot stand upright. Their condition, which

* Notwithstanding the perverse disposition of the natives, the British seamen got into the habit of trafficking familiarly with them. Some of them readily parted with their dearly-earned wages in purchasing from them monies, particularly the *sinta agnula* of Linnaeus, having a forehead on which a fashionable toupee is combed back: his cheeks are capable of great distention, in which he crams, for future

in many parts of Europe, would imply the utmost wretchedness, is guarded by the climate from any actual suffering. Though half naked, for their dress descends no lower than their waist, they never go abroad without being armed with a kris or dagger, with a point that has been imbued in a poisonous juice.

The squadron weighed from North Island, and proceeded to Nicholas bay; an easterly course from which leads to Bantam, formerly a place of great trade. But the Dutch having conquered the neighbouring province of Jagatra, where they have since built Batavia; and trade in other respects having taken a new course, Bantam was reduced to a poor remnant of its former opulence and importance. The power of the sovereign declined with the loss of its trade.

In Nicholas Bay was a convenient rivulet for watering; and at no considerable distance from the shore, a village, where buffaloes, poultry, fruit, and other vegetables may be procured at reasonable rates. Fresh provisions were daily served here to the Lion's crew; and here, as well as at Angerec Point, many of the invalids and convalescents were sent on shore for air and exercise. Here indigo was manufactured from the leaf growing in the neighbourhood*.

It is extremely difficult to get far into the Java forests, from the abundance of underwood, and the vast number of creeping plants, forming a sort of net, supported by other trees. The heat, for want of a current of air, was extremely troublesome. The eye was often charmed with the sight of trees in superb blossom, and with the beautiful plumage of the birds; some of which, however, threw out a hissing sound by way of notes, and spread the alarm of serpents about to dart their venom.

Two ships, arrived from China, confirmed the former favourable accounts. Very soon afterward the winds were so far shifted as to encourage the Lion to set sail; but from very light breezes, little advance was made, and the anchors were often lowered, to prevent the ships

use, such provisions as he cannot immediately consume. Others preferred a bird called a Mino, not unlike a jack-daw in form and size. The fish, called skip-jack, by the sailors, was sometimes an amusement to them: it is the *blennius ocellatus* of the naturalists, having eyes uncommonly prominent, and is often seen skipping upon the surface of the water, near the shore.

from being driven back, till the 26th of April, when the current changed its direction to the east-south-east, and the next day to the north-east, half a mile. Of the slight airs that blew, the utmost advantage was taken by crowding sail. While the squadron was at anchor, within three miles of the two islands called the Brothers, their latitude, by observation, was found to be five degrees eight minutes south, and their longitude one hundred and six degrees four minutes east. About this place several whales were seen, after the ships had left the island of Amsterdam.

On the 28th of April, the hills on Banka island, were descried above the haze, which hid the lower grounds. The Clarence and Jackall were ordered to lead, and soon gave notice of the water's shoaling to three fathoms, which obliged the Lion to come to anchor for a short time. The Hindostan got aground to the north-west of the small island of Lucipara. In the efforts of the Lion to drag the Hindostan from the shoal, the cable, though six inches in circumference, soon snapped; but not till the Hindostan was already loosened from the rock; and she got clear soon afterwards.

The eastern coast of Sumatra was continually in sight; and the sea, for a considerable distance, was rendered muddy and less salt, by the quantities of fresh water poured from the large rivers. Detached pieces of land were also observed sailing along: they were literally floating islands, torn from the parent shores by the violence of the floods. On the 30th, the ships came to anchor close to the western shore, near Banka the southernmost of the three Nanka Isles. This island is celebrated throughout Asia for its tin mines, to which England owed its celebrity in Europe in very ancient times. Banka lies opposite to the river Palambang, in Sumatra, on which the sovereign of Banka keeps his constant residence. He maintains his authority over his own subjects, in a great measure, by the assistance of the Dutch, who enjoy the benefit of a contract with the king of Banka for the tin

* On the 17th of May our navigators anchored in a spacious bay on the eastern side of the island of Pulo Condore. The whole of this bay is formed by four small islands, which approach so nearly to each other, that, in some points of view, they appear to join: they all seem to be fragments of primitive mountains, separated from the great continent in the lapse of time. The princi-

pal island is about twelve miles in length, and three in breadth, in the form of a crescent, and consisting of a ridge of peaked hills. A nest of turtles was found here upon the beach, each of which was capable of growing to the weight of several hundred pounds; though they did not then exceed a few ounces.

which his subjects procure from thence. The advantages arising from it to the Dutch company, is estimated at one hundred and fifty thousand pounds per annum. The vessels sailed from the Nanka Isles on the 4th of May; the squadron continued its route, and crossed the line on the 10th of May, in longitude one hundred and fifty degrees forty-eight minutes east. The equinoctial line crosses Pulo Lingen, an island of considerable magnitude, terminating in a fork, like that of Parnassus; but to which the unharmonious seamen bestow the appellation of "Asses' ears." Every day now presented new islands to the view: displaying a vast variety in colour, form, and shape: some isolated, others appeared in clusters. Many were clothed with verdure; and some had small trees growing on them; others were barren rocks, the resort of myriads of the feathered race. In this passage the weather was often squally, and accompanied with thunder, lightning, and heavy rain, which compelled the squadron frequently to anchor. The sea was seldom deeper than eight fathoms. Several of the seamen were afflicted with a dysentery, who were therefore removed on shore, to stop its contagious influence*.

The English had a settlement on Condore till the beginning of the present century, when some Malay soldiers, in their pay, in resentment of real, or imaginary ill usage, murdered their superiors, with the exception of a few who fortunately escaped from the island, in which no European has since resided. Close to a sandy beach at the bottom of the bay, a village was situated, to which a party being detached, armed, they were met by some of the inhabitants, who welcomed them on shore, and conducted them to the residence of their chief. It was a neat bamboo cabin, larger than the rest; the floor being elevated a few feet above the ground, and strewn with mats; on which were assembled as many persons as the space would receive. One of the apartments contained an altar, decorated with images; and the partitions

pal island is about twelve miles in length, and three in breadth, in the form of a crescent, and consisting of a ridge of peaked hills. A nest of turtles was found here upon the beach, each of which was capable of growing to the weight of several hundred pounds; though they did not then exceed a few ounces.

thence. The Dutch company, and fifty thousand;

anka Isles on the continued its route, 10th of May, in 40 degrees forty-fourth line crosses considerable magnitude that of Parnassian seamen's ears." Every to the view; disform, and shape. clusters. Many had some had small bare barren rocks, gathered race. In often squally, and raining, and heavy squadron frequently from deeper than the seamen were so were therefore contagious influ-

at on Condore till century, when some in resentment of murdered their subjects, a few who fortune in which no European. Close to a sandy bay, a village was being detached, one of the inhabitants shore, and comfort of their chief. It larger than the rest; few feet above the water; on which were the space would have contained an and the partitions

length, and three is, and consisting of a turtles was found here capable of growing to; though they did not

were hung with figures of monstrous deities. But the countenances and deportment of the people seemed to excite no religious awe, nor was any person observed in the act of adoration. A few spears stood against the wall with their points downwards, together with some matchlocks, and a swivel gun. Their dress consisted principally of blue cotton, worn loosely about the body; their faces were very flat, and their eyes remarkably small, seeming to denote a Chinese origin, or relation*.

The writer of this letter had perhaps received improper treatment from former strangers, and it was resolved that they should not continue to think ill of all who came to visit them. On their return, they were as much surprised to find their houses undemolished, as their visitors had been to see them all deserted. Not an article had been removed; and a small present, such as it was sup-

posed would prove acceptable to the chief, was left for him in the principal mansion; with a Chinese letter, purporting, "That the ships and people were English, who called merely for refreshment, and on fair terms of purchase, without any ill intention, being a civilized nation, acting with principles of humanity, which did not suffer them to plunder or injure others, who happened to be weaker or fewer than themselves."

This letter could not be expected to fall into the hands of those to whom it was addressed, while the ships remained in the bay. Their apprehensions could only subside, by removing the exciting cause; and, as it was essential to get the invalids comfortably provided for on shore, the signal was made to weigh anchor on the 18th of May, when the squadron quitted this place, and steered away to the northward.

SECTION V.

Cochin China—Passage to the La Drone Islands, near Macao; and thence to Chu-San—Transactions and Observations there.

THE state of health of the Lion's Crew became daily more alarming, and the necessity for removing them on shore more urgent. Besides the dysentery, many were afflicted with diseases of the liver; others with violent spasms. Out of three hundred and fifty men on board the Lion, one hundred and twenty were, at times, in the list of patients. From the reports of former voyagers, Turon Bay in Cochin China, promised the advantages of good anchorage for the ships, and shelter and provisions for the men. The squadron steering for that bay, came, on the evening of its departure, within sight of the

southern extremity of the great continent, which may properly be called Chinese.

This part is divided into three small kingdoms, or territories, named Canbodia, Tsiompa, and Cochin-China. It is recorded to have been anciently a part of the Chinese empire; but on the Mogul invasion of China, from Tartary, in the thirteenth century, the Chinese governor of the southern peninsula, containing Tunguin to the northward, and Tsiompa and Canbodia, to the southward of Cochin-China, took the opportunity of setting up the standard of independence. He, and his posterity, resided in Tunguin. In

* It was proposed to purchase provisions here; and the specified quantity were promised to be ready by the following day, when, if the weather happened to be favourable, the invalids were to have been landed. Messengers were dispatched on shore, to receive, and pay for, the promised provisions; but, when they arrived at the village, they were much astonished to find it abandoned. The houses were left open, and none of the effects had been removed. In the chief's cabin was found a paper, written in the Chinese language, of which a literal translation purported, "That the people of the island were few in number, and very poor, yet honest, and incapable of doing mischief, but

they were greatly terrified at the arrival of such large ships, and powerful persons; especially as they were unable to satisfy their wants in regard to the quantity of cattle, and other provisions, of which the poor inhabitants of Pulo Condore had hardly any to supply, and therefore could not afford the expected satisfaction. Through dread and apprehension, they therefore resolved to have recourse to flight, to preserve their lives. That they supplicate the great people to have pity on them, that they left all their property behind them, and only requested that their cabins might not be burnt; and concluded by prostrating themselves to the great people a hundred times."

the course of time, the Tunguinese governor, imitated the example of the ancestor of his sovereign, and also erected his government into a kingdom. Both of them, however, acknowledged a nominal vassalage to the Chinese Empire, and, occasionally, did homage at the court of Peking. This connection with China, though slender, rendered it more interesting to the present embassy.

No part of Cambodia came within view of the squadron; but Tsiompa was seen on the 19th of May, and was more elevated from the sea than Cambodia. Tyger Island was observed near it; and the next day, two other islands called Pulo Cambir de Terre, and Pulo Cecir de Mer. Tsiompa presented to the naked eye, a fine well cultivated country, gently sloping from the sea, and beautifully diversified with luxuriant pastures and corn fields.

On the 22d of May, Pulo Canton, called also Pulo Ratan, appeared in sight, bearing the semblance of two islands, at some distance, being high at both extremes, and low in the middle. The squadron was now abreast of the kingdom of Cochin-China. The passage between its shore, and a vast multitude of small islands and rocks, called the Paracels, forming a lengthening cluster lying north and south for near four hundred miles, was not without some peril; and required no inconsiderable caution to guard against the effects of easterly currents, which in these seas, are called typhoons, as they are hurricanes in the Atlantic. Some preternatural appearances in the atmosphere indicated the approach of one on the 23d of May. An uncommon redness of the sky at sun-set, a hazy atmosphere succeeded to a fine clear day. The clouds, however, after some time dispersed.

Several canoes were seen fishing between the squadron and the land, and some of them were hailed to come along-side, but terrified at the sight of strange vessels, they immediately made

* The first consideration was to find a salutary spot to accommodate the sick and invalids on shore. Gibraltar Hill, near the Lion's station, was determined on, where the ground was perfectly dry, and a clear stream of water was running behind the tents which were pitched for the men. With all possible dispatch the invalids were taken on shore, and a dispatch was preparing to be sent to the town of Turon, to announce the arrival of the ships, with the cause of their detention, and to request a supply of fresh

sail, and scudded away directly before the wind. One of these, however, was overtaken by a boat dispatched from the Hindostan, and a fisherman was conveyed on board; he was an old man, with his head thinly covered with grey straggling hairs, and a countenance haggard with age and terror. His mind was soothed, and his alarms dispersed by attention and presents; and he conducted the Hindostan into Turon bay; but, before she came to, sudden squalls of wind, accompanied with thunder and lightning, drove all the ships again to sea, and they could not return to anchor till the 26th of May, when the Lion moored in seven fathoms water. The old Cochin-Chinese was now dismissed, with a compensation for his fright, as well as for his services. When conveyed to the shore, he jumped from the boat, almost with the alertness of youth, and, hastening away, never afterwards approached the ships*.

But a communication soon opened between the officer and interpreters, by means of the written characters of the Chinese languages. The pacific disposition of the squadron was announced, its general object declared, and an immediate supply of provisions was requested. The governing magistrate of the place had previously dispatched a messenger to the capital, to obtain instructions how to act, and, in the interim, had checked the sale of all provisions.

In the course of three or four days, a person of considerable rank arrived at Turon, who complimented the ambassador on the part of his master. He came in a large decked galley, of a light construction, conducted by numerous rowers. A state cabin was erected near the centre of the deck, curiously painted; and the head and stern were decorated with variegated streamers: the sides of the state cabin were encircled with spears, and various ensigns of authority. The principal officer, who came in her, was clad in elegant silk robes, and his manners were highly

polished: but an alarm had already taken place; for as soon as the Lion anchored, an officer came on board, to know the reason for the squadron's appearance: they were justified in supposing it to be hostile, having never before seen ships of such magnitude and warlike construction. Besides the usual squadron, another vessel from Macao, under Genoese colours, followed them into the bay, which added to the inimical aspect.

polished

polished
galley
seats
crew
abund
at ver
The
board
to an
to kee
Every
ward,
friends
the sq
Tur
conside
of the
dens,
market
all the
and fis
ertain
party f
many d
and be
up with
were ste
person
bread,
office o
tion of
dinner,
served
genuine
to the b
• The
same har
ground.
througho
such a m
coming in
or four i
This bay
sherman
ered wit
pieces of
their hea
board.
they ere
firings
and cons
+ On
ent, the
dy wal
Vol

before the wind. taken by a boat and a fisherman an old man, with grey straggling and with age and and his alarms; and he con- n bay; but, be- lls of wind, ac- hting, drove all could not return when the Lion r. The old Co- ed, with a com- s for his services. he jumped from ertness of youth, wards approach-

ened between the ns of the written ages. The paci- n was announced, and an immediate nsted. The ge- ce had previously capital, to obtain n the interim, had ns.

days, a person of Turon, who com- the part of his decked galley, of ted by numerous cted near the centre ed; and the head variegated stream- oin were encircled gns of authority. ne in her, was clad nners were highly

ly taken place; for a er came on board, to n's appearance: they ostile, having never be d warlike construction. er vessel from Macar, em into the bay, which

polished and refined. Nine boats attended his galley, containing variety of provisions, as presents from the chief, for the passengers and crew. From that instant the markets were abundantly supplied, and the articles disposed of at very reasonable rates.

The governor of the district also came on board, and invited the ambassador and his suite to an entertainment on shore. He even proposed to keep an open table for their constant reception. Every mark of attention was shewn hence forward, and no effort neglected to cultivate the friendship and good wishes of his excellency and the squadron*.

Turon, before its civil commotion, was a more considerable place than it is at present. Many of the best buildings were in the centre of gardens, planted with the areca-nut tree. The market in the town was plentifully supplied with all the vegetable produce of tropical climates, and fish and poultry were abundant. At an entertainment given by the chief of the place, to a party from the ships, the tables were spread with many dishes, or rather bowls, consisting of pork and beef, cut into small square pieces, served up with a variety of savoury sauces; in others were stewed fish, fowls, and ducks: before each person was placed boiled rice, to serve instead of bread, and two porcupine quills performed the office of knife and fork. The spoons, in imitation of shovels, were made of porcelain. After dinner, an ardent spirit, obtained from rice, was served around in cups; when the host, in the genuine vein of joviality, after filling his vessel to the brim, and drinking its contents, turned up

* The bay of Turon was more properly entitled to the same harbour. It is very capacious; and has good holding ground. The bottom is mud, and the anchorage safe throughout. In common weather, ships may be placed in such a manner as to have the advantage of the sea wind, coming in at the harbour's mouth, from the hours of three or four in the morning, to the same hour in the afternoon. This bay abounds with fish. In some of the boats, the fisherman, his wife, and children continue with him, sheltered with a circular roof, instead of a flat deck. Broad pieces of gourd, or calabash, kept their bodies afloat, and their heads from sinking, should they happen to fall overboard. As often as the fishermen return safely on shore, they erect altars to their deities among the bushes, making offerings of rice and sugar, and burning pieces of odorous and consecrated wood.

† On the return of these gentlemen from the entertainment, they were requested, by signs, to stop till an ancient man walked towards them. Not having ever seen any Eu-

his cup, to demonstrate that no deception had been practised. He afterwards accompanied the gentlemen to a theatrical entertainment, where he had ordered a comedy to be performed: the principal characters were, a passionate old man; and a clown not without humour: both the characters were supported with such characteristic simplicity as to give satisfaction to the audience†.

Some Cochinchinese young men then displayed a singular instance of eastern agility in a game at shuttle-cock, in which their feet were employed as dexterously as their hands. But it is not to sportive games alone, that these ingenious people apply their feet as well as their hands. The lower orders, and even many of superior rank, are accustomed to go barefooted. By which practice they have acquired a strong contractile power, and rendered the foot an useful auxiliary to the hand.

Though these people possessed not, scientifically, the art of reducing the metallic ore into the metal, they had attained the practice of making very good iron. Their earthenware was very neat; and their dexterity appeared in every operation they undertook: sometimes, indeed, it was applied to improper purposes, and many of them, without much ceremony, appropriated privately to themselves, whatever suited them in the possession of another; nor were they much disconcerted by detection†.

The soldiery of Cochinchina were armed with sabres, and had also long pikes decorated with tassels of hair dyed red, a colour forbidden to be worn in dress or equipage, by any except in

ropeans before, she approached them with looks of curiosity, but with a suavity of countenance implying a willingness to apologize for the liberty she took to stop and gaze at them. She viewed them with great attention, and, after testifying her thanks, exulted in the gratification of an ardent curiosity.

‡ Wives and daughters are said to be transferred here on very easy terms, and without much scruple. All affairs of gallantry were passed over without much censure. There did not appear among the Cochinchinese, the least traces of painting or sculpture, but they had made some proficiency in music. The ambassador was induced to accept of an entertainment, given on shore on the 4th of June, being his Britannic Majesty's birth day, and a grand repast was provided on the occasion: after which a play was exhibited in a style of peculiar excellence. The piece appeared to be a kind of historical opera. The warblers all observed time accurately, and their hands and feet were obedient to the regular movement of the instruments.

polished

the service, or by order of the sovereign. The guard, which attended the ambassador on this occasion, fired a salute in honour of the day, and performed a number of military evolutions to the astonishment of the surrounding multitude.

Among the Cochin-Chinese, elephants are served for food, and their flesh is esteemed a great delicacy. When these animals are slaughtered for the table of the king, or his viceroy, pieces are cut off and distributed among persons of rank, as distinguished marks of favour. Buffalo is preferred to other beef. It is not customary to milk any kind of animal, and therefore that salutary fluid constitutes no part of their food.

Before the troubles in Cochin-China, great quantities of gold were brought from the hills in dust, and bartered by the inhabitants for cotton, cloth, iron, and rice. The present mountaineers are descendants of the original inhabitants of their country. They are represented as a rude and savage people, differing as much in their manners, as in their features, from the less dark-complexioned low-landers, who were considered as a courteous, affable, and inoffensive race. The ancient simplicity of manners still, however, subsisted among the agricultural inhabitants*.

The dresses of these people are sometimes hardly sufficiently different to discriminate the sexes. They consisted of loose robes, with small collars round the neck, and folding over the breast, with large long sleeves, covering the hands. Persons of rank, indeed, especially among the ladies, put on three of these gowns, of different colours. Linen was not worn among them, but they had, next the skin, vests and trowsers of slight silk or cotton. Turbans were frequently worn by the men. A few of the women appeared in hats; but neither sex enjoyed the luxury of shoes. Nothing attracted more the attention or admiration of the Cochin-Chinese than manufactured ornaments of polished steel. Silver-hilted swords were much coveted by the military men.

Swarms of uncommon insects were observed busily employed upon small branches of a shrub,

* Persons of both sexes, and all ranks, chew the areca-nut with betel, and smoke tobacco: a silken bag, suspended from the girdle, containing those ingredients, properly separated, constitutes a necessary part of dress. Concu-

then neither in fruit nor flower, but in its general habit bearing the appearance of a privet. These insects hardly exceeding in size, the domestic fly, were of a curious structure, having pectinated appendages, rising in a curve, bending towards the head, like the tail-feathers of the common fowl, but in the opposite direction: every part of the insect was perfectly white, or it was at least completely covered with white powder. The particular stem being frequented by these insects, or by this powder. The white wax of the east is said to be composed of this powder; a certain proportion of vegetable oil being mixed with it. The fact is ascertained, in some degree, by dissolving one part of this wax in three parts of olive oil made hot; the whole will then coagulate into a mass, with nearly the firmness of bees' wax.

The country, in general, is supposed to be healthy, the scorching rays of the summer being tempered by the regular breezes of the sea. The rainy season commences in September, and ends in November, during which time the low lands are frequently inundated by torrents descending from the mountains. The inundations, like the periodic overflowings of the Nile, rendered this country one of the most fruitful of any on the globe: many parts of the land produced three crops of grain in the course of a single year. But its most valuable produce, besides the precious metals, consisted in pepper, cinnamon, sugar, silk, and cotton, which were readily bartered by the natives for European manufactures.

Many circumstances concurred to hasten the destruction of the commerce of the country. Permission to trade was only to be obtained by purchase: extravagant duties were levied on goods for sale, and presents demanded by those invested with power; and recourse had been had to perfidy to cut off ship and cargo, an instance of which is recorded by the East India Company, to have happened in the year 1778.

The French, it is said, considering the danger and insecurity of trading to those countries without some independent settlement, had formerly conceived an idea of purchasing the small island of Callao, situated a few miles to the

binage is here considered as no dishonour; and in this instance, there appears to be less difference in the morals of the two sexes than in Europe.

but in its general
a privet. These
the domestic fly,
aving pectinated
bending towards
of the common
ction: every part
ite, or it was at
a white powder.
quented by these
the white wax of
of this powder;
le oil being mixed
d; in some degree,
wax in three parts
hole will then co-
ly the firmness of

s supposed to be
the summer being
es of the sea. The
ptember, and ends
time the low lands
orrents descending
undations, like the
Nile, rendered this
tful of any on the
nd produced three
e of a single year
ce, besides the pre-
pepper, cinnamon,
h were readily bar-
ean manufactures.
urred to hasten the
ce of the country
y to be obtained by
es were levied on
demanded by those
recourse had been
p and cargo, an in-
by the East India
in the year 1778.
nsidering the danger
to those countries
settlement, had for
purchasing the small
a few miles to the

ishonour; and in this
ference in the moral

southward

southward of Turon. Such an intention rendered that island of importance, and a professional visit was made to it by Captain Parish and Mr. Barrow.

Callao, called Campollo by Europeans, is opposite to the mouth of a large river on the coast of Cochín-China, about eight miles to the eastward; on the banks of which stands the town of Fai-foo, a place well known at a little distance from the harbour of Turon. The south-west coast is the only inhabited part of the island. The number of houses upon the island was about sixty, thirty of which were in the principal village, and chiefly built of wood; many others were constructed of stone, covered with tiles. The lower grounds contain about two hundred acres of rich fertile land, diversified with temples, shrubberies, and trees of various kinds: a stream of pure water, issuing from the mountains, is directed through sluices along the ridges of the vale, to refresh the rice grounds. Behind all those houses which were erected at a distance from the village, were growing, in a state of exuberance, tobacco, sugar-canes, and various kinds of vegetables*.

The whole of the Cochín-Chinese dominions fills the space between the twelfth degree of northern latitude, and the tropic of Cancer; but their breadth does not amount to two degrees of longitude. The whole comprehends about ninety-five thousand square miles.

Soon after Mr. Jackson's return to the *Lion*, the speedy departure of the squadron was announced to the officers of the government. This

* After about a fortnight's stay in Turon harbour, preparations were making by the squadron for their departure. The monsoon was now perfectly favourable for an expedition to the coast of China. The invalids from the *Lion*, who had been on shore, were returned on board in better health, and the ship was purified from all traces of contagion. The passengers had, however, to regret the loss of a worthy man, Mr. Tothill, purser of the *Lion*. This gentleman had formerly been round the world with Sir Erasmus Gower, and chose to accompany his friend on the present occasion, though he had quitted a sea-faring life several years before.

About this period, another temporary uneasiness arose: Mr. Jackson, master of the *Lion*, had gone in one of the ship's boats, to take the soundings and bearings of the eastern shore on the peninsula of Turon, and was expected to return the same night. All the following day elapsed without any tidings of him, at which his friends were exceedingly alarmed, reflecting on the perfidy, and cruelty

was answered by a complimentary message from the reigning prince, and accompanied by a second present of provisions. The ambassador made an appropriate reply, expressing his intention of returning to Cochín-China, if practicable, after he should have visited the court of Peking. The squadron then weighed anchor, and sailed from Turon on the 16th of June, 1793.

In the course of the first three days after their departure, they met with currents which set in various directions, from a variety of causes; and on the 20th of June a high peaked mountain presented itself, called by Europeans the Grand Ladrone. Near it was another, whose summit was less aspiring: and, on the same day, the main land of China appeared in sight, bearing north north-east.

On the 21st of June the squadron anchored in twelve fathoms water, under the lee of Chook-choo, another of the Ladrone; the Grand Ladrone bearing west-south-west, distant three leagues, and Chook-choo south by west three miles. The margins or rocks of the Ladrone Islands next the sea, are of a dark brown colour, and much corroded by the action of the salt-water. The rock consists of a mixture of clay, calx of iron in a small portion, and a great deal of siliceous earth and mica. The soil upon the surface of the island seems to partake of their combined properties†.

The squadron being now almost arrived at the destined scene of action, the ambassador gave directions for the Jackall and Clarence brigs to proceed to Macao, on the business of the em-

which had been exercised against strangers upon the coast. A rumour speedily reached the ship, that Mr. Jackson, his boat, and crew, had been seized and detained: this fact was afterwards confirmed by a Mandarin, who acknowledged that some foreigners had been taken up for attempting to penetrate. In the night-time, one of the rivers in a suspicious unwarrantable manner. The ambassador, however, claimed them, and a promise was made that the boat, effects, and crew should be restored. A few days after they did return; but, during their captivity, they had suffered much fatigue, and many indignities from the people.

† The Ladrone, and clusters of islands between them and the southern extremity of China, are so near to each other, and to the main land, and appear so broken and irregular, that they are supposed to be fragments disjointed from the continent, and from each other, at remote periods, by successive violent torrents, or in some sudden convulsions of nature. They often serve as retreats for pirates, and for the temporary abode of fishermen.

bassy

bassey. On this occasion two Chinese, brought from Europe, who had been companions of the interpreters, and to whom his Excellency had granted a passage in the Hindostan, wished to embrace this opportunity of returning to their native land, and solicited his Excellency's permission for that purpose. The conduct of both had given general satisfaction during the passage; and one of them was such an adept in the Chinese characters, that he had occasionally assisted the interpreters in the way of their profession. Before his departure his Excellency wished to make him a compensation for his trouble, but he was inflexible in his refusals, declaring at the same time his gratitude and esteem for the English nation; and that ample justice should be done to its character in China, should his opinions on the subject be adopted by his countrymen.

One of the interpreters wished also, at this time, to retire from the service of the embassy, through fear of being detected and punished for leaving his country without licence, and for accepting an employment from a foreigner. The case of the other interpreter was almost similar, but he had fewer apprehensions and more fortitude, and was determined to fulfil his engagement. To prevent detection, he put on an English military uniform, with sword and cockade: he thought himself justified in taking these precautions for his safety, and was prepared for any event that might take place.

The other three Chinese embarked on board the brigs for Macao, with the persons dispatched thither by the ambassador, for the purposes already mentioned. Dispatches were also forwarded from the governor general of the Dutch East-India settlements, to their resident in China, containing orders for his co-operation with the views of the British ministry.

Through the English East-India Company's commissioners, the ambassador had information that, "His Imperial Majesty's disposition to afford a reception to the embassy, suitable to its dignity, had not suffered the least diminution, as appeared by his repeated instructions on this subject to the different governments upon the coast. He had given orders for Mandarines to await his excellency's arrival, and the pilots to be properly stationed to take charge of his Majesty's ships, and to conduct them in safety to Tien-sing, as well as to prepare for receiving

the ambassador, and conveying him and his suite to Peking; concluded his commands with these remarkable words, "*that as a great Mandarin had come so far to visit him, he must be received in a distinguished manner, and answerable to the occasion.*"

The ambassador was informed also by the commissioners, that "two of the native merchants of Canton had been ordered to hold themselves in readiness to proceed to any part of the coast, on the report of his Majesty's ships being arrived there with the ambassador, and in all probability to accompany his Excellency to court." It was conjectured they were to serve as interpreters, as well as to treat for any merchandize which might be sent with the ambassador for sale. But the commissioners were of opinion, that "the ambassador was already sufficiently provided with interpreters, and that the company had sent no goods for sale in the ship which attended the embassy, as she was chiefly laden with the presents for the Emperor."

It had been the custom, on former embassies, to send one of the *missionaries* dependent on the palace, to meet and accompany the ambassador to court. Due precautions had been taken since the late French Revolution, and its concomitant calamities were known at Peking, to prevent the introduction of similar principles. And though foreigners were not excluded from entering into Canton, and missionaries were still admitted into China, and encouraged in the capital, yet their conduct was now narrowly watched, and examined with suspicious vigilance.

Soon after the return of the brigs from Macao, the squadron got under weigh, and quitted Chook-choo on the 25d of June. They proceeded with a favourable gale towards the straits which separate the continent of China from the great Island of Formosa, or, as the Chinese call it, Tai-wan. The same day the ships passed between two small islands, one called Asses' Ears, the other Lema. The next day a large elevated rock appeared in sight, which being perfectly white, was named *Pedra Branca* by the Portuguese, who first discovered it.

On the 25th of June the squadron crossed the tropic of Cancer; and the setting sun was, that evening, attended with an unusual degree of redness. The morning of the 26th came in with heavy squalls, accompanied with thunder, light-

him and his
commands with
a great Man-
m, he must be
r, and answer-

also by the com-
mative merchants
hold themselves
rt of the coast,
ships being ar-
and in all pro-
pency to court."
serve as inter-
ny merchandize
embassador for
ere of opinion,
eady sufficiently
at the company
the ship which
as chiefly laden
or."

former embassies,
es dependent on
pany the embas-
s had been taken
ion, and its con-
wn at Pekin, to
milar principles.
t excluded from
onaries were still
uraged in the ca-
narrowly watch-
ous vigilance.

the brigs from Ma-
eigh, and quitted
p. They proceed-
wards the straits
f China from the
as the Chinese call
the ships passed
one called Asses-
next day a large
ght, which being
dra Branea by the
red it.

quadron crossed the
ting sun was, that
unusual degree of
26th came in with
with thunder, light-

ing, and rain; but there was a calm before noon.
On the 27th of June the squadron continued to
have squally weather, with heavy rain, chiefly
from the westward, with a cross confused swell
of the sea. On the 28th the wind was moderate
and variable.

On the 3d of July the squadron weighed an-
chor, in order to stand in nearer to Chu-san, a
great number of Chinese boats of different sizes
crowding round them; the novelty of European
vessels having excited the most eager curiosity in
the people of these boats, some thousands were
in sight. Upwards of three hundred were enu-
merated about the Lion, from one of which a
pilot was procured by the Hindostan. He con-
ducted her off Tree-a-Top island. There the
Hindostan anchored; but the Lion and Jackall
stood in between the Plowman and Buffaloe's
Nose. From hence some of the gentlemen, with
the interpreter, were dispatched in the Clarence to
Chu-san, to bring down the pilots ordered to be
in readiness there to conduct the squadron to
Tien-sing*.

Three hundred islands are supposed to be com-
prised between the Quee-sans and Chu-san har-
bour, through a space of about sixty miles in
length, and thirty in width; among which there
are many commodious harbours, fit for ships of
the greatest burden. This advantage, together
with that of their central situation, in respect
to the eastern coast of China, and the contiguity
to Corea, Japan, Leoo-keoo, and Formosa,
make it a place of considerable trade. From
the port, twelve vessels are dispatched annually
for copper to Japan.

As soon as it was known to the governor that
the Clarence belonged to the embassy, he ordered
provisions of every kind on board. The next
morning he also politely received the gentlemen
on shore, invited them to plays and entertain-

* The Lion got a supply from Plowman's Island, consist-
ing of bullocks, goats, and fowls, on very moderate terms;
and of fish, from other boats which were along side. The
sight of a vessel of such uncommon construction, as well as
as the Lion certainly appeared here, almost put a
stop to labour both by sea and land: the number of visi-
tors, who came to see the ship was so great, that all the
boats were filled. Some of them, entering into the great
harbour of the Lion, where the ambassador had a portrait of
the Emperor of China, immediately recognized it, and
prostrating themselves before it, kissed the ground repeat-
edly, with great devotion.

Vol. I. No. L.

ments; and expressed his hope that a formal
deputation, which he had already dispatched to
the Lion, would prevail on the ambassador to
come ashore, where preparations were making
to receive him with all due honours. The ardent
desire of repairing speedily into the presence
of the emperor, served as a full apology for
declining to accede to any proposition which
might tend to delay them.

The Governor had provided pilots who were
competent to convey them to the next port, at
which others were successively to be procured,
till they should arrive at Tien-sing. The danger
of coasting with such large ships, the frequent
occasion to cast anchor, and the idea of a direct
navigation to the gulf of Pekin being insisted
on, he requested till next morning to determine
on the business.

In the mean time the party went to take a view
of the city of Ting-hai, about a mile distant.
The way to it is intersected with rivulets and
canals, in various directions; which might prob-
ably serve, among other purposes, to identify
the property of the respective individuals. The
ground was cultivated like a garden, not a single
spot was wasted; and the road, though good,
was very narrow, that as little as possible should
be lost to culture.

The city is environed by a wall of thirty feet
high, overtopping the houses, most of which
consist of only a single story. Along the wall,
at the distance of every hundred yards, square
stone towers are erected upon it. In the para-
pets were also embrasures, and holes in the
merlons for archery. There were no cannon,
except a few old wrought iron pieces, near the
gate. The gate is double, within which is a
guard-house, where military men are stationed;
and the bows, arrows, and pikes, are orderly
arranged†.

While

† The city was, in some degree, surrounded, as well as
intersected, by canals: the bridges thrown over them are
steep, and ascended by steps, like the Rialto at Venice.
The streets are narrow passages, paved with square flat
stones. The town is full of shops, consisting chiefly of
articles of cloathing, food, and furniture, pompously dis-
played. Even coffins, decorated with a variety of lively
colours, are exhibited to allure those who meditate upon
mortality. Dogs, and other small quadrupeds intended for
food, were exposed alive for sale. Loose garments, and
trowsers, were worn indiscriminately by both sexes. No
paupers appear about the streets, and industry seems uni-

While the party of Englishmen were gratifying their curiosity with observing the surrounding objects, they were themselves still more the occasion of astonishment in their beholders. Few of the people here had ever seen an Englishman before. They collected now in multitudes round the strangers, who were attended by a guard which had been ordered for them. The people, however, pressed close upon them: it was then the month of July, and the crowd added to the sultriness of the weather. As the party were dressed in the European style, and consequently their clothes adhered closely to their bodies, some of them began to suffer exceedingly from the heat; while the surrounding multitude, in habits hanging loosely, felt no sort of inconvenience. The party took shelter from the heat and crowd, in a temple full of monstrous and grotesque figures of the supposed deities and guardians of the city; and soon afterwards returned in sedan chairs, followed by new multitudes.

The next morning the governor made his appearance in the hall, accompanied by a civil magistrate. The latter was distinguished by a square upon his breast, in party-coloured silk, in which an imaginary bird, the phoenix of the Chinese was wrought; as was that of a tiger on the Governor's robes, denoting his military functions. Tea followed an interchange of compliments, and the magistrate then began a speech, accompanied with a multiplicity of tones and gestures, and appeared to have been intended for a display of eloquence. He asserted, however, that it had long been the practice among the Chinese, to navigate along the coast from province to province, and that mode, in the present instance, must be the most eligible; that Chu-san was only a subsidiary port to the greater one of Ning-poo, and could not furnish such pilots as were now demanded. To this it was simply answered,

versally to prevail. Men only were observed passing briskly through the streets. Women were seen, chiefly, in their shops, and at their doors and windows.

Of the latter, even the middling and inferior classes, the feet are unnaturally small, or rather truncated. Considering a small foot as a mark of beauty, they suffer much pain and inconvenience by having their feet maimed and distorted. The great toe is the only one permitted to act with freedom, the rest are doubled down under their foot in their tenderest infancy, till at length they unite with, and are buried in the sole. Hence they bring upon themselves an awkward hobbling gait, being obliged to walk upon their heels, and to totter as they pass. The same pressure is applied by some to the ankle. This artificial diminutiveness

answered, that as the English ships were much larger than the Chinese, and of a different construction, they required a mode to be followed different from their usual practice: and that as Ning-poo might supply such pilots as were not to be found at Chu-san, they would immediately proceed thither in search of them.

The Governor instantly took the alarm. Their departure for Ning-poo, he observed, would be construed by the Emperor, as a disapprobation of their reception at Chu-san, which probably would occasion the loss of his office and of his dignity, pointing to a red globular button which then decorated his bonnet, and denoted the second class of magistracy in the empire, of which there are nine, except which, strictly speaking, there is no rank or dignity in the country.

The governor, to avert the danger, undertook to procure persons capable of conducting the squadron to the place required. Orders were instantly dispatched for all persons who had ever been at Tien-sing to repair immediately to the hall of audience. Several came, and after minute examination, two of them were found who had often traded to that port, and who said, the squadron might be conducted to a safe and commodious harbour for large vessels, under the island of Mi-a-tau, within a day or two's sail of Tien-sing.

These two men received directions from the governor to prepare themselves to go immediately on board the Clarence, and to pilot the English ships into the harbour he mentioned, or as near to Tien-sing as was practicable. To get themselves excused from this business, these men declared they had large families, which would be involved in the most extreme distress if they were separated from them. These, and other arguments, were enforced in vain; the Emperor's orders, he said, must be obeyed, and he could hearken to no remonstrance.

of the feet, though it does not entirely prevent their must considerably cramp the general growth, and injure the constitution of those who have been subjected to it. Some of the female mountaineers of the lowest class are exempt from this barbarous custom; but they are held the rest in the utmost degree of contempt, and are employed only in the most menial domestic offices. So inveterate the custom, that if of two sisters, otherwise every way equal, the one had been thus maimed, while nature permitted to take its due course with the other, the latter would be considered as in an abject state, unworthy associating with the rest of the family, and doomed to perpetual drudgery and obscurity.

The
to mal
soon a
perhaps
pilots
under v
the str
the Lion

Navigat
Progre
Ships.

THAT
the
limits of
measures
miles.
from hen
an exten
san the
boundary
The yello
ing the w
of China.
The Yell
and the p

The na
magnet h
templat
in this an
the Euro
while the
centre, p
books, at
tains its c
principal
to reside
earth. I
the need
pole; bu
ed as con
The C

* The p
at the man
men in pre
compass,

The gentlemen returned on board the Clarence to make ready for departure; and they were soon after visited by the governor, influenced perhaps by curiosity, as well as by civility. The pilots being now on board, the Clarence got under way. The next day she passed through the straits called Gough's passage, and joined the Lion at her place of anchorage.

During her absence the ambassador had been attended by the deputation mentioned at Chu-san, and by another from the governor of the province. Both had solicited his excellency, and his suite, to partake of entertainments on shore, which he declined, alledging the necessity of the immediate prosecution of his voyage towards the Emperor's court.

SECTION VI.

Navigation through the Yellow Sea—Ambassador's Entrance into the River leading to Tien-sing—Progress of the Embassy, along the Pei-ho, towards the Capital of China—Departure of the Ships from the Gulf of Pe-che-lee.

THAT part of the coast of China along which the squadron had sailed, from the eastern limits of Tung-quin to the Chu-san islands, measures upwards of one thousand nautical miles. What remained of the Chinese coast from hence to the port nearest to Peking, is of an extent still more considerable. But at Chu-san the squadron was arrived at the utmost boundary of recorded European navigation. The yellow sea derives its name from its receiving the water of the Whang-ho, or Yellow River of China, which abounds with yellowish mud. The Yellow Sea is bounded by China, Tartary, and the peninsula of Corea*.

The nature and cause of the qualities of the magnet have, at all times, been subjects of contemplation among the Chinese. Their theory, in this and many other instances, is the reverse of the European philosophers. It is obvious that while the magnetic needle, suspended by its centre, points at one extremity to the north, it looks, at the other, to the south; but each retains its own polarity. Thus the power, which principally attracts the needle, may be supposed to reside towards either or both positions of the earth. In England it has been supposed that the needle has its chief tendency to the north pole; but in China the south alone is considered as containing the attractive power.

The Chinese pilots had soon occasion to ob-

serve, how much more essential the perfection of the compass was, to the bolder navigators of Europe than to themselves; as the commanders of the Lion and Hindostan, trusting to that instrument, stood out directly from the land into the open sea.

The squadron entered the yellow sea on the 9th of July, in dark cloudy weather. Vast quantities of yellowish brown mud were disturbed by the motions of the ships through the water, when they were sailing in six fathoms water; a circumstance which, to persons who knew not the cause, might have created alarm, lest it should denote a sudden shoaling of the water.

On the morning of the 10th of July, they had thick hazy weather, with a constant heavy swell from the eastward. Two islands were perceived, which the pilots called Tchih-san, and Shoo-tong-yeng, bearing north-west by west, about nine leagues. On the 11th at five in the morning, two new islands were seen, called Pa-tcha-san and Te-tchong. On the 12th the pilots observed, that the squadron was then opposite the Chinese province of Kiang-nan, and that in the neighbourhood were large shoals. The fog became so thick, that it was hardly possible to see from one end of the Lion to the other. It may be difficult to explain why a shallow sea should generally have the atmosphere over it

* The pilot being upon deck, gazed with astonishment at the manoeuvres of the ship, and the alacrity of the seamen in preparing her for sea. He had brought with him a compass, but no chart; nor any instrument for taking an

observation. But as the Chinese seas are narrow, and every where intersected with islands, they have less occasion for charts, and they depend principally on the polarity of the needle.

foggy; but the fact has also been observed on the banks of Newfoundland, and other places thinly covered with water.

Efforts were made to keep the ships together during the fog, guns were fired, notwithstanding which the Hindostan was separated this day from the rest of the squadron. The pilots observed that the thickest fogs accompanied the south-east winds, which often continued four or five days at a time. On the 14th the wind continued in the same quarter; but the fog was dispelled. Several junks were observed steering different courses. Land birds also made their appearance, and sea-weed and bamboos were observed floating upon the water. The Hindostan, it afterwards appeared, had that day fallen in with the Endeavour brig, commanded by Captain Proctor, belonging to the East India Company. She had on board a young man who could speak the Spanish and Chinese, who intended to offer his services as an additional interpreter to the embassy.

Both divisions of the squadrons had, on the 15th, the wind from the southward, accompanied part of the day with a fog. The Hindostan, in clear intervals, descried a small conic-shaped island, denominated Ca-te-noo by the pilot; and, on the following day, observed the craggy promontory of Shan-tung, and a small island to the south of it. From hence the Lion steered north by west by compass, till she got into the latitude of thirty-six degrees twenty minutes north. Here the soundings lessened from forty to twelve fathoms*.

On the 18th, the wind was for the most part easterly, and the weather foggy in the afternoon, the squadron passed a very spacious harbour, in which were several junks. Between Cape Macartney and a projecting point of land in the form of an oblate cone, the coast in general is bold; and the mountains seem to extend far

* On the 17th of July the whole squadron again joined company. Two capes of headlands were this day discovered. There was an inlet within Cape Macartney, in which several small vessels were seen at anchor. The ground being foul, it was thought prudent not to approach too near; but a snug harbour appeared to be within the low point, the entrance to which was between Cape Gower, and a reef of rocks running out from a neck of land.

† The governor had a numerous train of attendants, one of whom, having had occasion to speak to him as he passed along the deck, immediately threw himself upon his knees,

into the country. They are interspersed with beautiful villages along the shore. The bay of Ki-san-seu is very spacious, extending ten miles from east to west, and nearly the same distance from north to south: there are two harbours within this bay; one at the back of a high bluff point, called Zeu-a-tau; the other near the mouth of a river, called Ya-ma-too. The squadron remained one day in this bay, having procured new pilots; but on the 21st of July they made sail through the passage between Cape Zeu-a-tau and the island. In the evening they hauled round a projecting head-land, which with a bluff point due west from this, forms the entrance of Ten-choo-foo bay, in which the squadron anchored in seven fathoms water, within two or three miles north-east of the city of that name. The anchorage foul, with a hard ground and shells. The Clarence was therefore immediately ordered to Mi-a-tau to examine its harbour. In the mean time, an officer was dispatched to the governor of Ten-choo-foo, to proclaim the arrival and object of the squadron. As soon as the governor of Ten-choo-foo was informed that the ambassador was on board the Lion, he instantly sent off a present of fresh provisions and fruit, and went afterwards in person to compliment his excellency†.

The governor invited the ambassador, and his suite, in the most pressing manner, to entertainments and plays on shore. He wished for an opportunity of shewing his excellency, on a small scale, what a splendid reception was preparing for him, by his sovereign on his arrival at the imperial court. To a nation like the Chinese, among whom subordination is observed with unremitting strictness; and who look up to the throne with the profoundest degree of veneration, it might tend to impress them with a general sense of the importance of the English nation. Every consideration demanded, at

and in that posture communicated his business, to the great surprise of the English spectators; a surprise that was much heightened by the undisturbed countenance of the governor; and he remained in that degrading situation all the time he was conversing with him. This instance of extreme distance between ranks did not, however, appear to proceed from haughtiness on the one part, or abjectness in the other; but indicated the respective disposition, brought about by forms, for inducing habits of subordination in society.

dispersed with

The bay of
ing ten miles
same distance
two harbours
of a high bluff
ther near the
p. The squa-
dron, having pro-
t of July they
between Cape
evening they
land, which
this, forms the
in which the
as water, within
the city of that
a hard ground
therefore im-
to examine its
officer was dis-
n-choo-foo, to
of the squadron.
n-choo-foo was
as on board the
nt of fresh pro-
wards in person

assador, and his
er, to entertain-
wished for an
excellency, on a
ception was pre-
n on his arrival
nation like the
ation is observed
d who look up
est degree of ve-
ress them with
nce of the Eng-
on demanded, at

business, to the great
surprise that was
countenance of the
grading situation all
t. This instance of
t, however, appear
e part, or abjectness
pective disposition,
habits of subordina-

the same time, that the individuals who com-
posed the embassy, should adopt such a cautious
and circumspect conduct as to avoid giving
offence where it was so easily taken; and thus to
counteract the prejudices, which the Company's
records testify to have been entertained in that
country, against the morals and manners of the
English.

The squadron being now pretty far advanced
in the yellow sea, and expecting speedily to
arrive at the destined port in the gulf of Pekin,
his excellency thought it expedient to disperse
a paper throughout the fleet, which was pub-
licly read to the crews and passengers of each
vessel. This paper, among other things, pur-
ported, that the success of the embassy depended
upon gaining the good-will of the Chinese; and
this might also depend on the ideas entertained
by them of the English nation: that the un-
favourable impression retained by the Chinese
against the English, for irregularities formerly
committed at Canton, could only be effaced by
a conduct diametrically opposite: he therefore
recommended particular caution and mildness in
every intercourse, or accidental meeting with the
poorest individual of the country. He trusted
also that the propriety and expediency of main-
taining the credit of the English name, would
secure their voluntary obedience; and that the
same incentives would produce similar conduct
on every person concerned in the embassy.

His excellency declared that he should report
the good conduct of those who merited com-
mencement; but that he should be equally ready
to censure misconduct, or to suspend or dismiss
transgressors. His excellency further observ-
ed, that however impelled by a sense of duty
to promote the objects of his mission, and to
inspect into the conduct and punish the crimes of
the disobedient; he should, on the other hand,
be always happy to be able to report and reward
the merit of every person as far as was com-
patible with the honour and welfare of the public*.

It now became a matter of importance to know
whether the squadron could be safely sheltered
in the harbour of Mi-a-tau. On the return of

* The reader will probably be gratified at being informed,
that the paper produced the desired effect upon the persons
to whom it was addressed. Their conduct was meritorious
and exemplary, and met with the approbation of the em-
bassador, who made a favourable report. It was also

the Clarence from thence, the officer reported,
that that harbour did not afford them a secure
retreat, "on account of a dangerous reef of
rocks lying off the east end of the easternmost
of the Mi-a-tau islands, called Chu-san; that
the reef was a dangerous object, and could not
be approached nearer than where the soundings
were nine fathoms, as the water shoaled close
to it very suddenly." The Clarence, however,
anchored in this bay, within a mile of the shore,
in a clayey holding ground. This is about three
miles long, and nearly as many broad; it is po-
pulous and well cultivated.

The report of the Clarence would not admit
of a hope that any permanent shelter, for ships
of such a size, could be had in the harbour of
Mi-a-tau. It was now determined by Sir Erasmus
Gower, before the officer should venture into the
Gulf of Pekin, of which the strait of Mi-a-tau
might be considered as the entrance, to send an
officer to survey the mouth of the river which
fell into it from Tien-sing. The Jackall was no
sooner dispatched for this purpose, than a new
Chinese pilot was recommended, perfectly ac-
quainted with the matter in agitation. He was
a man of venerable aspect, plausible in his man-
ner, and appeared to be expert in nautical af-
fairs. He asserted, that there was a very com-
modious harbour within six miles of Pei-ho, or
White River, flowing from Tien-sing, with
plenty of water for ships of any magnitude;
and to confirm his assertion, he drew a sketch of
the place, with its relative situation with regard
to the northern coast of the gulf, and to the
mouth of the river.

On the 24th of July, the Clarence, which had
been sent a-head, fired several musquets as sig-
nals of danger; upon which the ships wore
round, and stood off to east south-east. On the
25th, with the wind south and south-westerly,
light breezes and clear weather, the squadron
stood to the westward under easy sail. The
depth of water regularly decreased from fifteen
to seven fathoms. At midnight, the Clarence
made the signal of danger: the ships conse-
quently hauled their wind to the south-east,

highly extolled by a Mandarin of rank, who accompanied
the embassy throughout, who declared before he parted
from it, that the same number of Chinese, taken from the
different ranks of society, could not have behaved with
more propriety and decorum.

and the Lion soon got into from six to ten fathoms.

On the 26th of July it rained most violently, accompanied with tremendous claps of thunder, and vivid flashes of lightning. The Jackall was perceived, returning from the westward, surrounded by a number of Chinese junks; and from the report of Captain Campbell, who had been sent to explore, it appeared that no secure harbour was to be found on the shores of the river Pei-ho.

The Jackall, in going up the river, was accosted by some Chinese soldiers in a boat, who desired her to cast anchor. Soon after a Mandarin, with several attendants, came on board; and when he was thoroughly satisfied that she belonged to the embassy, he made many enquiries respecting the ambassador, and wanted to know what presents he had brought for his imperial Majesty. When he had gained what information he could, he closed his interrogatories by declaring, that the emperor had given special orders for the reception and accommodation of the embassy, and ordered to supply whatever might be wanted*.

The Mandarines, on being assured that the ships were too large to cross the bar, supposed their size to be immense, and formed a proportionate idea of the quantity of presents that must have been required to fill them. Orders were instantly given for a sufficient number of junks to bring those presents, as well as the passengers and baggage, on shore. An extensive building, near the river's mouth, had been provided for the reception of the ambassador, supposing he might have thought it necessary to have remained there a few days, to recover from the fatigue of so long a voyage†.

In the same plentiful and gratuitous manner

* The Mandarines spoke also about the articles of merchandize, which they supposed were brought for sale to Peking. The idea of trade was so associated with that of Englishmen, that they could hardly give credit to the assertion, that the persons composing the embassy were not merchants, and that ships of war never carried out, or dealt in any kind of merchandize.

† Soon after the return of the Jackall, an astonishing quantity of live stock, fruit, and vegetables, were brought to the squadron in junks. The articles arrived in such profusion, that the surplus was necessarily returned. The reader may probably be surprised, on perusing the following authentic list. Twenty bullocks, one hundred and twenty sheep, one hundred and twenty hogs, one hun-

were provisions constantly supplied; not only here, but at Turon bay, Chu-san, and Ten-choo-foo, without having been previously demanded.

Two Mandarines of rank, one in the military, and the other in the civil department, with a numerous train of attendants approached the Lion to pay their respects to the ambassador: in the emperor's name, and their own, they congratulated him on his safe arrival, after traversing so great a portion of the ocean. The civil Mandarin, whose family name was Chow, was honoured with the additional title of *Ta-zhin*, or *Great Man*; and had the honorary distinction of a blue globe upon his bonnet: he was grave, but not austere, in his manners, and his address indicated a plain and solid understanding. He had been preceptor to some of the imperial family, and was considered as a man of talents and literature.

The military Mandarin had an open manly countenance, and had also the honourable addition of *Ta-zhin*, or *Great Man*. He had signalized himself in battle; and had received many wounds. Besides the red globe above his bonnet, he was honoured with another mark of favour for his services. This was literally a feather, and it was taken from a peacock's tail. It was given him by the Emperor, with directions to wear it pendant from his bonnet. He was celebrated for his skill in archery; the bow and arrow being still in use in the Chinese armies, and generally preferred to fire-arms. His person was perfectly suited for a warrior; he was above the middle size, erect, and muscular; and his activity and strength, as well as his other martial qualities, were highly prized.

A third person of high distinction, of a Tartar race, had been appointed by the Emperor as a principal legate on this occasion, but feel-

dred fowls, one hundred ducks, one hundred and sixty bags of flour, fourteen chests of bread, one hundred and sixty bags of common rice, ten chests of red rice, ten chests of white rice, ten chests of small rice, ten chests of tea, twenty-two boxes of dried peaches, twenty-two boxes of fruit preserved with sugar, twenty-two chests of plums and apples, twenty-two boxes of ochras, twenty-two boxes of other vegetables, forty baskets of large cucumbers, one thousand squashes, forty bundles of lettuce, twenty measures of peas in pods, one thousand water melons, three thousand musk melons, besides a few jars of sweet wine and spiritous liquors; together with ten chests of candles, and three baskets of porcelain.

ied; not only
and Ten-choo-
ly demanded.

in the military,
tment, with a
approached the
mbassador: in
own, they con-
val, after tra-
the ocean. The
ame was Chow,
title of *Ta-zhin*,
rary distinction
he was grave,
and his address
standing. He
f the imperial
man of talents

an open manly
honourable ad-
a. He had sig-
received many
above his bor-
ther mark of fa-
literally a sea-
acock's tail. It
with directions to
He was cele-
the bow and
nese armies, and
His person was

; he was above
ascular; and his
his other mar-
d
ction of a Tar-
by the Emperor
occasion, but feel-

hundred and sixty
ad, one hundred and
f red rice, ten che-
e, ten chests of tea,
twenty-two boxes of
o chests of plums and
twenty-two boxes of
arge cucumbers, one
ce, twenty measures
eclons, three thou-
t sweet wine and
ests of candles, and

ing no inclination to trust his valuable person
upon the ocean, he waited to receive his ex-
cellency on shore.

Concerning the presents, the Mandarines were
particularly solicitous to enquire; a list of them
was formally demanded. A mere catalogue could
neither point out their qualities, nor their value,
or indeed be properly understood by any effort
of translation. They were therefore described
by circumlocution, in all the pomp of oriental
language.

Orders were issued to prepare a number of
junks to convey the whole across the bar, after
which they were to be removed into different
vessels, better calculated for the navigation of
the river; other junks were also procured to con-
vey the persons and baggage of the embassy from
the ships to the river, where proper vessels were
also ready to receive them.

The sea-junks which attended the ships a-
mounted to about thirty, each of which was of
the burden of two hundred tons. The hold, or
cavity, below the upper deck, is divided into
twelve compartments, by partitions of two inch
plank, and the seams are caulked with a cement
of lime, so prepared as to render them perfectly
impervious to water. It is very glutinous, and
soon acquires solidity. This cement, Dr. Din-
widdie observes, is composed of lime and oil,
with a few scrapings of bamboo; the latter
serving the same purpose as hair in English
plaster.

While the necessary preparations for sea were
going forward, which the commander could
commit to the attention and ability of his of-
ficers, the ambassador wished to have the satis-
faction of his company with him to Peking. One
of the brigs might remain in the Pei-ho river to
convey him to the Lion, after which his ex-
cellency requested that Sir Erasmus would quit
the coast of China, and not revisit it till the
month of May.

* The presents consisted of an orrery, a reflecting tele-
scope, a celestial and terrestrial globe, several chronometers,
an air pump, a machine exhibiting the mechanic powers,
several pieces of brass ordnance, musquets, pistols, sword-
sticks, a model of a first rate man of war of one hundred
and ten guns, ornamented vases, various kinds of earthen-
ware, a large burning glass, a pair of magnificent glass
trunks, specimens of the productions of the manufactures
Great Britain in wool, cotton, steel, and other metals,
representations of several cities, towns, churches, seats,

Sir Erasmus Gower declined the proposal of
going to Peking, conceiving his presence with the
squadron indispensably necessary. He said he
should return to one of the bays mentioned, and
on the re-establishment of the health of the
crews, he should proceed to accomplish the objects
contained in the instructions for the advantage of
the public. The Mandarines having been ap-
plied to for that purpose, procured from the
viceroy letters to secure good treatment for the
Lion. On this occasion there was a general
meeting on board the ships, between those who
were to depart from thence, and those who were
to remain behind, and they took an affectionate
farewell of each other.

The ambassador and gentlemen of the em-
bassy, embarked on the 5th of August, 1793,
for the Pei-ho river, on board the *Clarence*,
Jackall, and *Endeavour* brigs; while the ser-
vants, guards, musicians, and other attendants
accompanied the presents and baggage in the
junks. With a favourable breeze, and a spring
tide, they crossed the bar in a few hours, and in
the afternoon came to, for a short time, opposite
a small village called *Tung-coo*, with a military
post, where the troops were drawn up in compli-
ment to the ambassador. The situation of *Tung-
coo* was not inviting: the land was low and
swampy. From this place the vessels were
dragged or trailed along by a number of Chinese
peasants. In their progress, they soon passed
another village, named *See-coo*, and reached the
same evening the town of *Ta-coo*. Many of the
houses in these places, as well as those inter-
persed with the river's banks, were little better
than huts, with mud-walls, and thatched roofs.
A few buildings were large, elevated, and orna-
mented like the dwellings of opulence, but
hardly any thing indicated the existence of mid-
dle ranks, or the multiplied gradations between
abundant wealth, and absolute indigence.

The ambassador entered immediately into the

gardens, castles, bridges, lakes, volcanoes, and other an-
tiquities, of battles by sea and land, dock yards or places
for building ships, horse-races, bull-fighting, and of most
other objects curious or remarkable in the dominions of his
Britannic Majesty, and other parts of Europe: also of some
of the most eminent persons, including the royal family of
Great Britain; the representations themselves being monu-
ments of the arts by which they are made in their present
advanced state.

yatch prepared for his reception. It resembled the passage boats on the English and Dutch canals, but being intended for a longer route, was made more spacious, better decorated, and fitted up with greater conveniences. The apartment allotted for his excellency comprised most of the vessel, consisting of an anti-chamber, a saloon, a bed-chamber, and a closet. A square sofa, or seat of honour, such as are met with in the mansions of all chief Mandarines, and on which they give audience to their suitors. On each side the yatch, from head to stern, a gangway was constructed, projecting about two feet beyond the gun-wale. Upon this the crew conducted the vessel. The cabin allotted for the crew was next the stern; in a corner of which perfumed matches were constantly kept lighted, and placed round an idol upon a small altar. Boats attended with provisions, and cooks to supply the ambassador's table, without the necessity of going ashore*.

The transshipping of luggage, of which there were six hundred packages, most of which were heavy and unwieldly, occupied about three days. While they were thus engaged, the chief conductors of the route, Chow-ta-zhin and Vanetazhin occasionally visited the ambassador, as well to testify their respect, as to observe that he was comfortably accommodated. Their politeness even extended to the principal gentlemen of the embassy, who were also honoured with visits of civility. The inferior mandarines were equally attentive to the accommodation of the passengers. And even the Chinese soldiers and sailors manifested a disposition to please, beyond what could have been expected from persons of inferior rank.

The gentlemen in each yatch were served after the eastern manner, with a separate table, and occasionally with all the delicacies of the coun-

* There were sixteen other yatches in the procession, besides the ambassador's: many of them were eighty feet in length, and very capacious. The cabins were lofty and airy; above them were births for the crew, and beneath the floors were lockers for necessaries. Great magnificence was displayed out of compliment to the embassy. A guard of Chinese soldiers were devoted to the attendance of the ambassador on shore, but a few only could be distributed among the yachts. Whenever an European went ashore from one of them, the presence of a soldier with him announced the immediate protection of the government; and

try; in which awkward attempts were sometimes made to imitate English cookery. Stewing, however, was their usual method of preparing animal food; of which beef and pork was the most plentiful, mixed with vegetables, and seasoned with a variety of savoury sauces. The common fowls of Europe were abundant here†.

Wheat grows in many provinces in China; but their flour is principally obtained from buckwheat, which (as well as the other species) is cultivated in many provinces of China. It is perfectly white, when separated from the bran.

To each yatch were sent jars of yellow vinous liquor, and also of a distilled spirit. The management of the latter seemed to be better understood than that of the former; for the wine was generally muddy, and ill-tasted, and soon became sour. The spirit was strong and clear. In the northern provinces it was usually distilled from millet, and in the southern from rice: the strength of some of it was ascertained to be above the common proof for ardent spirits. It is called by the Chinese, *hot-wine*, *shou chow*.

Fruits of various sorts, as plums, pears, apples, grapes, apricots, and oranges were served. Peaches were presented as coming from Peking in the neighbourhood of which, greater attention is supposed to be paid to the culture of the fruit than in the provinces. Green and Bohea tea were supplied in abundance. It appeared, however; to have been too recently gathered for an English palate, and it was common to hear wish expressed for *London tea*.

The imperial mandates, upon all occasions are received with a degree of reverential awe, and to be executed with a rigid punctuality strongly implying that any infringement of them would receive a punishment adequate to the offence. The authority of government is dele-

might have been also intended as a check upon his conduct.

† Though roasting is very little practised in China, the Mandarines thought proper to dress some of the provisions in that style, and pigs, turkeys, and geese were brought whole upon the table. Baking was as seldom practised as roasting: no proper oven was indeed to be found in any part of the country. Instead of bread, boiled rice, or other grain, was generally used. The rice swells considerably in boiling: and this operation is supposed to occasion facility of digestion.

npts were some-
cooking. Stew-
method of pre-
h beef and pork
with vegetables,
f savoury sauces,
e were abundant

nces in China; but
ained from buck-
e other species) is
of China. It is
ed from the bran.
s of yellow vinous
pirit. The manage-
e better understood
the wine was gene-
d soon became sour.
r. In the northern
tilled from millet,
e: the strength of
be above the com-
It is called by the

plums, pears, ap-
pranges were served
oming from Pekin,
hich, greater atten-
the culture of the
Green and Bohe-
ance. It appeared
recently gathered for
as common to hear

upon all occasions
of reverential and
rigid punctuality
infringement of the
adequate to the of
government is dele-
s a check upon his

le practised in China,
ss some of the promise
and geese were brot
as as seldom practised
ded to be found in
f bread, boiled rice,
The rice swells consid-
on is supposed to

gals

geted, on particular occasions, to the superior
class of Mandarines*.

Soon after the ambassador's return to his yacht,
the viceroy unexpectedly sent there a sumptuous
repast for him; and three others, each consisting
of twenty-four dishes, not less expensive, were
also sent to the three gentlemen who accompanied
his excellency on the visit. It is observable that
more than four persons seldom sit at the same table
in China; but a banquet is frequently served
upon small tables in the same apartment. It is
probable that some circumstance of delicacy to-
wards the ambassador, might have induced the
viceroys to adopt this particular mode of hospi-
tality.

Every necessary arrangement having been com-
pleted for the embassy's proceeding up the river,
the signal was made for sailing on the morning
of the 9th of August. No guns are fired in
China by way of signal; but circular rimmed
plates of copper, in which there is a certain
mixture of tin or zink to render it more sonorous,
are used. These being struck with a wooden
mallet, covered with leather, produce a noise
that may be heard at the distance of two or three
miles. This instrument is called *too* by the Chi-
nese, and *gong* by the Europeans in China.
The drum is not used as a martial instrument,
but it forms a part of religious music in the
temples †.

* During his excellency's stay before Ta-coo, an inter-
change of visits took place between him and the viceroy of
the province, who, by the emperor's order, came from Pao-
ting-foo, his usual place of residence, a hundred miles
distant, to compliment his excellency on his entrance into the
Chinese dominions. He was a person of the highest rank,
that the ambassador had before had an opportunity of seeing
in China; and was certainly a man of the most refined man-
ners. Though almost tottering with age, he was not less
dignified than he was venerable. In this visit the constraint
of eastern forms, especially on the introduction of tea,
was dispensed with, and his excellency was received with a
degree of ease and politeness, seldom surpassed in the po-
lished courts of Europe.

The viceroy had taken up his abode at the principal tem-
ple of Ta-coo, consecrated to the God of the Sea, the
proximity of which doubtless occasioned frequent invoca-
tions to that deity, under the name of *Toong-hai-vaung*,
or King of the Eastern Sea. There are several figures of
him in different brilliant edifices of porcelain. He is rep-
resented sitting on the waves, with ease, dignity, and firm-
ness; and, though without a trident, he seems conscious of
security by the possession of a magnet in one hand, while
the dolphin, which he holds in the other, denotes his power
over the inhabitants of the ocean. His agitated locks, and
disordered beard, flowing in all directions, seem intended

The motions of the embassy on the river were
not rapid; the meandering course of the stream
tending to retard, in some degree, its progress;
but it furnished a favourable opportunity of sur-
veying the banks and circumjacent places, adorn-
ed with pleasant villas, and delightful gardens;
the fields were in the highest state of cultivation,
and principally covered with the *holcus sorghum*,
the tallest vegetable producing grain. It is
usually called Barbadoes millet, growing ten or
twelve feet high, and is said to increase a hun-
dred fold.

Near some of the towns and villages several
pyramids were observed of the height of about
fifteen feet, but of different dimensions with re-
spect to length and thickness. They were com-
posed of bags of salt heaped together in that
form, as peat is preserved in many parts of Eu-
rope. Though these bags were covered with
only common matting, they were sufficiently
sheltered against the dissolution of their contents
by rain ‡.

Not only on the first, but also the second day's
progress up the Pei-ho, the banks were lined with
innumerable spectators. On the third day they
reached the port of *Tien-sing*, which literally
signifies in the Chinese language, *heavenly spot*:
an appellation which it claims from its situation
in a genial climate, a fertile soil, a dry air, and
a serene sky. It is the general mart for the

to convey an idea of that troubled element. The circum-
stance of the divinity's reliance upon a magnet, sufficiently
indicates how intimately the knowledge of its properties
has been incorporated with the mythological doctrines of
the Chinese, as well as at what an early period that know-
ledge must have been applied to navigation.

† The approach of the embassy was an event of which
the report spread rapidly. Crowds of spectators were as-
sembled on the banks of the Pei-ho, to see the procession
pass; while the females, as shy as they were curious, took
a glance at them through the gates, or peeped over the walls
to enjoy the sight. A few, indeed, of the ancient dames al-
most dipped their little feet into the river, to get a nearer
view; while the younger part of the sex kept behind at a
more cautious distance.

‡ When night came on, the banks were illuminated with
a diversity of variegated lights. The transparent lanterns,
affixed to the mast-head of the vessels, denoted the ranks of
the passengers they contained: all which, with the reful-
gent glittering of the lights from the cabins of the junks,
reflected from the water, produced an enchanting moving
illumination; a species of magnificence affording much gra-
tification to the Chinese. The shrill sound of the *too*, and
the sting and buzz of mosquitoes during the night, afforded,
however, no additional enjoyment.

northern provinces of China, and is built at the confluence of two rivers, from which it rises in a gentle slope. The palace of the governor stands on a projecting point, commanding the prospect of a broad basin, or expanse of water, produced by the union of the rivers, and which is almost covered with vessels. Across the rivers a bridge of boats extended, which occasionally separated to permit vessels to pass between them. Temples, and handsome edifices, adorned the quays; contiguous to which were yards and magazines for naval stores.

Yet in all the ardour of curiosity, the people preserved the greatest degree of decency and regularity in their demeanour. The gradual rise on every side from the water to the furthest extremity of the city, rendered the whole one great amphitheatre. It was literally lined with heads gradually and judiciously elevated one above another as their situation directed. Every face was seen, and the number surpassed any multitude that had ever been observed in the country.

The fleet which conveyed the embassy, stopped opposite the centre of the city, where the viceroy, who had come by land from Ta-coo, was in waiting for the ambassador. His excellency disembarked, with all his suite, attended by his whole train of servants, guards, and musicians. He was received on shore by the viceroy. A body of Chinese troops was drawn up behind them, and the following order was observed:

Three military Mandarines, or principal officers.

A tent, with a band of music outside the tent.

Three long trumpets.

A triumphal arch.

Four large green standards, with five small ones between each, and bowmen between each small colour.

Six large red standards with matchlock men, and five small colours between each standard.

* The weather being then extremely warm, several of the troops carried fans with their military arms. Fans are worn in China by both sexes, and by all ranks. Officers in other parts of the east are frequently seen exercising their battalions, with umbrellas over their heads.

† Among other instances of his great attention to the ambassador, a temporary theatre was erected opposite to

Two large green standards, with four bowmen between each.

Music Tent.

Triumphal Arch*.

At the upper end of the pavilion, where the majesty of the emperor was supposed to be constantly residing; it was expected a respectful obedience should be paid to that ideal glory; this, however singular, was accordingly performed by a profound inclination of the body.

Tea, sweatments, and other refreshments being served, the legate informed the ambassador that the emperor was at his country mansion at Zhe-hol in Tartary, where he proposed to celebrate the anniversary of his birth-day, being on the thirteenth of the eighth moon, answering to the seventeenth of September; and that it was his desire to receive the embassy in that city.

When the ambassador, and the gentlemen of his suite, had returned to their respective yachts, a magnificent repast was sent them on the part of the viceroy, as at Ta-coo, together with presents of tea, silk, and muslins. He also sent a plentiful dinner, and presents to the soldiers, musicians, artificers, and servants of the embassy†.

One of the dramas particularly attracted the attention of those who recollected scenes somewhat similar, upon the English stage. The piece represented an Emperor and Empress of China living in supreme felicity: when a revolt suddenly takes place, a civil war ensues, battles follow, and at length the arch-rebel, who was a general of cavalry, kills his sovereign with his own hand, and routs the imperial army. The captive Empress appears upon the stage in the deepest agony of despair, lamenting the loss of her husband and her dignity, when the conqueror enters, approaches her with respect, soothes her sorrow, talks of love and adoration, prevails on the Chinese princess to dry up her tears, forget her deceased consort, and yield to a consoling wooer. The nuptials, and a grand procession conclude the piece.

his excellency's yacht: where a company of comedians, at various times of the day, exhibited dramatic pieces. The dialogue was spoken in a kind of recitative, accompanied by a variety of musical instruments. Female characters were performed by boys or eunuchs. Unity of place was apparently preserved, for there was no change of scene during the representation of one piece.

The weather in the evening proving favourable for departure, the yachts and other vessels belonging to the embassy proceeded up the Pei-ho, a little way beyond Tien-sing. The houses of this capital are chiefly built of brick, of a leaden blue colour; some few are red, and others of a pale brown. Those last-mentioned had been exposed to no other heat than that of the sun. Some of the houses at Tien-sing are two stories high, contrary to the usual mode which the Chinese affect in building. They generally prefer those of a single story, in conformity to the original form of all dwellings. Many of the Chinese feel themselves awkward in ascending the stairs, or looking down from heights. In the making of bricks from the clay, thin layers of straw are placed between them, to prevent their adhering together while they are drying; hence, it appears that the Chinese, like the children of Israel, could not make brick without straw.

As the embassy proceeded, the lands continued to appear cultivated with the utmost care. The Barbadoes millet was frequently planted in alternate rows, having between them other distinct rows of a smaller grain and humbler stems. Sometimes in small spots, accidentally vacant near the edges of the bank, or along ridges of corn, was planted a species of *dolichos*, not very dissimilar to the kidney bean. Sometimes whole fields of beans were observed: but no weeds appeared to diminish useful produce, or to share with it the fruitfulness of the earth; every field had the neatness and regularity of a garden.

Few trees or cattle exhibit themselves in these plains: the eye, however, is delighted with the unbounded prospect of habitations, and the flourishing display of culture: yet the people have experienced the dreadful effects of famine, from the destructive depredations of locusts, or the inundations produced by the fall of torrents from the mountains. On these occasions, robberies are frequent; but as they are committed from necessity, and the cravings of hunger, those crimes usually cease on the return of plenty*.

* The low and sometimes marshy country, through which the river passes, contributes to the production of insects; many of which are troublesome from their sting, and others from their unpleasant noise. The music produced by a species of cicada, was not of the vocal kind, but was occasioned by the motion of two flaps of lamellæ which cover

The variety of objects upon the shore, attracted the notice of the travellers, who often quitted the yachts to take occasional excursions upon land. But they began to perceive that they were watched with a degree of jealousy and suspicion, beyond what they had ever heard of the cautious police of China. It appeared that this change of behaviour was in consequence of orders from the legate. At length, however, the interpreter discovered, from scattered hints in the familiarity of discourse with the Mandarines, that some recent dissatisfaction had been conceived at the court of Peking against the English nation. The only explanation, which could be obtained on this occasion, was the following.

In 1791, the Emperor of China dispatched an army into the country of Thibet, to drive back the Rajah of Napaul, who had made predatory excursions thither; and in the contest, his army met with more resistance, and suffered greater losses than had been expected from so feeble an enemy. Mortified at their want of success, some of the Chinese officers imagined they perceived European troops, and European tactics opposed to them. They discovered hats, as well as turbans among their enemies, and they concluded that the former must have been English. Hence it is politically and industriously propagated among the people of China, that the English had, on this occasion, actually afforded assistance. Though the ambassador took it for granted, that neither of these surmises could be relied on, he was induced to believe that the bare assertion would be sufficient to alienate the administration of China from any favourable disposition towards the government of Great Britain.

It had been the common policy of many countries in the east, prior to a menaced attack on the territories of a foreign prince, to send a friendly embassy thither, the better to discover their real situation, strength, and plan of operations. The British administration well knew with what a jealous eye the Chinese beheld their acquisitions in Bengal, and the prejudices which might be raised on the score of ambition: and

the abdomen of the insect. It is the signal of invitation from the male to allure the female to amorous dalliance, who is not furnished with these flaps. A species of moth, little inferior in size to the humming bird, was also frequent in this quarter

the

the most judicious method had been pointed out to the ambassador to follow, to allay any suspicions arising from a dominion so accidental, and so little sought for; but it was impossible to foresee, or prepare against the imputation of an interference with the Chinese arms which had never taken place.

It may be necessary to observe, that the government of China has not established any mode of conveying letters for the convenience of the people. The emperor *only* receives and sends expresses at the rate of a hundred and fifty miles a day. For the exigencies of government, as well as for the use of the officers of state, slower couriers are appointed, who are rarely permitted to carry letters or packets to individuals. But information is conveyed to the body of the people, or withheld from them at the discretion or caprice of government*.

Persons of rank in China are particularly careful about the quality of the water, and generally use distilled water for their own consumption: even the lower classes among the Chinese never drink it till tea, or some other salubrious vegetable has been infused in it. Not only is this infusion drank hot, as common beverage, but even wine, and every other liquid. In other climates warm beverages are also found most wholesome. In the hot climate of Hindostan, choultries or inns are founded along some of the public roads, as buildings for pious uses are elsewhere. The Chinese, however, enjoy, in the heat of summer, the grateful coolness produced by ice; but it is principally with fruits and sweetmeats. In bowls, which are generally used in China instead of dishes, alternate layers were placed of ice, with kernels of apricots and walnuts, or the seeds and slices of the hairy root of the linen-wha, were frequently presented to the embassa-

* The river being shallow, the mud, or diluted clay, raised from its bottom by the large vessels passing over it, or detached from its loose banks, is suspended in the water in such large quantities, as to render it turbid and hardly potable. But the Chinese have a method of refining it by the following simple process. A small quantity of alum is put into the hollow joint of a bamboo, in which several perforations are made. A convenient quantity of water is taken from the river, and stirred about three or four minutes with the bamboo; by which the alum unites with the earthly particles, and precipitates them to the bottom, leaving the water above them pure and transparent. The water of the Nile is also said to be purified by alum.

† Though tea is the common beverage of the Chinese,

and his suite, at breakfasts, given by some of the principal Mandarinest.

The Chinese of superior rank are courteous, familiar and affable; but they are vain and national. The two Mandarines who conducted the embassy, took great pleasure in satisfying the enquiries made about their country, as far as they were able. At every military post, and every respectable town along the river; troops were drawn out while the yachts carrying the embassy were passing, and a salute of three guns was fired. Of military posts, some were passed every day, when the high road happened to approach, the river. Few carriages were seen upon it, and none with more than two wheels. Gentlemen travel usually on horseback, and in sedan chairs, or chair palanquins: ladies are generally carried in close litters, suspended between mules or horses. There are no coaches in the country.

The custom mentioned by former travellers, of applying sails to land carriages, is not entirely laid aside. These vehicles are small carts, or double barrows, made of bamboo, with one large wheel between them. When there is no wind to favour the progress of one of these, it is drawn by a man, who is regularly harnessed to it, while another regulates it behind, and assists in pushing it forward. When the wind is favourable, the sail saves the labour of the former of these two men.

On the 16th of August, the yachts having proceeded as far up the river Pei-ho as the depth of water would admit, came to anchor near Tong-choo-foo, which is ninety miles distant from Tien-sing; beyond which the Pei-ho was no longer navigable except for boats.

At Ten-choo-foo Sir Erasmus Gower experienced the good effects of the orders that had been

which they are accustomed to take at all hours, and is usually presented to visitors; yet there are some, especially in the northern provinces, who delight in spirituous liquors, and are disposed to be very convivial. The Mandarins indulge themselves greatly in habits of luxury. They daily partake of several meals of animal food, highly seasoned: each repast consisting of several courses. The intervals of leisure were devoted to smoking tobacco, mixed with opium substances, and sometimes a little opium, or in chewing the areca nut. The books of entertainment, such as histories, novels, and plays abound in China. Sedentary gratifications of the senses, rather than exercises of the body, or pleasures of the mind, were principally attended to in their vacant hours.

forward

given by some of
are courteous,
are vain and na-
who conducted
are in satisfying
country, as far as
military post, and
the river; troops
ch's carrying the
ute of three guns
some were passed
happened to ap-
piages' where seen
than two wheels.
a horseback, and
quins: ladies are
ers, suspended be-
are no coaches in

former travellers,
ages, is not entirely
are small carts, or
bamboo, with one
When there is no
of one of these, it
regularly harnessed
es it behind, and
When the wind is
labour of the for-

the yachts having
Pei-ho as the depth
me to anchor near
ninety miles distant
h the Pei-ho was no
boats.

mus Gower experi-
orders that had been

ake at all hours, and
here are some, especially
ght in spirituous liquors,
ivival. The Mandarins
of luxury. They daily
l food, highly seasoned
ourses. The intervals
al centuries ago by a munificent bigot, for the support
twelve priests of the religion of Fo, which is the most
eral in China. It professes the doctrine of the trans-
gration of souls. This edifice is occasionally converted
to a kind of caravansera, where travellers of rank are
ged in their journeys upon the public service, through

forward

forwarded in his favour by the viceroy of Pechelie. A supply of provisions was furnished for all his people. From thence he proceeded to examine the bay of Ki-san-seu. He arrived there the 15th of August, and found the bay sufficiently secure for a well-sound ship to winter in. Wood for fuel, and fresh water were, however, at a distance in the bay. The difficulty of obtaining these might prove injurious to the Lion's crew, in their weakened state. The barren aspect of the neighbouring country, and the po-

verty of the inhabitants, left it doubtful whether the sick and convalescents could be supplied with things necessary to recruit them. It was therefore determined to continue the voyage to Chu-san, where more effectual assistance might be expected. The distance was short, and the season favourable; and it had been found, in the former passage, "that in no part of the world was the sea so clear of danger as from Chu-san to the river Tien-sing."

SECTION VII.

Embassy lands near Tong-choo-foo, proceeds through Pekin to a Palace in its Neighbourhood, returns to the Capital.

TOWARDS the western extremity of an immense plain stands Pekin, the present capital of China. The route lay through it from Tong-choo-foo, to the autumnal palace of the Emperor, called yuen-min-yuen, or garden of perpetual verdure; where such of the presents as could be safely conveyed to Zhehol were to be deposited: and the ambassador and his suite were to be accommodated close to yuen-min-yuen, while preparations were making for the journey into Tartary. Every thing brought by the embassy, was taken out of upwards of thirty vessels, and housed in the course of a single day. But materials and labourers are, in China, at the instant command of the state: a promptitude and cheerfulness of obedience argued a confident expectation of an adequate recompence*.

Almost the whole of the habitable parts of the temple were occupied by the numerous train of the ambassador; only one priest remained to watch over the lamps of the shrine, and attend his excellency's commands; while the rest retired to a monastery in the neighbourhood. The rooms had boarded platforms, elevated a

foot from the floor, like those which are sometimes seen in military guard-rooms in Europe: thick woollen cloths were spread upon them, which, with the addition of a cushion, constituted the whole of the bedding of these priests. Little more is used by other classes of society in China, where the common people continue to wear at night, a considerable part of the dress which covers them in the day.

A public banquet or breakfast was prepared the following morning by the Mandarines, to which every one belonging to the embassy was invited. It was denominated a breakfast from the time of giving it; but from the quantity of viands of which it consisted, it formed a very substantial repast. Tables were spread in the vacant parts of the new store-rooms; no other place, under cover being sufficiently ample. It seemed, in this instance, to be the Chinese etiquette, when an extraordinary mark of civility is intended, to include, with the principal object of it, the whole of his attendants.

The assemblage of the people was so great, from the beach to the temple, that it had the

* The temple, now converted into a place of accommodation for the ambassador and his suite, had been founded several centuries ago by a munificent bigot, for the support of twelve priests of the religion of Fo, which is the most general in China. It professes the doctrine of the transmigration of souls. This edifice is occasionally converted to a kind of caravansera, where travellers of rank are lodged in their journeys upon the public service, through

this part of the country. The most conspicuous deity in this temple was a personification of Providence, under a graceful female figure, holding in her hand a circular plate, with an eye portrayed upon it. Two halls of worship belonging to this temple, contained several statues of male and female deities; some carved in wood, and painted with variety of colours: others were of porcelain.

appearance of a crowded fair, in which booths were erected for the sale of liquor, fruit, and other articles. Among the multitudes of people in Tong-choo-foo, not a person had been observed to solicit charity. A small portion of the people seemed, indeed, to be in a state approaching to indigence; and none were driven to the necessity of craving assistance from a stranger. In seasons of great calamity the emperor of China always comes forward: he orders the granaries to be opened; he remits the taxes of those who are visited by misfortune: he appears to his subjects, as standing almost in the place of providence in their favour*.

Some of the Mandarines, who accompanied the English to Tong-choo-foo, were acquainted with the true nature of eclipses; but the Chinese, in general, did not seem to be sufficiently skilled in numerical computation, to be able to solve any intricate problem. They calculated by the assistance of a machine called *Swan-pan*, in which balls are strung on wires in different columns, and arranged upon the plan of Arabic figures.

Among the Chinese, silver is properly a merchandize. None of it is coined, though large payments are made of that metal in masses of about ten ounces each, having the form of the crucible they were refined in, with the stamp of a single character upon them, to ascertain their weight. Its value, in currency, rises and falls according to its relative scarcity or plenty. Spanish dollars are known at Tong-choo-foo, and are current throughout Asia. Gold is often used in articles of dress or luxury.

There are those circular and lofty edifices in China, which the Europeans term pagodas, dedicated to several uses; but none to religious worship. The temples consecrated to such a purpose differ little in height from common dwelling houses. In many instances there is a

* In passing along the streets to purchase a few trifles, a party of gentlemen, accompanied by some Mandarines, observed on the sides of houses, the projection of a lunar eclipse, which was speedily to happen. In the clear and pleasant atmosphere of this climate, all classes of men are inclined to be attentive to the appearance of the heavens; which they acquire gradually the habit of connecting with sublunary events, as if the latter were dependent on the former. Some accidental coincidences taking place served to strengthen this belief; and the vanity of prediction had certainly its share in forming the pretended science of astrology. The people of China, have from the earliest ages,

similarity in the exterior forms of the religion of Fo. There is no state religion acknowledged or encouraged in China: but the faith of most of the common people is that of Fo. The Emperor is of one faith; many of the Mandarines of another. Upon the altars of the Chinese temple are placed, behind the screen, an image of *Skin-moo*, or the Holy Mother sitting with a child in her arms in an alcove, having rays of glory round her head. Tapers are also constantly burning before her.

No people are more superstitious than the common Chinese. Besides the common offices of devotion on the part of the priests and females, the temples are often visited by the disciples of Fo previous to any undertaking of importance, whether to marry, go a journey, or conclude a bargain.

The Chinese, in their turn, had an opportunity of seeing an European ceremony of religion in the funeral of a person belonging to the embassy, who died near Tong-choo-foo. He was an ingenious artist of the name of Eades, belonging to the embassy. He came from Birmingham, and was induced, though beyond the middle age, to undertake a long and perilous voyage, in hopes of acquiring, among other arts, that of making a kind of tinsel that did not tarnish, as practised at Pekin. By order of his excellency, the funeral rites were performed the next day, with military honours. It was attended not only by the greatest number of his late fellow travellers, but by a vast concourse of Chinese. The ceremony of interment was performed with becoming decency, suitable to eastern customs, which considers the least mark of levity, on these occasions, as barbarous and inhuman. His body was interred amidst several Chinese tombs, interspersed with cypress trees.

The Chinese burying-places are no otherwise consecrated, than by the veneration of the peo-

considered a solar eclipse as portending some national calamity, and as they estimate their own happiness by the degree of virtue possessed by their sovereign, they attribute to some deficiency on his part whatever they think portentous. He never ventures any important undertaking at the approach of such an eclipse, but affects to avoid the converse of his ministers, that he may take a review of his past actions, for the purpose of correcting their errors, for which the approaching eclipse may be sent as an admonition, and invites his subjects to offer him freely their advice.

* The being of being clean gates to is seldom accomplished are their They a loom.

of the religion
in acknowledged
the faith of most
Po. The Em-
the Mandarin
of the Chinese
green, an image of
r sitting with a
having rays of
rs are also con-

titious than the
e common offices
e priests and fe-
visited by the dis-
undertaking of im-
go a journey, or

had an opportu-
emony of religion
belonging to the
choo-foo. He was
me of Eades, be-
me from Birming-
beyond the middle
perilous voyage, in
other arts, that of
did not tarnish, as
of his excellency
of the next day,
attended not only
is late fellow tra-
course of Chinese
as performed with
to eastern custom,
mark of levity, or
and inhuman. His
eral Chinese tomb-
es are no otherwise
eration of the peo-

ding some national
own happiness by the
overaign, they attribute
atever they think pos-
important undertaking
but affects to avoid the
ay take a review of his
correcting their errors
may be sent as an admo-
offer him freely the

ple, the remains of whose ancestors are deposited in them. The people preserve those sacred repositories with great care, visit them annually, remove any weeds that may have grown, or dirt that may have been thrown upon them.

The country, for some miles round Tongchoo-foo, is level and fertile. Some of the English gentlemen were supplied with horses, to enable them to ride about the neighbourhood. Mules are, however, more esteemed than horses, as subsisting on less food, and capable of more labour. Many of the horses were as regularly spotted as a leopard. The riders met several Chinese, who, on approaching, alighted in civility to the strangers. This is a mark of respect shewn here, and has been extended to other parts of the east.

The principal autumnal crops are Indian corn and millet: there are few inclosures, and few cattle to enclose. Hardly any fields are to be seen in pasture; the animals for food and tillage being principally fed in stalls, and fodder collected for them. Beans, and the finer kind of straw cut small, formed a considerable part of the food for horses. The roots of corn, and coarser stems, are often left to rot upon the ground, for the purposes of manure*.

But however meritorious their conduct may be found, their husbands arrogate an extraordinary dominion over them, and treat them with great severity: holding them sometimes at such a distance as not to permit them to sit at the same table with them; behind which they frequently attend as handmaids. But this dominion is sometimes tempered by the maxims of mild conduct in the different relations of life. The old usually reside with the young to temper their impetuosity; and obedience to them is enforced as well by habit as by moral precepts. Plain sentences of morality are hung up in the common hall, where the male branches of the

* The houses of the peasants are scattered, instead of being formed into villages: the cottages, however, seem to be clean and comfortable. They have neither fences nor gates to guard them against wild beasts or thieves. Robbery is seldom committed, though not punished by death, unless accompanied by acts of violence. The wives of the peasantry are truly industrious. Besides the rearing of their children, and carefully attending to every domestic concern, they are assiduous in exercising certain trades within doors. They rear silk-worms, spin cotton, and even work at the loom.

family assemble. The child is bound to labour, and provide for his parents' maintenance and support; and the brother for the brother and sister in extreme distress. The most distant relative, if in ill health, or in distress, has a claim upon his kindred for relief. While these are the practices of the Chinese, we cannot be surprised at seeing no mendicants or objects of distress among them†.

The ambassador, and three gentlemen of his suite, travelled in sedan chairs, the usual vehicles for persons of high rank in China. The other gentlemen, and all the Mandarin, were on horseback. Chinese soldiers on foot were occupied in clearing the way. The servants and privates of his Excellency's guard were in rough carriages or waggons. The road forms a magnificent avenue to Peking, and is perfectly level; the middle of which is paved with granite, bordered, in many places with trees. The travellers soon passed over a marble bridge, which is wide and substantially built over a rivulet not subject to inundations, and is little elevated above the level of the roads which it connects together.

A halt was made to breakfast at a small village upon the road. The inn bore no resemblance to the modern edifices of that kind in England. No elegance; no decorations; but the rooms, though small, were clean and cool. Every sort of refreshment was provided. From this place, if not before, the mind was at every step in anxious expectation of discovering that capital, which was said to be the greatest in the world. They arrived at length at one of the eastern suburbs. The street, through which they passed, was paved, and full of people. It exhibited a busy scene of manufacturers, shop-keepers, and buyers. Though the concourse of people was diverted, for a while, with the passing spectacle, they afterwards returned to their own concerns.

† Many heavy and bulky packages were carried in the following manner by men. To each side of the load are fixed two strong bamboos. If four men, that is two to each bamboo, should not be sufficient, two shorter than the first are fixed to the extremities of each of the original long ones. These eight extremities are brought to rest on the shoulders of eight men. And by bamboos fastened upon others, the strength of a greater number of men may be applied in a geometrical proportion, each sustaining an equal degree of pressure in raising and carrying very considerable weights.

To

To traverse this suburb took about fifteen minutes, when the party appeared before the walls of the city of Peking. The arrival of the ambassador was announced by firing of guns; and a banquet was provided for all the gentlemen, at a resting place within the gate. Over the gate was a watch tower several stories high. Round the gate, on the outside, was a semi-circular wall, with a lateral gate, on the plan of European fortifications. The city walls were about forty feet in height. Several horsemen were able to ride abreast upon the ramparts, ascending to them upon slopes of earth on the inside*.

Most of the houses in this main street had shops painted, gilt, and decorated like those of Tong-choo-foo, but in a grander style. Several circumstances contributed to throng so wide a street. A funeral procession was met in it, which, from the white colour of the mourners, was taken for that of a wedding;—but the lamentations of the young men attending the corpse, inclosed in a handsome square case, shaded with a canopy painted in lively colours, soon undeceived the travellers. The female relatives followed behind, in sedan chairs covered with white cloth. Soon after a nuptial procession presented itself to view. The lady, whom the bridegroom had not yet seen, was carried in a gaudy chair, ornamented with festoons of flowers, attended by her relations, friends, and servants, supporting the paraphernalia, being the only portion given with a daughter, in marriage, by her parents.

When the embassy had arrived at the eastern side of the yellow wall, they observed much less bustle than before, and instead of shops for business, the houses were all private. Before the courts of these houses, a wall curtain obstructed the view of the passengers; and this was called, *the wall of respect*. They halted opposite the treble gates, which are nearly in the centre of this northern side of the palace-wall: it appeared to inclose a considerable space of ground. In some spots were steep mounts;

* On entering Peking nothing was perceived that could excite particular attention: few of the houses were higher than one story; none more than two: the street was about a hundred feet wide, but unpaved, having water sprinkled on it to keep down the dust. Across the street a triumphal arch is erected, built of wood, having three elegant gateways. Over these were constructed three roofs, above each other, richly decorated. The first street extended on a line

in others deep hollows, now filled with water, with varied margins. Out of these artificial lakes, small islands rose, beautified with fancied fabrics, and interspersed with trees. On the hills of different heights the principal palaces for the Emperor were erected, and some of these eminencies were embellished with lofty trees; forming a scene irresistably charming. The whole had somewhat the appearance of enchantment.

Continuing in a westerly course through the city, the dwelling house of some Russians was pointed out; together with a library of foreign manuscripts, among which was said to be an Arabic copy of the Koran. Some Mahometans were seen, distinguished by their red caps. Among the spectators of the novel sight, some women were observed, natives of Tartary, or of Tartar extraction, whose feet were not distorted, like those of the Chinese. Many of them were genteely dressed, and had delicate features: a thick patch of vermillion on the middle of the lower lip, seemed to be a very favourite mode of embellishment. Some of these ladies were in covered carriages, and others rode on horseback astride, like men.

The embassy had now reached the villa intended for its reception, situate between Hai-tien and Yuen-min-yuen. It contained a garden, divided into serpentine walks, and diversified with artificial inequalities. The building comprised several distinct pavilions, embellished principally with landscapes; a rivulet meandering round an island; a grove of trees, with scattered grass spots, and craggy rocks heaped rudely upon each other.

The governor of this palace, after an interchange of the accustomed compliments of civility between him and his excellency, agreed with the latter that the most advantageous mode of displaying the presents, would be to place the principal articles on each side the throne, in one of the halls of audience. The approach to this hall, the external appearance of which was truly magnificent, was through three quadrangular courts,

directly to the westward, till it was interrupted by the eastern wall of the imperial palace, called the Yellow Wall, from the colour of the varnished tiles on the roof. Immense magazines of rice were seen near the gate; and looking from it to the left, along the city wall, was perceived an elevated edifice, as an observatory, erected by the Emperor Yong-loo, who has greatly embellished the city of Peking.

surrounded

surround
other.
raised f
before i
the sha
nished
capitals
devices
dragons
each. C
princes
appear i
Imperial
exceeds
feet in
fect. T
display
but the
musical
made ea
Clarke,
These
as well a
of the c
embassa
the thron
Majesty'
pared to
etiquette
degradin
Attendin
write in
flags of
on those
riages o
TRIBUTE
As his
to be un
character
plaint, a
that of a
* The t
in each s
Glory an
vessels of
or offering
peror. B
with the f
be many
sovereign
as well as
China

VOL.

d with water, these artificial d with fancied ees. On the al palaces for some of these n lofty trees; ng. The whole enchantment. a through the e Russians was rary of foreign d to be an Ara- hometans were caps. Among , some women , or of Tartar distorted, like them were gen- tures: a thick e of the lower e mode of em- ies were in ce- on horseback

the villa intend- between Hai-tien ined a garden, diversified with ding comprised shed principally uring round an scattered grass d rudely upon

after an inter- nents of civility agreed with the is mode of dis- place the prin- throne, in one of ach to this hall, was truly mag- ngular courts,

interrupted by the ed the Yellow Wall, the roof. Immense gate; and looking , was perceived an ted by the Emperor the city of Peking.

surrounded

surrounded by buildings separated from each other. It was erected on a platform of granite, raised four feet above the level of the court before it. Two rows of large wooden columns, the shafts of which were painted red and varnished, supported its projecting roof; and the capitals were decorated with various scrolls and devices in vivid colouring; particularly with dragons, whose feet were armed with five claws each. On the edifices and furniture of the princes of the Emperor's court, four claws only appear in their feet; the fifth is reserved for his Imperial Majesty alone. The hall, in the inside, exceeds one hundred feet in length: it is forty feet in breadth, and its height is above twenty feet. This spacious hall was well calculated to display the presents; having nothing left in it but the throne, a few jars of porcelain, and a musical clock, playing twelve old English tunes, made early in the present century, by *George Clarke, of Leadenhall Street, London*.*

These prostrations are required from strangers, as well as from the subjects and tributary princes of the empire: and the legate now pressed the ambassador to practice them in his presence before the throne. His excellency having received his Majesty's instructions on this head, was prepared to answer the demand. He well knew the etiquette of the court in exacting ceremonies, as degrading to one party as exalting to the other. Attending to this spirit, orders were given to write in large Chinese characters, not only on the flags of the yachts up the river Pei-ho, but also on those which accompanied all the land carriages of the embassy, EMBASSADOR BEARING TRIBUTE FROM THE COUNTRY OF ENGLAND

As his excellency might probably be supposed to be unacquainted with the meaning of those characters, he forbore making any formal complaint, as it could answer no other purpose than that of abruptly terminating the embassy. The

* The throne was ascended to by steps in the front and on each side; and above it were the Chinese characters of Glory and Perfection. On each side were tripods, and vessels of incense; and before it a small table as an altar, for offerings of tea and fruit to the spirit of the absent Emperor. Being the period of a full moon, a religious festival with the followers of Fo, it was a day of sacrifice. Among the many appellations given to his Imperial Majesty in his sovereign capacity, he has one which corresponds in sound, as well as in written characters, with that sometimes given in China to the deity; doubtless as an attribute of power,

characters, however, had attracted general notice; they were inserted in the Court Gazette, and would find their way into Europe. The ambassador was therefore attentively on his guard with respect to any act of his own which might tend to lessen the dignity of his sovereign.

Wishing to gratify the supposed wishes of the Emperor, without failing in duty towards his own sovereign, he did not refuse to accede to the ceremony of prostration, but offered to perform the whole on a condition which did not render it less personally respectful to the Emperor, while it removed the principal objection attached to it as an act of homage in his representative character. The condition was, "that a subject of his Imperial Majesty, of equal rank to his own, should perform, before the picture he had with him of his Majesty, dressed in his robes of state, the same ceremonies that the ambassador should be directed to do before the Chinese throne." It was of importance that this proposal should be given in writing, to avoid the possibility of misconception: but the ambassadorial interpreter was unacquainted with the style requisite for the palace; and the missionaries hardly ever attempted to write official papers. The legate, who aimed at nothing less than unconditional compliance, resisted any compact in writing, and was unwilling to allow any assistance for such a purpose.

After many applications on the part of the ambassador, several of the missionaries were introduced to his Excellency; but in a formal and cautious manner, and in the presence of the legate and a Portuguese jesuit, whom the Emperor had raised to a higher degree than any of his brethren. This man was inimical to the interests of Great Britain, and encouraged the legate to resist the Emperor's request to remove to the capital, where preparations might be more conveniently made for the journey to

residing, almost exclusively, in the person of the sovereign, whose dominion they consider as virtually extending over the whole world. If they sacrifice to him in his absence, it is not surprising that they should adore him present. The adoration, or *Kotou*, as the Chinese word expresses it, consists in nine prostrations of the body, the forehead touching the floor each time. It is difficult to imagine an exterior mark of more profound humility, or that more strongly implies a conviction of the omnipotence of that being towards whom it is made.

Zhe-hol. But the governor of the palace of Yuen-min-yuen, who was superior in power to the legate, interfered on the occasion, and the removal to the capital took effect immediately.

At Peking, the whole of the embassy was lodged in a spacious hotel, or palace, consisting of several edifices, built on the general model of the dwellings of the great Mandarines. Annexed to the principal apartment, now destined for the Emperor, was an elevated building, intended for the purposes of a private theatre, and concert room, with retiring apartments behind, and a gallery round it for spectators.

The memorial of his excellency was addressed to Ho-choong-taung Coloa, first minister of the Empire, and represented that "his Majesty the King of Great Britain, in sending an embassy to his Majesty the Emperor of China, fully intended to give the strongest testimony of particular esteem and veneration for his imperial Majesty; that the ambassador entrusted to convey such sentiments, was earnestly desirous of fulfilling that object of his mission with zeal and effect; that he was ready likewise to conform to every exterior ceremony practised by his Imperial Majesty's subjects, and the tributary princes attending at his court, not only to avoid the confusion of novelty, but in order to shew, by his example, on behalf of one of the greatest as well as most distant nations on the globe, the high and just sense universally entertained of his Imperial Majesty's dignity and transcendent virtues; that the ambassador had determined to act in that manner without hesitation or difficulty, on this condition only, of which he flattered himself his Imperial Majesty would immediately perceive the necessity, and have the goodness to accede to it, by giving such directions as should be the means of preventing the ambassador from suffering by his devotion to his Imperial Majesty in this instance, for the ambassador would certainly suffer heavily if his conduct, on this occasion, could be construed as in any wise unbecoming the great and exalted rank which his master, whom he represented, held among the independent sovereigns

* This capital, with regard to the proportion it bears to the rest of China, is by no means equal to that of London in Great Britain. The principal part of it is called the Tartar city, from the circumstance of its having been planned anew in the thirteenth century. It was in the form of a parallelogram, of which the four walls face the four cardinal points. They include an area of fourteen square

of the world; and that this danger could be easily avoided, and the satisfaction be general on all sides, by his Imperial Majesty's order that one of the officers of his court, equal with the ambassador in rank, should perform before his Britannic Majesty's picture at large, in his royal robes, and then in the ambassador's possession at Peking, the same ceremonies which should be performed by the ambassador before the throne of his Imperial Majesty."

This paper was properly addressed, and delivered to the legate; who seemed to approve its contents, and promised to forward it immediately; whose acquiescence was little doubted. In this persuasion preparations were made immediately, for the journey to the Emperor's presence. The articles destined for Zhe-hol were brought back to Peking, among which were six small brass field-pieces, on light carriages. His excellency caused them to be tried by the artillery-men, previous to their exhibition before his Imperial Majesty, and they were fired with great celerity. This dexterity in military manoeuvres, gave great umbrage to the legate, though he affected to say that the Imperial army were equally expert. He now countermanded the orders respecting those field-pieces, which before were destined for Zhe-hol. The few barrels of gun-powder, intended for salutes, and the musquetry of the ambassador's guard, were also become objects of suspicion, and he desired they might be given up.

The request was immediately complied with as a matter of no importance. The whole tenor of his conduct now strongly indicated a mind agitated by apprehension, that the Chinese should attribute superior prowess to the English nation. Even in a display of presents, to gratify the curiosity of the natives, he cautiously avoided every expression of approbation, though most of them were entitled to the most enthusiastic praise*.

The solemn adoration of heaven and earth is confined to the person of the Emperor, and for his accommodation it is performed at Peking, where

miles; in the centre of which stands the Imperial palace, comprising within its yellow walls one square mile at least: the whole being about one third larger than London, on the present extended scale. Adjoining to the southern wall of the Tartar city, is another, called by way of distinction, the Chinese City. Its walls, which are much on the decline, include about ninety square miles: a small part, however,

danger could be
tion be general on
esty's order that
rt, equal with the
perform before his
large, in his royal
dor's possession at
which should be
before the throne

addressed, and de-
med to approve its
ward it immediate-
little doubted. In
were made imme-
the Emperor's pre-
for Zhe-hol were
ng which were six
ht carriages. His
e tried by the ar-
exhibition before
y were fired with
y in military ma-
to the legate,
the Imperial army
w countermanded
field-pieces, which
hol. The few bar-
d for salutes, and
dor's guard, were
ion, and he desired

y complied with as
The whole tenor
y indicated a mind
the Chinese should
the English nation.
nts, to gratify the
cautiously avoided
on, though most of
most enthusiastic

heaven and earth is
the Emperor, and for
rformed at Pekin,
where

nds the Imperial palace,
one square mile at least
ger than London, on
to the southern wall
d by way of distinction
are much on the decline
a small part, however

where he annually appears abroad in several magnificent processions. But the ceremonies which constitute the chief public spectacles in that city, have been compared to those religious ones of his holiness at Rome, under the name of *fonzioni*.

Riches, in China, give little importance, and no power: there is no hereditary dignity to give it weight; and property, without office, is not always secure. The delegated authority of government often leans more heavily on the unprotected rich, than on the poor, who are less objects of temptation. There are properly but three classes of men in China: men of letters, from whom the Mandarines are selected; cultivators of the ground; and mechanics, including merchants. In Pekin, alone, the highest literary honours are conferred on those who excel in the sciences of morality and government, as taught by the ancient Chinese. These are chosen by the emperor, to all the civil offices of state, and to the great tribunals of the Empire. Military rank is conferred on such as surpass in military tactics*.

But children, in China, are more frequently deserted than parents neglected. Female infants are generally chosen as the less evil, and devoted to the river; because daughters are considered more properly to belong to the families into which they pass by marriage; the sons continue the support and consolation of their own. These infants are exposed soon after birth, before the countenance is animated to seize parental affection. Many are snatched from the jaws of

h occupied by irregular buildings; a considerable part of the rest is in cultivation. Within this compass has been raised the *shen-mong-tun*, or eminence of venerable agriculturists. Thither the Emperor repairs every spring, and according to ancient usages, directs with his own hand the plough, through a small field, by way of doing honour to the profession of the husbandman; a group of peasants, chanting hymns in praise of husbandry. The celebration of this exemplary festival, is made known in the remotest village of the empire. It gratifies the humblest cottager, in the disappointments which the vicissitudes of the season frequently occasion, when he recollects that his calling has been dignified in being adopted by his sovereign. In the summer solstice, when the power of the sun is at the highest, the Emperor comes in awful procession to pay obedience, and offer thanks for its benign influence; and in the winter solstice similar ceremonies are performed in the temple of the earth; but personification does not take place in either.

* All the branches of a family residing under one roof, is attended with important effects: it teaches temperance and order to the younger, under the authority and example of

death by persons appointed by government to watch the river, which provides for those taken up alive, and buries those who have expired. One of the missionaries, who had been vigilant in this work of humanity, asserted that about two thousand are thus annually exposed, of whom a very small portion was preserved.

A missionary must appear a singular spectacle to every class of beholders: to see men actuated by motives very different from those of most human actions, quitting their country and their connections, to effect a change in the tenets of a people they had never seen; and in pursuing that object to suffer every persecution, encountering every risk, and sacrificing every comfort; overcoming the prejudice of being strangers in a country where most strangers were prohibited; and where it was crime to have abandoned the tombs of their ancestors; and gaining at length establishments necessary for the propagation of their faith, without deriving any personal advantage. The several missionaries were permitted to build four convents at Pekin, with a church to each of them.

The evening before the departure of the embassy from Pekin, a Mandarin of exalted rank waited on his excellency, with a gracious message to him from the Emperor, to learn the state of his health, which he had heard had lately been affected; and recommending him to travel by easy journeys into Tartary; and informing his excellency that he and his suite would be accommodated at the palaces where his Imperial Majesty usually stopped in his way to Zhe-hol.

the older; and enables the whole to subsist, like soldiers in a mess, with prudence and oeconomy: yet the poor are sometimes compelled, by necessity, to live on vegetable food only, the price of labour not being always proportionate to the price of provisions.

Order is so generally observed, that the commission of crimes is rare. Every tenth housekeeper is answerable for the conduct of the nine neighbouring families. The police is observed with particular strictness within the walls. Marriages, among the poor, is a measure of prudence, the sons being obliged to support their parents. The custom of early marriage being considered in the light of a religious duty, this union usually takes place whenever there appears a prospect of procuring future subsistence: that prospect, however, is not always realized; and children, born without means being had of provided for them, are sometimes abandoned by the wretched authors of their existence. Superstition has stepped forward to sanction this horrid deed, rendering it a holy offering to the spirit of the adjoining river, to throw an infant into it, with a gourd suspended from its neck to keep it from immediate drowning.

SECTION

SECTION VIII.

Journey to the northern Frontier of China—View of the Great Wall.

THE ambassador, with most of his suite, set out from Peking on the 2d of September, 1793. In this part of the journey his excellency travelled in an English post-chaise, in which he accommodated some of the Mandarines. At first they were under great trepidations from the apprehension of the vehicle over-turning; but their fears soon subsided, and they became inexpressibly delighted with the easiness, lightness, rapidity, and elegance of their carriage.

The land, as they passed, appeared to be in a high state of cultivation, and its produce was nearly the same as on the other side of the city. One field, however, attracted more particular attention; as, from its regularity, it evidently proved itself a species of the polygonum, and had been regularly *planted*. The leaves, when macerated and prepared, imparted a dye of a blue colour, nearly equal to that produced by indigo. A dye of a green colour was also said to have been extracted from the buds and tender leaves of a plant of the species of *colutea**.

A narrow river was crossed early in the first day's journey which was deep enough to be navigated by small boats, of which a considerable number was seen upon it. Goods were conveyed frequently down these rivers from the confines of Tartary; and furs, with the richest of its produce, are transported thence on the backs of dromedaries, which are stronger and fleetier than camels. Sheep, with short fleshy tails weighing several pounds, were seen grazing upon the plains. These are highly prized by Chinese epicures.

A few miles farther on the travellers stopped

* There is hardly a vegetable growing in China, of which the different uses have not been discovered by experiment or accident, so as to have enabled them to have succedanea among themselves, for articles which would otherwise be necessary for them to procure from other countries. Thus, for example, they substitute the seeds of a species of the *sagaria*, by way of pepper, and an oil, little inferior to the olive, is extracted from the kernels of the apricot; but oil for common purposes is drawn from the seeds of *sesamum*, of hemp, of cotton, of turnips, of a species of mint, and of several other vegetables. A species of cultivated *mordica* is an excellent substitute for cucumbers: the cup of the acorn serves them to dye black, and the leaves of

for the day, at one of the palaces built for the convenience of the Emperor, encompassed with a park and pleasure grounds. Some mineral springs, in the neighbourhood, are occasionally resorted to by the Emperor, and are thence denominated his baths.

In the progress of the second day, several plantations of tobacco were observed upon the low ground. Its smoke is inhaled through bamboo tubes by the Chinese, and is very prevalent among persons of both sexes, and to those of very tender age. Girls who had never reached their tenth year, coming from the houses near the road to see the strangers pass, had long pipes constantly in their mouths. The powder of tobacco is also taken as snuff. Powdered cinnabar is often employed for the same purpose. A Mandarin is seldom without a small ornamental phial to hold his snuff, of which he occasionally pours a quantity, equal to a pinch, upon the back of his left hand, to be conveyed to the nose as fancy may suggest.

In the third day's journey the population seemed to diminish: the route led through a small walled town, but without cannon, though troops were stationed in it for the protection of the public granaries. At the bottom of some of the hills a river ran to the southward, over which a bridge was thrown upon caissons of wattles. Such bridges are common in this part of the country, as they are constructed at a trifling expence, and are well calculated to resist the torrents, which rush suddenly and impetuously from the impending precipices†.

On the morning of the 4th day the travellers

an ash are made to answer for those of the mulberry in rearing silk worms.

† In their progress towards Tartary, the number of Tartars inhabiting the towns and villages on the road, seemed to be nearly equal to that of the Chinese; and the difference in the manners of those two nations became less striking. The Tartar women were principally discriminated by having feet of a natural size. The head-dress of both consisted of natural and artificial flowers, a practice of embellishment never omitted by the poor or aged: the culture of natural flowers for this purpose is a regular occupation throughout the country.

built for the
passed with
Some mineral
re occasionally
are thence de-

day, several
ved upon the
through bam-
very prevalent
nd to those of
never reached
the houses near
pass, had long
The powder
ff. Powdered
e same purpose.
t a small orna-
of which he oc-
ual to a pinch,
to be conveyed

the population
led through a
cannon, though
the protection of
bottom of some of
ard, over which
oons of wattles.
his part of the
at a trifling ex-
to resist the tor-
nd impetuously

ay the travellers
of the mulberry ia

the number of Tar-
on the road, seemed
e; and the difference
became less striking
criminated by having
s of both consisted
ice of embellishment
e culture of natural
cupation throughout

came in sight of what had been, and still continued to be the wonder and admiration of ages—a work of stupendous magnitude, the great wall of China, said to extend fifteen hundred miles in course. The travellers were now able to determine, from their own feelings, that it was not alone the dimensions of those walls, that created wonder in the persons who had hitherto seen these intended barriers against the Tartars. Astonishment is seldom excited by mere labour that may be performed by common means. It was the extreme difficulty of conceiving how the materials could be conveyed, and such structures raised, in situations seemingly inaccessible, which principally occasions astonishment. One of the most elevated ridges, over which the wall is carried, has been ascertained to measure five thousand and two hundred and twenty-five feet.

The road which led to the wall was by a steep ascent, which took them to the southern gate thrown across the road; where it passed over the summit of a range of hills, apparently inaccessible in almost every part. Along this it ran through a narrow pass to a military post, where some men, placed at certain distances, turned out, generally unarmed, as the embassy passed. A man at the top of the tower beat upon a loo, while another fired a salute of three cannon placed vertically in the ground.

After passing another gate nearer to the old Tartar boundary, and going through a perpendicular defile, they arrived at Koo-pe-koo, the residence of the strong garrison placed for the defence of the outer wall in this part of it. Concentric works, united with the main wall, enclosed the fortress. Military honours were paid to the ambassador, on his arrival at this northern boundary of China Proper. "The troops were drawn up," as Capt. Parish relates, in two lines, facing inwards. They were formed by companies, each of which had its leader, its standard, and five camp colours. In entering the lane formed by the two lines, there were Man-

darines on each side; then music, tents, trumpets, and pai-loos or triumphal gates, twelve companies in succession on each side; and lastly, about ten small field-pieces of various forms and constructions. The parade of the companies were each as follows:

"The leader usually a bowman; The Standards, five small colours;		
"One Sword and Swordsmen; five deep."	Matchlocks and Swordsmen in number nearly equal; five deep."	"One Sword and Swordsmen; five deep."

"The number of the whole amounted to twelve hundred. The interval between the companies nearly equalled the extent of their front."

A general consideration of this barrier, evinces the resolution and comprehensive views of that government, which could embark in so vast an undertaking; the advanced state of society which could supply the resources, and regulate the progress of such a work; and the vigour and perseverance with which it was carried to perfection. The line it has traced, continues still to be as a demarkation between the respective nations of Chinese and Tartars. Though since their being under one absolute dominion, the word of the monarch alone is implicitly obeyed, on the part of all his subjects indiscriminately, yet each people have local claims and jurisdictions*.

A dog in Tartary is the faithful companion of the peasant. It is a small species, with a long recurved tail, of which caprice or fashion seldom robs him, and which generally leans to the left, as Linnaeus remarks of the domestic dog. That of Tartary seldom barks in the day-time. The peasants of this part, like those of Switzerland and the Alps, are very subject to a swelling in the glands of the neck, called by the French *Gouttes*, supposed to be in consequence of the frequent use of snow water: both sexes are subject to these swellings; but females more than males. The part of Tartary where this disease

* The embassy had now passed the Chinese wall, when a Tartar, who was one of the attendants, was ordered to be punished by some of the Chinese Mandarines, for improper behaviour; the offender made a vigorous resistance, and loudly exclaimed, that no Chinese had a right to inflict punishment on a Tartar, after having passed the Great Wall.

On this side of the Wall, the season became gradually

cooler, the mountains less richly clothed with verdure; and the roads more rugged; the woods, inhabited by wolves, bears, and tigers, had little to adorn them but a scanty covering of parched grass and thorny shrubs. Hares remarkable for the length of their feet and toes, and for being brown or red in summer, and white in winter, were driven into snares by men, instead of being hunted by canine enemies.

abounds, has many alpine features, much resembling Savoy and Switzerland.

During the seventh, or last day's journey, the ridges of the mountains, containing immense rocks of granite, ran nearly parallel to the road. Between the upper ridge and bottom of the valley, an antique ruin claimed attention: it was a perpendicular rock, two hundred feet high, of an irregular form, having tall shrubs growing on its surface.

The ascent to Tartary is such, that some parts of it have been ascertained to be at least five thousand yards above the surface of the yellow sea. This elevation must have greatly contributed to the cool temperature of the atmosphere. A little beyond the towering rock above described, through a recess of mountains, the valley of Zhe-hol, the summer residence of his imperial majesty, appeared in view.

The ambassador, with his suite, proceeding towards Zhe-hol, was received with military honours, and conducted to a suite of spacious edifices, amidst a crowd of spectators, on horseback and on foot. Several of the latter were clad in yellow garments, and their heads were covered with round hats of the same colour: some boys were also in similar attire. All these were a sort of inferior lamas, or friars, and novices belonging to the temples of Fo. The imperial garden, the palaces, and the temples, situated immediately beyond the town, exhibited a scene of grandeur and magnificence. The town of Zhe-hol, excepting the houses of Mandarines, consisted of miserable hovels, full of people. The streets are crooked, unpaved, and dusty*.

Soon after the Ambassador's arrival, he was waited on by two Mandarines of rank, with compliments from his imperial majesty; and by another Mandarin on the part of the great Colao, or prime minister, Ho-choong-taung. The legate called on him the same day, and without preface or apology, delivered back to his excellency open, the memorial respecting the ceremony of reception, which had been delivered to him sealed, under the promise of transmitting it to Ho-choong-taung. The legate pretended he had kept the memorial in his possession, though

* The principal buildings in this part of Tartary differed little from those of China. The great door of each separate building opened into a hall, communicating with a room of which part was raised by a platform covered with

it was well-known that it had been forwarded to Zhe-hol, and its contents approved. This change of sentiment was supposed to have been brought about by the viceroy of Canton, lately arrived at Zhe-hol from Thibet, where he had commanded the Chinese troops. He was a professed enemy of the English, and represented them as restless, enterprising, and dangerous.

The colao was now of opinion that the homage of vassals to the emperor should be performed by the ambassador, without any return of the independence of his own sovereign. On this ground it was thought his excellency's memorial to the court ought not to be avowed, and of course no answer returned. A firm opinion consequently entertained, that when the ambassador should be introduced into the presence of the emperor, he could not avoid making the accustomed prostrations without stipulating any condition.

The legate, with two other Mandarines on the part of the colao, waited on his excellency the next day, and urged him to give up the contested point, concerning which they were driven to the necessity of fluctuating between the opposite and contradictory efforts, of representing the prostration as a mere unmeaning ceremony, when proposed to the ambassador; but of serious import from a Chinese to his Britannic Majesty. After much had been said by both parties on the subject of prostration, Lord Macartney very judiciously observed that, to his own sovereign, to whom he was bound by every bond of allegiance and attachment, he bent upon one knee when approaching him; and that he was willing to comply with the same form, to express his respectful sentiments towards his imperial majesty.

This proposition seemed perfectly satisfactory to the Mandarines, who promised to return speedily with the determination of the court. In a private visit, which the ambassador afterwards made to the colao, he was received with politeness and affability, and with due attention to his rank and character. Intimation was then given to him, that his imperial majesty would be pleased to accept of the same form of respectful obedience from the English, which they were ac-

thick cloth and cushions, for sitting in the day, and sleeping in the night. There were also varnished tables, and chairs for visitors.

customed

custom
also for
embass
14th of
day. I
sages w
of the
gave to

Ho-c
refined
He was
by the n
proving
maintain
Asia, th
debasing
jects; a
monarch
create s
crown,
countera
to power
it: a day
of Ho-c
ever, ala
other lo
fearful o
favourite
zealous,
emperor
exhortin
measure
in the en

* In the
his excell
full sense
sincerity a
He expati
governmen
merce for
touched on
tion of the
though th
countries,
ever, gave
disavowal
His exco
tertaind
point of
foreigners
mitting the
a mutual
ed or affe
ment, of
The emba

forwarded to
proved. This
to have been
Canton, lately
where he had
He was a prod-
represented
dangerous.
at the homage
be performed
turn of the in-
gn. On this
ney's memorial
owed, and of
m opinion.
the presence of
making the ac-
stipulating any

customed to pay to their own sovereign. It was also formally declared, that the reception of the embassy by the emperor would take place on the 14th of September, three days prior to his birth-day. In the mean time several flattering messages were conveyed to his excellency, expressive of the perfect satisfaction which the presents gave to his imperial majesty*.

Ho-choong-taung was a finished statesman, of refined manners, and the deepest penetration. He was called to office and authority, indeed, by the mere favour of the sovereign; and the approving voice of persons of rank and influence maintained him in it. In those governments in Asia, the prince is not, as in Europe, afraid of debasing his dignity by alliances with his subjects; and the number of children of Asiatic monarchs, by different wives and concubines, create so many matrimonial connexions with the crown, that the influence arising from them is counteracted by competition. Such a tie, added to power already acquired, increases and secures it: a daughter of the emperor is married to a son of Ho-choong-taung. This connection, however, alarmed some of the imperial family, and other loyal subjects of the empire, who were fearful of the heights to which the ambition of that favourite might aspire. One person, indiscreetly zealous, was punished capitally by the present emperor, for daring to present a memorial to him, exhorting him to proclaim his successor, as a measure of safety, to prevent future dissensions in the empire.

* In the course of conversation in the last private visit, his excellency was desirous of impressing the Colao, with a full sense of the propriety of his past conduct, and of the sincerity and purity of his future intentions towards China. He expatiated on the pacific and benevolent maxims of his government, whose chief object was the extension of commerce for the general benefit of mankind, and he slightly touched on the affairs of tributary princes; on the dissolution of the Mogul empire of Hindostan, in whose contests, though they claimed the protection of the neighbouring countries, the English did not interfere. The Colao, however, gave not the least opening to be more particular in the disavowal of any aid against the people of Thibet.

His excellency was no stranger to the haughty notions entertained by the Chinese, that they were independent in point of commerce, and that every such transaction with foreigners was by them considered as a favour, not admitting that they could possibly derive any advantage from a mutual interchange of commodities. Such were the avowed or affected notions entertained by the Chinese government, of the superiority or independence of the empire. The ambassador, therefore, was not averse to their con-

On the day of the ambassador's presentation to the emperor, he was accompanied by most of his family; the scene was in the garden of the palace of Zhe-hol. A magnificent tent was placed in the centre of the garden, and within it was a throne. The furniture of the tent was elegant, without glitter or affected embellishments. Several small round tents were pitched in front, and one of an oblong form, having a sofa in it at one extremity for the emperor to retire to occasionally. One of the small tents in front was appropriated to the use of the embassy, till his imperial majesty should arrive; the others for the several tributary princes of Tartary, and delegates from the tributary states, who were assembled at Zhe-hol to be present at the celebration of the birth-day, and now attended to dignify the ambassador's reception. In the great tent his imperial majesty was to receive, seated on his throne in his large state tent, the representative of the king of Great Britain. The tributary princes, those of the imperial family, and the great Mandarines of the court, formed a very considerable group, while they were in the front of the grand imperial tent; each decorated with distinctive marks of the rank conferred upon him by the emperor†.

These personages had each, in his own district, a circle of courtiers dependent on him; but here their grandeur was lost in the contemplation of that of his imperial majesty. The etiquette of respect requires long waiting. The embassy assembled before the dawn of day, and many of

sidering a commercial intercourse as a condescension on their part, and expressed a willingness to negotiate on such terms. The Colao obligingly replied, that they should have frequent opportunities of meeting during the continuance of his excellency's visit. The conference ended as it had begun, with every appearance of satisfaction on both sides. Messages of civility, accompanied with presents of fruit and sweatmeats, soon followed both from the Emperor and the Colao.

† Purely to compliment the British embassy, the Emperor permitted his courtiers to appear in English cloth, instead of silk or furs, in which only they had hitherto been allowed to appear before his Imperial Majesty. The princes were distinguished by the transparent red button, indicating the highest of the nine orders, as fixed by the present Emperor. No person appeared on this occasion, who was inferior to the second rank in the state, the characteristic of which is the opaque red button. Some were honoured with peacocks' feathers stuck in an agate tube, and pendent from the bonnet. Those persons who had received three feathers, as tokens of Imperial favour, conceived themselves trebly happy.

tho

the courtiers remained the whole night in the garden.

Soon after day-light the emperor's approach was signified by the sound of musical instruments; and his imperial majesty was preceded by persons loudly proclaiming his virtues and his power. He was seated in a triumphal car, borne by sixteen men, followed by his guards, officers of the household, standard and umbrella bearers, and a band of music. He was clad in plain dark silk, with a velvet bonnet, similar to that article of dress among the Scotch highlanders, ornamented with a large pearl in the front, the only jewel he appeared to have about him. His imperial majesty entered the tent, and ascending a few steps consecrated solely to his use, seated himself upon the throne. Ho-choong-taung, and two officers of his household, were next him, and knelt whenever they addressed him. The princes of his family, the tributaries, and great officers of state, having taken their respective stations in the tent, the president of the tribunal of rites conducted the ambassador, attended by his page and Chinese interpreter, and accompanied by the minister plenipotentiary, near the foot of the throne on the left-hand side, denominated the place of honour. The other gentlemen of the embassy, a great number of Mandarines, and officers of inferior dignity, placed themselves at the great opening of the tent, where the ceremonies that passed within could be distinctly observed.

His excellency appeared in a rich suit of embroidered velvet, adorned with a diamond badge and star, the order of the Bath; and over this a long mantle of the same order, sufficiently ample to cover the limbs of the wearer. The minister plenipotentiary, being an honorary Doctor of Laws of the University of Oxford, assumed the scarlet gown of that degree, which happened also to be suitable in a government where de-

* The splendid manner in which the embassy was received by the Chinese court, was particularly honourable and distinguished. Embassadors were not usually received by the Emperor on his throne; nor were the credentials delivered into his hands, but usually into those of his ministers.

† His Imperial Majesty, adverting to the inconvenience of having recourse to an interpreter to explain whatever occurred during the interview, asked the Calao if there were any persons in the embassy who understood the Chinese language? and being informed that the ambassador's page, George Staunton, a youth then only in his thirteenth year, was the only one who had made any proficiency in it, the

grees of learning lead to every kind of political situation. The ambassador, instructed by the president of the ceremonies, held the magnificent square gold box, adorned with jewels, in which was enclosed his majesty's letter to the emperor, between both hands lifted above his head; then, ascending the few steps that led to the throne, and bending on one knee, presented the box, with a suitable laconic address to his imperial majesty; who graciously receiving the same with his own hands, placed it by his side, and expressed "the greatest satisfaction at the testimony which his Britannic Majesty gave to him of his esteem and good will, in sending him an embassy, with a letter and rare presents; that he, on his part, entertained sentiments of the same kind towards the sovereign of Great Britain, and hoped that harmony would always be maintained among their respective subjects*."

After a little more conversation with the ambassador, his imperial majesty gave, as the first present to his Britannic Majesty, a gem, or precious stone, exceeding twelve inches in length, highly valued by the Chinese. It was formed into the resemblance of a Sceptre, such as is always placed on the imperial throne, allusive of peace and plenty. The ambassador, complying with Chinese etiquette, and the minister plenipotentiary, respectfully offered presents in their turn, on their own behalf; which his imperial majesty condescended to receive, and gave others in return. These presents, on both sides, were probably less valuable in the estimation of the receivers than in that of the donors; but were mutually acceptable when considered as tokens of respect on the one part, and of favour and good will on the other†.

At the conclusion of these ceremonies several Hindoo ambassadors from Pegu, and Mahometans from the neighbourhood of the Caspian, were introduced to the emperor, who, when

Emperor expressed a desire of having him produced: when he approached the throne, and answered some questions proposed to him by the Emperor in the Chinese language, accompanied with the most elegant and graceful manner of address, his Imperial Majesty was so delighted with the conduct of that accomplished young gentleman, that he took from his girdle the arca-nut purse, which hung to it, and presented it to him with his own hand. It was formed of plain yellow silk, having on it the figure of the fire-clawed dragon, with some Tartar characters wrought upon it.

they
instan
and
were
peria
princ
tribun
court
rank,
before
majest
the v
him.
cups
over
lenni
pomp
amon
ants.
the ca
deur,
yet att
His
to his
ordere
own t
for th
goblet
embas
he was
wish
amoun
health
he des
witho
open
Soo
receiv
celain
of his
excell
more
about
China

* As
the em
ground
early b
rial M
salutat
his des
Voi

they

ind of political
structed by the
the magnificent
jewels, in which
to the emperor,
his head; then,
l to the throne,
sented the box,
to his imperial
ng the same with
ide, and express-
testimony which
im of his esteem
n embassy, with
he, on his part,
ame kind towards
and hoped that
aintained among

on with the em-
gave, as the first
y, a gem, or pre-
inches in length,

It was formed
eptre, such as is
rial throne, al-
The ambassador,
tte, and the mini-
ly offered presents
lf; which his im-
reccive, and gave
ts, on both sides,
the estimation of
the doners; but
en considered as
rt, and of favour

ceremonies several
u, and Mahome-
of the Caspian,
eror, who, when
him produced: when
wered some questions
the Chinese language,
ed graceful manner of
so delighted with the
g gentleman, that he
rae, which hung to it,
hand. It was formed
the figure of the five
characters wrought

they

they had repeated nine solemn prostrations, were instantly dismissed. The English ambassador, and the three persons who accompanied him, were then conducted to the left hand of his imperial majesty, and seated upon cushions. The princes of the imperial family, the Chief Tartar tributaries, and the distinguished officers of court, were seated according to their respective rank, nearer to, or more remote from the throne: before which was placed a table for his imperial majesty; and he seemed to partake heartily of the viands and the fruits that were set before him. Tea was also introduced, the dishes and cups being carried to him with hands uplifted over the head. Much silence and great solemnity were observed during the whole of this pompous business. No conversation occurred among the guests; no bustle among the attendants. The commanding feature of the scene was the calm dignity and sober pomp of Asiatic grandeur, which European refinements have not yet attained.

His imperial majesty was remarkably attentive to his European guests. During the repast he ordered several dishes to be conveyed from his own table to theirs; and when it ended, he sent for them, and gave them with his own hand, a goblet of warm Chinese wine. He asked the ambassador the age of his sovereign, of which he was respectfully informed; and he expressed a wish that he might attain his years, which then amounted to eighty-three, in a perfect state of health. The festival at length concluded, and he descended the throne, walking firm and erect, without the least symptom of infirmity, to the open chair which was in waiting.

Soon after the ambassador's return home, he received from the emperor presents of silk, porcelain, and tea for himself and all the gentlemen of his suite. Among the fruits were some very excellent white grapes of an uncommon form, more oblong in form than Spanish olives, and about their size. At or after all intercourse in China, between superiors and inferiors, an inter-

change of presents takes place; but those of the former are granted as *donations*, while the latter are considered as offerings*.

The ambassador was not a little surprised when he found the person appointed to attend him on the proposed excursion, was even the prime-minister himself; Ho-choong-taung, he was informed, was then waiting in the pavilion for him. The great Vizier of the empire, whom the people almost considered as a second emperor was now ordered to give up some part of his time to keep a stranger company in a mere tour of pleasure and curiosity. But this idea was soon repressed by the appearance of the Thibet general, who joined the Colao, as if he apprehended the ambassador was endeavouring to gain some ascendancy over him, or that comments on the Theban war should pass between them; he therefore thought proper to deprive them of that opportunity. The general's brother, and another in administration were also present.

They conducted his excellency and suite through a vast inclosure of pleasure grounds; the remainder being reserved for the use of the female part of the Imperial Family, was inaccessible to these ministers as well as to the English. Passing through a verdant valley, in which they observed willows of an extraordinary magnitude, they arrived at a lake; on which they sailed in yachts till they came to a bridge in the narrowest part; and beyond which it seemed to lose itself in distance and obscurity.

Near the borders of the lake several small palaces were situated; each containing a public hall, and a throne in the middle: several side-rooms were furnished with European works of art, and with the curious natural productions of Tartary. Among the latter was an agate of unique beauty and size, placed in one of the pavilions upon the lake: this agate is four feet in length, carved into a landscape, on which are cut some lines of poetry which were composed by the emperor†.

One

not worship the same gods, he would not desire his excellency to accompany him; but he had directed his ministers to attend him through the gardens.

† The gardens were enlivened by herbaceous animals, both quadrupeds and birds, but no menagerie of wild beasts was perceived. Some monstrous varieties of gold and silver fishes were seen sporting in ponds of pellucid water, upon

* An invitation was soon after given from the Emperor to the ambassador and his suite, to visit the garden and pleasure grounds of Zhe-hol. In proceeding towards them at an early hour in the morning, they happened to meet his Imperial Majesty, who stopped to receive the ambassador's salutations, and to inform him, that he was proceeding to his devotions in the temple of Poo-tala; that as they did

One of the curiosities, said to be in the garden of Zhe-hol, *the town in miniature*, was not permitted to be seen by the party; being inclosed within the limits set apart for the ladies of the palace. Something of this kind is now in one of the imperial palaces at Petersburg.

During the excursion through the gardens of Zhe-hol, which occupied several hours, Ho-choong-taung paid great attention to the ambassador, displaying all the politeness of an experienced courtier: the deportment of the other minister was also affable and courteous; but the manners of his brother, the general, was formal and repulsive. The violent prepossession he had imbibed against the English was not attempted to be concealed by him. While the gentlemen of the embassy were passing through the several buildings in the purlieus of Zhe-hol, they embraced every opportunity of expressing their approbation of what they saw; and they certainly found no difficulty in concurring with the general opinion of the curious mechanism, which had formerly been shewn in London under the appellation of Cox's Museum: but the general, unacquainted with that fact, exultingly demanded whether such performances were to be found in England, when he suffered the poignant information of hearing that it was from thence they came to China.

In the course of conversation between Ho-choong-taung and the ambassador, the former mentioned the arrival of the Lion and Hindostan at Chu-san, when his excellency seized that opportunity of requesting that Captain Macintosh might now be permitted to join the ship, having had the happiness of paying his obeisance to the emperor; but the general, who kept close to the Colao, instantly interfered, exclaiming, that it was not proper he should be allowed to

a bottom studded with pebbles of agate, jasper, and other precious stones. There were no gravel walks in these grounds; no belts of trees, nor clumps of shrubs; every appearance of regularity of design was studiously avoided; but natural subjects seemed scattered round by accident, in such a manner as to render their position pleasing.

* Early in the morning of the 17th of September, the ambassador and his suite were called upon to be present at the celebration of the Emperor's anniversary: a festival which continued many days, though the principal ceremony was that of rendering profound and devout homage to the supreme majesty of the Emperor. The ceremony was no longer performed in a tent, nor did it partake of the nature of a banquet. The ceremonial passed in a vast hall, in

traverse the Chinese empire. Nothing decisive was determined on for the present, but a renewal of the subject was proposed on a future opportunity.

By the fatigue of this day's exercise Ho-choong-taung found himself much indisposed, and sent to request the ambassador would permit his English physician to visit him. Dr. Gillan accompanied the messenger to the Colao's house, where several of the faculty were assembled. By the answers to the questions which Dr. Gillan proposed to the patient, it appeared that he laboured under two distinct complaints: one was rheumatism, which first attacked him in the mountains of Tartary; and the second was discovered to be a completely formed hernia. The doctor's description of the disorders, and the proposed method of cure were put down in writing. The Colao approved of his proceedings, and made him a present of a piece of silk.

Though the patient was speedily relieved from the most pressing of his complaints, the rheumatism, no interview could be had with him for some time by the ambassador, he therefore determined to write to him on the subject of Captain Macintosh, to renew his solicitations to rejoin his ship at Chu-san; and as no Chinese would venture to carry a letter without leave of the legate, the interpreter to the embassy undertook the business, (though it was attended with much risk, and produced great personal insult from the rabble) and put the letter in a proper channel for its speedy delivery*.

The awful impression intended to be wrought on the minds of men, by this devout veneration of a fellow mortal, was not to be effaced by any immediate scenes of gaiety or merriment; amusements of that complexion were postponed till the following day. In the mean time the em-

which were assembled the princes, tributaries, ambassadors, great officers of state, and principal Mandarines. To the sound of cylindrical bells, as well as to the music of various other instruments, a slow and solemn hymn was sung by eunuchs, who had such compass and modulation in their respective voices, as to resemble the effect of the musical glasses at a distance. The whole had a very grand effect. During the performance, and at particular signals nine times repeated, every person present prostrated himself nine times, except the ambassador and his suite, who made only one profound obeisance. But the person to whom the act of adoration was made, in imitation of the deity, remained invisible the whole time.

basado

Nothing decisive
sent, but a re-
posed on a future

's exercise Ho-
much indisposed,
lor would permit
him. Dr. Gillan
he Colao's house,
were assembled,
which Dr. Gillan
eared that he la-
plaints: one was
ked him in the
e second was dis-
ned hernia. The
sorders, and the
ere put down in
d of his proceed-
of a piece of silk,
dily relieved from
plaints, the rheu-
had with him for
he therefore de-
e subject of Cap-
solicitations to re-
and as no Chinese
ter without leave
er to the embassy
gh it was attended
ed great personal
out the letter in a
elivery*.

ded to be wrought
devout veneration
o be effaced by any
merriment; amuse-
vere postponed till
nean time the em-

ibutaries, ambassadors,
l Mandarines. To the
as to the music of a
solemn hymn was sung
and modulation in the
the effect of the musical
had a very grand effect,
particular signals were
prostrated himself nine
is suite, who made only
person to whom the ac-
of the deity, remain

basadad

basadad, accompanied by Sun-ta-zhin, lately promoted to the rank of Colao, visited the grand temple of Poo-ta-la, comprizing one immense fabric, and several which were less stupendous. The principal was a grand cathedral of a square form, each of whose sides was two hundred feet. In the middle of the chapel, there was a space railed off, and elevated above the floor, presenting three altars superbly decorated, and three colossal statues of Fo, his wife, and child. No less than eight hundred lamas, or priests, were attached to this temple; some of them from their early infancy.

This extravagant devotion of the Emperor towards Fo was supposed to have arisen from this circumstance, that, from a contemplation of the great length and unparalleled prosperity of his reign, he had gradually brought himself to imagine, that his favourite deity had vouchsafed to become incarnate in his person. Enthusiasm is often known to accompany the most shining talents; and whatever ground there may be for attributing to this great prince so whimsical a fancy, he has certainly displayed much vigour, capacity, and attention in the administration of his government.

The next day were exhibited, on the lawn before the Emperor's great tent, a variety of entertainments; and his Imperial Majesty, surrounded by his court, graced them with his presence. Every person who excelled in strength,

dexterity, or in the performance of any extraordinary feat of agility, were assembled on the occasion. After the ballets, various kinds of fire-works were exhibited: the whole concluding with a volcanic eruption of artificial fire in a superb stile*.

The Emperor divides his time according to the seasons: the winter in his Chinese territories, and the summer in Tartary; and as his Imperial Majesty had resolved on a speedy return to Pekin, it was agreed that the Ambassador should leave Zhe-hol before him. Every male in China, of Tartar parents or descent, is allowed a stipend from his birth, and is registered among the servants of the prince. Of these his body guard is composed, to whom his personal safety is confided.

Before his excellency's departure for Pekin, he received an answer from the Colao to his letter, signifying that the Hindostan should be permitted to sell goods and purchase a cargo at Chu-san, by the permission, and under the protection of the Mandarines, who would not permit the natives to exact; and that as she had come from Europe, laden principally with presents for the Emperor, no duties should be demanded on her return; but that it was inconvenient to suffer Captain Mackintosh now to join his ship, the business of which must continue to be done by the people to whom she was then entrusted.

SECTION IX.

Return to Pekin—Observations and Occurrences there, and at Yuen-min-yuen.

THE principal of those who attended on the anniversary of the Emperor's birth, departed from thence on the 21st of September, in different directions. Almost at the commencement of this journey, one of the ambassador's guards died in consequence of a surfeit occasioned by eating immoderately of fruit. This event was not divulged, it being contrary to rule to suffer any one to breathe his last within the imperial precincts: the next morning, therefore, the corpse

of this European was conveyed from thence in a palanquin, as if still alive; his death being afterwards announced at some distance upon the road.

The embassy arrived at Pekin on the 26th of September, to the inexpressible joy of such of their fellow travellers as had been left behind them, who had remained ever since immured in a state bordering on captivity. The ambassador's entrance into the city was, however, marked with

* The inhabitants of the different districts of the Emperor's wide domains, appeared in separate groups, and in the costume of their several countries. Whatever was pe-

culiar in their exercises, or habits, was here displayed. Several of them danced in a pleasing manner, and with graceful attitudes.

the

the usual honours, and he received the customary visits from the principal Mandarines: many of whom were in waiting for him at his hotel.

His excellency judging, from circumstances, that a system of precaution originating in jealousy, had been uniformly adopted with regard to the embassy, foresaw the expediency of fixing some future day for his departure; and he was informed that such a proposal was expected; the unbounded hospitality afforded to the English, being defrayed out of the public purse, was one of the very many powerful arguments advanced against the prolongation of the visit. His excellency was therefore determined to ask permission to depart, after the great festival, in the beginning of the Chinese year, in February; before which time it might rationally be supposed a friendly commercial intercourse might be established*.

The religion of the Emperor is performed with great magnificence in Tartary, but in China it is new. The Mandarines, and men of science, venerate Confucius, and assemble in halls simply constructed: the lower classes of the people cannot afford to contribute to the erection of splendid edifices for public worship; and their religious attention is much engaged with their household gods; for every house has its altar, and its deities. Their books of mythology contain similitudes of those whom they suppose preside over their persons and properties†.

The officers of the household, and other attendants in the Imperial palaces, are obliged, before the age of puberty, to be deprived of the means of becoming men: though it is sometimes done from childhood to forty years of age. Nothing but the tortures of a maddening jealousy could have first suggested the idea of mutilating one sex, in order to render it an unsus-

pected guard upon the other; and nothing less than the abuse of unlimited authority, could effectuate so cruel and unnatural a purpose. No longer belonging to either sex, held in horror and contempt by both, without the possibility of offspring. Thus mutilated, they may be supposed to be more firmly bound by the factitious tie of servitude, and more devoted to the prince by whom they are employed. Menial servants in the beginning, and pretending to no importance, they are the ready and servile ministers to the potentate's private pleasures and amusements, and creep gradually into familiarity and favour. From thence they sometimes pass into situations of power and authority; in which, when they once got a secure footing, they revenge themselves, as if it were on mankind, for the wrongs they have suffered in their persons.

The qualifications for such offices consists in that operation, which in some parts of Europe is adopted for meliorating the voice. It may seem astonishing to the English reader, that the operations for this purpose, however delicate in themselves, are performed, even upon Chinese of an adult age, with little accident or peril with respect to life. Such a fact is the more extraordinary, as the art of surgery is so little understood in China, that the operation of opening a vein is never attempted there; and anatomy is not only unknown, but held in horror.

Such as are willing to become eunuchs are immediately received into one of the palaces, and promoted to some employment in it, which gives him the advantage and importance of a gentleman. It detracts nothing from his title, whether he carries a besom or a bunch of keys: very few of them, however, are dignified with a ball upon the cap, the badge of office of both civil and military Mandarines‡.

When

* Exterior ceremonies performed in honour of the Emperor, to inspire people with sentiments of respect towards him, are practiced generally throughout the Empire. On his Imperial Majesty's birth-day, all the Mandarines of Peking, clothed in their ceremonial robes, assembled at noon in the great palace at that city; where each prostrated himself nine times before the throne, upon which incense was burning, making offerings of viands and liquors, and considering that he could not partake of them when absent. Incense is also burned, and offerings made, every new and full moon, before the throne of the several palaces, by all the officers of the Emperor's household.

† That huge animal the elephant was seen about the palaces of the Emperor. Several of them were brought to China from the vicinity of the equator, and some of them were bred to the northward of the tropic: they are smaller, and of a lighter colour than those at Cochin-china. The elephant is said to be the only quadruped that has a proboscis, though instances of it are not uncommon in the insect tribe.

‡ But simple castration is not sufficient for those who attend on the ladies of the court. They undergo entire emasculation, all traces of sex being absolutely removed. The beard of an adult thus formed into a black eunuch, speedily begins

W
prince
ters t
are a
credi
ed for
as w
blood
the a
Short
the E
annou
that
that h
to me
posed
early
out.
dignit
to deli
retire
the mo
which
The
some c
embass
into co
the kin
necessa
On thi
ed the
was a
state p
lic tree
as bei
of the
to strie
able i
nothin
sugges
formal
ter, to
bruary
Inst
begins
frame a
The mi
eunuch
ear of
civility.
At th
so an ec
Vo

and nothing less
 ority, could ef-
 purpose. No
 held in horror
 the possibility of
 y may be sup-
 ted to the prince
 Menial servants
 g to no import-
 vile ministers to
 and amusements,
 arity and favour.
 ss into situations
 hich, when they
 y revenge them-
 , for the wrongs
 ns.

offices consists in
 parts of Europe
 e voice. It may
 render, that the
 iver delicate in
 upon Chinese of
 ent or peril with
 a the more extra-
 is so little under-
 ion of opening a
 and anatomy is
 horror.

come eunuchs are
 e of the palaces
 ment in it, which
 d importance of a
 ng from his title,
 a bunch of keys:
 are dignified with
 e of office of both
 t.

When

as seen about the pro-
 them were brought to
 tor, and some of them
 eople: they are smaller,
 at Cochin-china. The
 draped that has a pro-
 not uncommon in the

cient for those whose
 y undergo entire enu-
 olutely removed. The
 black eunuch, speedily
 begin

When a new Emperor ascends the throne, the principal persons of the country take their daughters to the palace for his choice; and those who are accepted reflect no inconsiderable honour or credit upon their families. Besides those selected for his Imperial Majesty, others are presented as wives or concubines to the princes of his blood. The latter, in China, are regarded in the same light as handmaids in the old testament. Shortly after the ambassador's return to Peking, the Emperor's approach to Yuen-min-yuen was announced, with an intimation to his excellency, that the usual etiquette of the court required that he should proceed some miles upon the road to meet him. Though at this time much indisposed with the rheumatism, his excellency went early in the morning to the rendezvous pointed out. The Emperor came with regal pomp and dignity; and, perceiving the ambassador, stopped to deliver a gracious message, requesting him to retire without delay from the cold and damp of the morning, so unfavourable to the complaint which attended him.

The ambassador received intelligence from some of the great Mandarines, friends to the embassy, that a council had been called to take into consideration the letter brought by him from the king of Great Britain; and the conduct necessary to be pursued respecting his subjects. On this occasion the prime minister had summoned the Thibet general, and a former Hoppo who was a declared enemy of the English, then a state prisoner, convicted of embezzling the public treasure, to give their testimony and advice; as being competent to judge of the disposition of the foreigners trading to that port, but really to strengthen the Colao against the more favourable inclinations of his Imperial Majesty. As nothing auspicious could be expected from the suggestions of such persons, the ambassador formally notified his desire to the prime minister, to leave Peking early in the month of February.

Instead of an answer to this message, the

begins to fall off, and the whole shortly disappears: his frame also withers, and his face becomes full of furrows. The missionaries are more afraid of giving offence to an eunuch than to a Mandarin; and knowing they have the ear of the Emperor, they endeavour, by meekness and civility, to conciliate their good wishes.

At the death of an Emperor, all his women are removed to an edifice called the *Palace of Chastity*, in which they

ambassador received an invitation from the Colao, to call on him at Yuen-min-yuen, where he had some English letters to deliver to him. His excellency accordingly found some letters, dated Chu-san, from the Lion and Hindostan; the contents of which he communicated to the Colao, and informed him that the Lion would soon put to sea, but that the Hindostan would wait for her commander: and his excellency put the letters into his hands. The Colao expressed a wish that the ship would wait to carry back the embassy. He also intimated that his excellency and his suite might materially suffer in their healths, if they did not depart before the rivers were frozen up, as travelling by land was very inconvenient. The ambassador saw clearly that other motives were concealed under the pretended solicitude for the embassy's health, and made a proper reply. He was, however, suffered to take leave, without being informed that the emperor's answer to the king's letter was ready, and would be delivered the following day.

Early the next morning the legate waited on the ambassador, to acquaint him that the Colao wished to see him speedily at the great hall of audience in the palace of Peking. Though the ambassador was indisposed at the time, he speedily set out, properly attended, to the palace, to which he passed through a considerable part of the Tartar city; he there found the Emperor's answer comprised in a large roll, covered with yellow silk. It was placed in the midst of the hall, from whence it was afterwards to be sent to his excellency's hotel. Whatever favour it might contain, could not be attributed either to the Colao or his associates, whose unfriendly dispositions had clearly been demonstrated by their obstinate refusal of the presents usual from foreign ministers. But in conversing with Hoochoong-taung, on the points desirable to be obtained from the English East India Company in China, he begged to be favoured with a brief abstract of them; and, without engaging to support them, promised they should be taken

are secluded from the world for the rest of their days. There are, in China, a few instances of Pagan nuns, who make a vow of remaining virgins. Though the laws of the country do not admit of religious convents, these women are admired for persevering in efforts so difficult to be accomplished. The adultery of women is punished, but not capitally.

into immediate consideration. He therefore forwarded the statement without delay*.

At this juncture one of the Neapolitan Chinese, who had quitted the Lion near Macao, brought his excellency a letter from one of the East-India Company's commissioners at Canton, mentioning the probability of an immediate rupture with the republicans of France and Brabant. Under all these circumstances, and being attentive to the safety of the British ships homeward bound the ensuing season from Canton, his excellency signified to the Colao his intention of joining Sir Erasmus Gower, at Chu-san, as soon as possible; and requested that a letter from him might be immediately forwarded containing such information.

This resolution was perfectly agreeable to the Colao, and every consideration proved the propriety of it. Chinese decorum required that the embassy should cease with the receipt of the Emperor's answer, and of the *farewell presents*; nor could any personal communication afterwards take place with his Imperial Majesty. So sudden a removal from Peking disconcerted several persons of the embassy, who had made their arrangements for passing the winter in it; but they were forced to yield to imperious necessity. The route was directed through Hanchoo-foo, and Chow-ta-zhin; and Van-ta-zhin, with other persons of the first rank, who were in the confidence of the court, were appointed to accompany these suspected strangers in their long journey through the empire, to watch their conduct, and penetrate, if possible, their real character and designs.

On the morning of the 7th of October, Hchoong-taung, with two other ministers, came to a pavilion within the gates of Peking, to engage in the ceremonies of parting with the ambassador, and delivered some gracious messages on the part of his Imperial Majesty. They expressed a hope that his excellency was satisfied

* The Emperor's answer arrived the same evening, accompanied with several chests of presents for his Majesty; others came also for the ambassador, and all the persons of his suite; even tokens of his beneficence were extended to the officers and crews of the ships who had brought the embassy to China.

As no positive directions had been given respecting his excellency's departure, it was inferred from the Emperor's last declaration at Yuen-min-yuen, that recourse would not be had to absolute command; but it would be ineffectual to stay against the Colao's inclination, and he had to regret

with the treatment the embassy had hitherto received during its stay among them; and their assurances, that nothing should be wanting to render his journey to the port of embarkation commodious and agreeable to him. Two tubes of bamboo wood, covered with yellow cloth, were placed upon a table, containing rolls of yellow paper resembling vellum, on one of which was written an enumeration of the imperial presents; and upon the other, an answer to the requisitions made by the ambassador respecting the English factory at Canton†.

Besides the multitudes employed in supplying Peking, or drawing supplies from it, the many attendants upon men in office, and the slow processions, particularly of funerals, sometimes occupy almost the whole of a very broad road. No person is permitted to be buried in the city, and the ceremonies of removing the bodies out of it, seem to throng the gates as much as the supply of provisions for the living. Whatever be the rank or fortune of a Chinese, he makes habitually no parade or show, reserving his principal expence for solemn festivals, or particular events in his own family. The loss of a parent here, is considered as a loss indeed. The sentiment of affection and respect towards such while living, is not suddenly extinguished in the breast of the survivors. The heart is both indulged and consoled by paying superfluous devours to the names of the deceased. Every institution tending to maintain the habits of duty on behalf of the offspring towards their progenitors, is sanctified into a precept not to be neglected, but at the peril of being infamous. The first procession observed this day, was preceded by several performers on solemn music; then followed a variety of insignia, with silken colours, painted boards and devices displaying the rank and office of the person, who is no more. Immediately before the corpse, the male relations walked, supported by friends who were

the little progress made as to the purport of his mission. He had also been privately informed, that the Chinese entertained no other idea of an embassy, than that of a visit with presents on some solemn festival, and to last only during the continuance of it.

† After parting with the Emperor's ministers, the ambassador, attended by his former retinue of English and Chinese, passed through one of the eastern gates at Peking, where he was saluted with the usual honours, and proceeded immediately for Tong-choo-foo, to embark upon the Pei-ho.

and hitherto re-
n; and their as-
be wanting to
of embarkation
m. Two tubes
yellow cloth,
aining rolls of
on one of which
the imperial pre-
answer to the re-
r respecting the

red in supplying
om it, the many
and the slow pro-
s, sometimes oc-
ery broad road,
uried in the city,
g the bodies out
as much as the
ing. Whatever
Chinese, he makes
v, reserving his
estivals, or parti-

The loss of a
oss indeed. The
ect towards such
ting wished in the
heart is both in-
g superfluous de-
ceased. Every in-
he habits of duty
wards their pro-
cept not to be
being infamous.
his day, was pre-
son solemn music;
gnia, with silken
devices displaying
erson, who is no
e corpse, the male
y friends who were

urport of his mission
that the Chinese enter-
y, than that of a visit
aval, and to last only

s ministers, the embas-
tinue of English and
eastern gates at Pekin,
honours, and proceed-
to embark upon the

occupied in preventing them from yielding to the
excess of grief: over the mourners were carried
umbrellas, with deep curtains hanging from the
edges. The people, among other superstitions,
are extremely scrupulous about the time and
place of burying their dead; the delay occa-
sioned before these difficult points are ascertained,
has often long detained the coffins of the rich
from their last repository: many of them are
seen in houses and gardens under temporary
roofs, to preserve them from the weather during
this period of irresolution; but necessity obliges
the poor to banish such scruples, and they de-
posit at once, and with little ceremony, the re-
mains of their relatives in their final abode*.

The offerings from flocks and herds, and those
of oil, salt, flour, and incense, mentioned in the
Levitical law, are known and observed by the
Chinese; and they have their lares and penates
like the Romans. It was not surprising that a
priest of another sect should have been a visitor
at this time at the temple of Fo. He was a dis-
ciple of Lao-koun, whose original doctrines
differed little from those of Epicurus. He main-
tained that to live happily should be the prin-
cipal object of man; and that indifference with
regard to events was one of the principal means
of attaining that end: that it was useless to re-
flect much upon the past, or to be solicitous
concerning the future: the wisest employment
being to enjoy the fleeting moments as they pass.

The yachts were ready the following day, and
the presents embarked upon the Pei-ho, whose
waters were already low, and continuing to de-
crease: in a few days more, it was apprehended
that they would be too shallow to float the
yachts. Very little progress had been made
when Van-ta-zhin came to inform the embas-
sador, that the Colao Sun-ta-zhin had just re-
ceived a letter from the Emperor, an extract of
which he read to the following purport. "That
he (Sun-ta-zhin) should take the embassy under

*The celebration of marriage is ostentatious and expen-
sive. Though celibacy in either sex is not deemed a virtue
by the Chinese, they recommend constancy; and the rules
of exterior decency are guarded by the manners and senti-
ments of all persons of education and refinement.

One of the gentlemen of the embassy went into an open
temple, where he observed a curious figure, which he sup-
posed was intended to represent the *lingam* of the Hindoos,
or heathen god of gardens. It was, however, only a simple
short column, resting upon the back of an animal of the

his particular care, that every proper distinction
should be shewn, and attention paid to the em-
bassador and his suite in their route to Chu-san,
and that he should see them safely embarked on
board their ships; but that if those ships should
be sailed from thence, to proceed in the same
manner, and for the like purpose, to Canton."

Sun-ta-zhin was not only a Colao, he was also
honoured with the yellow mantle, covering, like
a spencer, his other garments; the highest dis-
tinction that could be enjoyed in China, and
tends to render the wearer a sacred character.
He was elegant in his manners, but tenacious of
his rank and dignity. Without disclosing his
private instructions, he gave the ambassador to
understand that his letter to Sir Erasmus Gower
had not been forwarded, having been retained
through the suspicions of Ho-choong-taung.
Sun-ta-zhin, however, was soon convinced, by
the explanation which the ambassador gave him
of that letter, of the necessity of sending it;
and he wrote concerning it to his Imperial Ma-
jesty.

The inhabitants along the Pei-ho bore strong
marks of poverty in their habitations and apparel,
but their general cheerfulness testified that they
did not consider their condition as the conse-
quence of any particular act of injustice done
to them. A few sheep were seen grazing upon
some small spots; but the greater number are
brought from Tartary, as well as other cattle.
A scanty proportion of animal food serves as a
relish to the vegetable diet of the common
people. Milk, cheese, and butter, the prin-
cipal resources of pastoral life, are little known
among the Chinese: the common people seldom
taste of animal food, unless of such as die by
accident or disease.

Their crops of corn being got in, and the
stubble taken off the ground, it is ploughed with
a single buffalo: their plough is of a simple
construction, and where the soil is very light, it

lizard kind. The column was probably only meant to bear
a monumental inscription in Chinese characters, which al-
most occupied one side of it.

The embassy was cheerfully received at Tong-choo-foo.
The temple, its former residence, was again prepared for
its accommodation; and in the evening the city was deco-
rated and illuminated. Troops were drawn out before the
temple in various uniforms, some of which were fanciful
and picturesque, but apparently fitter for the stage than a
field of battle.

is drawn by men and women. In passing by some villages, several women were seen at their doors with rocks and reels employed in spinning cotton. Some of that sex also assisted in the harvest, and are hardly to be distinguished from the males by any delicacy of feature or complexion. The general character of the persons of these women, according to the observation of Mr. Hickey, who had particularly studied the human form, "was the reverse of what is generally considered as elegant or beautiful. Their heads were large and round, and their stature low, apparently not above six lengths of the head. Their shape was wholly concealed from the neck downwards by loose dresses; they wore wide trousers from the waist to the small of the leg; and their feet and ankles were wrapped round with bandages." Those of a more elegant form were probably not employed in these labours.

It is common here for young maidens, distinguished by their faces or their figure, to be purchased from their parents at the age of fourteen, for the use of the powerful and opulent. Accident had thrown a few of these within the view of the gentlemen of the embassy, who considered them, from the delicacy of their complexions, and the beauty and regularity of their features, as entitled to admiration. To the circumstance of small eyes, attributed generally to the Chinese of both sexes, Mr. Hickey adds, that "most of the men had blunt noses turned upwards, high cheek bones, and large lips, with complexions dark and muddy. Their hair was universally black, thick, and strong. The Chinese often wear whiskers, and encourage the

* The sumptuary laws of China regulate the dwellings, as well as the apparel of the opulent: the more spacious the apartments of the rich, the more confined must be the cabins of the poor: and the more splendid the establishments of the former, the more miserable will be the condition of the latter; as the more is consumed in supplying the superfluities, the less remains for obtaining the necessities of life. The windows are small, and are of paper instead of glass. Very little iron is used in their buildings; even nails are seldom introduced. All public buildings, and most of their palaces, have their chief doors and windows to the south.

† The Chinese have no Sunday, nor even such a division of time as a week. Their temples, however, are daily open for the visits of devotees. Persons of that description have made some grants, though not to any considerable amount, for the maintenance of their clergy; but no lands are subject to ecclesiastical tithes. A land tax to govern-

growth of a beard upon the chin, which is suffered to descend in straight lines*."

Each town is supposed to be under the protection of certain stars or constellations, of which last the Chinese reckon twenty-eight; and they have also a division of the stars answering to the signs of the zodiac, and which they call the twelve mansions of the sun. Their astrologers pretend to foretell, and annually publish almanacks, in which they mention the variation of the weather in the several seasons of the succeeding year; which operates as a voluntary tax upon superstition. The Chinese, in general, are fond of sobriety; they marry early, and are less exposed to the temptations of debauchery†.

A small spot of ground is allotted to every cottage for raising culinary vegetables; and hogs and poultry, particularly ducks, seemed attendant upon almost every dwelling: the latter are frequently hatched by artificial heat.

On the 18th of October the embassy entered the province of Shan-tung. All its provincial attendants were then changed for others destined to conduct it to Han-choo-foo. Two cities were passed in the course of the afternoon; before each of which a great number of junks and barges were observed at anchor‡.

On the 25th of October the yachts reached the highest part of the canal. Here the river Luen, the largest which feeds the canal, descends rapidly into it. The opposite western bank is strengthened by a strong bulwark of stone, against which the waters of the Luen strike with such violence as to divide, and follow a part the northern, and a part the southern course of the canal. A little farther on they arrived in the

ment has been lately substituted to a poll-tax, as better proportioned to the faculties of individuals. Many imports, and all luxuries, are also taxed, but the duty being added to the original price of the article, is seldom distinguished from it by the consumer. A transit duty is likewise laid on goods passing from one province to another. Taxes upon rice, and some other articles, are received in kind: the several species of grain, on which the poorer classes principally subsist, are exempted from taxation.

‡ This being the full of the moon, the night was employed in religious ceremonies: guns firing almost continually; bands of noisy music were zealously occupied; fire-works exhibited; and perfumed matches were continually burning from midnight till the rising of the sun. On the 22d of October, the yachts stopped before Lin-sin-choo, a city of the second order, near which stood a beautiful pagoda of nine stories.

vicinity

vicinity of
fishing boats
part of sun
abundant
resembling
has distinct
pelican on
whitish
tail round
yellow."

On a large
mense number
constantly
kind of fish
or a dozen
by the owner
up fish, so
within the
trained as
about their
pouring an
the master
The boats,
light, that
together with

This part
on both sides
narrower channel
its former
flowed several
vated with
be immersed
sickle. Two
which is rich
October or
To remove
earthen vessels
into the ground
is struck with
tremity of
deed in perpetuity
worked from
end of the
by placing
of a circular
ground upon
from it as a
This operation
scale, by which
On the 2d
that part of
Vol. I

vicinity of the place where the Leu-tze, or famed fishing bird of China is bred, and taught the art of supplying his owner with fish in great abundance. It is a species of the pellican, resembling the common corvorant, which Dr. Shaw has distinguished in the following terms; "brown pelican or corvorant, with white throat, the body whitish beneath, and spotted with brown, the tail rounded; and the irides blue; the bill yellow."

On a large lake close to this canal, an immense number of rafts and small boats are constantly employed, built expressly for this kind of fishery. On each boat or raft are ten or a dozen birds, which, on a signal being given by the owner, plunge into the water, and bring up fish, sometimes of an enormous size; grasped within their bills. They seemed so perfectly trained as not to require either ring or cord about their throats, to prevent them from devouring any portion of their prey, except what the master thought proper to reward them with. The boats, constructed for this purpose, were so light, that two men often carried one to the lake, together with the fishing birds.

This part of the canal is strongly embanked on both sides; the water being brought into a narrower channel, and raised considerably above its former bed. The lands below are overflowed several months in the year, and cultivated with that species of rice which requires to be immersed in water till it is nearly fit for the sickle. Two crops are annually raised, one of which is ripe in May or June; the other in October or November.

To remove the shell or husk of rice, a large earthen vessel, or large stone mortar, is fixed into the ground; and the grain, placed in it, is struck with a conical stone fixed to the extremity of a lever, and cleared, sometimes indeed imperfectly, from the husk: the stone is worked frequently by a person treading upon the end of the lever. The same object is attained by placing the grain between two flat stones, of a circular form, the upper of which turns round upon the other, but at such a distance from it as not to break the intermediate grain. This operation is also performed, on a larger scale, by water mills.

On the 2d of November, the yatchs arrived at that part of the canal where it forms a jun-

tion with the Yellow River, so called from the large quantities of yellow mud suspended in it. This stream is so rapid in its current at this spot, as to induce the Chinese to think it necessary to make sacrifices to the spirit of the river, to insure a safe passage over it. For this purpose the master of the yatch, attended by the crew, assembled upon the fore-castle; and holding a cock in his hand as a victim, wrung off his head, and threw it into the stream. He then consecrated the vessel by sprinkling his blood upon the deck, the masts, and doors of the cabins; upon each of which were stuck some of the feathers of the bird. Several bowls of meat were then brought forwards and ranged in a line across the deck. Before these were placed a cup of oil, another of tea, one with ardent spirit, and a fourth with salt. The captain at the time making three profound inclinations of the body, lifting up his hands, and uttering a few words, as if addressed to the deity: the *loo* was also forcibly beaten, and lighted matches were held towards heaven, covered with silver leaf. Libations were afterwards made by the captain to the river, by throwing into it the cups of the liquids; and afterwards that which held the salt. The ceremonies being ended, the people feasted heartily on the bowls of meat, and confidently launched the yatch into the current. As soon as he had reached the opposite shore, the captain returned thanks to heaven with three inclinations of the body.

During the progress of the yatchs towards the yellow river, letters frequently passed between the Emperor and Sun-ta-zhin, and the latter often paid friendly visits to the ambassador. Sun-ta-zhin frequently quoted from the Imperial dispatches, expressions of kindness and attention towards the ambassador. And as testimonies of the Emperor's personal regard, his messages were often accompanied with presents of dried meats from his table, preserved after the eastern manner. His Imperial Majesty, in a recent reply to Sun-ta-zhin's letters, assured him that he "entertained a high esteem for the ambassador and his nation, notwithstanding the various surmises which had been made concerning them; and that he was determined to protect their trade, concerning which his excellency appeared to interest himself so warmly. That as a particular mark of his Imperial Majesty's at-

tention to the wishes of the English, he had appointed, as viceroy in the government of Canton, a person of his own blood, and endued with sentiments of justice and benevolence towards strangers; and that he had received instructions to revise the regulations of the port of Canton, and to suppress the vexations and grievances of which the English complained."

Soon afterwards the yachts arrived before a handsome town, of which those houses which fronted the terrace on the banks of the canal, were all two stories high, and white-washed. The inhabitants were more decently clad, and the women fairer, and more beautiful than those which they had seen to the northward. Some of the walls and buildings were in ruins, but the town had still the appearance of carrying on an extensive trade, there being about a thousand vessels, of different sizes, lying at anchor close to it. A garrison of two thousand men turned out, with colours and music, seemingly in order to be reviewed. The country near it was a plain, well cultivated and abounding with rice and mulberry-trees.

Proceeding farther, they perceived large plantations of mulberry-trees; some of which bore white, others red or black fruit. The Chinese do not graft their trees; but some of the larger branches were observed to bear the mistletoe. The trees are frequently pruned or dwarfed, to enable them to produce a constant succession of young shoots and tender leaves; which are more nutritious for silk-worms, than those gathered from older branches.

After the silk is wound off, the aurelias furnish an article for the table, as well as the white earth grub, and the larva of the sphinx moth; in which however the Chinese are not singular; for in the West Indies a large caterpillar that feeds upon a palm, is esteemed a delicious morsel*.

* Solid and permanent bridges are thrown over the canal in many parts of the province, the arches of which are variously constructed. Some of them are semicircular, and others of an elliptical form; some of them resemble a horse-shoe, the space being widest near the top of the arch. To pass under these bridges, one of which, situated in the suburbs of Sou-choo-foo, it is necessary to strike the mast of the yacht, and to erect in its stead, somewhat like a pair of shears, formed of two poles, one from each side of the vessel, which uniting at the top, form two legs; but the

Beyond Sou-choo-foo, the whole face of the country presented a forest of mulberry-trees, interspersed with a few tallow-trees. From the fruit of the last, the *croton sebiferum* of Linnaeus, the Chinese obtain a kind of vegetable fat, which has the properties of tallow, but in stripping it off it does not soil the hands. This fruit, in its external appearance, resembles the berries of the ivy. When it is ripe, the capsule opens and divides into two, or sometimes three divisions, and falling off, discovers as many kernels, each attached by a separate foot-stalk, and covered with a snow-white fleshy substance, contrasting beautifully with the leaves of the tree, which, at this season, partake of the purple and the scarlet. The fat substance is separated from the kernels by crushing them, and boiling them in water. The candles made of this fat are firmer than those made of tallow, and are perfectly free from all offensive odour, but they are not equal to those of wax or spermaceti.

The yachts stopped at a village near the city of Han-choo-foo, to receive the new viceroy of Canton. He came in his barge to pay the first visit to Sun-ta-zhin, and to the ambassador. He confirmed the assurances which had been given to Sun-ta-zhin, in relation to the English, and mentioned his own favourable opinion of them.

In addition to the honour conferred by the Emperor on Caung-ta-zhin, the viceroy, the inhabitants of Che-kiang, which he had just resigned, and where he had administered impartial justice, gave him the most flattering of all titles, by calling him "the second Confucius." The viceroy accompanied Sun-ta-zhin and the ambassador, on their entrance into Han-choo-foo, on the 9th of November, 1793.

arches of some of the bridges are sufficiently lofty to admit the vessels to pass under in full sail.

The city of Sou-choo-foo, in the vicinity of Nankin, is large and populous, and is termed the Paradise of China: the houses are well built, and handsomely decorated: the inhabitants, many of which are clad in silk, appear cheerful and happy. The women are fairer, and dressed in a better taste than those they had seen in the north, many of whom were distinguished by a small cap of black satin, adorned with jewels: they had also ear-pendants of gold or crystal.

SECT.

Han-choo-foo
tan from
St. Hel

THE c
the
Chen-tang
sixty miles
nearly equ
rium for
southern
ever, in
houses are
The street
flags in the
the sides.
shops and
inferior to
don. An
and not a l
The ladies,
silk netting
ers of silk
A satin robe
round the
Informa
that Sir E
san; but a
that he sho
ply of med

* During a
boats, two y
a sight of the
the king of
pay tribute at
peror. Their
manufacture
reli, and the
dark complex
On the side
the garden gr
was seen grow
about. In C
ries from the
four feet from
ped for the
done once in
its long and
root, without
like a rose-tree

SECTION X.

Han-choo-foo—Journey from thence to Chu-san; and to Canton—Passage of the Lion and Hindostan from the former to the latter—Residence of the Embassy at Canton, and Macao—Passage to St. Helena—Remarks on that Island—Return home.

THE city of Han-choo-foo is situated between the basin of the grand canal, and the river Chen-tang-chaung, which falls into the sea about sixty miles to the eastward. In population, it is nearly equal to Peking; and it is the grand emporium for merchandize between the northern and southern provinces. It has nothing grand, however, in its appearance, except its walls. The houses are low; none exceeding two stories. The streets are narrow, paved with large smooth flags in the middle, and with small flat stones on the sides. The principal of them consist of shops and warehouses, many of which are not inferior to the most splendid of the kind in London. An extensive trade is carried on in silks, and not a little in furs and English broad cloths. The ladies, instead of linen, wear next them a silk netting; and over that a waistcoat and drawers of silk, lined, in cold weather, with furs. A satin robe is worn above all, neatly gathered round the waist, and retained by a sash.

Information was received at Han-choo-foo, that Sir Erasmus Gower had sailed from Chu-san; but as he had mentioned in a former letter that he should repair to Canton to procure a supply of medicines, a dispatch was sent to the

company's commissioners at Canton to stop the Lion. From this place the new viceroy permitted Captain Macintosh, and some of the ambassador's suite, to go to Chu-san, where the Hindostan was taking in a cargo. Sun-ta-zhin accompanied this party: they set out on the 13th, and arrived there on the 19th of November; when their conductor, after making presents to them on behalf of the emperor, shook the captain familiarly by the hand, and bade him a cordial adieu.

The ambassador and the viceroy set out the same day for Canton, the route to which lay upon the river Chien-tang-chaung. Two bodies of Tartar cavalry, in superb and various dresses, were drawn out upon the beach, and saluted his excellency as he passed to his barge. They had a spirited and warlike appearance. An immense crowd of boats were assembled on this occasion, but they were all conducted without confusion. The watermen were uncommonly expert; and, among the experienced boatsmen was one who rowed, steered, held the sheet, and smoked his pipe at the same time*.

A plant much resembling tea, called by the Chinese cha-whaw, is the *camellia sesanqua* of

* During a temporary obstruction to the progress of the boats, two young men came up who were anxious to have a sight of the ambassador; they were also ambassadors from the king of the Lequese islands, and were proceeding to pay tribute and do homage from the sovereign to the emperor. Their dress consisted of a fine brown shawl, the manufacture of their country, lined with the furs of squirrels, and they also wore silk turbans. They were of a dark complexion, communicative, and well bred.

On the sides and tops of earthen embankments, dividing the garden grounds, and groves of oranges, the tea-plant was seen growing like a common shrub, scattered carelessly about. In China, wherever it is regularly cultivated, it rises from the seed sown in rows, at about the distance of four feet from each other. Its perpendicular growth is impeded for the convenience of collecting its leaves, which is done once in spring, and twice in the course of the summer. Its long and tender branches spring up almost from the root, without any intervening naked trunk. It is bushy, like a rose-tree, and the expanded petals somewhat resemble

those of the rose. The largest and oldest leaves are least esteemed, and are therefore destined to the lowest classes of the people: on the young leaves much preparation is bestowed before they are delivered to the purchaser; every leaf passes through the fingers of a female, who rolls it up nearly to the form it had assumed before it became expanded in the progress of its growth. It is then placed upon thin plates of iron or earthenware; but it is confidently said in the country that no plates of copper are ever employed for that purpose, as has been unjustly asserted. The colour and astringency of green tea, is supposed to be derived from the early period at which the leaves are plucked; and which, like unripe fruit, are generally green and acid. The tea is packed in large chests, lined with very thin plates of lead, and the large dried leaves of some vegetable. It is, however, true that the tea is pressed down into those chests by the naked feet of Chinese labourers. But notwithstanding this indelicate operation of Chinese packers, the upper ranks of China are particularly fond of tea. That of good quality is dearer at Peking than in London.

the

the botanists. It yields a nut, from whence is expressed an esculent oil, equal to the best which comes from Florence.

Arriving near the town of Chan-ssan-shen the river was no longer navigable. During their route, as well as when they came there, there were several interchanges of visits between the viceroy and ambassador, while preparations were making for the journey by land. The oppressions to which foreigners, and particularly the English, were exposed at Canton, frequently were mentioned in the course of conversation; and the benevolent disposition of the viceroy induced him to be attentive to each complaint; and Chow-ta-zhin, whom he had taken into his confidence, and upon whose attachment the ambassador had reason to rely, undertook to urge the business to him in private.

Every necessary preparation being made, the embassy pursued their journey towards Canton. Not a mile was travelled without a village, nor hardly a spot that was under cultivation: the villages were not surrounded by walls, but they were adorned with handsome gateways at their extremities. Where the face of a hill or mountain is not nearly perpendicular to the surface of the earth, the slope is converted into several terraces, one above another; each of which is supported by mounds of stone. These stages are not confined to the culture of any particular vegetable: pulse, grain, yams, sweet potatoes, carrots, onions, turnips, and other culinary plants, are produced upon them. On the top of the mountain was a reservoir to catch rain water, and convey it by channels successively to the different terraces.

To collect manure is an object of so much attention with the Chinese, that the old and young, who are incapable of any other kind of labour, are continually in pursuit of it. They rummage every street, road, river, and canal, holding in their hands small wooden rakes to pick up the dung of animals, and offals of every kind which can answer the purpose of manure.

Through the whole of this short journey, not a spot was seen that was not cultivated with in-

dust. The soil in many places was indifferent, but the people were the more active in their efforts to fertilize it. On the small terraces, the hoe serves the purpose of a plough in turning up the soil. The husbandry is singularly neat.

Though inns are common in the great roads of China, so few travellers passed through this part of the country, that not a house could be found fit for the reception of the embassy in the town where they arrived at night. They were therefore accommodated with the public hall, in which young men were examined who were candidates for degrees.

The examination of these students are said to be always public; and the governors and magistrates who preside, with the numerous auditors who attend, suppress any inclination to partiality in the judges. Oral and written questions are put to the candidates, as in England; and the successful one, after being elected to the University, may gradually attain to the highest offices and dignities of the state; that honour being open to all classes of men. The general persuasion also, that authority has been acquired through merit, must contribute to insure respect and obedience to it; except in cases of notorious abuse, against which rank and learning do not always afford security. Such a system of government promises great benefits to society, and can only fail when the temptation to do evil preponderates over the strength of principle, and the hazard of detection in the sacrifice of it. The poor and private individuals of China, who have opportunity of communicating their complaints, or declaring their sentiments on the conduct of their rulers, may be said to be left almost at their mercy; and the same conclusion will apply to foreigners when left in the same predicament. The ambassador therefore seized every opportunity of impressing on the mind of the viceroy, the necessity of his protecting the strangers at Canton, from the extortion of the collectors of the customs. The viceroy was guarded in his promises, but seemed inclined to do all the service in his power*.

The ambassador was not certain whether the apprehension

the English nation; but that he saw the necessity of a change of conduct, as well from a principle of justice to the English, as for the honour of his own country. But though

* In a subsequent visit, the viceroy informed the ambassador, that he was certain no pains would be spared by the persons he was about to govern, to impress their minds against

appre-
from a
dication
forces
streng
pow
duct,
His ex
tained
ministe
the ex
accomp
he, the
ments
assuran
of a pa
British
parted
ment, v
the acc
him,
whether
tinuance
king's w
and by a
emperor
with the
basey, b
amity of
His e
propos
have no
acknowl
him, an
manner
a circ
it, all o
in time;
two em
of navig
arrival
cluded b
though hi
im, its
men in
ress of th
a redress
who migh
at exclus
remptor
be requisi
on of th
ere made
of r
VOL.

apprehension originated with the viceroy, or from a higher source; but it was certainly an indication, that from a sense of the English land forces in India, and of their vast maritime strength, the British nation was thought too powerful not to require some delicacy of conduct, even from the haughty empire of China. His excellency acknowledged that he had entertained doubts of the disposition of the court or minister of Peking towards his country; but from the explanation of the emperor's minister who accompanied him to Han-choo-foo, as well as he, the viceroy, had given of the genuine sentiments of his imperial majesty, he relied on the assurances that were thus solemnly made to him, of a particular attention to the interests of the British subjects in China, and had already imparted this confidence to the English government, which, he doubted not, would confide in the accomplishment of the promises made to him. The viceroy then asked the ambassador, whether he would empower him to certify a continuance of this amicable disposition, by the king's writing speedily to his imperial majesty, and by sending again a minister to China, if the emperor were disposed to admit of such, not with the expensive parade of the present embassy, but merely as a testimony of the continued amity of his Britannic Majesty.

His excellency, not having expected such a proposal, said, that the king would probably have no difficulty in writing to the emperor, to acknowledge the receipt of the presents sent by him, and to thank him for the distinguished manner in which he had received the embassy; a circumstance very distinct from the objects of it, all of which he still hoped might be effected in time; but that the vast distance between the two empires, and the difficulty and uncertainty of navigation, made it impossible to ascertain the arrival of a new embassy. The viceroy concluded by observing, that he would instantly dis-

though his power was great, and his footing apparently firm, its situation was not without its difficulties. Besides the men in office at Canton, interested in preventing the redress of the grievances, and whose guilt would be implicated in redress, there were other prejudiced enemies at court, who might also consider reform as a censure upon them: that exclusive of all these, he could not avoid thinking of the peremptory manner in which Ho-choong-taung had refused the requisitions of the ambassador; that if in a representation of these matters to the British court, an endeavour were made to excite resentment, any subsequent appearances of resentment against this country, might involve him

patch a courier, to relate the substance of the conference, accompanied with such suggestions of his own, as he hoped would prove satisfactory to the emperor.

The embassy again embarked, but their progress was much impeded by the violence of the wind and rain. When the showers had ceased, their effect in swelling the river still continued, and its current being favourable, they advanced rapidly along the stream. Proceeding further in a northerly course, they passed by a vast extent of swampy land, in the midst of which was the largest collection of water in the country, called Poyang lake. Into this lake several rivers flow, and several canals are formed from it, inclosed within high banks for the security of vessels in tempests and inundations. The billows of the lake sometimes rise as high as those at sea, and are supposed to be equally dangerous. Small sandy islands were perceived in the lake, just peeping above the surface of the water, the solitary abodes of fishermen*.

In this province the women of the lower rank are exonerated from the prejudice of little feet: and they are so very robust and diligent, that peasants of other provinces come to Kiang-see, to purchase what they call a working wife. A farmer in that province has been seen to drive with one hand, a plough, to which his wife was yoked, while he sowed with the other hand in drills. The wives were distinguished from the maidens, by the latter permitting the hair near the forehead to hang down towards the eyebrows, while the former have all theirs bound upon the crown of the head.

The river, against the course of which the yachts had for some time tracked, was now become shallow, and soon ceased to be navigable: a second land tour was therefore unavoidable. The travellers set out early in the morning, and arrived the same day at Nan-shoo-foo, where covered barges, on the river Pekiank, were

criminally in the eye of his government, for favours shewn by him to the English in the mean time, and that he wished to be perfectly satisfied in that respect.

* Plantations of the bamboo abounded in the province of Kiangsee, in several spots in the vicinity of the river, on which the embassy was now embarked. With the large camphor tree, that grew a little more distant from the river, was sometimes mixed one of still greater magnitude, a species of the ficus, or Chinese yang-shoo, of which the branches spread horizontally to such an extent, that one tree is almost sufficient to cover half an acre of land.

found in readiness to receive the persons and baggage of the embassy. This river continues its course through an extent of about two hundred and sixty miles to the city of Canton. From thence it falls, after a course of eighty miles, into the southern sea of China; near which it has, among foreigners, the name of Bocca Tigris*.

The influence of the extensive trade carried on by the English in China, was apparent some days before they reached the city of Canton; for upon the river, as well as on its banks, some broken English was frequently spoken: many boats were also seen going down the river with merchandize for the English market. The stream was also crowded, in many places, with rafts of timber, chiefly of the lurch and camphor trees; destined for the middle and northern provinces.

The viceroy had thought it expedient to proceed to Canton before the party, to procure a proper reception for the embassy. He sent from thence some magnificent barges, adorned with a profusion of glass, gilding, and painting, in which the ambassador made his entrance into Canton on the 19th of December 1793. The splendid manner in which his excellency was received, added to the personal attentions of the viceroy, must have taught the inhabitants that the English were no longer destitute of protection, or unworthy of esteem.

Many of the embassy had now the happiness of hearing from their friends at home; and intelligence had arrived that France had commenced hostilities against Great Britain. The ambassador had also the satisfaction of learning, that the Lion, after which ship the company's commissioners had sent a messenger, had been overtaken, and was then lying at Bocca Tigris.

The Lion sailed from Chu-san on the 18th of October, after having continued there about seven weeks, during which time the crew were almost restored to a state of health. She then stood over for Formosa, and anchored near the Ladrões on the 23d of October.

* As soon as the river became sufficiently deep and wide, the passage barges were changed for more commodious yachts. The volume of water was increased by a junction with another considerable stream from the north-west. At their confluence stood the city of Chau-choo-soo, the environs of which were pleasant and romantic. The boats which ply from one part of the city to another, are chiefly managed by females, who are generally young and neatly dressed to attract the attention of the passengers. These frail damsels did not make choice of this double occupation

When the company's commissioners had supplied Sir Erasmus Gower with the medicines, and the other articles which he required, he again shaped his course for Formosa, and sailed through its straits; but having, in a gale of wind, sprung her fore and maintop-masts, the Lion returned to the Ladrões to refit.

Several piratical vessels, whose crews were Chinese, were hovering in this neighbourhood, and had lately taken several Chinese junks, besides plundering the adjacent island. Their practice is, after taking out whatever they deem valuable, to set fire to the habitations, to sink the junks, to make slaves of the stout and robust, and put the rest to death.

On the 21st of November the Lion fell in with a brig, which, on examination, proved to be the same vessel to which the seal-catchers belonged, whom the embassy, in the preceding February had found, and left on the volcanic island of Amsterdam; where it is probable they will now end their days, as Sir Erasmus seized the brig as a lawful prize, she having been fitted out from the isle of France. Before the damages were repaired, which the Lion had sustained in tempestuous weather, Sir Erasmus Gower fortunately received the dispatches which had been forwarded to him by the commissioners, in consequence of which he returned to the Bocca Tigris.

The Hindostan, Captain Mackintosh, also returned to Canton sooner than he expected. The Chu-san traders were not prepared for so extensive a concern, neither was it convenient for them to purchase the European commodities: tea and silk were cheaper there than at any other place, but they wanted the amount in specie, which Captain Mackintosh was not prepared to comply with. He therefore found it expedient to proceed to Canton, where he was to enjoy, for the present voyage, the same privileges and exemptions as at Chu-san.

on account of misconduct or loss of character; but their parents, taking no other interest in the chastity of their daughters, than as it might contribute to an advantageous disposal of them to wealthy husbands, feel little reluctance when no such prospect offers, to devote them to one employment with a view to the profits of another. Women, especially in the lower walks, are bred with little other principles than that of implicit obedience to their fathers' husbands.

SECTION XI.

Residence of the Embassy at Canton, and at Macao.

THE city of Canton, in which the embassy now lodged, like any other sea-port or frontier town, has a number of foreigners mixed with the natives. The handsome factories of the different European natives, each with its national flag flying over it, arranged in a line along the river, contrast with the Chinese buildings, and are an ornament to the whole. The neighbourhood of the foreign factories abounds with warehouses for the reception of European merchandise. All purchases are made by individuals belonging to the ships, or by the agents of Companies in Europe. The probity, punctuality, and credit of the English East India Company, in particular, and their agents, are so well known among the Chinese merchants to be such, that their goods are received, with respect to quantity, or quality, as they are declared in the invoice, without examination, throughout the empire*.

The viceroy in his favourable disposition towards the English, was perhaps influenced by the opinion he had conceived of their science and acquirements. Accident contributed towards inspiring him with such sentiments. The custom of inhaling the vapour of tobacco is very general in China, and extends to the highest ranks. The viceroy once requiring to light his pipe in the absence of his attendants, the ambassador took a phosphoric bottle from his pocket, and having opened it, he kindled a match that fully answered the purpose wanted. This singularity of a person's carrying fire about him without the apprehension of injury, attracted the viceroy's

* During the ambassador's stay at Canton, an interchange of visits frequently took place between him and the viceroy; and also between the former and the gentlemen of the factory. The pride and reserve of rank were not indeed much cherished by the viceroy. He was the first in that exalted station who ever admitted the native merchants of Canton to sit in his presence; and he is also said to be the first viceroy who condescended to sit at table with gentlemen of the English factory, at a repast prepared by them for the ambassador.

† The marriages in China are early and prolific: the exposition of infants implies the excess of population beyond the means of subsistence. Population in China, is not subject to be diminished materially by war. Extraordinary

attention, who asked for information on the subject. His excellency explained the phenomenon to him in general terms, and made him a present of the bottle, which he thankfully received.

The state of physic is extremely low in China: there are no public schools, or teachers of it. A young man has no other method of acquiring medical knowledge, than by engaging himself to some practitioner. The emperor's physicians, as well as most of his domestic attendants, are chiefly eunuchs. Amputation, in cases of compound fracture and gangrene, is utterly unknown; death is the speedy consequence of such accidents. No male physician is permitted to attend a pregnant woman, and still less to practise midwifery; in the indelicacy of which both sexes seem to agree in China. Books, indeed, are written on that art for the use of female practitioners, with drawings of the position of the infant at different periods of gestation: the whole accompanied with a number of superstitious observations†.

The public revenues of China proper are said to be about two hundred millions of ounces of silver, or about sixty-six millions of pounds sterling. No certain account could be procured of the Tartar revenues. Besides what the emperor derives from his demesnes there, the chiefs pay a tribute which increase according to their capability of affording it‡.

However imperfect in the science of astronomy the Chinese are, they have some idea of imaginary circles in the heavens; such as the ecliptic which they call the yellow road, the equinoctial,

drought, as well as excessive inundations, occasionally produce famine in particular provinces.

‡ In point of taxation, the Chinese are more favoured than many of the subjects of Europe; supposing silver to bear the same proportion to the consumable productions among the former, which it does among the latter; for if all the revenues were reduced to a capitation, it would not amount to more than five shillings a head on the population of the empire; but by an analogous computation, the people of Ireland would pay to government eight shillings a head; those of France under the monarchy, sixteen shillings a head; and each individual, in Britain, at least thirty four shillings.

and the meridian line. The number of planets known to them is five, which corresponds to that of the elementary, which they suppose to enter into the composition of all bodies; namely fire, water, earth, wood, and metal, over each of which a planet is supposed to preside. Few of the Chinese seem to have any idea of the earth's motion; but imagine that the sun actually moves through the fixed stars.

The viceroy promised the ambassador that government would not oppose the acquisition of the Chinese language by foreigners. He was, indeed, confirmed in his good disposition to protect the English, by the late dispatches from the emperor, in which his imperial majesty expressed how welcome the return of an English minister to his court would be to him. He requested that notice should be immediately conveyed to him of the minister's arrival at Canton, to which place he should dispatch proper persons to receive and conduct him to Peking. The viceroy added, from another of the emperor's letters, that, as he intended to resign his crown in the 57th year of the current cycle, answering to the year 1796 of the Christian era, he should be happy to see such minister by that time, or as soon afterwards as might be convenient.

The present ambassador, his suite, and attendants, continued at Canton to have all their expences defrayed by his imperial majesty. The same honours were paid to the ambassador on his leaving, as he had received on his arrival at Canton. The attention of the viceroy towards him was uniform throughout. His personal regard seemed to increase in proportion to his further acquaintance with his excellency, as well as the consequent inclination he avowed in favour of the English.

The ambassador was received and entertained with great politeness by the governor of Macao. This Portuguese settlement is situated at the southern extremity of an extensive island, separated only by rivers from the southern continent of China. But the settlers of Macao, enervated by the effects of a climate within the tropics, gradually fell from its former prosperity: they still, however, send cargoes to some of the neighbouring countries. Others lend their names, for a trifling consideration, to foreigners belonging to the Canton factories, who reside part of the year at Macao. These, with more capital, credit, and connections, are more successful; but they require to be nominally associated with Portuguese, to be allowed to trade from the port of Macao*.

Soon after his excellency's arrival at Macao, his subsequent destination was determined on by the receipt of letters from England. Several considerations induced him to continue no longer in China than he could avoid: he determined therefore to accompany home the fleet in the *Lion*, destined to attend him, that he might thus secure the protection of a line of battle ship for a considerable mass of property. This determination being made known in the different ports of Eastern Asia, two richly laden ships, one from Manilla, the other a Portuguese, put themselves under the convoy of the *Lion*.

When all the ships were ready, and assembled near Macao, the ambassador embarked, leaving none of the gentlemen behind who accompanied him to China. But Mr. Henry Baring, now a supercargo at Canton; and the Chinese interpreter who, in the name and dress of an Englishman, continued with his excellency till the moment of his embarkation,

SECTION XII.

Passage to Helena—Observations on the Island—Return Home.

THE *Lion*, with fifteen of the Company's ships, one Spanish, and one Portuguese

* Of the two Pagan temples at Macao, belonging to the Chinese, one is curiously situated among a confused heap of immense masses of granite. It consists of three distinct buildings, one above the other, and accessible only by a winding flight of steps cut out of the solid rock. The cave

Indiaman, sailed from the little island of Samcock, near Macao, on the 17th of March, 1794.

of Camoen is visible: tradition informs the world that Camoen, a Portuguese poet, wrote the celebrated poem of the *Luciad*. This interesting cave is now in the middle of a garden, belonging to a house where the ambassador, and two of his suite resided, at Macao.

In the Straits of Banca they fell in with three armed ships from Bengal, and near the straits a squadron of Malay pirates, consisting of a snow and ten proas. The former carried fourteen six pounders, and each of the latter from four to eight three pounders. These vessels were full of men, with pikes and side-arms; and the decks were strewn with a kind of grape shot. Though it clearly appeared they were fitted out for hostile purposes, Sir Erasmus Gower had too important a charge to be diverted from it, by any occasional occurrence: they were therefore permitted to proceed without molestation.

On the Java side of the Straits of Sunda the fleet completed its stock of wood and water. That being effected, the Jackall tender was dispatched with the armed India-men, to Calcutta; having on board some tea, tallow, and varnish plants to be conveyed to Bengal, under the care of Dr. Dinwiddie. The convoy put to sea again on the 19th of April, and experienced, after the first month, several gales of wind, particularly off the Cape of Good Hope.

On the 18th of June Sir Erasmus Gower was joined by all the ships under his convoy, and by his Majesty's ships the Samson and Argo, from Europe. They were all then in sight of St. Helena, the lofty sides of which bear so terrific an appearance, that probably there had anciently been a cluster of islands in its neighbourhood. The fleet, in doubling the island, kept within pistol-shot of its steep and rocky coast, in order to secure their anchorage in the road opposite to a valley, of which the pleasing scenes are justly said, by an ingenious traveller, "to be laid in the lap of horror."

St. Helena lies in the southern part of the Atlantic Ocean, distant many degrees of longitude and latitude from any continent or other island; and may be considered as the summit of a great mountain, whose roots are buried in the bottom of the sea. It was discovered more than two centuries ago by the Portuguese. The English took it from them, and the Dutch from the English. The last recovered it again, by surprise, from the Dutch; and it now belongs to the East-India Company, who have spared no expence to render it a convenient place of resort for ships in their homeward passage. The summit of the island is wooded; but is so cold that fruit will hardly ripen in it. Clear rills of

Vol. I. No. LIV.

water issue from the highest peaks, and pursue their course abruptly down towards the vallies, which they contribute to fertilize. Storms are seldom experienced in the immediate neighbourhood of this island. Thunder or lightning rarely display their awful and tremendous effects; hence it is concluded that little electric matter is scattered in its atmosphere.

The numbers of visitors in this island, including the crews and passengers of the ships lying there at anchor, are sometimes equal to the whole number of the settlement. The chief officers, passengers, and invalids reside generally on shore, during the stay of their respective ships. There are no inns; every house being open for the reception of strangers, who are considered, for the time they stay, as a part of the family. A moderate compensation is fixed for the host for furnishing his guests with the comforts and conveniences of life. Supplies of fresh water and fuel are also provided here for the remainder of the voyage. The long drought and scorching winds, which for three years had desolated the island of St. Jago, extended their baneful influence to Saint Helena at the same period; nor had the island at that time entirely recovered from the calamity. Upwards of three thousand horned cattle perished for want of food and water.

The valley, and some of the higher lands, however, had regained their pristine verdure; and the garden grounds were in excellent condition: a botanic plantation also contained trees and plants of different climates. An insect had destroyed many of the fruit trees, except the apple, which has ever since been successfully cultivated. The plantain and banana thrive well; but cotton, indigo, and canes were unsuccessful. The land was principally cultivated by black slaves, brought into the island by the first European settlers. These men were harshly treated by their owners, till the East India Company interposed, and caused them to be placed under the protection of government, and nearly put on a footing with the other free inhabitants, who, when accused of crimes, are entitled to a jury, as well as in civil cases. Previous to this regulation, one tenth of their number died annually. These regulations, at first, may have hurt the feelings of the owners of slaves, but not their real interests; for it clearly appears that

7 Y

before

before their introduction, there was generally a loss of about ten in a hundred slaves every year, to be supplied at a very heavy expence; but under the present system they naturally increase. All future importation of slaves into the island is prohibited.

The principal settlement of St Helena has the peculiar advantage of uniting the shelter of a leeward situation, with the coolness of, windward gales. The country is so fertile, and the climate so congenial to the human feelings, that it would perhaps be difficult to find out a spot where persons could have a better chance of protracting their days in ease, health, and comfort.

Nothing material occurred till the 21st of July, on which day a fleet of ships of eleven sail of the line, was discovered in the north-east; five of which appeared to be of considerable magnitude. These were observed to have formed a line of battle abreast, and were bearing down towards the convoy. The private signal not being answered, the strangers were concluded to be enemies: the weather coming on sudden thick, accompanied with rain, the two fleets, were concealed from each other for ten or fifteen minutes; after which it cleared up as hastily. The supposed enemies, were, however, discover-

ed to be a fleet of Indiamen from England, under convoy of the Assistance man of war, of fifty guns.

The homeward bound fleet continued its course with variable winds, making no very rapid progress. They passed near the Western Islands in the middle of August, when the Spanish and Portuguese ships parted, steering directly for their own coasts. On the 2nd of September the fleet saw the southern extremity of Ireland. In steering afterwards for the English channel, they had some difficulty in keeping sufficiently to the southward of the Scilly Islands. In passing the British Channel, in the night of the 5th, the wind blowing very strong, they fell in with the grand fleet, under the command of Earl Howe, standing down the channel. The weather was dark and tempestuous, in consequence of which several of the ships ran foul of each other, receiving and producing considerable damage. The *Lion*, however, anchored safely the following day in Portsmouth harbour, where the ambassador and other passengers disembarked; after an absence of nearly two years, in a voyage devoted to the service of his country, and in pursuit of an object which he sincerely wishes may be ultimately obtained.

Observations on the GENIUS, MANNERS, and CUSTOMS of the CHINESE, resulting from the Consultation of the best Authors, such as Du Halde, Ides, and Dionysius Kao; and occasionally the original Work from which our Abridgment has been taken: and being thus materially assisted, we have been able to present our Readers with the following authentic and interesting Communications.

THE Chinese are remarkable for paying the greatest deference and respect to old men. They are, in general, of a mild and humane disposition, but they are violent and vindictive when offended; frequently avenging themselves in slow but persevering and methodical gradations: many of them are so litigiously disposed, as to sell their property to enable them the more effectually to support a law-suit, and to heighten the distress or punishment of their adversaries. But though they indulge a vicious propensity in this particular, they love virtue, and honour those who practise it.

Interest is one of the greatest foibles of the Chinese; and the extreme love of life another. Those who have only a few pistoles in their possession will readily part with the whole to pur-

chase a good coffin twenty years, perhaps, before it may be wanted, and consider it as the most valuable article in their possession.

The Chinese are generally low in stature, and of brown complexions; though in the northern provinces, they are as fair as the Europeans. A perfect beauty among them, according to their idea of perfection, must have a large forehead; a short nose, small well-cut eyes, a large flat-face; a moderate-sized mouth, and black hair.

The Tartar sovereigns have obliged the men to shave their heads, leaving only a single lock in the middle of the crown. They have small beards, full whiskers, and some long hairs at the bottom of the chin: they wear a vest, with long sleeves; over which they sometimes wear a short

loose

loose coat
ing or r
gown, a
to the k
boots, a
scrupulo
monies a
may be r
trating, i
as by the
though si
consider t
in their t
Their
European
monies an
sixteen, a
seasts, tw
as a great
times ther
upon stoo
sit at one
cloth, but
of which I
with needl
or ebony a
their food
served up
but being
they sip t
substances
chopsticks
up to each
the enterta
comedy is
when the c
for the do
Their u

* Mr. Bo
whose travel
their intellige
200 years, to
emperors, to
sult, whose
and escape
arm. Renat
200 years in
rising that I
saying that I

hose coat; but, when they are dressed for paying or receiving visits, they have a long silk gown, and over that a kind of spencer extending to the knee. They always wear silk or stuff boots, and carry a fan in their hand. They are scrupulously exact in performing certain ceremonies and compliments; the whole of which may be reduced to bowing, kneeling, and prostrating, as prescribed by time and place, as well as by the age or quality of the persons. And though from the prejudice of education, we may consider their customs as *fantastic*, the Chinese, in their turn, may censure our's as *barbarous*.

Their feasts are particularly troublesome to Europeans, consisting almost wholly of ceremonies and compliments. They usually require sixteen, and those of the more solemn kind of feasts, twenty-four dishes upon each table, as well as a great number of other formalities. Sometimes there are as many tables as guests, who sit upon stools or chairs; but usually two, persons sit at one table, which is not covered with a cloth, but curiously japanned; from the floor of which hangs a piece of silk, richly decorated with needle-work. Two pointed sticks of ivory or ebony are the substitutes for a knife and fork: their food is cut into small square pieces, and served up in bowls. Their soups are excellent, but being unacquainted with the use of spoons, they sip the fluid part of it, and the grosser substances are conducted to the mouth by their chopsticks. After the first dish, wine is served up to each of the guests, but none is tasted till the entertainer has set them the example. A comedy is performed during the repast, and when the desert is brought in, money is collected for the domestics.

Their marriages, like their feasts, are cele-

* Mr. Bell, who resided for some time in China, whose travels are deservedly esteemed for the accuracy of their intelligence, assures us that this wall was built about 200 years ago, (that is about the year 1160,) by one of the emperors, to prevent the frequent incursions of the Mongols, whose numerous cavalry used to ravage the provinces, and escape before an army could be assembled to oppose them. Renaudot observes that no oriental geographer, above 600 years in antiquity, mentions this wall: and it is surprising that he should have escaped Marco Polo; who, supposing that he had entered China by a different route, can

brated for several days with much splendour and festivity. Husbands are permitted to have concubines, but they are subordinate to the wife. Their usual time of mourning is three years; but it is frequently reduced to twenty-seven months.

Criminals are punished, in China, commensurate to the enormity of the crime. Capital offences pass through five or six different tribunals, before a definitive sentence is pronounced. The women have apartments in prison separate from the men; and debtors are not compelled to associate with felons. For slight offences the culprit is bastinadoed; for others, he is doomed to wear a heavy collar about his neck. Certain enormities cause the offenders to be marked upon the neck with Chinese characters, denoting their crimes; others are condemned to temporary or perpetual banishment, or to drag the royal barks for one, two, or three years. Their capital punishments are *strangling*, *beheading*, and *cutting into ten thousand pieces*; the latter is intended for *assassination*. No person is put to death without the Emperor's express orders; and these executions take place on a certain day in the year throughout the whole empire.

The great wall of China was built some centuries before the birth of Christ, by the Chinese Emperor Chien-Chu, Voang (according to Du Halde by Tsin-Shi-Wang, who makes it two hundred and twenty-one years before the birth of Christ) to prevent the incursions of the Western Tartars. To raise men for building this wall, which is said to have been completed in five years, the emperor commanded that, three out of every ten men throughout his dominions, should work at it; and, by a subsequent order, two out of every five were compelled to labour at this vast undertaking*.

hardly be conceived, during his long residence in the north of China, and in the country of the Monguls, to have remained ignorant of so stupendous a work. Amidst these difficulties, perhaps it may be conjectured that similar modes of defence had been adopted in different ages; and that the ancient rude barrier having fallen into decay, was replaced, perhaps after the invasion of Zingis, by the present erection, which even from the state of its preservation can scarcely aspire to much antiquity. *Pinkerton's Modern Geography*, ii. 87.

END OF EARL MACARTNEY'S EMBASSY.

THE
VOYAGE OF GOVERNOR PHILIP
TO
BOTANY BAY.

With an Account of the Establishment of the Colonies of PORT JACKSON and NORFOLK ISLAND: Compiled from Authentic Papers, obtained from the several Departments.

To which are added the Journals of the Lieutenants SHORTLAND, WATTS, BALL, and Captain MARSHALL. With an Account of their New Discoveries.

ARTHUR PHILIP, like his distinguished naval predecessors, Drake, Dampier, and Cook, has raised himself by his meritorious services. His father, Jacob Philip, a native of Frankfort in Germany, settled in England as a teacher of languages, and by his learning and abilities became enabled to maintain his family, and educate a son. He married Elizabeth, the widow of Captain Herbert of the navy, by whom he had a son, named Arthur, the subject of these memoirs, born in the parish of Allhallows, London, on the 11th of October, 1738.

Being intended for naval or maritime services, he was sent to the school of Greenwich, where he received an education suitable to his early propensities. At the age of sixteen this youth began his career under Captain Everet of the navy, at the commencement of hostilities in 1755; and, while he acquired the rudiments of his profession under that able officer, he shared with him in the misfortunes and glories of the seven years war. At the capture of the Havannah, when he was in the twenty-third year of his age, he was appointed a Lieutenant of the Stirling Castle, by Sir George Pocock, a consummate judge of naval accomplishments.

But peace, with all its blessings, was restored in 1763, and Arthur found leisure to marry, and settle at Lyndhurst in the New Forest, where he

amused himself with farming, assiduously discharging those provincial duties, which necessarily fall to the lot of owners of land, as well as to other inhabitants. But sailors, like their own element, must frequently be in motion. Those occupations, which delighted him while they were new, had no longer any charms for him, when they became familiar. He therefore offered his skill and services to Portugal, when it engaged in warfare with Spain; and his offer was cheerfully accepted. But when the interference of France, in 1778, made it his duty to fight for his king, and to defend his country, the Portuguese court greatly regretted his departure, though they applauded his motive.

His return afforded pleasure to those, who knew his value, and were desirous of advancing his rank; for he was made master and commander in the Basilisk fireship on the 2d of September 1779. But in her he had little opportunity of displaying his zeal; or of acquiring additional fame. This step, however, placed him in a higher situation, and caused him to be appointed Post-captain in the Ariadne frigate on the 13th of November 1781, when he was upwards of forty-three. In the Ariadne he had not much time for active adventures, being appointed to the Europa of sixty-four guns on the 23d of December 1781. During the memorable year 1782, Philip promoted its enterprizes, and partook of its glories.

And i
inforce
bravery
the po
equal h
The

Great P
Th

A N
aut
and conc
remote
points of
mer mod
to the co
satisfacto
soil, clim
essential p
observers,
tica, will
perience:

* A view
Governor P
Captain A
Commander
and of his
coast.

Majo
Rich
Andr
David
John
Jame
Geor

John
Thom
Willi

H

Six

Alexander,
Barborough,
friendship,

Vol. I.

Ad

And in January, 1783, he sailed with a reinforcement to the East Indies, where superior bravery contended against superior force, but the policy of our negotiations terminated unequal hostilities by a necessary peace.

The activity and zeal of Phillip was now di-

rected to more peaceful objects. It having been determined to form a settlement in that part of New Holland, to be denominated New South Wales, he was selected as a proper officer to conduct such an enterprize, which at once required professional knowledge and habitual prudence*.

SECTION I.

Great Public Utility of Voyages—New Holland—Reasons for fixing a Settlement there—Origin of Transportation to America—Cessation—Experiments made—The present Plan adopted.

AN expedition from motives of legislative authority, commenced by public authority, and concluded by a fixed establishment in a very remote country, promises to lead us to some points of knowledge which could not by the former mode have been attained. A transient visit to the coast of a great continent, cannot produce satisfactory information respecting its inhabitants, soil, climate, and productions; but when these essential particulars are contemplated by resident observers, errors inseparable from hasty observation, will then be corrected from infallible experience: many objects will then present them-

selves to view, which before had escaped observation.

On a full discovery of the extent of New Holland, by our illustrious navigator, Captain Cook, a doubt has arisen whether, to a land of such magnitude, the name of island or continent may more properly be applied. But though the etymology of the word island, points out only a land surrounded by the sea, or by any water; yet, in the usual acceptation, an island is conceived to signify, a land of only moderate extent surrounded by the sea. A distinction formed on this circumstance is therefore sufficient, for con-

* A view of the fleet and establishment sent out with Governor Phillip to New South Wales.

Captain Arthur Phillip, of the Navy, Governor and Commander in Chief of the territory of New South Wales, and of his Majesty's ships and vessels employed on that coast.

Major Robert Ross, Lieutenant governor.

Richard Johnson, Captain.

Andrew Miller, Commissary.

David Collins, Judge Advocate.

John Long, Adjutant.

James Furzer, Quarter-Master.

George Alexander, Provost Martial.

This gentleman did not go.

John White, Surgeon.

Thomas Arndell, Assistant Ditto.

William Balmain, Ditto Ditto.

His Majesty's ship *SIRIUS*

Captain Arthur Phillip.

Captain John Hunter.

His Majesty's armed tender *SUPPLY*

Lieutenant H. L. Ball.

Six Transports carrying the CONVICTS.

Alexander, 210 men convicts. *Women Convicts.*

Scarborough, 210 Ditto

Friendship, 80 Ditto

24

Vol. I. No. LIV.

Charlotte, 100 Ditto 24

Prince of Wales, 100

Lady Penrhyn, 102

Each transport had a detachment of marines on board.

Three STORE SHIPS,

The *GOLDEN GROVE*, *FISHBURN*, and *BORROWDALE*; with provisions, implements of husbandry, cloathing, &c. for the convicts.

Lieutenant JOHN SHOTLAND, agent for the transports.

This gentleman did not go.

The garrison is formed from the Marines.

The Names of the Transports:

Ships. Officers Names.

Lady Penrhyn, Captain Campbell, Lieut. G. Johnson, Lieut. W. Collins.

Scarborough, Captain Shea, Lieut. Kellow, Lieut. Morrison.

Friendship, Capt. Lieut. Meredith, Lieut. Clarke, Lieut. Faddy.

Charlotte, Capt. Tench, Lieut. Creswell, Lieut. Poulden.

Alexander, Lieut. J. Johnston, Lieut. Shairp.

Prince of Wales, Lieut. Davy, Lieut. Timmins.

Total of the Detachment.

4 Captains, 12 Subalterns, 12 Serjeants, 12 Corporals,

8 Drummers and Fifers, 160 Privates.

N. B. 40 Women, wives to the Marines, were permitted to go out with the garrison.

7 Z

venience

venience at least, if not for speculative accuracy. If we suppose this extent to be about one thousand miles each way, the claim of New Holland to be called a Continent will be indisputable. The greatest extent of that country being, from East to West, two thousand four hundred English miles, and, from North to South, two thousand three hundred miles.

To New South Wales, England is allowed the claim of prior discovery. The whole of that eastern coast, except the southern point, having been untouched by any navigator, till it was explored by Captain Cook. This consideration, added to other favourable accounts given of this side of the continent, decided the choice of the British government, in appointing a place for the banishment of a certain class of criminals. And the cause of the determination to send out thus the convicts under sentence of transportation, was the cessation of their removal to America; and the inconveniences experienced by the other modes of destination adopted after that period.

Virginia, greatly in want, at its first settlement, of labourers to clear the forests, which impeded cultivation, was willing to receive those English criminals, whom our courts of law deemed not sufficiently guilty for capital punishment. The planters hired their services for limited terms; and they were latterly committed to the care of contractors, who were required to prove, by certificates, that they had disposed of them according to the intention of the law*.

The benefits of this regulation were, that the colonies received by it, at an easy rate, a very necessary assistance; and the mother country was relieved from the burthen of subjects, who at home were not only useless but pernicious to her. Though the individuals, in some instances, proved incorrigible, it sometimes happened, that during the period of their legal servitude, they became reconciled to a life of honest industry; and rising gradually by laudable efforts, to independence, honour and estimation, and proved valuable members of society.

By the contest in America, and the subsequent separation of the thirteen colonies, this traffic

* To define at what point of magnitude a country shall begin to be a continent, could not answer any purpose of utility: as long as the peculiar advantages of an insular situation can be enjoyed by the inhabitants of such a country

was annihilated. Other expedients have since been tried. The deliberations on the subject have more than once employed the attention of Parliament. On December 6, 1786, orders were issued by his Majesty in Council; and an Act establishing a court of judicature in the place of settlement, besides making other regulations, received the sanction of the legislature early in the year 1787.

The objects principally aimed at are the restrictions of the number of capital infictions, as far as the security of society will admit, and the employment of every method that can be devised for rendering the guilty persons serviceable to the public and themselves; to correct their moral depravity, induce habits of industry, and arm them in future against the temptations by which they have been once ensnared.

For effectuating these purposes well-regulated penitentiary houses were in contemplation: a plan was therefore accordingly formed by the united efforts of judge Blackstone, Mr. Eden, and Mr. Howard, which was adopted by Parliament in the year 1779. Difficulties however occurred which prevented the execution of this design.

In some countries, such malefactors as are not capitally convicted, are sentenced to the galleys or mines; punishments often more cruel than death, and here absolutely impracticable. In other places they labour in public works, under the care of overseers. This method has been partially tried in England on the Thames, but has not produced the benefits expected from it, and there seems to be little temptation to pursue it to a further extent.

It is therefore necessary to adhere as much as possible to the practice approved by long experience, of employing the services of such criminals in remote and rising settlements. For this purpose the establishment on the eastern coast of New Holland has been projected, and carried on with care and caution. That some difficulties will arise in the commencement of such an undertaking must be expected; but no moral obligation requires that convicts should be conveyed to a place of perfect convenience and security.

(which is that of being capable of a convenient union under one government) let it have the title of island; when it exceeds those limits, let it be considered as a continent.

SECTION II.

Preparation of the Fleet destined to Botany Bay—Particulars of its Arrangement—Departure—Passage to the Canary Isles—Reasons for touching there.

THE squadron destined to the execution of the above design, began to assemble at the Mother Bank, in the Isle Wight, about the 16th of March, 1787. This fleet consisted of the following ships; his Majesty's frigate *Sirius*, Captain John Hunter, and the armed tender *Supply*, commanded by Lieutenant H. L. Bail. Three store-ships, the *Golden Grove*, *Fishburn*, and *Borrowdale*, for carrying provisions and stores for two years, including instruments of husbandry, cloathing, &c. And lastly six transports, the *Scarborough* and *Lady Penrhyn*, from Portsmouth; the *Friendship*, and *Charlotte*, from Plymouth; the *Prince of Wales*, and the *Alexander*, from Woolwich. These were to convey the convicts, with a detachment of marines in each. Altogether they formed a little squadron of eleven sail*.

Two months had nearly elapsed before the ships were properly enabled to quit this station, and proceed upon their voyage; and even then some few articles were unprepared or neglected. Part of the cloathing for the female convicts, for example, being unfinished, was obliged to be left behind; and the ammunition of the marines was not completed at their first embarkation; an omission which, in the course of the voyage, was easily supplied.

The necessary interval was usefully employed in pointing out to the convicts the advantages they would derive from good conduct, and the certainty of severe punishment in case of turbulence or mutiny. But from the testimony of those who commanded it appears, that their behaviour, while the ships remained in port, was regular, humble, and suitable to their situation; such as could not excite alarm, or require the exertion of severity.

When the fleet was at length prepared for sailing, the convicts and marines on board the

transports were thus arranged. The *Friendship* carried a Captain and 44 marines, with 77 male, and 20 female convicts. The *Charlotte*, a Captain and 43 men, with 88 male and 20 female convicts. The *Alexander* had two Lieutenants, and 35 marines, with 213 male convicts. In the *Scarborough*, a Captain and thirty-three marines, with 208 male convicts. The *Prince of Wales* transport had two Lieutenants and thirty marines, with 50 female convicts. The *Lady Penrhyn*, a Captain, two Lieutenants, and 3 privates, with 102 female convicts. Ten marines were also sent as supernumeraries on board the *Sirius*. The whole complement of marines, including officers, amounted to 212. Twenty-eight women, wives of marines, carrying with them seventeen children, were also permitted to accompany their husbands. The number of convicts was 778, of whom 558 were men. Two, however, on board the *Alexander*, was pardoned before the departure of the fleet, and consequently remained in England.

Governor Philip, on his arrival at the station, hoisted his flag on board the *Sirius*, as Commodore of the squadron. At day-break on the 13th of May, he gave the signal to weigh anchor. His Majesty's frigate *Hyena* was ordered to attend the fleet, in order to bring intelligence of its passage through that most difficult part of the voyage. On the 20th of May the *Hyena* returned; but brought no exact account of the state of the transports; the sea at that time running so high that the Governor could not sit to write, nor could he send on board the several ships for exact reports of their situation, and of the behaviour of the convicts. All, however, had not been perfectly tranquil; the convicts in the *Scarborough* had formed a plan of getting possession of that ship, which the officers had happily detected and frustrated; and the Go-

transport themselves, and the scarcity of servants in his Majesty's plantations. Subsequent statutes enacted further regulations.

The Abbé Raynel mentions the policy of this species of banishment, in the 14th book of his History.

* Banishment was first enacted as a punishment for rogues and vagrants, by 39 *Edw. c. 4*. But no place was specified. The practice of transporting criminals to America commenced in the reign of James I. The transport traffic was first regulated by 4 *G. I. c. 11*, and the causes expressed in the preamble are, the failure of those who undertook to

vernor had ordered two of the ring-leaders on board the *Sirius* for punishment. These men, after receiving proper chastisement, were removed into the *Prince of Wales*; and no other attempt of the kind was made during the voyage.

The high sea which had impeded the intercourse between the ships, as they were out of the reach of rocks and shoals, was not an unfavourable circumstance. On the whole the weather might be reckoned fine, and the passage very prosperous from Spithead to Santa Cruz, in the Isle of Teneriffe, where the fleet anchored on the 3d of June.

The chief object proposed by the Governor in touching at Teneriffe, was the obtaining a fresh supply of water and vegetables. In this, and every other port, the crews, soldiers, and convicts, were supplied with fresh meat, fruit, and vegetables. The allowance was, to the marines, a pound of bread, a pound of beef, and a pint of wine per man daily: the convicts had three quarters of a pound of beef, and of bread, but no wine. Figs and mulberries were plentiful and excellent. Precautions respecting health were successfully employed throughout the voyage, as the reports of the number of sick and dead will sufficiently evince.

If the number of convicts, who died between the time of embarkation, and the arrival of the fleet at this place, should not perfectly agree with this assertion, it must be considered that the deaths were confined entirely to that class of people, many of whom were old, or labouring under diseases contracted in prison, or elsewhere.

The Governor of the Canaries, at this time, was the Marquis de Brancifort, a Sicilian by birth. He was resident at Santa Cruz, and paid

* The ancients made these islands the region of fable, and their poets decorated them with imaginary charms, the moderns cannot wholly be exempted from similar imputation. Travellers speak of the peak of Teneriffe as the highest mountain in the ancient world, though, by the best accounts, Mont Blanc exceeds it by 3523 feet, of perpendicular altitude. The Isle of Ferro was celebrated, for a century or two, on the credit of a miraculous tree, enveloped in perpetual mists, and distilling sufficient water for the ample supply of the island: but this wonder, though vouched by several voyagers, vanished at the approach of sober enquiry; nor could a single native be found hardy enough to assert its existence.

† Report of the *Marines and Convicts under medical treatment*, given in to Governor Phillip, June 4th, 1787.

particular and polite attention to Governor Phillip, and the other officers. The port of Santa Cruz, though not excellent, is the best in the Canaries, and the usual place for vessels to touch at for refreshment.

To enter into much detail respecting the Canary Islands, which lie in the course of every ship that sails from Europe to the Cape, would be superfluous; but perhaps a few general notices concerning them may not be unacceptable. They are in number about fourteen; of which the most considerable are *Canary*, *Teneriffe*, *Fortaventure*, *Palma*, *Ferro*, *Gomera*, *Lancero*. Their distance from the coast of Africa is from forty to eighty leagues. The circumference of Teneriffe does not exceed one hundred and twenty miles, but that of Canary, or as it is generally called, the Great Canary, is one hundred and fifty. They have been possessed by Spain from the beginning of the 15th century*.

The capital of Teneriffe is *Laguna*, or *St. Christopher of the Lake*; so called from its being situated near a lake. Both this and Santa Cruz are built of stone, but the latter is the most pleasing: they are about four miles distant from each other. The capital of the Great Canary is the *city of Palms*, but that place has, for a considerable time, been the centre of ecclesiastical government only.

The ships were preparing to depart, when on the evening of the 9th of June, a convict found means to escape from the *Alexander*, by cutting away the boat: but he was missed and speedily retaken. By the 10th of June the ships had completed their water, and early the next morning, the Governor giving a signal for weighing anchor, the fleet pursued its course†.

<i>Charlotte</i>	-	Marines	4
		Convicts	16
<i>Alexander</i>	-	Marines	2
		Convicts	26
<i>Scarborough</i>	-	Marine	1
		Convicts	9
<i>Friendship</i>	-	Convicts	13
<i>Lady Penrhyn</i>	-	Convicts	11
<i>Prince of Wales</i>	-	Marines	2
		Convicts	7
Total			{
			Marines 9
			Convicts 72

Convicts dead since the first embarkation - - 21

Children of Convicts - - - 3

Of these only fifteen, and one child, had died since the departure from Spithead.

SECT.

SECTION III.

Attempt to put in at Port Praya—Weather—Sail for Rio de Janeiro—Reasons for touching at a South American Port—Pass the Line—Arrive at Rio de Janeiro—Transactions there—Departure—Passage from Rio to the Cape.

AS a sufficient supply of vegetables could not be procured at Santa Cruz, Governor Phillip intended to anchor for about twenty-four hours in the bay of Port Praya. The islands on this side of the Atlantic offer to vessels, without any material variation from their course, admirable stations for supply and refreshment. The Azores; the Madeiras; the Canaries; and the Islands of Cape Verd, successively present themselves to the voyager, affording abundantly every species of accommodation. On the southern side of the equator, a good harbour and plenty of turtles give importance even to the little barren island of Ascension; and St. Helena, by the industry of English settlers, presents elegance and plenty. Without these sources of assistance, the interval of almost forty degrees on each side of the line, in a sea much exposed to heat and calms, would even discourage the navigators of the eighteenth century.

The fleet came in sight of the Cape Verd Islands on the 18th of June, and was directed to steer for Saint Jago; but as it seemed probable, from several circumstances, that all the ships would not be able to get into the bay, the Governor changed his plan. The signal for anchoring was therefore hauled down, and the ships were directed to continue their course; to the great disappointment of many individuals on board, who were eager to enjoy the refreshments of the shore.

In the passage from the Cape Verd Islands, the fleet suffered much inconvenience from heat and heavy rains; but the precautions unremittingly observed in all the ships, prevented any violent sickness; nor did the oppressive heat continue so long as might have been expected in these latitudes; for before they reached the

equator, the temperature had become much more moderate.

On the 5th of July, 1787, the Botany Bay fleet passed from the northern into the southern hemisphere. Three weeks more of favourable weather conveyed them to Rio de Janeiro; and on the 6th of August they anchored in the harbour. *Rio de Janeiro*, or *January River*, so called from having been discovered by Dias de Solis on the feast of Saint Januarius in 1525, is not in fact a river, though it was then supposed to be so: it is an arm of the sea, into which several small rivers descend.

The city of Rio de Janeiro, called also St. Sebastian, is situated on the west side of this bay. It is now the capital of all Brazil, and the residence of the Viceroy. The port is one of the finest in the world, very narrow at the entrance, and capacious enough to contain a great number of ships. It has soundings from twenty to one hundred and twenty fathoms. A hill shaped like a sugar-loaf, on the west side, marks the bearings for entering the harbour: the situation of which is fully pointed out by some small islands. The mouth of the harbour is defended by two forts, named *Santa Cruz* and *Losia*. The usual anchorage in it is before the city, north of a small island named *Dos Cobras**.

Don Lewis de Varconcellos, the Viceroy, is one of the first families in Portugal, and brother to the Marquis of *Castello Melhor*. Governor Phillip, who was some years a captain in the Portuguese navy, is much honoured by that nation. As soon as Don Lewis was informed of the nature of Governor Phillip's commission, he ordered the garrison to pay the same honours to that officer as to himself; a distinction which the Governor modestly wished to decline, but

Captain Cook's arrival at this place in 1768; but the reception given by the present Viceroy to Governor Phillip and his officers was extremely different; it was polite and flattering to a very great degree.

* Established fees are paid here by all merchant ships, whether Portuguese or strangers: three pounds twelve shillings each on entering the bay, and the same on going out; with five shillings and six-pence a-day while they remain at anchor. Great appearances of suspicion were shewn on

to Governor
The port of
is the best in
for vessels to

ecting the Ca-
course of every
e Cape, would
a few general
e unacceptable.
een; of which
ry, *Teneriffe*,
omera, *Lance-*
ast of Africa is
e circumference
ne hundred and
y, or as it is ge-
y, is one hun-
posed by
15th century*.

Laguna, or *St.*
called from its
h this and *Santa*
the latter is the
our miles distant
al of the Great
at that place has,
the centre of ec-

depart, when on
a convict found
ander, by cutting
sed and speedily
ne the ships had
y the next morn-
ginal for weighing
urse†.

Marines 4
Convicts 16
Marines 2
Convicts 26
Marine 1
Convicts 9
Convicts 13
Convicts 11
Marines 2
Convicts 7
{ Marines 9
 Convicts 72
kation - - 21
d, had died since the

was not permitted. His officers were all introduced to the Viceroy, and received every possible mark of attention to them, and regard for their country*.

The root of a shrub called *Cassada*, or *Cassava satropha*, in its crude state is highly poisonous; but by washing, pressure, and evaporation, it is deprived of all its noxious qualities, and being formed into cakes, becomes a salubrious substitute for bread; and is, indeed, the bread of thousands in tropical climates†.

On the 4th of September, the Governor having furnished his ships with necessaries, weighed anchor, and, as he passed the fort, he was saluted by twenty-one guns. The salute was returned by an equal number from the Sirius; and thus ended an intercourse honourable to both nations.

The passage of the Botany Bay fleet from Rio de Janeiro to the Cape of Good Hope, was marked by no extraordinary accidents. They left Rio on the 4th of September, and on the 13th of October the ships came to anchor in Table Bay. Here they were to take their final refreshment, and lay in every kind of stock with which they were not already provided. Table Bay, on the north-west side of the Cape of Good Hope, has its name from the Table Mountain, a promontory of great elevation, at the foot of which stands Cape Town, the principal Dutch settlement in this territory. This bay is not entitled to the name of a port, from its not being a station of security: it is exposed to all the winds which set into it from the sea; and is not properly secured from those which blow from the land. The gusts from the summit of Table Mountain are sufficiently violent to force ships from their anchors, and greatly to annoy persons on shore, by destroying tents, and other temporary edifices. The storms from the sea are still more formidable; ships have frequently been

* Provisions were so cheap here, that though the allowance of men was fixed by Governor Phillip at twenty ounces a-day, the men were victualled completely at three-pence three farthings a-head, including rice, vegetables, and firing.

† The great abundance of images dispersed throughout the city, and the devotion paid to them, is astonishing, particularly to protestants. Being placed at the corner of almost every street, they are never passed without a respectful salutation; but at night they are continually surrounded by their respective votaries, who loudly vociferate their prayers, hymns, and divine songs: but the strictness

driven by them from their anchorage, and wrecked at the head of the bay. But these accidents happen chiefly in the winter months, from May 14 to August 14, when few ships venture to anchor here.

The Cape of Good Hope, though popularly called the most southern point of Africa, is not so in fact. The land projecting furthest to the south is a point to the east of it, called by the English Cape Lagullus; a name corrupted from the original Portuguese *das Agulhas*, which is descriptive of its form, and might properly be translated *Needle Cape*. Table Mountain is so named from its appearance, terminating in a flat horizontal surface, from which the face of the rock descends almost perpendicularly. This mountain rises to 3567 feet above the level of the sea. Devil's Head is situated to the east of the former, and is about 3368 feet in height‡.

But though the country in the neighbourhood of the Cape could not be rendered so pleasing as that of Rio de Janeiro, yet the governor, Myndheer Van Graffe, was as attentive to the English officers as the viceroy of Brazil. They were elegantly entertained at his table, and had every reason to be perfectly satisfied with his behaviour and disposition. In about a month, the live stock and other provisions were procured; and the ships, containing about five hundred animals of different kinds, but principally poultry, excited the idea of Noah's ark.

On the 12th of November the fleet set sail, but was considerably delayed by strong winds from the south-east. On the 25th Governor Phillip left the Sirius to go on board the Supply tender; in hopes, by leaving the convoy, to gain time for examining the environs of Botany Bay, to enable him to fix on an eligible situation for the colony, before the transports should arrive. Major Ross, the commandant of the marines, now quitted the Sirius, and went on

of manners in the inhabitants did not appear to be equivalent to the warmth of this devotion.

‡ Provisions were dearer and less plentiful in Cape Town than our voyagers had been taught to expect. Board and lodging stood the officers in two six-dollars, or nine shillings sterling a-day. This place is of no great extent, though the only spot in the whole colony that deserves the appellation of a town; and the country, colonized here by the Dutch, is so unfavourable to cultivation, that it seems astonishing how they could raise provisions from it sufficient to supply themselves, and the ships of so many nations which resort to the Cape.

board

board t
of the
handed f
to follow
the trans
instructi
this time
were ex
ever said

Interview
Second
Orders
Ships—

AS so
shon
place wit
but on se
cations of
returned
weapons.
they seem
heads and
their head
the enjoy

An ex
ceeded th
though it
shelter fro
too shallo
as they m
trance of
posed to
it blows h
of fresh
of the ba
which the
In the n
which run
but it has
branch o
great exte
of fresh
Point Sut
tion, hav
in very g
the harb

board the Scarborough, to accompany that part of the detachment which probably would be landed first. Captain Hunter, in the Sirius, was to follow with the store-ships, and the rest of the transports; and he had received the necessary instructions for his future proceedings. From this time to the 3d of January, 1788, the winds were extremely favourable. The Supply however sailed very indifferently, and suffered so

much in the voyage that she was hardly thought a safe conveyance, yet she performed in forty-one days a voyage of seven thousand miles. On the day above-mentioned she was within sight of the coast of New South Wales. But the winds then became variable, and a current sometimes setting strongly to the southward, so much impeded her course, that she did not arrive at Botany Bay till the 18th.

SECTION IV.

Interview with the Natives—Examination of the Bay—Arrival of the whole Fleet—Port Jackson—Second Interview with the Natives—Third Interview—Governor Phillip returns to Botany Bay—Orders given for the Evacuation of it—Removal from Botany Bay—Arrival of Two French Ships—Description of Port Jackson.

AS soon as Governor Phillip landed on the shore of Botany Bay, an interview took place with the natives. They were all armed, but on seeing the Governor approach with indications of friendship, alone and defenseless, they returned his confidence by laying down their weapons. Though totally devoid of cloathing, they seemed very fond of ornaments, fixing the beads and red baize that were given them on their heads or necks, seeming perfectly happy in the enjoyment of such embellishments.

An examination of the bay very naturally succeeded this interview, when it appeared that, though it was extensive, it did not afford a shelter from the easterly winds; and that it was too shallow for ships even of a moderate draught, as they must be obliged to anchor with the entrance of the bay open, where they must be exposed to a heavy sea, which rolls in whenever it blows hard from the eastward. Several runs of fresh water were observed in different parts of the bay; but no situation presented itself to which there was not some very strong objection. In the northern part a small creek appeared, which runs a considerable way into the country, but it has water only for a boat. In the western branch of the bay, which is continued to a great extent, the officers could not find a supply of fresh water, except in very small drains. Point Sutherland offered the most eligible situation, having a run of good water, though not in very great abundance; besides, to this part of the harbour the ships could not approach.

Smaller numbers might, in several spots, have found a comfortable residence, but no place could be found calculated for the reception of so large a settlement. The Supply had not been so expeditious as to give Governor Phillip the advantage he had expected in point of time. On the 19th of January, the Alexander, Scarborough, and Friendship, cast anchor in Botany Bay, and on the 20th, the Sirius, with the remainder of the convoy.

Not approving of the openness of the bay, and the dampness of the soil, the Governor had already determined to seek another situation. He resolved to examine Port Jackson, a bay mentioned by Captain Cook to the north of this. There he hoped to find a better harbour, and a more commodious place for the establishment of his new government. That no time might be lost, the ground near Point Sutherland was ordered to be cleared, and preparations to be made for landing, under the direction of the Lieutenant Governor.

Governor Phillip then prepared to proceed to the examination of Port Jackson. He went round with three boats, taking with him Captain Hunter, and some other officers, that the greater dispatch might be made. Early in the afternoon of the 22d of January, they arrived at Port Jackson, which is distant about three leagues. Here Governor Phillip had the inexpressible satisfaction to find one of the finest harbours in the world, in which a thousand sail of the line might ride in the most perfect security.

The

The different coves of this harbour were expeditiously examined, and the preference was given to that which had the finest spring of water, and in which ships can anchor so close to the shore, that quays might be easily constructed, at which the largest vessels may unload. This cove, which is about half a mile in length, and a quarter of a mile across at the entrance, the Governor distinguished by the name of *Sydney Cove*, in honour of Lord Sydney.

On the arrival of the boats at Port Jackson, a second collection of the natives appeared about the place of landing. These were also armed with lances, and at first were extremely vociferous; but recourse being had to the gentle means which had successfully been employed before, they were easily pacified, and thankfully accepted whatever was offered to them. One person, in particular, who seemed to be the chief of his tribe, not only gave marks of confidence in his new friends, but also proofs of determined resolution. Conducted by Governor Phillip, to whose guidance he voluntarily intrusted herself, he went to the spot on the beach, where the men belonging to the boats were then boiling their food: when he approached the marines, who were drawn up near that place, and perceived that by such a step he should be separated from his companions, he resolutely stopped, and with great firmness, seemed by gestures to denounce revenge if any unfair advantage should be taken of his situation. He then calmly examined what was boiling in the pot, and by his expressions of admiration, evidently shewed that he intended to profit by what he saw*.

Preparations for a general removal were now expeditiously made, but on the 24th of January much astonishment was spread throughout the fleet by the appearance of two ships under French colours. In this remote region visitors from

* In passing near a point of land in this harbour, the boats were observed by many of the natives, twenty of whom waded unarmed into the water, received what was offered them, and minutely examined the boat. Their manly behaviour induced Governor Phillip, who was highly pleased with it, to give the place the name of *Manly Cove*. The same people afterwards joined the party where they had landed to dine. Two of them were then armed with shields and swords, and the rest with lances only. The swords were made of wood, small in the gripe, and less formidable than a moderate sized stick.

That Botany Bay should have appeared in a more advan-

Europe were very little expected, and their arrival occasioned a multiplicity of conjectures, many of which were exceedingly ridiculous. Governor Phillip, however, recollected that two ships had been sent out some time before from France, for the purpose of discovery, and rationally concluded these to be the same. But more important matters demanding his attention, he did not think proper to delay his departure, for the sake of making further enquiry.

On the 25th of January, seven days after the arrival of the Supply, Governor Phillip left Botany Bay in the same ship, and sailed to Port Jackson. The rest of the fleet, under convoy of the *Sirius*, was ordered to follow, when the abatement of the wind should facilitate its working out of the bay. The Supply was hardly out of sight, when the French ships again appeared off the mouth of the harbour, and a boat was sent to them offering them any information or assistance they might require. It was now discovered that these were, as the Governor had supposed, the *Boussole* and the *Astrolabe*, on a voyage of discovery, under the direction of Monsieur la Pérouse.

On the 26th the transports and store ships, accompanied by the *Sirius*, evacuated Botany Bay, and speedily they were all assembled in Sydney Cove, the place now destined for their port, and for the reception of the new settlement. The debarkation was now made at Sydney Cove, and the work of clearing the ground for the encampment, as well as for other buildings, was begun. But the labour attending this operation was greater than can possibly be conceived. The coast, and the neighbouring country is covered with wood; and though in this spot the trees were less incumbered with underwood than in many other places, their magnitude was such as to render the felling and removal of them a task of no small difficulty. By the habitual indo-

lence of the natives, it was not possible to employ them in that expedition. The objects were different: the one required only shelter and refreshment for a small vessel, and for a short time only: the other had a great many to provide for, and was under the necessity of finding a place wherein ships of very considerable burthen might easily approach the shore, and lie at all times in the most perfect security. The appearance of this place is picturesque and pleasing, and the harvest it affords of botanical acquisitions, made it extremely interesting to the philosophical gentlemen engaged in that expedition.

ed, and their ar-
y of conjectures,
ingly ridiculous,
collected that two
ime before from
discovery, and ra-
the same. But
ding his attention,
lay his departure,
enquiry.

even days after the
ernor Philip left
land sailed to Port
et, under convoy
follow, when the
facilitate its work-
ply was hardly out
ps again appeared
r, and a boat was
ny information or

It was now dis-
he Governor had
he *Astrolabe*, on a
r the direction of

and store ships, ac-
uated Botany Bay.
sembled in Sydney
for their port, and
v settlement. The

Sydney Cove, and
nd for the encamp-
ldings, was begun.
this operation was
e conceived. The

country is covered
this spot the trees
underwood than in
gnitude was such as
oval of them a task
the habitual indolence

an to Governor Phillip,
jects were different: the
ument for a small vessel,
her had a great many to
essity of finding a place
burthen might easily ap-
mes in the most perfect
place is picturesque and
of botanical acquisition,
philosophical gentlemen

lence of the convicts, and the want of proper
persons to encourage them to do their duty, their
labour was rendered less efficient than it might
have been*.

February was ushered in by a violent storm of
thunder and rain. The lightning struck and
shivered a tree, under which a shed had been
erected for some sheep, and five of those animals
were unfortunately destroyed by it. The en-
campment still went on with alacrity, so that
early in this month, public storehouses were
projected and undertaken. Unremitting dili-
gence began to triumph over the obstacles which
circumstances had presented.

Port Jackson was not visited by Captain Cook;
he only saw it at the distance of about a league
from the coast. Governor Phillip, however,
pronounces it to be a harbour, with respect to
extent and security, superior to any he has ever
seen. Other experienced navigators, who at-
tended him, are of the same opinion. From an
entrance not exceeding two miles across, Port
Jackson gradually extends into a very capacious
basin; having ample soundings for the largest
vessels, and space sufficient to accommodate in
security any number that could be assembled.
It runs principally in a western direction about
thirteen miles into the country, and contains
about a hundred small coves, affording admi-
rable shelter from all winds.

The soil about Port Jackson is of various
qualities. The neck of land which divides the
south end of the harbour from the sea, is chiefly
sand. Between Sydney Cove and Botany Bay,
the first space is occupied by a wood, beyond

which a kind of heath presents itself, poor, sandy,
and full of swamps. As far as the eye can reach
to the westward, the country is one continued
wood.

The 7th of February, 1788, was the memo-
rable day on which a regular form of govern-
ment was established on the coast of New South
Wales. All possible solemnity was given to the
necessary proceedings on this occasion. On a
space, previously cleared for the purpose, the
whole colony was assembled: the military ap-
peared under arms; the convicts stationed apart.
Those who held the principal offices under the
Governor, were placed near his person. The
royal commission was then read aloud by Mr.
D. Collins, the Judge Advocate. By this in-
strument Arthur Phillip was constituted Captain
General, and Governor in chief in and over the
territory of all New South Wales; extending from
the northern Cape, called Cape York, in the
latitude of ten degrees, thirty-seven minutes
south, to the southern extremity of the said ter-
ritory of New South Wales, &c. and of all
towns, garrisons, castles, forts, or other for-
tifications, which may hereafter be erected on
the said territory.

The act of parliament, establishing the courts
of judicature was next read; and then the pa-
tents under the great seal, authorizing the pro-
per persons to hold these courts upon proper
occasions. Major Ross of the Marines, was ap-
pointed Lieutenant Governor; and a triple dis-
charge of musquetry concluded this part of the
ceremony†.

This address, which was received with uni-
versal

* On the 26th of January the colours were displayed on
shore, and the Governor, with his principal officers, as-
sembled round the flag-staff, drank the king's health, and
success to the settlement, with all that display of form which
on such occasions is thought propitious, as it enlivens the
spirits, and impregnates the imagination with pleasing pre-
sages. From this time to the 7th of February, all was
hurry and exertion. The receivers, as well as the givers of
orders, were fully occupied; nor can a busier scene be
imagined than this part of the coast exhibited during the
continuance of these first efforts towards establishment.
The plan of the encampment was quickly formed, and places
selected for different purposes, so as to introduce the
strictest order and regularity. The frame of a work to
construct a temporary habitation for the Governor, had
been taken from England ready formed: these materials
were methodically and expeditiously put together. Hospital
tents were also erected, for which there was shortly too

much occasion. In the passage from the Cape little sick-
ness had been experienced, and but few deaths had happen-
ed among the convicts: but soon after landing, a fatal
dysentery prevailed; and the scurvy began to rage with
such violence as to furnish a constant supply of patients
for the hospital tents. For those afflicted with this disorder,
fresh provisions could rarely be procured; and esculent ve-
getables could not be obtained in sufficient plenty to produce
any material alleviation of the complaint. But, with re-
gard to the dysentery, the red gum of the tree which
abounds on this coast, was found a very powerful remedy.
The yellow gum possesses the same property, but in an in-
ferior degree.

† After this, Governor Phillip advanced, and addressing
himself to the private soldiers, thanked them sincerely for
their general good conduct. He then explained to the con-
victs the nature of their present situation; charging the
greater part of them to recollect, that they had already for-

versal acclamation, terminated the ceremonial peculiar to the day. The assembly was now dispersed, and the Governor reviewed the troops on the ground cleared for a parade: after which he entertained his officers with a dinner, and the first evening of his government was concluded in good order, and innocent festivity, amidst reiterated wishes for its prosperity.

Governor Phillip seems to have every requisite to ensure the success of the undertaking entrusted to him, as far as the perfections of one man can ensure it. Intelligent, active, firm, and persevering, with complacency and mildness to render those qualifications pleasing, it seemed reasonable to suppose that he might bring the native inhabitants of New South Wales into a voluntary subjection, or at least establish with them a strict amity and alliance. But notwithstanding the rectitude of his intentions, a friendly intercourse could not speedily be established. M. De la Pérouse, while he remained in Botany Bay, had a dispute with the inhabitants, which obliged him to use his fire-arms against them: this unfortunate affair, joined to the ill behaviour of some of the convicts, who officiously wandered out among them, produced a shyness on their parts which could not be removed, though every proper measure was pursued to regain their confidence. Some of the straggling convicts have been killed in the woods, and others dangerously wounded by the natives; but it is reasonably supposed that the convicts have usually been the aggressors.

As the month of February advanced, heavy rains began to fall, which urged the necessity of procuring speedy shelter: but only sixteen carpenters could be hired from all the ships. No more than twelve of this profession were found among the convicts, and several of them were sick. These therefore formed but a small party, in proportion to the work required. One hundred convicts were also added as labourers; but with every effort, the barracks for the men,

costed their lives to the justice of their country; but that the lenity of its laws had again put it into their power, by industry and rectitude, to regain the advantages and estimation in society of which they had once deprived themselves. They were now particularly encouraged to make that effort, and they were fortunately almost removed from every temptation to guilt. There was little opportunity for plunder in so small a society, and certain detection must almost instantly follow every flagitious attempt. To persons detected

or the huts for the officers, could not be erected so expeditiously as they were wanted. So late as the middle of May those essential matters were unfinished, as well as the hospital, and the storehouse for those provisions which were not landed at first. The Governor himself was still lodged in his temporary house of canvas, which was not perfectly impervious either to wind or weather.

On the 14th of February a party was dispatched in the Supply, to settle on a small island to the north-west of New Zealand, discovered and much commended by Captain Cook, and by him named *Norfolk Island*. To the office of superintendent and commandant of this island, Governor Phillip appointed Philip Gidley King, second lieutenant of the *Sirius*, an officer of great merit, who might fully be depended on. As *Norfolk Island* was then without inhabitants, only a small detachment was sent with Lieutenant King, consisting of one subaltern officer, six marines, a midshipman, a surgeon, two flax-dressers, with nine men and women convicts. The substance of the instructions, delivered to Mr. King at his departure is here subjoined.

Instructions for PHILIP GIDLEY KING, Superintendent and Commandant of NORFOLK ISLAND.

You are appointed to superintend and command the settlement to be formed in *Norfolk Island*, and to obey such orders as you shall receive from me, his Majesty's Governor in Chief, and Captain-General of New South Wales, or from the Lieutenant Governor in my absence.

You are to proceed in his Majesty's armed tender the *Supply*, whose commander has my orders to receive you, with the men, women, stores, &c. forming the intended settlement, and, on your landing at *Norfolk Island*, you are to take upon you the trust reposed in you.

After pursuing the necessary measures for securing yourself and people, and for the pre-

in future in such atrocities, he could not promise any mercy. What mercy could do for them they had already experienced. Against future offenders, therefore, the rigour of the law would certainly be put in force; who those whose behaviour should indicate a resolution to reform, might depend upon encouragement fully adequate to their deserts. After many other judicious observations, he concluded by declaring his earnest desire to promote the happiness of all who were under his government.

id not be erected wanted. So late essential matters hospital, and the as which were not himself was still of canvas, which either to wind or

arty was dispatch- in a small island to nd, discovered and Cook, and by him the office of super- of this island, Go- philip Gidley King, an officer of great depended on. As out inhabitants, only th Lieutenant King, ficer, six marines, a flax-dressers, with The substance of o Mr. King at his

LEY KING, Superin- NORFOLK ISLAND.

perintend and com- formed in Norfolk orders as you shall Majesty's Governor in al of New South ant Governor in my

his Majesty's armed commander has my th the men, women, nded settlement, and, k Island, you are to osed in you.

ecessary measures for le, and for the pre-

could not promise any or them they had already offenders, therefore, thly be put in force; who cate a resolution to reform at fully adequate to theous observations, be re- desire to promote the ap- government.

servatio

ervation of the stores, you are immediately to proceed to the cultivation of the flax plant, which you will find growing spontaneously on the island. You are also required to attend to the cultivation of cotton, corn, and other plants, with the seeds of which you are furnished, and which you are to consider as public stock, and of the increase of which you are to send me an account. It is left to your discretion to use such part of the corn that is raised as may be found necessary; but this is to be done with the greatest oeconomy; and, as the corn, flax, cotton, and other grains are the property of the crown, you are to keep an exact account of the increase, and you will in future receive directions for the disposal thereof.

You are to learn the nature of the soil, what quantity of land is fit for the cultivation of corn, flax, and cotton; what quantity of cattle may be bred upon the island, and the number of people you judge necessary for the above purpose. To observe also what are the prevailing winds in the different seasons of the year, the best anchorage for the season; the rise and fall of the tides; and when the dry and rainy seasons begin and end.

You are to be furnished with a four-oared boat, and are not on any consideration to build, or permit to be built any vessel or boat whatever that is not decked, whose length of keel exceeds twenty feet: and if any vessel or boat that exceeds twenty feet should be driven on the

land, you are to cause it to be scuttled, or otherwise rendered unserviceable, letting her remain in that situation till you receive further directions from me.

You will be furnished with six months provisions, within which time you will receive an additional supply: but as you can procure fresh fish and vegetables, you are to make the provision you receive serve as long as possible.

The convicts being the servants of the crown, till the time for which they are sentenced is expired, their labour is to be for the public; and you are required to take particular notice of their behaviour, that they may hereafter be treated according to their different merits.

You are to cause the prayers of the church of England to be read with due solemnity every Sunday, and to enforce a due observance of religion and good order, transmitting to me, as often as opportunity offers, a full account of your situation and transactions.

You are not to permit any intercourse or trade with any ships or vessels that may stop at the island, whether English, or of any other nation, unless they should be in distress, in which case you are to assist them as much as may be in your power.

Given under my hand, at Head-Quarters, in Port Jackson, New South Wales, this 12th day of February, 1778.

ARTHUR PHILLIP.

SECTION V.

Hold a Criminal Court—Broken Bay explored—Interview with the Natives—Peculiarities remarked—Friendly Behaviour and Extraordinary Courage of an old Man.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP discovered, with considerable regret, that in the community committed to his care, the strict enforcement of the sanctions of the law was necessary. There were in it many individuals whom lenity could not touch, nor rigour terrify; who seemed to have lost all sense of social duty, and with it to have lost all value for life itself. Towards the latter end of February, a criminal court was convened, in which six of the convicts received sentence of death. One, who appeared to be the head of the gang, was executed the same

day: one of the rest was pardoned, and the other four reprieved. Those last mentioned were exiled to a small island within the bay, and fed only on bread and water. They had frequently robbed the other convicts, as well as taken the stores. The criminal who suffered, and two others, were detected stealing from the stores on the very day that they had received a week's provisions: at the time when their allowance was the same as that of the soldiers, spirituous liquors excepted. So great was their propensity to dishonesty, that even the want of a motive could not repress them.

On

On the 2d of March Governor Phillip went with a long boat and cutter to examine the broken land, noticed by Captain Cook, eight miles to the northward of Port Jackson, which he named *Broken Bay*. The Governor and his attendants found the bay very extensive; but they slept in the boats in the north-west part of the bay, as the natives were numerous, though they appeared to be friendly. The next day, after passing a bar which had water only for small vessels, they entered an extensive branch, whence the ebb tide came out so strong that the boats could not oppose it. Most of the land in the upper part of this branch was full of swamps, and visited by great numbers of pelicans, and various other birds. Among others an uncommon kind called then the *Hooded Gull*; but it appears, from a drawing sent to England, to be of that species called the *Caspian Tern*, and is described by Mr. Latham as the second variety of that species.

Leaving this branch they proceeded across the bay, and went to the south-west branch, which is also very extensive, from which runs a second opening to the westward, affording shelter for a number of ships. Continual rains prevented their taking a further survey. The land, which was much higher than at Port Jackson, was more rocky, and equally covered with timber. Large trees were seen even on the summits of the mountains, and appeared accessible only to birds. Round the head-land, forming the southern entrance into the bay, there is a third branch, which Governor Phillip declared to be the finest piece of water he had ever seen, and therefore he honoured it with the name of *Pitt Water*. Either this, or the south-west branch is capable of containing the whole navy of Great Britain. But on a narrow bar running across the entrance, it has only eighteen feet depth at low water. There are from seven to fifteen fathoms within the bar.

In the course of this excursion some interviews

* Whatever may be the cause of this mutilation, it appears to have been performed on females only. Considering the imperfection of their instruments, such an operation must be attended with intolerable pain, as they have nothing calculated for performing such an amputation, but a shell fixed to a short stick, and used generally for pointing their spears, or for separating the oysters from the rocks.

The men are differently distinguished: their fingers are not mutilated, but most of them have lost the right front tooth of the upper jaw. Governor Phillip having remarked

with the natives took place. When the party first landed at Broken Bay, several women accompanied the men to the beach: one of whom was remarkably talkative and cheerful, which was thought extraordinary, as the women are less lively and volatile than the men. This vivacious young lady, when she joined the party the second day in their canoe, stood up and entertained them with a pleasing song. The men readily assisted in making the English a fire, and seemed much inclined to render any friendly services in their power. In a bay where the Governor and his company landed to draw the seine, a number of the natives again approached them; when it was first observed by the Governor, that the women in general had lost two joints from the little finger of the left hand. As these appeared to be married women, it was at first conjectured, that this privation was a part of the marriage ceremony; but going afterwards into a hut in which were several women and children, he saw a girl of about six years of age whose left hand was thus mutilated. Several instances were afterwards observed of women with child, and of others that were wives, who had not lost those joints, and of children from whom they had been cut*.

The women, however, were not particularly forward in producing the mutilated finger, nor could it always be ascertained whether they had lost the joints or not. For though they did not attempt to secrete, nor seemed impressed with the idea that one part of the body more requires concealment than another, yet there was a shyness and timidity among them which often kept them at a distance. They never approached so readily as the men, and frequently would not land from their canoes, signifying, by signs, that what was offered them should be given to the men. Whether this reserve proceeds from the fears of the women, or from the jealousy of their husbands, seems a difficult point to determine†.

this, he informed them that he had himself lost one of his front teeth, which occasioned a general clamour: and it was supposed he derived some merit in their opinion from this circumstance.

† In Patterson's travels in Africa, we are informed that he met with a tribe of Hottentots near Orange River, all of whom had lost the first joint of the little finger: the reason they gave for cutting it off was, that it was a cure for a particular sickness, to which they were subject when young. *Fourth Journey, p. 117.*

When

When the party
al women ac-
one of whom
teerful, which
he women are
n. This vivan-
ned the party
od up and en-
ing. The men
lish a fire, and
r any friendly
bay where the
ed to draw the
ain approached
y the Governor,
lost two joints
and. As these
it was at first
as a part of the
afterwards into a
n and children,
rs of age whose
Several instances
omen with child,
who had not lost
n whom they had

not particularly
lated finger, nor
whether they did
ugh they did not
l impressed with
ody more requires
ere was a shyness
h often kept them
roached so readily
uld not land from
ns, that what was
o the men. When
m the fears of the
of their husbands,
nine†.

himself lost one of his
al clamour: and it was
their opinion from this

ave are informed that he
Orange River, all of
ittle finger: the reason
at it was a cure for a
re subject when young.

When

When the southern branch of Broken Bay was first visited, an attempt was made to land, where there was not sufficient water for the boat. An old man and a youth were then standing on the rocks where the boat was trying to approach. Having observed how much our adventurers had laboured to get under land, they were solicitous to point out the deepest water, and seemed desirous of rendering any service in their power. Two of the officers permitted themselves to be conducted by the old man to a cave at some distance, but declined his pressing invitations to go in: this was unfortunate, as the rain at that time fell in torrents, and the cave was found next day sufficiently capacious to have sheltered the whole party. The old man took infinite pains to make this understood, but to no purpose, and his visitors suffered for their suspicions. He afterwards assisted in clearing away the bushes, and making preparations for the party to sleep on shore; and next morning he was amply rewarded for his civility and attention. Two days afterwards, when Governor Phillip returned to the same spot, the old man saluted him with a dance and a song of joy, attended by his son, and several of the natives. A hatchet and some other presents were given them; and the Governor flattered himself that a durable friendship would have been the consequence. As soon as it was dark, however, the old man stole a spade, and was detected with it in his hand. Governor Phillip saw the necessity, on this occasion, to shew his abhorrence of such acts, and when the culprit approached, he gave him two or three slightest slaps upon the shoulder, and then pushed him away; at the same time significantly pointing to the spade. This gentle chastisement at once terminated their friendship. The old man instantly seized a spear, and advancing towards the Governor, poised it, with a determined resolution to strike. But perceiving that his threats were disregarded, or perhaps dissuaded by some of the other natives, he dropped the spear and departed. From this circumstance, and other similar events, it appears that the inhabitants of New South Wales are not deficient

* While M. de la Pérouse remained at Botany Bay, Father Le Recœur, who had come out in the *Astrolabe* as a naturalist, died in consequence of some wounds he had received in a encounter at the Navigators' Islands. A monument was erected to his memory, which was soon after de-

stroyed by the natives; but Governor Phillip caused the inscription which had been on it to be engraved on copper, and affixed to a neighbouring tree. M. de la Pérouse had paid a similar tribute of respect to the memory of Captain Clerke, at the harbour of St. Peter and Paul in Kamtschatka.

in point of personal bravery. The old man returned the following morning with many other of the natives, but, to convince him of his error, he was less noticed than his companions, who were gratified with hatchets and many other articles.

On the 9th of March Governor Phillip returned to Port Jackson, having obtained some useful knowledge of the country, and maintained a social intercourse with the natives. The rain, which was abundant, rendered it impossible for the governor to return by land as he had intended; which would have given him an opportunity of exploring a part of the country that appeared to be good, and free from timber.

On the 10th of March the French ships sailed from Botany Bay. M. de la Pérouse, during his stay there, had set up two long boats, the frames of which he had brought from Europe. Very little intercourse had taken place between the French and English in this interval. A few of the convicts absconded and endeavoured to get admitted into the French ships, but they were very properly rejected. Those vessels returned to the north, where they were to make another voyage*.

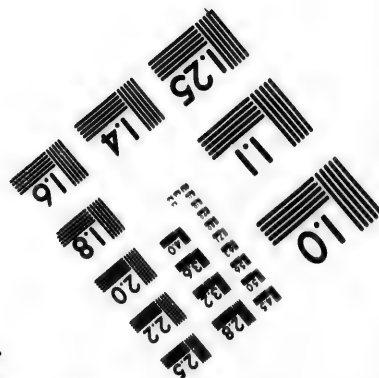
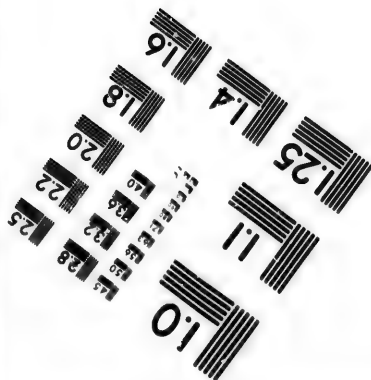
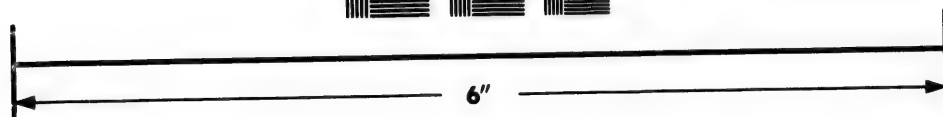
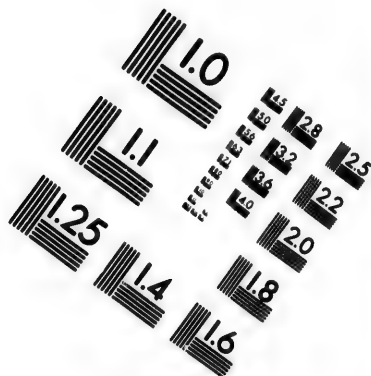
On the 19th of March Lieutenant Ball arrived in the *Supply* from Norfolk Island. He had made that island on the 29th of February, but was five days off the coast before he found it possible to land his stores and provisions. The commandant wrote in high spirits at the promising appearance of this new territory, and subsequent accounts have proved that his opinion was not erroneous. He mentioned Norfolk Island as an entire wood, or as a garden, over-run with the noblest pines in straightness, size, and magnitude.

From the different accounts which have been received of Norfolk Island carefully united, it is about seven leagues in circumference, and, if not originally formed by the eruption of volcanic matter from the bed of the sea, must doubtless have contained a volcano; which clearly appears from the quantity of pumice stone distributed in every part of it, and mixed with the soil. This

SC

island





Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

25
22
20
18

10
01

island is extremely well watered, and near the middle of it, is a small mountain, which the commandant has named Mount Pitt, near which rises a strong and copious stream. This flows through a delightful valley, and afterwards divides itself into several branches, each of which retains sufficient force to turn a mill. Several excellent springs have also been discovered in several parts of the island*.

When the European settlers landed, there was not an acre clear of wood in the island, and the trees were bound together by a creeping shrub, called Supple Jack, so intimately interwoven in all directions, that there was no penetrating far among them. The commandant, even with his small numbers, soon caused a space to be cleared sufficient for the requisite accommodations, and for the production of esculent vegetables. According to the declarations of Mr. King himself, in his letters to Governor Phillip, "There was not a doubt that this colony would be in a situation to support itself entirely, without assistance, in less than four years."

Fish are taken in great plenty; and fine turtle in the proper season. The woods are inhabited by innumerable tribes of birds, many of which are very gay in plumage. Pigeons are numerous, and a white bird not unlike the Guinea fowl, except in colour: both of these were at first so tame as to suffer themselves to be taken by hand. Vegetables for the table are chiefly the cabbage palm, the wild plantain, the fern-tree, a kind of wild spinach, and a tree bearing a diminutive fruit somewhat resembling the currant†.

A small island, entirely uninhabited, was disco-

* The climate is pure, delightful, and salubrious, preserved from oppressive heats by continual breezes from the sea, and of so mild a temperature during the winter that vegetation has no interruption, one crop regularly succeeding another. A series of refreshing showers maintain perpetual verdure; but not of grass, for none has yet been seen upon the island; but of trees, shrubs, and other vegetables which grow abundantly in every part. On the leaves of these, and particularly of some kinds, the sheep, hogs, and goats not only live, but thrive and fatten exceedingly. To the salubrity of the air every individual in this little colony can bear the most ample testimony, from the uninterrupted good health they have generally enjoyed in it.

† But the productions which give the greatest importance to the island, are the pines and the flax plant; the former rising to a great size and perfection, and promising a valuable supply of mast and spars for the navy; the latter is

vered by Lieutenant Ball in his passage to Norfolk Island. He examined it, in his return, and found the shore abounded with turtle; but there was no good anchorage. He named it *Lord Howe Island*. It is in $31^{\circ} 36'$ south latitude, and 159° east longitude.

To expedite the cultivation of Norfolk Island, a further detachment was sent thither in October; consisting of an officer, and eight marines, with thirty convicts, viz. ten women, and twenty men. Thus, there existed on this islet 44 men, and 16 women, who, having eighteen months' provisions, passed the time comfortably on this sequestered spot, under the management of a young ruler, of whose busy life the following are some of the particulars:

Phillip Gidley King, who conducted the original settlers to Norfolk Island, was born at Launceston in Cornwall, on the 23d of April 1758. He is the son of Phillip King, of that town, draper, who married the daughter of John Gidley, of Exeter, Attorney-at-Law. He was much indebted for his scholastic learning to Mr. Bailey at Yarmouth. At the early age of twelve, he went to the East Indies on board the *Swallow* sloop, Captain Shirley, by whom he was rated a midshipman. At the end of five years he returned to England, with much knowledge of his business, and some knowledge of the world. In 1775, he entered upon real service, and has continued in active employment from that period to this great epoch of his life. He went to Virginia, in the *Liverpool*, during the year 1775, with Captain Bellow, with whom he continued till that frigate was wrecked in Delaware Bay.

equally estimable for the purposes of making sail-cloth and cordage. The pines measure from one hundred and sixty, to one hundred and eighty feet in height, and are sometimes nine or ten feet in diameter at the bottom of the trunk. They rise to about eighty feet without a branch, and the wood is said to be of the best quality. The fern tree measures from seventy to eighty feet, and affords excellent food for sheep, and other small cattle: a plant, supposed to be the true oriental pepper, has been lately discovered in the island growing in great plenty.

Rats are the only quadrupeds, which have been seen in the island; and from these and the ants, much mischief was apprehended; but no great inconvenience has yet been experienced from them: further proper exertions, it is presumed, will reduce the number of such enemies. On the whole, Norfolk Island may justly be considered as an acquisition of importance, and will probably answer the most sanguine expectations which have been formed from it.

In

In Octo
cess R
Renown
vember
subsequ
board t
the beg
he went

Three q

THE
roug
their sto
service o
to procee
should th
tained till

The m
two expe
pose of e
these he s
four day
small par
a small co
of the ha
rection ti
they exam
as it was
bog and t
a black sv
parts of t
It is larg
beautiful
observed
tinged wi

With a
and marsh
Quitting
ceeded by
the hills
riety of c
ascending
impractic
miles from

In October 1778, he entered on board the *Princess Royal*, and was made a lieutenant in the *Renown*, by Admiral Byron on the 26th of November following. He returned to England the subsequent year; and served in the Channel on board the *Kite* cutter, and *Ariadne* frigate, till the beginning of 1783. With Captain Phillip he went to the East Indies, as Lieutenant of the

Europe, in January, 1783; from whence he returned on the restoration of peace in May 1784. In this service Philip and King became acquainted with the merit of each other; and when the expedition of New South Wales was projected, King was appointed Lieutenant of the *Sirius*, on the 25th of October 1786, when Phillip was nominated commander of the voyage.

SECTION VI.

Three of the Transports discharged—Two Excursions into the Country—Huts of the Natives—Their Notions of Sculpture.

THE *Charlotte*, *Lady Penrhyn*, and *Scarborough* transports, having been cleared of all their stores, were discharged from government service on the 25th of March, and left at liberty to proceed to China, whenever their commanders should think proper. The other ships were detained till the store-houses could be finished.

The month of April was only distinguished by two expeditions of Governor Phillip for the purpose of exploring the country. On the first of these he set out on the 15th with provisions for four days, attended by some officers, and a small party of marines. Landing at the head of a small cove, called *Shell Cove*, near the entrance of the harbour, they proceeded in the same direction till they arrived at a large lake, which they examined, but not without much difficulty, as it was surrounded by a considerable extent of bog and marshy ground. Here they first beheld a black swan, a species proverbially rare in other parts of the world, though not uncommon here. It is larger than the common swan, and equally beautiful in form. When it rose, its wings were observed to be edged with white, and its bill was tinged with red.

With some difficulty they passed the swamps and marshes near the harbour in about three days. Quitting these low grounds, they found them succeeded by a rocky and barren country. Though the hills were covered with flowering shrubs, variety of obstacles rendered the ascending and descending extremely difficult, and in many parts impracticable. At the distance of about fifteen miles from the coast, Governor Phillip obtained

an excellent view of the inland country, and to several of the mountains he gave new appellation. The most northern of them he named *Carmarthen Hills*; the most southern *Lansdown Hills*; and one which he observed between these, was denominated *Richmond Hill*.

On the 22d of April another excursion was undertaken. The governor landed with his party near the head of the harbour, where they found a good country, but shortly arrived at a very close cover, which they endeavoured to pass through, but found themselves obliged to relinquish the attempt, and return. The next day, by keeping close to the banks of a creek for three or four miles, they were enabled to pass the cover, and for three successive days continued their course to the westward. The country through which they travelled was fine, pleasing, and picturesque; and the soil, in general, was excellent. The trees grew at the distance of twenty to forty feet from each other, and almost wholly free from underwood. Ascending a small eminence on the 5th day they saw *Carmarthen* and *Lansdown Hills*, for the first time in this second expedition. The country round this hill appeared so beautiful, that Governor Phillip named it *Belle-vue*. They were now apparently about thirty miles from the mountains which they had proposed to reach, and not having taken more than six days' provisions with them, they were obliged to return. Water for the consumption of the day was always taken with them, as they could not depend upon the mere casual supply of that essential article. The extent of this excursion

cursion in a direct line, had been about thirty miles, and had taken up five days; but the return of the party was effected with much more ease, the track having been made, and the trees marked where they had passed. Thus circumstanced, they reached their boats in about a day and a half.

It was still the general opinion, from the appearance of the country, that a large river would be descried in that district, by pursuing the line they had entered upon: another expedition was therefore planned, and a resolution formed to reach, if possible, either Lansdown or Carmarthen Hills; and the expectation of so important a discovery made every one anxious to go, regardless of the fatigue with which such undertakings were unavoidably attended.

But the design was for the present deferred, as Governor Phillip had added to a former indisposition a severe pain in his side, by sleeping frequently on the wet ground. It was therefore thought absolutely necessary to allow himself the respite of a few weeks, before he ventured to encounter any new fatigue*.

The huts seen here consisted of single pieces of bark, about eleven feet in length, and from four to six in breadth, bent so as to form an acute angle, resembling cards when set up by children. These imperfect structures are supposed to be principally intended to conceal them from the animals, for which they are obliged to lie in wait: they may also afford shelter from the rain, for one or two persons. The bark of many trees was observed to be cut in notches, as if to facilitate the climbing of the natives. In several of them

* The country explored in the last journey was found so extremely fit for the purposes of cultivation, that the governor resolved upon sending a detachment to settle there, as soon as a sufficient number could be spared from works of more immediate necessity; but as the natives know not how to avail themselves of its fertility; the most considerable part of their food is procured by fishing; but in the inland country, where recourse cannot be had to such means, it seems hardly possible that they should be able to procure any kind of animal food, as their spears appear to be the only missile weapons among them. These parts are, however, frequented by the natives, which was sufficiently proved by the temporary huts which were observed in several places. Near one of these huts the bones of a kangaroo were found, and some trees were seen on fire. A piece of root, like that of the fern-tree, was picked up by Governor Phillip, which appeared to have been so recently chewed that it could not have been left there many minutes. From this, and

holes appeared, apparently the retreat of some animal, but enlarged by the people in order to catch the inhabitant. The animals that take refuge in these places are the squirrel, the opossum, or the kangu-rat: at the bottom of one of these trees, the skin of a flying squirrel was picked up.

Several fires appeared to have been lately made; but the shells of oysters or muscles, were seen in only one of them, and did not then exceed half a dozen. No fish bones were perceived; whence it may be intimated that these people do not take with them any provisions of that kind. Kangaroos were frequently seen, but they were so extremely shy, that it was very difficult to shoot them. It is remarkable that the kangaroo, though it resembles the jerboa in the peculiarity of using only the hinder legs in progression, does not belong to that genus†.

In all the country hitherto explored, the parties have seldom proceeded a quarter of a mile without seeing trees which had been on fire. Violent thunder being very common on this coast, it seems probable that they have been burnt by lightning, which the gum tree is said particularly to attract: but it is equally probable that they have been set on fire by the natives. The gum-tree is supposed to be highly combustible, and it is the practice among these people to kindle their fires at the root of one of these trees. When they quit any place, they never extinguish the fire they have made, but permit it to burn out, or communicate its flames to that or any other tree, as accidental circumstances may determine.

other evident marks, it appeared certain that the natives had only fled at the approach of the European party; but so effectually did they conceal themselves that not one of them was perceived.

† The Natives of New South Wales, though they make no attempt towards clothing themselves, suffer considerably at times, from the cold and wet. In the neighbourhood of Botany Bay and Port Jackson, the natives are not without notions of sculpture: the figures of animals, of shields, and weapons, and even of men, have been seen carved upon the rocks. Though these figures are far from being perfect, they are sufficiently so to ascertain the object intended. Fish were frequently represented; and the form of a large lizard was sketched out in one place with tolerable accuracy. On the top of one of the hills, the figure of a man in the attitude of dancing, was executed in style, and displayed great genius.

Governor

Governor
cursion, w
and a lamb
ed they ha
the middle
bound to C
May: and
sailed to L
tle, hoping
scurvy, wit
so much at
them were
ness.

The great
ground, wo
grain into
than eight
ley;* and e
pected to su
and mice.

On the 5
turned from
bringing an
weather, she
best bower a
mage. Abso
searching for
able way from
ously wound
who had go
been carried
having been
shirt and
pierced with
intelligence
man. The
the aggress
declared he
tion. On t
been sent to
tance from
whom had f

* Exclusive
vornor and oth
stock.

† When the
they instantly
and joined the
women and ch
whom were at
the little artic
thing was disc

VOL. I.

Governor Phillip, on his return from this excursion, was informed that he had lost five ewes and a lamb. To heighten the distress, it appeared they had been killed near the camp, and in the middle of the day. The three transports bound to China, sailed the 5th, 6th, and 8th of May: and the Supply, having been caulked, sailed to Lord Howe Island on the 6th, for turtle, hoping it would afford some check to the scurvy, with which the people continued to be so much affected, that about two hundred of them were incapable of performing their business.

The great labour attending the clearing of the ground, would not leave time for getting much grain into it. They had not yet sown more than eight or ten acres with wheat and barley;* and even this inconsiderable stock was expected to suffer from the depredations of the ants and mice.

On the 25th of May the Supply tender returned from Lord Howe Island, but without bringing any turtle. Having met with squally weather, she had been obliged to cut away her best bower anchor, but had suffered no other damage. About this time one of the convicts, in searching for vegetables, had wandered a considerable way from the camp, and returned very dangerously wounded. He reported that another man, who had gone out for the same purpose, had been carried off by the natives in his sight, after having been severely wounded in the head. A shirt and hat were afterwards found, both pierced with spears, in one of the huts; but no intelligence could be procured respecting the man. The convicts were suspected to have been the aggressors, though the man who returned declared he had not given any kind of provocation. On the 30th of May, two men who had been sent to collect rushes for thatch at some distance from the camp, were found dead, one of whom had four spears in his body. As the rush-

cutters' tools had been taken away, the Governor supposed it might be possible to discover the natives who had been active in this affray: and to make them understand that the conduct of the assailants had been wholly unwarranted, and very highly disapproved.

The next morning, therefore, the Governor went out with a small party, consisting of twelve persons, and landed at the spot where the men were killed. They traversed the country for upwards of twenty miles, and then arrived at the north shore of Botany Bay, without having met with any one of the natives. Here they saw about twenty canoes engaged in fishing. And when the fires were made, and the party prepared to pass the night upon the beach, some of those in the canoes were fully expected to have joined them. But not one among them made his appearance. The next morning, though about fifty canoes were drawn up on the beach, not a person could be found belonging to any of them.

Governor Phillip had now resolved to return to Port Jackson, but as he was proceeding for some time near the coast, he saw a great number of natives, assembled at the mouth of the cove. The party was within ten yards of them before they were perceived; and the Governor could hardly make his people halt before a great many of them appeared in arms. A man who seemed to be the leader, as he advanced, gave signs for the Europeans to retire; but when he saw Governor Phillip approach, alone, unarmed, and making friendly overtures, he threw his spear away, and met him with perfect confidence. In a few minutes the European party were surrounded by two hundred and twelve men, but nothing occurred to shew that the natives were accustomed to act with treachery, or that they intended to take any cruel advantage from their great superiority in numbers*.

The finest stream of water was seen here, that

degreed tended to prove, that any of them had been concerned in the affray of the rush-cutters. The Governor parted with them on the most friendly terms, being more convinced than ever of the necessity of treating them with becoming confidence. Had he gone with the whole of his party, or had even hesitated before he made the signals of friendship, a lance would probably have been thrown, after which a rencounter could not have been prevented, which in such circumstances must have terminated fatally.

* Exclusive of what was sown by the Lieutenant Governor and other individuals, for the support of their own stock.

† When the offer of friendship was accepted on their side, they instantly laid down their spears and stone hatchets, and joined the party with great cordiality. Many of their women and children continued at a small distance, some of whom were afterwards brought down by the men, to receive the little articles which were offered them as presents. Nothing was discovered among these people that in the least

had hitherto been discovered in the country, but the cove in which it runs lies very open to the sea. When the natives perceived that the English were proceeding towards the next cove, an old man made signs that he might be permitted to go first. He did so, and when he had ascended the hill, he called out, holding up both his hands (their usual signal of amity) to inform the natives in the next cove, that the people who were advancing were friends. The Governor's party, however, did not descend to that cove; but as he saw about forty men, and did not suppose they had assembled on any particular occasion, it was evident that they were more numerous in that part than had been imagined. Governor Phillip had calculated before, from what he had seen, that all the inhabitants, in Botany Bay, Broken Bay, and the intermediate country, could not exceed fifteen hundred. In crossing the country between Botany Bay and Port Jackson, smoke was observed at the top of Landsdown Hills, which clearly proves that the territory is inhabited as far as those mountains; a distance that cannot be less than fifty miles from the sea*.

On the 22d of June a slight shock of an earthquake was perceived, which continued only two or three seconds. It was felt by most of the people in the camp, and by the Governor himself, who at the same time heard a noise from the southward, resembling the report of guns fired at a considerable distance.

On the 24th a convict who had absconded on the 5th, having committed a robbery, returned into the camp almost starved. He had supposed he could subsist in the woods, but found it impossible. One of the natives after having given him a fish, made signs for him to go away. He afterwards declared that he joined a party of the

natives, who would have burnt him, but he found means to make his escape. He even pretended to have seen the remains of a human body actually lying on a fire: but such a report, from such authority, was entitled to little credit. He said that the natives were at this time, in the greatest distress for food, and that he had seen four of them dying in the woods; making significant signs for something to eat, as if they were perishing through hunger. When this man was tried for his offence, he pleaded guilty, and suffered with another criminal.

By degrees the settlement of Sydney Cove was now advancing towards maturity. Large spaces were opened, plans formed, lines marked, and a prospect, at least, of future regularity was clearly discerned, and appeared the more striking by the recollection of the former confusion. By the plan given in the original work, lines are traced out which distinguish the principal street of an intended town, to be terminated by the governor's house, the main guard, and the criminal court. The principal streets, according to the design in this plan, will be two hundred feet wide. It is also proposed by Governor Phillip, that when houses are to be built here, the grants of land shall be made with such clauses, as will prevent the building of more than one house on one allotment, which is to consist of sixty feet in front, and 150 feet in depth. These regulations will preserve uniformity in the buildings, prevent narrow streets, and many inconveniences. It has also been an object of the Governor's attention to place the public buildings, in eligible situations, and to give the store-houses and hospital sufficient space for future enlargement.

The first huts that were erected here, were composed of very perishable materials, the soft

* From further enquiries it was reasonably conjectured that one of the natives had been murdered, and several wounded, before the attack made upon the rush-cutters; Governor Phillip therefore, on his return, proclaimed the reward of emancipation to any convict who should discover the aggressors. If this step did not procure any information, it possibly might prevent such acts of violence in future.

About this time, the two bulls and four cows, belonging to government, and to the Governor, from the neglect of the person appointed to attend them, strayed into the woods, and never could be recovered—a loss which was much to be regretted.

The fourth of June demanded due celebration! It was a day of remission from labour, and of general festivity

throughout the settlement. At sun-rise the Sirius and Supply fired each a salute of twenty-one guns: at one o'clock the salutes were repeated, when the marines on shore fired three volleys. The same honours was again repeated from the ships at sun-set. Large bonfires were held blazing, and the whole camp exhibited a scene of joy. That the happiness of the day might be general in the settlement, the two convicts who had been banished to an island in the harbour, received a full pardon, and took their part in the general exultation of the day. The governor's house was the centre of conviviality to all who could be admitted: nor was any thing neglected, which in such a situation could mark a day of celebrity, consistent with propriety and good order.

wood of the
to afford i
was used w
likely to pr
victs were e
upright pos
up with cl
wards form
ings of stor
there was n
far. In bu
nor, on the
was made o
thus suppli
Excellent
Cove, and
The hosp
cove, on a
the town: a
will probab
between the
be obtained
tends to er
with proper
for the chur
fice being p
cipal parad
tion that m
fire; as in a
of thunder
sations to h
lodged in
combustible
spot, formi
observatory
of Lieuten
the Lieuten
corner of t
will be carr
of the bui
are now ma
a fir; but
the English
in the next

* Metals o
soil on which
merly worke
declared, tha
a large quant
under some r
ing of a cella
that several

but he
even pre-
an body
ort, from
Hesaid
the great-
in four of
significant
were pec-
man was
and suf-

Cove was
ge spaces
ed, and a
arity was
ore strik-
confusion.
lines are
ipal street
by the go-
the criminal
ing to the
ndred feet
or Phillip,
the grants
ses, as will
e house on
ixty feet in
regulations
dings, pre-
veniences.
ernor's at-
in eligible
s and hos-
ement.
here, were
ls, the soft

no Sirius and
guus: at one
e marines on
was again re-
sures were be-
scene of joy,
eral in the set-
anished to an
and took their
he governor's
o could be ad-
in such a si-
tent with pro-

wood

wood of the cabbage palm; being only intended to afford immediate shelter; and as this wood was used when it was quite green, it was the less likely to prove durable. The huts of the convicts were slighter still, being composed of only upright posts, wattled with twigs, and plastered up with clay. Barracks and huts were afterwards formed of more durable materials. Buildings of stone might easily have been raised, but there was no means of procuring lime for mortar. In building a small house for the Governor, on the eastern side of the cove, the lime was made of oyster shells, but it could not be thus supplied for many buildings.

Excellent clay for bricks is found near Sydney Cove, and good bricks have been made from it.

The hospital is situated on the west side of the cove, on a very salutary spot, entirely clear of the town; and is so substantially erected that it will probably be lasting. On the high ground, between the hospital and the town, if water can be obtained by sinking wells, the Governor intends to erect the barracks, surrounding them with proper works. The ground marked out for the church lies still nearer the town, that edifice being proposed to form one side of the principal parade. A store-house was in contemplation that might be secure from the danger of fire; as in a country exposed to frequent storms of thunder and lightning, it excited uneasy sensations to have all the provisions and necessities lodged in wooden buildings, covered with a combustible kind of thatch. On an elevated spot, forming the west side of the cove, a small observatory has been raised, under the direction of Lieutenant Dawes. A small house built by the Lieutenant-Governor for himself, forms the corner of the parade; and the principal street will be carried on at right angles with the front of the buildings. Instead of thatch, shingles are now much used, made from a tree resembling a fir; but producing wood not much inferior to the English oak. The principal farm is situated in the next cove to the east of the town.

* Metals of various kinds are supposed to abound in the soil on which the town is placed. A convict, who had formerly worked in the Staffordshire lead mines, confidently declared, that the ground they were now clearing, contained a large quantity of that ore; and copper is supposed to lie under some rocks, which were blown up to facilitate the sinking of a cellar. The Governor himself entertained an idea that several metals were contained in the earth near the

Sydney Cove lies open to the north-east, and is continued in a south-west direction for about a thousand yards, gradually decreasing from the breadth of fourteen hundred feet till it terminates in a point, where it receives a small stream of fresh water. The anchorage extends about two thousand feet up the cove, and has soundings of four fathoms near the shore, and from five to seven near the middle of the channel. It is perfectly secure in all winds; and for a considerable distance, on both sides, ships can lie almost close to the shore; nor are there rocks or shallows, in any part of it, to render the navigation dangerous. Such a situation could not fail to be desirable to a discerning man, who wished to establish a settlement, which must for some time depend for support on the importation of the principal necessities of life*.

The climate at Sydney Cove is supposed to be equal to the finest in Europe. The rains are never of long continuance; fogs are seldom seen. The soil, though light and sandy in this part, is as good as can usually be found so near the seacoast. All the plants and fruit-trees, brought from Brazil and the Cape, which received no damage in the passage, thrive exceedingly; and vegetables are now become plentiful; not only of the European sort, but of such as are peculiar to this country. The orange trees flourish, and the vines and fig-trees are in high perfection. Should not other articles of commerce direct the attention of the settlers to other points, the wines of New South Wales may perhaps be hereafter sought with avidity, and become a part of the luxury of European tables.

The flax-plant, which was seen by our Europeans at their first arrival, has not been found since in any great abundance; a very ample supply of this article may, however, be obtained from Norfolk Island. It is supposed that the natives pull up the plant when it is in flower, to be used in their fishing lines.

On the whole, notwithstanding the difficulties and disadvantages at first experienced, and the

spot, and that mines might hereafter be worked to great advantage.

In places, where they were digging to make wells, they found a substance that was at first taken for a metal, and was afterwards found to be black lead. The kind of pigment which the painters call Spanish brown, is found here in great abundance; and the white clay, with which the natives paint themselves, is still in greater plenty.

sicknesses

sicknesses which from various causes have prevailed, the settlement at Sydney Cove wore a very promising aspect when the last accounts were sent; and little doubt remains but it will hereafter fully answer the expectation which was formed when the design was projected. The scantiness of the streams of fresh water was for

a time thought unfavourable, but that difficulty has been removed, by plenty of good springs, which have been discovered by digging. Though the house built for Governor Philip stands fifty-six feet above high water mark, yet even there, by sinking a well fifteen feet in the rock, an excellent spring of pure water has been obtained.

SECTION VII.

Fish outrageously seized by the Natives—Another Expedition of the Governor—Further Particulars of the Manners, Customs, &c. of the Natives of New South Wales.

IT being generally understood that the natives were much distressed for provisions, and highly resented the incroachments made upon their fishing-places; a general order had been issued to those sent out upon such parties, to give a part of what they had got to the natives, if they happened to approach; in consequence of which they went away seemingly well satisfied: but on the 9th of July, about twenty of them, armed with spears, visited the spot where the Europeans were fishing, and, without any apology or pretence, violently seized the greater part of the fish which were in the seine. While this detached party committed the act of depredation, a much greater number presented themselves at a small distance, with their spears poised, ready to have thrown if any resistance had been made. But the cockswain, who was at the head of the fishing party, prudently permitted them to take away what they chose, and they parted upon friendly terms. This is the only instance in which these people have proceeded to an unprovoked act of violence; and even this they may have been driven to by necessity. Since this transaction an officer has always been sent down with the boat.

Governor Phillip, with a small party, went out about this time, to examine the land between Port Jackson and Broken Bay. Many

* The sailors, who were ordered to wait on the beach to take care of the boat, saw about two hundred men, divided into two parties. After some time they drew themselves up on opposite sides, and from each party men advanced singly and threw their spears, at the same time guarding themselves with their shields. At first this seemed to be merely a

hundred acres of land were here found free from timber, and extremely fit for cultivation. He proceeded to Pitt Water, and on his way saw many of the natives, but none of them thought proper to approach. Returning to the boats, near the mouth of the harbour, they saw about fifty of the people, including men, women, and children, who had assembled there. Some hours were passed with them in a friendly amicable manner, but though in all this time they manifested no uneasiness, they seemed somewhat delighted when their visitors were preparing to depart. This has always been observed since it has been known among them that our Europeans intend to remain on the coast. Many of the women were now employed in fishing, a service frequently performed by them, the men being principally engaged in making spears, canoes, fish-gigs, and the other articles that constitute their necessary stock of implements*.

It having been supposed that many of the natives had quitted the coast on account of the scarcity of fish, the different coves of the harbour were examined in one day. Only sixty-seven canoes were then counted, and no more than one hundred and thirty of the people were seen. But it was the season in which they devote almost the whole of their time to the construction of new canoes: large parties of them

kind of exercise, especially as the women belonging to both parties remained together on the beach. Afterwards, however, it wore a more serious aspect, and the women ran up and down, in great agitation, uttering violent shrieks. But it does not appear that any of the men were killed or wounded.

were cons
materials f

From th
ple since t
dition has
their mann
most of hi
The assert
among the
neous f. S
England, t
rious; the
posed of t
little prepa
tremely wel
affinity to t
mentions li
fur of some
he of cott
formed of
each other,
distance the
they are in
able. This
landing net,
fish when ta
with small
cray-fish.

The inha
those which
on as pain
and are sup
sionally sco
rival of Eu
ticular deli
hang in th
animals, th
small bone
gum; but n
the women
cloth the

* Shortly
again to exp
tany Bay. I
but he obser
tressed for
not eat eith
courser food
forded the su
been driven
carrying it a

VOL. I.

were

were consequently seen in the woods preparing materials for that essential purpose*.

From the extraordinary shyness of these people since the arrival of the settlement, little addition has been acquired to the knowledge of their manners, as related by Captain Cook; but most of his observations have been confirmed. The assertion that they have not any nets, is among the very few that have been found erroneous†. Small nets have been brought over to England, the manufacture of which is very curious; the twine of them appears to be composed of the fibres of the flax-plant, with very little preparation: it is strong, heavy, and so extremely well twisted that it seems to have a near affinity to the best whip-cord. Governor Phillip mentions lines of their manufacture, made of the fur of some animal, and others that seemed to be of cotton. The meshes of their nets are formed of large loops, curiously inserted into each other, but without any knots. At a little distance they appear like common nets; but when they are inspected, a peculiar mode is observable. This net seems to have been used as a landing net, or for the purpose of carrying the fish when taken. These people are also provided with small hoop nets for catching lobsters and cray-fish.

The inhabitants have few ornaments, except those which are impressed upon the skin, or laid on as paint. The beards of the men are short, and are supposed to be kept in that state by occasionally scorching off the hair. On the first arrival of Europeans among them, they took particular delight in being shaved. They frequently hang in their hair the teeth of dogs, and other animals, the claws of a lobster, or any kind of small bone, which they fasten with a kind of gum; but no such decorations are ever seen upon the women. Though they never attempt to cloath themselves, they are not insensible of the

* Shortly after this examination, Governor Phillip went again to explore the coast between Port Jackson and Botany Bay. In this journey he saw very few of the natives, but he observed additional proofs of their having been distressed for food. In the preceding summer they could not eat either the shark or the sting ray, but now much coarser food was highly acceptable, or any thing that afforded the smallest nutriment. A young whale having just been driven on the coast, they were busily employed in carrying it away. Not a native was seen without having

cold; rain is irksome to them: during a shower they frequently cover their heads with pieces of bark, and are observed to shudder exceedingly. Governor Phillip was convinced that cloathing would be very acceptable to them, if they could be induced to learn the use of it. He therefore applied for a supply of frocks and jackets to distribute among them. They are to be long and loose: and equally calculated for men and women.

The persons of these people smell strongly of oil, and their colour is rendered darker, by dirt. But though they have so little delicacy in these points, they seem exceedingly disgusted if they meet with strong effluvia to which their organs are unaccustomed. One of them, who had touched a piece of pork, presented his finger for his companions to smell, with strong marks of distaste. They never refuse to accept of bread and meat, when it is offered to them; but they usually throw it away soon after. Fish they accept with great eagerness.

They are supposed to burn the dead; this is evident from the following account. The ground seemed to have been raised in several places, like the graves of the inferior people in England, Governor Phillip ordered some of these barrows to be opened. In one of them a jaw-bone was seen, not quite consumed; but in general they contained only ashes; and they were so disposed, that it clearly appeared the body must have been laid at length, raised a few inches only from the ground, just sufficient to admit a fire under it; and having been consumed in this position, it must afterwards have been covered lightly over with mould. Fern is generally spread upon the surface, with a few stones, to prevent its being scattered by the wind. These graves are not numerous, nor are they near any of their huts.

Late accounts from Port Jackson mention, that the natives still avoided all intercourse with our

large pieces of it, which appeared to have been laid a short time upon the fire, that the outside might be properly scorched. In this state they swallow all their fish, never suffering it to broil for more than a few minutes. The winter months, in which fish are extremely scarce upon the coast, are June, July, August, and part of September.

† It is only meant, that they have no large nets for fishing, like the seine, as the New Zealanders have. *Cook's First Voyage*, Hawkesworth, Vol. iii. 233.

settlement, either from dislike, or from contempt. They perhaps suppose that we cannot teach them any thing, that will make them amends for our encroachments upon their fishing places. They seem perfectly honest among themselves, and often leave their spears and other implements upon the beach, in perfect confidence of finding them untouched. But the convicts too frequently make free with them, and dispose of them to vessels coming to England, though they thus become liable to be prosecuted for theft, or for purchasing stolen goods.

Except in the affair of seizing the fish, the natives have not attempted to annoy the settlers, by setting fire to the grass, as they did when Captain Cook was on the coast; nor have they manifested any desire to burn the crops of corn. Should any design of this kind ever appear to be entertained, it must at all events be counteracted; but in no other case, harsh measures will be adopted. Conciliation is the plan to be pursued: but Governor Phillip, when he last wrote, seemed to think he should never get any of them to remain long enough among his people, for either to learn the language of the other, except by constraint.

Some Specimens of

ANIMALS OF NEW SOUTH WALES.

OF Quadrupeds, the whole stock in the country appears to be confined to a very few species: Wolves have not been seen, though the tracks of them were frequently observed on the coast by Captain Cook's party. Birds are numerous, but they generally belong to classes already known to naturalists. A few drawings, however, and specimens of both, have been sent over, and a short account of them is given. Of reptiles, few have been seen that are in the least curious. A large lizard of the *Scincus* kind, with the peculiarity of a horn standing near the extremity of the tail, is said to be among some specimens sent over as private presents. Also a kind of frog, of a blue colour; but these do not, in other respects, differ materially from the usual form of their respective species.

QUADRUPEDS.

The KANGOROO has been already described.

THE SPOTTED OPOSSUM.

THE length of this animal, from the nose to the extremity of the tail is twenty-five inches, of which the tail makes about nine or ten. The general colour of the animal is black, inclining to brown beneath: the neck and body are spotted with irregular roundish patches of white. The ears are large, and stand erect; the visage is pointed, and the muzzle furnished with long slender hairs: all the legs, from the knees downward are almost naked, and ash-coloured: on the fore feet are five claws; and on the hind, four and a thumb, without a claw: about an inch and half of the tail, from the root, is covered with hairs like those on the body; from thence to the end with long ones resembling those of a squirrel. The specimen from which this account was taken, is a female, and has six teats placed in a circle, within the pouch.

VULPINE OPOSSUM.

THIS resembles the common fox in shape, but much smaller, being, from the point of the nose, to the setting on of the tail, only twenty-six inches; the tail is fifteen inches: the upper parts of the body a mixture of dusky and white hairs, with rufous-yellow tinge: the head and shoulders partaking most of this last colour: round the eyes blackish: above the nostrils ten or twelve black whiskers, four inches or more in length: all the under parts of the body are of a tawny buff-colour: the tail is the colour of the back for about a quarter of its length, from thence to the end black: it has five toes on each fore foot, the inner one being placed high up; on the hind feet four toes only, with a thumb, consisting of two joints, without a claw, placed high up. The whole foot serves the purpose of a hand, as in many of the opossum genus. The legs are shorter in proportion than those of the common fox. The ears are about an inch and a half in length: in the upper jaw are six cutting teeth, and four grinders with two small canine teeth at an equal distance between them.

NORFOLK ISLAND FLYING SQUIRREL.

ABOUT the size of the American grey squirrel, and the colour of the upper part nearly resembling that animal; the under parts white: a streak of dusky black runs from the nose to the tail,

tail, and a head behind the head: flap or membrane with white length, is the body; the toes on those of the being wanting inches: the

THE length inches. The and throat feathers: back the throat yellow prime quills red, mixed thighs green two middle feet with bright dusky. Inhab

THE length four inches: blue tinged with parts of the wings a beautiful blue: the neck, 'be of blue: the its feathers dark the upper parts of lighter green

SIZE of feet inches: the general base of the tail with fine blue others edged paler down to

tail, and another springs on each side of the head behind the nostrils: ears not rising from the head: on each side of the body is a broad flap or membrane, as in other flying squirrels, which is united to the fore and hind legs: this membrane is black, fringed on the outer edge with white: the tail for two-thirds of the length, is of an elegant ash colour, paler than the body; from thence to the end dusky black: the toes on the fore legs are five in number; those of the hinder uncertain, the legs behind being wanting: length from head to rump nine inches: the tail ten inches.

BIRDS.

BLUE BELLIED PARROT.

THE length of this beautiful bird is fifteen inches. The bill is reddish; orbits black: head and throat dark blue, mixed with lighter blue feathers: back part of the head green; towards the throat yellow green; back and wings green: prime quills dusky, barred with yellow: breast red, mixed with yellow: belly of a fine blue: thighs green and yellow: tail cuneiform; the two middle feathers green; the others the same, with bright yellow on the outer edges: legs dusky. Inhabits Botany Bay.

TABUAN PARROT.

THE length of this parrot is about twenty-four inches: the bill brown, the upper mandible tinged with red: the head, neck, and under parts of the body a bright scarlet: the back and wings a beautiful green. On the lower part of the neck, between that and the back, a crescent of blue: the tail long, and cuneiform; most of its feathers deep blue; the legs ash-coloured; on the upper part of the wings is seen a narrow line of lighter green.

PENNANTIAN PARROT.

SIZE of the scarlet Lory; length about sixteen inches: the bill of a blueish horn colour: the general colour of the plumage scarlet: the base of the under mandible and the chin covered with fine blue feathers; the back black, the feathers edged with crimson: wings blue, but much paler down the middle: the quills and tail black,

the feathers edged outerly with blue, and three of the outer tail feathers, from the middle to the end, of a pale blue: the tail wedge shaped, the middle feathers eight inches in length; the outermost only four: the bottom of the thighs blue; legs dusky, claws black.

PACIFIC PAROQUET.

THE length twelve inches, bill of a silvery blue, end black: in some the forehead, and half the crown, of a deep crimson, in others, the forehead only: behind each eye a spot of the same colour: on each side of the vent a patch of the same: the plumage of a dark green, palest on the under part; the tail is cuneiform; the two middle feathers five inches and a half in length; the outer ones two and a half; upper parts of the same green as the body; beneath ash-colour: the outer edge of the wings, as far as the middle of the quills, deep blue: the ends of the quills dusky; legs brown, claws black.

THE SACRED KING'S FISHER.

THE size is rather less than a blackbird: the bill black; the lower mandible yellowish at the base: head, back, wings and tail, blue, tinged with green: the under parts of the body white, extending round the neck like a collar: legs blackish. The bill is strong at the base, and sharp at the point.

SUPERB WARBLER—Male.

THE length five inches and a half; the bill black; the feathers of the head long, and erect like a full crest; from the forehead to the crown of a bright blue; from thence to the nape, black like velvet: through the eyes from the bill, a line of black; beneath the eye springs a tuft of blue feathers: beneath these, and on the chin, a deep blue feeling like velvet: on the ears another patch of blue, and across the back part of the head a band of the same. The hind part of the neck, and upper parts of the body and tail, deep blue: the under pure white; wings dusky, shafts of the quills chestnut: tail two inches and a quarter long, and cuneiform; the two outer feathers very short: legs dusky brown, claws black.

SUPERB

SUPERB WARBLER—*Female.*

THE Female Superb Warbler is entirely destitute of all the fine blue colours, pale as well as dark, by which the male is adorned; except that there is a very narrow circle of azure round each eye, apparently on the skin only: all the upper feathers consist of shades of brown, and the throat and belly is white. Except from the shape and size, this bird would not be suspected to belong to the same species as the male. The epithet of *Superb* seems ill applied to the female.

THE CASPIAN TERN—*Web-footed.*

THE length of this bird is nineteen or twenty inches; the bill three inches, stout and of a pale yellow; nostrils pervious; crown of the head black; the feathers longish, and forming a kind of pensile crest at the nape; the rest of the head, neck, and under parts of the body white: back and wings pale cinereous grey: quills grey, with the ends dusky; the inner webs, half way from the base, white: tail grey, forked; the end half of the other feathers white: legs black. This is supposed to inhabit China, the Friendly Isles, and Hapaece, one of the Sandwich Islands.

NORFOLK ISLAND PETREL—*Web-footed.*

THE length sixteen inches; bill one inch and a half long, and hooked at the tip: the head as far as the eyes, the chin and throat, waved, brown and dusky white: the body, on the upper parts, of a sooty brown, the under of a deep ash colour: the inner part of the quills, especially next the base, very pale; and the wings, when closed, exceed the tail by about an inch: the tail is rounded in shape, consisting of twelve feathers of the same colour as the upper parts of the body: the legs are pale yellow, the outer toe black the whole length, the middle one half way from the tip, the webs also correspond, the outer one being black, except at the base; and the inner one black for about one third from the end; the claws black: the spur, which serves as a back toe, is also black. This inhabits Norfolk Island, and burrows like a rabbit in the sand; continuing in the holes throughout the day, and coming out in the evenings in search of food.

BRONZE-WINGED PIGEON.

THE size of a large dove-house pigeon; the general plumage ash-colour, brown on the upper parts, the feathers margined with pale rufous; the under parts pale ash-colour, with pale margins; the wing coverts the same colour as the back, but the greater ones have each a large oval spot of bronze on the outer webs near the ends, forming together, when the wings are closed, two bars of very brilliant bronze, changing into red, copper, and green, in different reflections of light. Several of the feathers, among the other coverts, have also the same spots on them, but they are irregularly placed: the quills are brown, with the inner webs, from the middle to the base, pale rufous, as are the sides of the body, and all the under wing coverts: the tail has sixteen feathers; the two middle ones brown, the others pale lead, or dove-colour, with a bar of black near the tips; the bill of a dull red, the forehead very pale, passing a little way under the eye: the chin and throat pale grey: the legs red. This bird inhabits Norfolk Island.

WHITE-FRONTED HERON.

THIS bird is little more than half the size of the common heron: the length is twenty-eight inches: the general plumage blueish ash: top of the head black; the forehead, sides of the head, chin, and throat white, passing downwards, and finishing in a point about the middle of the neck before: on the lower part of the neck the feathers are long and loose, and of a pale cinnamon colour: the under parts of the body also incline to this last colour, but are considerably paler: the quills and tail are dark lead colour, almost black: on the back the feathers are long and narrow, and hang part of the way on the tail: the bill is four inches long and black; but the base half of the under mandible is yellowish; the legs are formed as in other herons, of a yellowish brown colour, and the claws are black. This bird was sent from Port Jackson in New Holland.

WATTLED BEE-EATER.

The length of this bird is about fourteen inches and a half: the bill one inch, and of nearly the shape and size as in the Poe bird: the colour black; the general colour of the plumage brown, pale

palest on the
are pointed
down the m
as the eyes
pears full,
gape of the
passes unde
side of the
about half
colour: the
one third
length of
the quills a
than the re
white: the
legs are of
and the out
far as the fi
and was rec

THIS bird
length two f
at the base,
nelled on th

A Concise A
ports sent
of his Va

LIEUTENANT
had ver
for the navy
entered into
of sixty gun
the comman
Banks of N
and took the
of seventy-f
pedition, M
loden, of se

* Such is the
have been obt
Island. Wild
ies, are name
number of sma

VOL. I. B

palest on the under parts: most of the feathers are pointed in shape, having a streak of white down the middle: the fore part of the head as far as the eyes, is smooth; the rest of the head appears full, the feathers being longer; from the gape of the bill, a broad streak of silvery white passes under the eye; and beneath this, on each side of the throat, hangs a pendulous wattle, about half an inch in length, and of an orange colour: the wings when closed, reach about one third on the tail, which is about half the length of the bird, and cuneiform in shape: the quills and tail feathers are of a darker brown than the rest of the birds, and have the tips white: the middle of the belly is yellow: the legs are of a pale brown, the hind toe very stout, and the outer toe connected to the middle one as far as the first joint. It inhabits New Holland, and was received from Port Jackson.

PSITTACEOUS HORNBILL.

THIS bird is about the size of a crow: the length two feet three inches: the bill large, stout at the base, much curved at the point, and channelled on the sides: the colour pale brown, in-

clining to yellow near the end; the nostrils are at the base, and are surrounded with a red skin, as is the eye also on the upper part: the head, neck, and under parts of the body of a pale blue grey; the upper part of the body, wings, and tail ash-colour; most of the feathers are tipped with dusky black, forming bars of that colour across the wings: the wings, when closed, reach to near three quarters of the length of the tail: the tail is long, and cuneiform; the two middle feathers measuring eleven inches, and the outer one on each side little more than seven; a bar of black crosses the whole near the end, and the tips of all the feathers are white: the legs are short and scaly, and the toes placed two forwards, and two backwards, as in those of the toucan or parrot genus: legs and claws black: this bird was killed at Port Jackson*.

A section then follows containing *Nautical directions, and other detached remarks by Lieutenant Ball, concerning Rio de Janeiro, Norfolk Island, Ball Pyramid, and Lord Howe Island.* As these remarks are purely nautical, and cannot afford information or amusement to the general reader, we shall pass over that section, and proceed to another, which professes to be,

SECTION I.

A Concise Account of Lieutenant Shortland—His various Services—Appointed Agent to the Transports sent to New South Wales—Ordered by Governor Phillip to England, by Batavia—Journal of his Voyage—New Discoveries.

LIEUTENANT JOHN SHORTLAND had very early in life, a strong predilection for the navy, and, in 1755, at the age of sixteen, entered into his majesty's service, in the *Anson*, of sixty guns, which went out in the fleet under the command of Admiral Boscawen. On the Banks of Newfoundland this fleet fell in with, and took the *Alcide* and *Ly's*, two French ships of seventy-four guns. Returning from this expedition, Mr. Shortland went on board the *Culloden*, of seventy-four guns, and was in the fleet

under Admiral Byng, off Minorca. He went soon afterwards into the *Hampton Court*, commanded by Captain Harvey, in which he was present at the taking of the *Foudroyant* and *Arpe*. Arriving in England, he went on board the *Vanguard*, Commodore Swanton, to the West Indies, in the fleet under Admiral Rodney, and was present at the reduction of *Martinique*, the *Grenades*, and the other islands which were then captured. In 1763 he was appointed Lieutenant by Admiral Swanton, since which period he has al-

* Such is the account of the birds of which specimens have been obtained from Port Jackson, or from Norfolk Island. Wild ducks, teal, quails, and other common species, are numerous in both places; and the variety and number of small birds is considerable. Birds of the Casso-

wary kind have frequently been seen; but they are so shy, and run so rapidly that only one of them had yet been killed. Should it, on examination, exhibit any remarkable peculiarities, a description of it will be obtained, if possible.

ways been engaged in important services. During the late war, and for some time afterwards, he was principally employed in going to and from America, except in 1782, when he commanded the transports with the 9th regiment on board, destined to relieve Gibraltar, under convoy of the Cerberus and Apollo: he succeeded in getting in all the transports in perfect safety, and landed the men without loss or accidents.

On his return from this service, in attempting to get through the Gut of Gibraltar in the night, he was chased by a squadron of Spanish frigates, who took three of the transports in company, but he fortunately escaped in the Betsey transport, and arrived safe in England. In 1786 he was appointed agent to the transports sent by government to New South Wales, where he arrived in January 1788. After remaining six months at the New settlement of Port Jackson, he was ordered to England by Governor Phillip, who honoured him with dispatches for Government. He arrived in England on the 29th of May, 1789.

This concise recapitulation of Mr. Shortland's services sufficiently points out his merit and ability as an experienced seaman, without any further eulogium.

THE ALEXANDER, the FRIENDSHIP, the PRINCE OF WALES, and the BORROWDALE, were got ready, early in July, 1788, to sail for England, under the conduct of Lieutenant Shortland. Governor Phillip took the opinions of the masters of these transports concerning their route. After which it was agreed that they should go to the northward, either through the Endeavour Straits, or round New Guinea. Unfortunately, however, the ships were very ill prepared for every mode of return: their complement of men was small, only six to an hundred tons, officers included: they were without a surgeon, and unprovided with sour crout, portable soup, and the other antiseptics recommended by the Royal Society. It cannot therefore be a matter of surprize that the sailors should have suffered so dreadfully from the scurvy: in the length of time necessary for exploring a passage through an unknown sea

perplexed with islands; and had not the good fortune to obtain a supply of salutary refreshments.

Lieutenant Shortland, in the Alexander transport sailed from Port Jackson on the 14th of July, 1788, directing his course to the east-north-east, with intention to touch at Lord Howe island, and there to appoint each ship a place of rendezvous in case of separation. This necessary step, which ought to have been previously taken, had been omitted: the Alexander not having been able to join the other transports till the evening before their departure. Even then, the boats, booms, and spare anchors, were stowed loose between decks, in a manner which must have produced dangerous consequences, had the ship been thus exposed to a heavy sea. As soon as the weather appeared tolerably favourable for working out of the harbour, Lieutenant Shortland made the signals to the masters of the other transports to get under way without waiting for his ship.

Lieutenant Shortland having, at length, lost sight of the Prince of Wales and Borrowdale, was resolved to go to Lord Howe Island to wait a day or two for them, supposing they might touch there with similar intentions. On the 19th he steered a direct course for that island, but he afterwards thought it more prudent to relinquish the design of calling there. The Prince of Wales and Borrowdale transports were seen no more throughout the voyage, and it has since been known that they took another course.

On Monday July 21, at ten in the morning, the master of the Friendship went on board the Alexander, and Carteret's harbour was appointed by Lieutenant Shortland as the place of rendezvous. The same day, at five in the afternoon, land was discovered, bearing from south-west by west, at the distance of eight leagues: it was about six or seven leagues in length, the land very high, with a remarkable peak: It was now named Sir Charles Middleton's Island. It lies in latitude 28° 10' south, and in longitude 159° 50' east*.

The leaves of the plantain served the Indians to

* In the forenoon of the 6th of August, several canoes were seen with Indians in them, who came close up the ship, without seeming apprehensive of danger. Ropes were thrown, which they readily took hold of, and suffered the

ship to tow them along; in this situation they willingly exchanged rings which they wore on their arms, and beads of their own manufacture, for nails and other trifles, shewing a decided preference to whatever was made of iron. *Clin-*

to make
man had
At noon
the Two
and the r
was call
west, dis
The su
Holland
Shortlan
noes, wh
are well
lofty, car
with a k
formed ex
tion as th
by the inh
this island
or two of
and a shel
the head.
tenant's vi
ing they
could vent
mediately
ple had in
land prod
and many
Friendly
Lieutenant
the natives
the length
to forbid
these men
furthest p
Middleton

Appearan
tives—
she rec
port; o

A BOU
gun

lets had ma
were not se
tiously, wi
But though
ed after the
ture alongs

to make boxes, or small cases, of which every man had one to contain his little rings and beads. At noon a point of land was seen, running from the Two Brothers, now named *Cape Satisfaction*; and the rock, which had been mistaken for a ship, was called the *Eddystone*, and bore north by west, distant four leagues.

The superiority of these people over the New Hollanders, in size and strength, Lieutenant Shortland says, is very remarkable. Their canoes, which contained from six to fourteen men, are well put together, the bows and stems very lofty, carved with different figures, and stained with a kind of red paint. They were, indeed, formed exactly on the same model and construction as those of Otaheite. The ornaments worn by the inhabitants of Simboo (the name given to this island) were large rings of white bone, one or two of which every man had upon his wrist, and a shell with a feather, which was tied upon the head. About two in the afternoon the Lieutenant's visitors thought proper to depart, finding they had followed the ship as far as they could venture to trust themselves, and made immediately for the shore. From what these people had in their possession, it appeared that their land produced cocoa-nuts, bread fruit, bananas, and many other vegetables of the Society and Friendly Isles. Nor was it without regret that Lieutenant Shortland declined the invitations of the natives to partake of their refreshments; but the length and uncertainty of his passage seemed to forbid the least delay. The bay from which these men had come, he named *Indian Bay*: the furthest point of land north was named *Cape Middleton*.

After lying to in the night, the ships sailed at four in the morning of August 7th, and bore away to the north by west. At five they saw the land which they had left the preceding night, and six or more small islands; the latter were called the *Treasury Isles*; they are moderately high and well clothed with trees and herbage.

The *Alexander* and *Friendship* had now run from the latitude of $10^{\circ} 44'$ south, and longitude $161^{\circ} 30'$ east, to the latitude of $7^{\circ} 10'$ south, and longitude $156^{\circ} 30'$ east, the whole way almost in sight of land. As proceeding westward might have entangled them with New Guinea, Lieutenant Shortland resolved to try the passage which was now before him. At ten in the evening, the *Alexander* was nearly abreast of the two points that form the passage, and the soundings were from ten to thirty fathoms, on a soft sandy bottom. At two in the morning of the 8th of August, a strong ripple of a current was plainly perceived; and by five the ship had nearly cleared the straits*.

Mr. Shortland now congratulated himself on having cleared this large tract of land, which he had supposed united the whole way from the place at which he first fell in with it. The only places in which Lieutenant Shortland suspected there might possibly be a passage, was between Cape Phillip and Cape Henslow, and again between the Capes Marsh and Pitt. The ascertaining of these matters he leaves to other navigators, but strongly recommends the route he took, as the safest and most expeditious passage from Port Jackson to China.

SECTION IV.

Appearance of the Scurvy—The Boats land at One of the Pelew Islands—Some Account of the Natives—Distresses—The Friendship cleared and sunk—Wretched Condition of the Alexander when she reached Batavia—Lieutenant Watts's Narrative of the Return of the Lady Penrhyn Transport; containing an Account of the Death of Omai, and other Particulars at Otaheite.

ABOUT the 10th of August the scurvy began to make its appearance, and for want

of proper remedies, increased to a destructive malignity. So many lives had been subdued by

that our people should anchor on the coast, and go ashore with them; and by way of inducement, held up the rind of an orange or lemon, the feathers of tame fowls, and other things, signifying that such things might be had on shore.

* Lieutenant Shortland judged these straits to be between four and five leagues in length, and seven or eight broad. Conceiving

by its ravages, that it was found necessary to sacrifice one of the ships, and finally to reduce the consolidated crews of both in the remaining transport to such a state of weakness, that without immediate assistance they must have perished even in port, or would again have been turned adrift, from total inability to take the necessary steps for their preservation.

On the 13th of August five seamen, belonging to the *Alexander*, were on the sick list, complaining of pains in the legs and breast; having also loose teeth, and swelled gums to such a degree, that they could not without difficulty eat even flour or rice. The weather was now very variable, sometimes sultry, and sometimes squally, with occasional showers*.

The scurvy increased rapidly in the *Alexander*, though the precautions of smoking the ship, and washing it with vinegar were taken; the distribution of porter, spruce beer, and wine among the seamen also took place. On the 2d of September six men and a boy, on the 5th eight, and on the 8th no less than ten were rendered unable from illness to perform any duty. So great an increase of the malady, in the midst of all the efforts that could be made to counteract the malignity of it, was too certain a prognostic of its future ravages.

At six in the morning, September 11th, a small island was seen, bearing west-south-west, distant five leagues; and the wind coming round to the south-south-west, Lieutenant Shortland bore away for a passage between two islands. Having entered the passage, at nine he sounded, and found thirteen fathoms, with a fine sandy bottom. Many cocoa-palms were seen on the shore, which seemed to promise effectual refreshment for the sick: a boat from each of the ships was therefore manned and sent out. Many Indians approached these boats in their canoes, and invited our Europeans on shore, intimating that they might be supplied with cocoa-nuts, and

Conceiving himself to be the first navigator who had sailed through them, he gave them the name of *Shortland's Straits*. But on comparing his account with the narrative of M. Bougainville, he saw reason to suspect that this is the same passage through which that navigator sailed in June 1768. To corroborate this suspicion, M. Bougainville's description of the canoes and natives, agrees entirely with that given by Mr. Shortland. A small difference only in longitude affords the principal reason for doubting the identity of the passage.

many other things. But when they attempted to land at a place which had the appearance of being a morai, they would not permit it, giving them to understand that they must proceed further one way or the other. During this time many persons of both sexes swam off from shore, with bamboos† full of water, which they supposed the ships to be in want of.

Mr. Sinclair, the master of the *Alexander*, being in the boat, gave the following account of this expedition: "Finding that he could not make them understand that he wanted cocoa-nuts, and not water, he was determined to land, and accordingly put on shore at a convenient place, amidst a concourse of between three and four hundred people. He immediately fixed upon an old man among them, whom he supposed to be a chief, and made him a present of some nails and beads, which were thankfully received. This circumstance fortunately secured his friendship; he afterwards frequently exerted his authority, by checking the most insolent of his people, when they pressed forward to steal whatever they could touch. A seaman, holding his cutlass in a careless manner, had it snatched from him, and the thief had so much address in the transaction, that he was almost out of sight before he was distinguished. Notwithstanding the apparent willingness of the natives in the canoes to give satisfaction, Mr. Sinclair could not procure above thirty cocoa-nuts, and even those were green: perhaps the people did not comprehend his signs. These islanders were moderately tall, well-limbed, and had long hair. Several of them chewed the betel nut, and these were furnished with a small hollow stick, out of which they struck a kind of powder like lime. Their arms were a lance, and a kind of adze. Finding himself unsuccessful in the chief object for which he was sent out. Mr. Sinclair returned as expeditiously as he could. In exchange for his presents, the chief gave him one which was not

* The ships were supposed to be at no very considerable distance from the land, as birds were frequently seen in great numbers: on the 16th the *Friendship* made the signal for seeing land, but it could not be descried from the *Alexander*. Sharks were also caught with the hook; and floating wood and vegetables were frequently seen.

† Bamboos were the only water vessels in the Pelew Islands WILK. C. XXV.

very

very acc
yams, a
which, p
position,
Europea
of the na
desirous
nation; l
they sho
Perhaps
made the
been in t

On the
in danger
shore of
obliged
brought
evening o
a reef on
ander im
to her ass
ing, she
and shoal
she sailed
extricate
got off fr
terial inju
was disc
sailed out
were now
Borneo.

The sc
most piti
eight of
in a wat
boys cap
anxious
promise
rive at B
to the n
hardly a
but five
stock of
wretched
indispens

* Lieut
their distr
tember, ag
the propo
considera
who still b

Vol.

very acceptable: it was a composition of fish, yams, and several other things; the odour of which, perhaps from the staleness of the composition, could not have been agreeable to any European. When our people first landed, many of the natives mentioned the word *Englees*, as if desirous of knowing whether they were of that nation; but when they understood that we were, they shook their heads, and said, *Espagnol*. Perhaps the discovery of our nation might have made them less courteous on shore than they had been in their canoes *.

On the 3d of October, the *Alexander*, being in danger of driving with the current upon the shore of Karkalang or Sanquir Island, was obliged to drop her anchor, which happily brought her up in four fathoms water. In the evening of the 17th, the *Friendship* struck upon a reef on the coast of Borneo, when the *Alexander* immediately cast anchor, and sent a boat to her assistance; but at day-light the next morning, she also lay so encompassed with sand-keys and shoals, that it was difficult to discern how she sailed into that situation, or how she could be extricated from it. The *Friendship*, however, got off from the reef, without sustaining any material injury: and on the 19th a narrow channel was discovered, through which the *Alexander* sailed out of her dangerous station. The ships were now about eight leagues from the coast of Borneo.

The scurvy had reduced both the crews to a most pitiable situation. The *Alexander* had lost eight of her complement, and had only two men in a watch; there being but four seamen and two boys capable of duty; and though these were anxious to do their best, being also excited by a promise of double wages when they should arrive at Batavia, their exertions were inadequate to the necessities of the ship, which they were hardly able to put about. The *Friendship* had but five men who were not disabled, and their stock of provisions was very short. This being the wretched state of the two ships, it was thought indispensably necessary to give up one for the

preservation of the other. On this subject the masters consulted, and it was agreed as follows. As the *Friendship* was the smaller vessel, and would be sooner cleared than the *Alexander*, Mr. Walton, her master, consented that she should be deserted and sunk, on his being allowed half freight of the *Alexander*, after which she was boarded and turned adrift. The ship's company, thus consolidated from both vessels, was still very deficient, not amounting to half the proper complement of the *Alexander*, nor was it more than was absolutely necessary to work that ship to Batavia.

At five in the morning on the 29th of October, a land wind springing up from the coast of Borneo, the *Alexander* got again under way. At five in the afternoon, Pulo Laoot bore from south-south-west to south-west by south, distance fourteen leagues; but the wind being now southerly, and the current strongly against the vessel, she did not get round this island till November the 5th.

Wine was regularly served, in due proportions to the sick and well; but neither that, nor any other expedient that could be devised, amended the condition of the people. Sickness continued to spread so extensively among them, that in the beginning of November, only one man, besides the officers, was capable of going aloft. A short alarm by no means tended to console them in their situation: on the first of November four large boats, three of which rowed eighteen oars, and the fourth about twelve, bore down upon the ship, apparently with hostile intentions. When they approached within about a mile they lay to, seeming to consult with each other, and afterwards occasionally rowed and sailed after the *Alexander*. Lieutenant Shortland hoisted English colours; when one of the boats immediately hoisted Dutch, and another Portuguese colours. They continued in chase till five in the afternoon; and it was concluded that they had resolved to board and seize the ship in the night. During the pursuit, the whole of their little strength was put in motion,

sary duty, were tortured with swelled legs, and violent pains in the breast. Hitherto the *Friendship* had been more happily circumstanced; on the 23d of September she was spoken to, and had then only one man disabled by the scurvy: but a rapid increase of the malady made a fatal compensation for the delay of its commencement.

* Lieutenant Shortland's people were doomed to find their distresses augmented. Towards the conclusion of September, agues and intermittent fevers prevailed among them; the proportion of those disabled by the scurvy was very considerable; some deaths had happened, and the few men who still had sufficient health to drag through their neces-

all were stationed at their quarters, and the caronades and great guns put in order. Lieutenant Shortland was determined to give a display of his own resolution, and to provoke a trial of that of his assailants, by firing a shot in a direct line over them. This manœuvre fully answered the intentions; they immediately desisted from the pursuit, and hastily proceeded towards the shore.

Had the *Alexander* been now a very few days' sail more distant from Batavia, she must inevitably have been lost, from mere inability to conduct her into port, as every man on board must have been totally disabled. On the 17th of November, only one man on board was able to work, besides the officers; a little longer continuance must infallibly have reduced her to the condition of floating at the mercy of winds and waves, without the least possibility of assisting, impeding, or directing her course. At six that evening the wind was too scanty to carry her into the roads of Batavia, an effort was therefore made by all who were able to work, and anchor was cast between the islands of Leyden and Alkmar; a gun was soon afterwards fired, and a signal made for assistance. At two in the afternoon on the 18th, no assistance arriving, they even ventured at endeavouring to weigh the anchor, a task which they indeed accomplished, but not without the utmost difficulty: after which, standing in with the sea-breeze, the ship came again to anchor at five, in nine fathoms*.

At five in the morning of the 19th, a boat appeared in sight from the Dutch Commodore, which he had generously laded with refreshments. She also brought a boatswain's mate, and twelve seamen, to assist in refitting the ship for sea. On the 20th the sick were conveyed to the hospital, where many of them expired, being in too advanced a stage of disease for skill or accommodation to recover them. A fresh crew was at length made up from the Bridgewater and Contractor East Indiamen that lay in the road; and from the Raymond, Asia, and Duke of Montrose, which came in a few days after, with the assistance of a few men from the Dutch Commo-

* The boat was now hoisted out and sent to implore assistance from the Dutch Commodore, the crew of the *Alexander* not being able to furl their own sails. A party was instantly sent to assist, and six of the Dutch seamen continued all night on board, lest any unwelcome weather

dore. In this crew only four of the original seamen remained, the rest being either dead, or not sufficiently recovered to return with the *Alexander*, when she sailed again on the 7th of December.

The remaining part of the voyage was attended with few remarkable circumstances, and was made in a tract too well known to all navigators to require a more minute description of it. At the Cape they met with Captain Hunter, in the *Sirius*, who, when the *Alexander* arrived on February 18, 1789, had been in Table Bay six weeks. From him Lieutenant Shortland received intelligence that the *Borrowdale*, and the *Prince of Wales*, had returned by the southern passage, and had been heard of from Rio de Janeiro. In Table Bay the *Alexander* continued at anchor till the 16th of March, when she sailed again, and arrived off the Isle of Wight on the 28th of May.

Thus ended a voyage, the first part of which was rendered important by discoveries; the next was involved in gloom from the virulent attacks of disease and the ravages of death. Much was certainly performed, and much was endured; but from the whole we may reasonably conclude, that the settlement of our countrymen on the new southern continent, must considerably tend to the improvement of navigation, and the extension of geographical knowledge. It is not necessary that disagreeable apprehensions should be excited by the misfortunes of the *Alexander* and the *Friendship*. It may not again happen that ships shall quit Port Jackson, so ill prepared with antidotes against the poison of the scurvy: nor, if they should, it cannot be reasonably expected that their visitation will be equally severe.

The *Lady Penrhyn*, Captain Sever, quitted Port Jackson on the 5th of May, 1788. In the evening of the 7th, supposing they saw a fire on shore, they sounded, but found no bottom with ninety fathoms of line. The scurvy began to make its appearance among them, so early as the 9th of May: one man was rendered unfit for duty by it, and several others complained much

should come on. Never, perhaps, did any ship arrive in port more helpless, without being shattered from weather, from the cruel effects of a dreadful and invincible disorder.

of the se
generally
ning, and
In the
island, ab
at seven
leagues o
the night,
for it. A
tenant Ba
Lord How
night they
morning,
shore in se
cover the t
returned o
not deter
Anstis the
nace, to
noon the r
having see
entirely lo
been in fis
quantity to
days.
Lord H
nant Ball,
February,
vey it: he
green tur
dance. Is
lip sent th
but she v
might pro
turtle to r
is about t
each end,
centre, fo
soundings
hard for
island ha
* The in
tribe, and
seemed to
time of the
nests: the
here they w
quadruped
them: a gr
by the peo
great plenty

of the severity of its attacks. The weather was generally squally, attended with thunder, lightning, and rain.

In the morning of the 14th, they saw an island, about eighteen or twenty leagues distant; at seven in the afternoon, it was about nine leagues distant, on which they brought to for the night, and next morning made sail and stood for it. At noon they spoke to the Supply, Lieutenant Ball, who informed them that this was Lord Howe's Island. During the afternoon and night they stood off and on, and at nine the next morning, Lieutenant Watts with a party went on shore in search of turtle, but they could not discover the traces of any, and about noon Mr. Watts returned on board. But this disappointment did not deter them from making another effort: Mr. Anstis therefore went with a party, in the pinnace, to try his success in the night. About noon the next day Mr. Anstis returned, without having seen a single turtle, but the party had not entirely lost their labour; so successful had they been in fishing, that they had caught a sufficient quantity to serve the ship's company three or four days.

Lord Howe's Island was discovered by Lieutenant Ball, on his passage to Norfolk Island, in February, and on his return he stopped to survey it: he then caught a great quantity of fine green turtles, which were found in great abundance. Induced by this success, Governor Phillip sent the Supply a second time to this island, but she was not then successful; the weather might probably be so cold as to occasion the turtle to remove to the northward. This island is about two leagues in extent. It is broad at each end, and very narrow, with low land in the centre, forming two bays. There are regular soundings on the west side, but the ground is too hard for holding well, being coral rocks. This island has also every appearance of having un-

* The inhabitants of this island were all of the feathered tribe, and the chief of these was the ganet; of which there seemed to be prodigious numbers. This was perhaps the time of their incubation, the females being all on their nests: these are places simply hollowed in the sand: here they were apparently secure, there not being a single quadruped that could be found upon the island to disturb them: a great many of their eggs were, however, brought by the people on board. Large pigeons were met with in great plenty; with beautiful parrots and paroquets: also

dergone a volcanic revolution, great quantities of pumice stone having been found in it*.

This island is well covered with wood, the principal of which is the large and dwarf mangrove, the cabbage tree, and bamboo. The vegetables we met with were wild celery, spinach, endive, scurvy-grass, and samphire.

In the afternoon the pinnace was hoisted in, and they made sail to the eastward. Nothing material occurred till the 31st, when, at three in the afternoon, they saw two islands; one seven leagues, and the other about six distant. Not having an opportunity of getting well in with the land before night came on, they plied occasionally, and at day-light next morning made sail and bore up for it. On approaching the southernmost land, they saw it formed two barren isles: the north island lies in a north half east direction from these, and about five leagues distant. They were in hopes of finding this island productive of something beneficial to the people, as the scurvy was daily gaining ground, but they were greatly disappointed; the north and south sides are surrounded by rocks, over which the water flows, without any opening for a boat. Captain Sever, however, ordered the small boat to be hoisted out, and went on shore accompanied by Mr. Anstis: they found very great difficulty in landing, and, after they were upon the rocks, to ascend a dangerous precipice to gain the level part of the island. The whole of it bears the strongest marks of being a volcanic production: the extent of it is about two miles and a half; and the inhabitants are the brown gull, the light grey bird, ganets, and a parroquet resembling those met with at Lord Howe's Island. The gentlemen could hardly walk a step, without being up to the knee: they saw a great many rats and mice, and found many birds lying dead at the entrances of their burrows. This island was named *Macauley's Island*, in honour of G. M. Macauley,

a new species, apparently of the coote, and of the rail and magpie. A most beautiful small bird was seen; it was brown, with a yellow breast, and yellow on the wings: it appeared to be a species of the humming bird: a black bird was also observed, like a sheer-water, with a hooked bill, which burrows in the ground. Ants, which are very numerous, are the only insects of this place, except the common earth worm. The soil is of a sandy nature, and fresh water seems to be extremely scarce.

Esq.; and the two islands to the southward, *Curtis's Isles*, after Timothy and William Curtis, Esqrs. At five in the afternoon, the captain returning on board, they made sail, standing to the eastward: Macauley's Island is situated in 30° 09' south latitude, and 180° 58' 37" east longitude.

The scurvy now spread exceedingly among the crew, and by the 6th, nine of the men were unable to get out of their hammocks, and many others complained much of their sufferings: particularly of having swelled gums, of the flesh being black and hard; and of a contraction of the sinews, with a total disability. Wine was daily served out to them, and they might have had sour kroust, but they refused to eat it. From this time to the 17th they had little variety, and the people were in a very deplorable state; for with all the persons on board, including even the captain, they could muster but ten men who were able to do duty; and even some of them were in a very debilitated state: sour kroust, which had before been refused, was now sought after: the captain's fresh stock was appropriated entirely to their use, whilst himself and his officers were living solely on salt provisions. To add to their distress, the wind hung almost constantly in the eastern board, and they could make but very little progress. For several days they had squally and unsettled weather, attended with heavy rain, and frequent storms of thunder and lightning. On the 7th of July they fell in with the south-east trade wind, and as the crew were in a weak condition, it was resolved to make Otaheite as soon as possible.

At six in the morning of the 9th, they saw Osnaburgh Island: at seven they bore up for Otaheite, and at ten that island made its appearance. By five in the afternoon they were abreast of Otaheite Bay, when ten canoes presented themselves alongside with bread-fruit, cocoa-

nuts, &c. The Indians urged them to come to an anchor there; but Mr. Watts advised the captain to stand on for Matavai Bay*.

It was a pleasing circumstance on their arrival, to see the natives flock round the ship, calling out "*Tayo, Tayo*" signifying *friends*; and bringing plenty of cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, plain-tains, and taro; with a fruit called the Otaheite apple; they also brought several hogs and fowls. The Indians seemed rejoiced to see them, and disposed of their commodities on very moderate terms; their whole behaviour clearly indicating the most friendly and benevolent intentions. In the evening the chief of Matavai came on board, in whom Lieutenant Watts, recognized an old friend. The chief was highly delighted at seeing Mr. Watts, as he was the only person in the ship who had been here before, except the steward, who had been before the mast in the *Resolution*. When Mona, the chief, beheld his old acquaintance, he informed his companions who he was, and that he had been with Captain Cook, and they seemed happy to have some of their old visitors again. Mr. Watts heard from Mona that Otoo was still living, that he was absent on a visit to the eastward, but expected to return in few days.

The next day, Oediddee agreeably surprised them with a visit on board. He was happy to see them, and very affectionately enquired after his friends: he took much delight in relating his route in the *Resolution*, and had stored his memory with the names of the several places he had been at in her. He informed them that no ship had visited the islands since Captain Cook; and therefore they concealed his death. Oediddee confirmed the report of the cattle, &c. being destroyed by Maheine, and told them that Omai, and the two New Zealand boys had been dead a considerable time†.

The first salutations being over, Mr. Watts

* On approaching the bay, they could perceive great numbers of natives on Point Venus, and round the beach. Several canoes put off from the shore, the Indians waving pieces of white cloth to invite them to come into the bay. When anchored they had only three men in one watch, and two in the other, besides the mates, and two of these were much afflicted: the rest were in a state truly deplorable.

† On the 13th of July a messenger came on board, with a present from Otoo of a pig, a dog, and some white cloth; he also informed them that he intended to be at Matavai the next day. Early in the morning a few of the canoes came off to the ship, and the natives were observed on shore

assembling in great numbers. Soon afterwards a canoe came alongside, with intelligence that Otoo was on the beach. The Captain and Mr. Watts hastened to the shore, and found him surrounded by an amazing concourse of people, among whom were several women very active in wounding their foreheads with sharks' teeth. They were, however, surprised to see a man carrying the portrait of Captain Cook, which had been painted by Webber in 1777. Though so much time had elapsed since the finishing of this picture, it seemed to have received no injury, and they were informed that Otoo always took it with him wherever he went.

asked Otoo to accompany him to the ship, to which he readily assented; but, before he entered the boat, he ordered the portrait in; and was equally ceremonious with the portrait, when he got alongside the ship. When he arrived on board, he seemed highly pleased, made respectful enquiries after his old friends, and particularly with regard to Captain Cook. He visited the ship between decks, and was astonished to find so few people on board, and those in a very debilitated state. He mentioned the death of Omai, and the New Zealand boys; and added, that a skirmish had taken place between the men of Uliatea and those of Huaheine, in which the former were victorious, and that a considerable part of Omai's property had been conveyed to Uliatea.

Otoo was much improved in his person, and made a very respectable appearance; not having yet been disfigured by the baneful effects of the *ava*. He preserved his original character, liberally supplying the ship with provisions. During their stay at Otaheite, he daily visited them, and zealously importuned the captain to move the ship into the Resolution's old birth; but considering the small number of people on board, and their weak situation, he thought it prudent to remain where he was; as, in case of necessity, he could immediately put to sea*.

A few days before they quitted Matavai Bay, Otoo brought the ring of an anchor on board, declaring it might readily be converted into small hatchets. On examining it, Mr. Watts recollected, that it belonged to an anchor which Captain Cook bought of Opooni at Bola, in 1777. There being no forge on board the *Lady Penrhyn*, the captain offered Otoo three hatchets for it, which he readily accepted.

Though from the season of the year they expected a scarcity of vegetables, they were agreeably surprised to find them in the greatest profusion: hogs were multiplied exceedingly; fowls were plentiful and reasonable, but they were all cocks, and old. The natives also brought goats alongside for sale: and some of them brought a

* Otoo was always accompanied by a woman, whose advice he frequently requested; she was not handsome, neither did she possess that delicacy, or those engaging manners that so generally distinguish her countrywomen: she was of the *Farree* class, and seemed invested with great au-

thority; but whether she was his wife or not could not be ascertained, though Mr. Watts was of opinion that they were married, and he appeared to be very much attached to her.

cargo of cats, and offered them in barter. Captain Sever bought a fine male and milch goat, with two kids. Cocoa-nuts, and the bread fruit, were exceedingly plentiful. The Otaheite apple was equally so. Taro, and plantains, both ripe and green, were brought in great quantities by the natives, but yams and sweet potatoes were extremely scarce. They purchased seven or eight dozen of pumpkins, and a quantity of chilipods; but the natives refused to touch any of the pumpkins, and they declared the chilipods would poison them.

It has already been noticed, that no ship of any nation had visited this island since Captain Cook; and, from appearances, the iron which the natives then obtained, was nearly exhausted, as no other iron was now seen but the blade of a table knife. They did not even bring any tools on board to be sharpened, which probably would have been the case had they been possessed of any: so eager were they to obtain hatchets, knives, &c. that every produce of the island was purchased at very reasonable rates. But it was not only on hatchets, knives, and nails, that the natives had fixed their affections, they extended their wishes to gimlets, files, and scissors; they also enquired for looking glasses, and white transparent beads, but none of these latter articles were to be had on board: red feathers which had formerly been held in the greatest esteem, were now of little value; they were willing indeed to accept them as presents, but would not barter any thing for them.

Their situation not being a very eligible one, Mr. Watts did not think it prudent to go to any considerable distance from the ship, or to pass much of his time on shore, which deprived him of the means of getting information respecting Omai, and the loss of his property, &c.: but he was inclined to think that the cattle and all the animals were killed, except goats, as Oediddee when he confirmed the revenge of the Eimeo people, never mentioned that any single animal was saved: goats, indeed, had been left on former voyages, and by multiplying had become the

property of many, but Maheine's resentment, it appears, was levelled only at Otoo*.

The people being now astonishingly recovered, and able to assist in the duties of the ship, Captain Sever thought it necessary to run down among the Society Isles, having a plentiful supply of provisions on board; they accordingly got under way before day-light on the 23d. The natives took the alarm, and, the breeze slackening, they had visitors in abundance, none of whom came empty-handed. Their friends parted from them very reluctantly, and the suddenness of the departure greatly disappointed the natives. They would not have left the place so abruptly, had they not supposed that if their intention was known, the Indians would have flocked on board in great multitudes, and have been extremely troublesome. They had the satisfaction of leaving the island in the most perfect amity with the natives; and it would be doing them injustice not to mention, that while the *Lady Penrhyn* lay here, not one occasion offered to induce them to fire a musquet.

Oediddee regretted their departure exceedingly, and requested the Captain to take him to Uliatea, but Otoo, (whatever his reasons might be) begged he might not be taken from Otaheite: the captain declared he should not, and, taking leave of Oediddee, conducted him into his canoe, on which he wept abundantly. Otoo was one of the earliest on board in the morning, and did not quit the ship till they had cleared the reef; he expressed great sorrow at their departure, and begged they would not be long absent: he earnestly desired to have some horses brought to him, more particularly than any other animal: before he quitted the ship, he begged a few guns

might be fired; with which the captain complied. A breeze now springing up, a last farewell was taken, and they stood to the north-west for Huaheine.

At noon on the 25th, they saw that island, bearing west three-quarters north, fourteen leagues distant. Having had very light winds, and those westerly, they did not reach Huaheine before noon on the 26th. They kept standing off and on, on the east side till the 29th, during which time the natives brought off some refreshments, but they were very exorbitant. The wind veering south-south-east, they stood round the north end of the island, and brought to off Owarree harbour: the natives were perfectly friendly, and supplied them with every article except bread-fruit; but that was not to be procured. They were importuned to go into the harbour, which the captain thought proper to decline, as he did not intend to stay more than a day or two†.

Having recruited their stock of provisions, and added plenty of yams and sugar cane, (the wind coming to the eastward) they took leave of their friends on the 2d of August. They carried away from hence sixty hogs, weighing from 70 to 220 pounds each, besides fifty small pigs, ten dozen of fowls, and an immense quantity of cocoa-nuts, sugar cane, green plantains, taro, and yams. The people were all perfectly recovered, and had a plentiful stock of provisions, so that they had now little reason to be alarmed for their safety. At day-light on the 8th of August they saw a low flat island, bearing from east to north-east, seven or eight miles distance; it seemed to be well clothed with trees, but the weather being then squally, they had but an imperfect view of it. Captain Sever named it Penrhyn's Island; it

* Many of the natives had been carried off by the venereal disease, which arose from their connections with the crews of the *Resolution* and *Discovery*: nor were the women so free from this disease as formerly, especially the lower class; the superior sort no longer choosing to risk the chance of such an acquisition.

† In the evening an aged chief, named *Tutti*, whom Mr. Watts recollected to have often seen with Captain Cook, came on board; he confirmed the reports they had heard at Otaheite, and informed them, that after Omai had got perfectly settled, he found it necessary to purchase a great quantity of cloth, and other necessaries, for himself and family; for which his neighbours made him pay very extravagantly; by which means he expended much of his treasure. He died at his own house, as did the New Zealand boys, but Tutti could not give information of the parti-

culars. Upon Omai's decease, the Uliatea men came for his property, alledging that as he was a native of their island they had certainly a right to it. Tutti said they took away a considerable part of his remaining property, and particularly his musquets, the stocks of which they broke, and buried the powder in the sand; he added, that the conflict had been very fierce, and many were slain on both sides. The house which Captain Cook had built for Omai was still in existence, being covered by a very large one after the country fashion: it was taken possession of by the chief of the island. The horse was still living; the mare had foaled, but died soon afterwards: the foal died also. Thus were the benevolent intentions of his Majesty, and all the pains and trouble taken by Captain Cook to preserve the cattle, rendered absolutely fruitless.

is situated in $9^{\circ} 10'$ south latitude, and $202^{\circ} 15'$ east longitude.

Nothing particular occurred till the 15th of September, when about noon they beheld the island of Saypan, bearing west half north, twelve leagues distant. The next day at noon, the south end of Tinian was four leagues distant. In the afternoon Mr. Anstis went in the small boat to sound a small bay round the south point of Saypan: he returned at seven o'clock, having found from ten to twelve fathoms water, about a mile off shore, but the ground hard. The next morning Mr. Anstis went on shore to endeavour to procure a bullock, many of which were seen grazing on the island of Tinian. In the evening he returned with the best part of a young bullock. At day-light the next morning, they made sail and stood in for the road, and at nine came to anchor in eighteen fathoms. Soon after they anchored a party was sent on shore to hunt*.

During their stay at Tinian, they were chiefly

occupied in filling water, the well not affording above three tons a-day; sometimes not quite so much: the water was a little brackish, but had not any unpleasant flavour. They found the hogs and fowls remarkably shy, and the cattle had entirely deserted the south part of the island: which is attributed to the alarm the Charlotte's people had occasioned among them.

They procured two bulls, eight hogs, and a dozen fowls. Limes and sour oranges were very plentiful. Cocoa-nut trees were numerous, but they were at a considerable distance from the beach. In addition to the animals of this place, several wild cats were observed. The country had nearly the same appearance as when Captains Byron and Wallis visited it, but many of the pyramidal pillars had fallen down, and others were much decayed. In their passage from hence to China nothing material occurred: on the 19th of October they anchored in Macao Roads.

SECTION III.

The Scarborough quits Port Jackson—Touches at Lord Howe's Island—Joins the Charlotte—Falls in with a large Shoal—Discovers a Number of Islands—Account of the Inhabitants—Canoes—Ornaments—Discovers Lord Mulgrave's Islands—Arrival at Tinian—Departure from Tinian—Arrival at Macao Roads.

THE Scarborough transport, Captain Marshall, quitted Port Jackson on the 6th of May 1788, to proceed towards China, to take in a cargo of teas at Canton for the East India Company. For several days they had very unsettled weather, accompanied with squalls and heavy rain. On the 16th they saw Lord Howe's Island; and the next day at noon, they found the Supply brig, the Lady Penrhyn, and the Charlotte, standing off and on under the island. At two o'clock the Scarborough was close in with the land, but the weather not permitting them to go on shore, they passed the night with standing off and on. Early the next morning, Captain Marshall sent a small party on shore at Lord Howe's Island, to endeavour to procure some turtle, as Lieutenant Ball in the Supply had

caught a large quantity there in February, but after the most diligent search not a single turtle was to be found: this excursion, however, was not wholly fruitless, for they brought off a quantity of fine birds, sufficient to serve the ship's crew for about three days.

Having procured what refreshments the island afforded, they made sail at four o'clock, with the Charlotte in company, and stood to the eastward. In the morning of the 22d they saw Norfolk Island. On the 30th they passed several large trees, and a number of Cocoa nuts floating in the water, but no land was to be perceived. Nothing of importance occurred till the 4th of June, when the water appearing coloured, they sounded and struck the ground in fifteen fathoms water: a man was sent to the mast head, who could plainly

* From this time to the 25th, they had light varying winds, with frequent showers over the land; and the flies

were found as troublesome as Captain Byron had represented them.

discern

discern a shoal running to the westward. Captain Marshall then altered his course, and stretched to the eastward, carrying soundings from fifteen to thirty fathoms water, over a rocky bottom, where in many places they could see ground distinctly. Running to the eastward, about eight miles, they found no bottom with seventy fathoms of line, which induced the Captain to tack and stand to the southward. Vast quantities of birds of different kinds were seen flying to the westward of the shoal, so that there may probably be an island near the situation. The east part of this shoal is situated in $173^{\circ} 12'$ east longitude, and the south part of it in $15^{\circ} 50'$ south latitude. How far it extends to the westward and northward is uncertain. Being now free from the shoal, they stood to the northward with a light easterly breeze*.

At seven they saw another small island, about six miles to the south-west of Hopper's Island; this was named *Henderville's Island*. About noon another island made its appearance; to which Captain Marshall gave the appellation of *Woodle's Island*, three miles north-west of Henderville's Island. Five large canoes came from Woodle's Island towards the ship; but when they were within about four miles of it, they turned back and stood for the shore. The wind blowing off the land prevented them from going near enough, to enable them to give a satisfactory description of these islands; they seemed, however, to abound with cocoa-nut, and a variety of other trees. At three in the afternoon, the Scarborough being within three miles of Henderville's Island, they sounded with sixty fathoms of line, but got no ground. Several large fires were seen upon the shore, and multitudes of the

* At six in the morning of the 18th they saw an island right a-head: they sounded when about six miles from the land, but got no bottom with sixty fathoms of line. Two or three canoes came towards the ship, with two or three men in each, but they soon put back again, and made for the shore. The Captain named it *Hopper's Island*.

† When the canoes were pretty close to the ship, the captain shewed them some little nails, a quart bottle and a looking-glass, all of which they were anxious to obtain; but they could not be prevailed on to bring their canoes alongside. Three of them jumped out, and swam to the ship, when a rope was given them to take hold of, but they would not consent to come on board. On receiving their little presents they laughed immoderately, and gave the captain some beads and animals teeth, which they wore about their necks as ornaments; a circumstance which sufficiently

natives were assembled on the beach, many of them pointing at the ship with looks of wonder and astonishment. Soon afterwards nineteen canoes, with several men in each, made towards the ship, which induced Captain Marshall to lay to, expecting they would come alongside: many of them came within a quarter of a mile of the vessel, and there, taking down their sails, stopped to gaze at her, but they could not be prevailed on to venture alongside. Two of the canoes at length, however, made for the ship, and the captain ordered his people out of sight that the natives might not be intimidated †.

It is to be lamented that the captain did not survey these islands more minutely, as there is little doubt of their affording a variety of refreshments; the natives being all plump and fleshy, and seemingly enjoying a life of ease. The inhabitants are of a copper colour, stout and well made; they have long black hair, with black eyes and eye brows, and seem to have remarkably fine teeth. Their ornaments were necklaces, made of beads intermixed with teeth; and many of them had their faces painted white ‡.

After quitting these new discovered islands Captain Marshall stood to the northward, with a light breeze; and at five in the morning on the 20th, they saw an island bearing east-north-east, eight miles distant: it seemed very low, and almost level with the water. When Captain Marshall got close in with the land, he perceived it to be a chain of islands extending from south-east to north-west for the distance of about thirty leagues. Having a favourable breeze, they run along the islands, about three miles from shore, when several canoes came after the ship, but none of them would venture nearer. Multi-

proves that they have some idea of barter. Soon after these islanders took their leave, and returned towards the shore: and Captain Marshall made sail and stood to the northward.

‡ If we may give an opinion of these people from the construction of their canoes, they seem to possess no inconsiderable share of ingenuity: many of their canoes are capacious enough to contain sixteen or twenty persons; they are narrow and well calculated for fast sailing, and yet there is not the least danger of their oversetting, as they are steadied with an outrigger resembling a ladder on the weather side. Though these vehicles always sail on the same side, they are so contrived as to sail one way as well as the other, and the Indians manage them with great dexterity. From what little Captain Marshall saw of these people, they appeared to be lively, ingenious, and expert.

tudes

tudes
to gra
induce
signs
venture
on sho
the cre
pruden
it woul
few me
whose
unacqu
ed to be
almost
describ

There
freshme
made sa
in the
distant:
In runn
had seen
tending
to the
southern
Allen's I
third To
Island;
northern
along the
the land
but coul
traordin
abound
the tim
Island,
ceive the
large fir
all the
23d, mo
west*.

Severa
shore, w
lotte, C
Scarboro

* By tw
land, wh
nearly fro
borough
sounded w
bottom.

the shore,
Vol.

many of
of wonder
nineteen ca-
de towards
Marshall to
alongside:
of a mile
in their sails
could not be
Two of the
for the ship,
out of sight
ated †.
tain did not
as there is
ty of refresh-
p and fleshy
e. The inhab-
put and well
with black
e remarkably
re necklaces,
h; and many
ite †.

vered islands
ward, with a
orning on the
ast-north-east,
y low, and al-
When Captain
land, he per-
extending from
ance of about
le breeze, they
ee miles from
after the ship,
earer. Multi-

Soon after these
owards the shore:
od to the north.

e people from the
to possess no in-
their canoes are ca-
ty persons; they
tling, and yet there
tting, as they are
adder on the wea-
s sail on the same
ay as well as the
th great dexterity.
of these people,
nd expert.

tudes

tudes of the natives soon assembled on the beach, to gratify their curiosity in gazing at her: this induced Captain Marshall to invite them, by signs, to approach, but none among them would venture. He was half inclined to send his boat on shore to procure some refreshments, many of the crew being laid up with the scurvy; but he prudently declined taking such a step, thinking it would be hazarding too much to have sent a few men amongst an ignorant multitude, with whose character and disposition they were totally unacquainted. Within the islands there appeared to be some fine harbours. The natives were almost black: their canoes resemble those already described.

There being no probability of procuring refreshments from these people, Captain Marshall made sail, and at noon on the 22d they saw land, in the direction of north by east, eight miles distant: it appeared low, flat, and full of trees. In running along shore, they found the land they had seen consisted of six different islands, extending from north by east, to south by west to the length about of fifteen leagues. The southernmost island, Captain Marshall named *Allen's Island*; the second *Gyllespy's Island*; the third *Touching's Island*; the fourth *Clarke's Island*; the fifth *Smith's Island*; and the northernmost *Scarborough Island*. They ran along these islands about three miles distant from the land, and kept the lead continually going, but could get no bottom, which seemed very extraordinary, as the land is low. These islands abound with cocoa-nut and cabbage trees. By the time they were a-breast of Scarborough Island, it was so dark that they could not perceive the land; but the Indians made two very large fires, which enabled them to get clear of all the islands. At six in the afternoon of the 23d, more land appeared, bearing north to north-west*.

Several large canoes now put off from the shore, with eight or ten men in each. The Charlotte, Captain Gilbert, was in company with the Scarborough; she was indeed at some distance a-

* By two the next day, they were within two miles of land, which they found to be a chain of islands, extending nearly from east to west for twenty-five leagues: the Scarborough coasted along within a mile of the land, and often sounded with an hundred fathoms of line, but could get no bottom. At the same time they saw the water break near the shore, and a multitude of the natives were collected on

stern, and the canoes all went along-side her. Several of them went on board the Charlotte, and ran fore and aft, stealing every thing they could find; one of them got hold of the pump-break, and was attempting to jump over-board with it, but was prevented by one of the sailors. They seemed to be very civilized, and all of them had coverings round the waist: they wore necklaces made of beads, to which a cross was suspended, like those worn by the Spaniards. Captain Marshall distinguished these islands by the name of *Lord Mulgrave's Islands*, in honour of Lord Mulgrave.

Lord Mulgrave's Islands abound with cocoa-nut-trees, and they observed remnants of oranges, and many other sorts of fruit. These Islanders had no offensive weapons: it therefore seems probable that they live on friendly terms with each other. At noon on the 27th they saw land, which they found to be a cluster of small islands, but no appearance was seen of their being inhabited. At noon on the 28th more islands were observed: two large canoes were lying on a sandy beach, but they did not perceive any inhabitants. At five in the afternoon more islands presented themselves, which were supposed by Captain Marshall to be those which Lord Anson discovered, and named *Barbadoes Islands*.

Having now a clear navigation, they prosecuted their voyage without meeting with any thing remarkable till the thirty-first of July, when at six in the morning they saw the island of Saypan, bearing west by south six leagues distant. At day-light the next morning, Captain Marshall sent his boat on shore, with a small party to procure refreshments, and look for anchorage. At two the boats returned, loaded with cocoa-nuts and cabbage; but they could find no place for a vessel to anchor in, the water being very deep close to the land, with a rocky bottom, and so heavy a surf that the boat did not land without much difficulty.

Not meeting with a harbour at Saypan, the Captain resolved to proceed to Tinian; where he might come to anchor, and put his sick people

the beach. About three, a small canoe with two men in her came off from the shore, but when they were at the distance of a hundred yards from the vessel, they put back again as fast as possible, seemingly much terrified: these men had skins wrapped round their waists, and their hair was decorated with shells and beads.

on shore, having at that time fifteen men laid up with the scurvy, and the rest of his crew were remarkably weak and feeble. The wind however, was so variable, that they did not reach the south-west side of that island till the 4th of August, in the afternoon, when they anchored in twenty-five fathoms water, and soon afterwards the Charlotte came to anchor near the Scarborough.

Early the next morning, Captain Marshall sent his sick people on shore, with a tent; and provisions to serve them for five days. After landing, the boat's crew walked about the island, and saw a great number of cattle, hogs, and fowls; but they only caught a calf, a hog, and a fowl or two, and loaded the boat with coconuts, oranges, and limes. On the 6th the chief mate went on shore to look for fresh water: he found out the well, mentioned in Lord Anson's Voyage, but it was perfectly dry, and no fresh water was to be found within two miles of the landing-place. The boat returned about noon; and towards evening the wind came round to south south-west, blowing very strong. The wind continuing to blow strongly into the bay, Captain Marshall sent his boat on shore on the 7th for the sick people, which they brought off,

but not without much difficulty and danger. In the mean time, every preparation was made for sea, the Captain being determined to get away as soon as the wind shifted to south, or south by east, so that they could clear the west part of the island. During the night they had a heavy gale at south west, when they expected every minute to be driven on shore: at day-break, however, the wind shifted to south south-east, on which they instantly cut the cable and ran clear of the land. Captain Gilbert cut both his cables and followed the Scarborough. Hardly had they cleared the land when the wind again shifted to the south south-west, and blew a hurricane; inasmuch that had the vessels then been at anchor, they must inevitably have been driven on shore. Though Captain Marshall's people had been so short a time on land, they received great benefit from it; their strength gradually returned, and they soon became perfectly restored.

Nothing extraordinary occurred in their passage from Tinian to China; they saw the Lema Islands in the evening of the 7th of September, and anchored in Macao-Roads the following afternoon.

SECTION IV.

Supplemental Account of Animals.

BIRDS.

BANKIAN COCKATOO.

THIS bird is about the size of the great white Cockatoo; the length twenty-two inches. The bill is very short, and of a pale lead-colour. The head-feathers are pretty long, and the bird is enabled to erect them into a crest at will. The colour of the head, neck, and under parts of the body are dusky brown, inclining to olive, darkest on the belly. The feathers on the top of the head, and back part of the neck are edged with olive; the rest of the upper part of the body, the wings, and tail are of a glossy black; the last is pretty long, and a little rounded at the end: the two middle feathers are entirely black; the others of a fine vermillion in the middle for about one third, otherwise black, the outer edge of the exterior feather black the

whole length. Legs black: this bird was met with in New South Wales. With the above specimen was sent the head of another, which differed in having a mixture of yellow in various parts of it.

RED-SHOULDERED PARRAKEET.

THIS is about the size of the Guinea Parakeet. The whole length ten inches and a half: the colour of the plumage is green, inclining to yellow on the under parts: the top of the head, the outer edge of the wing, and some parts of the middle of the same are deep blue: round the base of the bill crimson, having a mixture of the same on the fore part of the neck, except that between the bill and eye is a mixture of yellow: the shoulders and under parts of the wings are blood red; two or three of the inner quills,

quills, dusky, is very the base bill and South V

• THIS species, in length upper part with olive brown, with dusky tail is round narrow black, a upper part more or and breaks the bill is at the other go are ten or on their giving the legs are v claws br

THIS known: legs, and feet two from the horny ap species head an except the half wa rest; in neck are The ge brown a curled a are so sh spines w common nor is the are sto

quills, and the vent pale red: the greater quills dusky, fringed outwardly with yellow: the tail is very much wedged in shape; the feathers at the base chestnut, towards the end dull blue: the bill and legs brown. This species inhabits New South Wales.

CRESTED GOAT SUCKER.

• THIS is somewhat smaller than the European species, measuring about nine inches and a half in length. The colour of the plumage on the upper part is dark brown, mottled and crossed with obscure whitish bars: the quills are plain brown, five or six of the outer ones being marked with dusky white spots on the outer webs: the tail is rounded in shape, and marked with twelve narrow bars of a dusky white, mottled with black, as are the other whitish marks on the upper parts: the under parts of the body are more or less white; but the fore part of the neck and breast are crossed with several dusky bars: the bill is black, but the gape and within yellow; at the sides of the mouth are bristles, as in other goat-suckers; and at the base of the bill are ten or twelve erect stiff bristles, thinly barbed on their sides, and standing upright as a crest, giving the bird a remarkable appearance: the legs are weak, pretty long, and of a pale yellow; claws brown.

NEW HOLLAND CASSOWARY.

THIS is a species differing from that generally known: it is much larger, stands higher on its legs, and has a longer neck. Its length is seven feet two inches. The bill is not very different from that of the common Cassowary; but the horny appendage on the top of the head, in this species is totally wanting: the whole of the head and neck is also covered with feathers, except the throat and fore part of the neck about half way, which are not so well feathered as the rest; in the common Cassowary, the head and neck are bare and carunculated as in the turkey. The general plumage consists of a mixture of brown and grey, and the feathers are somewhat curled at the ends in the natural state: the wings are so short as to be useless for flight. The long spines which are observed in the wings of the common sort, are in this not to be perceived, nor is there any appearance of a tail. The legs are stout, formed like the Galleated Cassowary,

with the addition of their being jagged the whole of their length at the back part.

The bird is not uncommon in New Holland, several of them having been seen about Botany Bay, and other parts. That from which the plate was taken, was shot within two miles of the settlement at Sydney Cove, and the drawing made on the spot by Lieutenant Watts.

WHITE GALLINULA.

THIS bird resembles the purple Gallinula in shape, but is much superior in size, being as large as a dunghill fowl. The length from the end of the bill to that of the claws is two feet three inches: the bill is very stout, and the colour of it, the whole of the top of the head, and the irides red; the sides of the head round, the eyes are reddish, thinly sprinkled with white feathers. The whole of the plumage is white: the legs the colour of the bill. This species is common on Lord Howe's Island, Norfolk Island, and other places, and is a very tame species. The other sex, supposed to be the male, is mentioned to have some blue on the wings.

DOG OF NEW SOUTH WALES.

THE height of this species, standing erect, is somewhat less than two feet: the length two feet and a half. The head resembles that of a fox, the ears short and erect, with whiskers on the muzzle. The colour of the upper parts is pale brown, gradually growing lighter towards the belly: the hind part of the fore legs, and the fore part of the hinder ones white, as are the feet of both: the tail is somewhat bushy, but less so than that of the fox.

This species inhabits New South Wales: this specimen (a female) is now alive in the possession of the Marchioness of Salisbury, at Hatfield-house, having been sent over as a present to Mr. Nepean, from Governor Phillip. It has the manners of a dog, but is of a very savage nature: it laps like others dogs, but neither barks nor growls when offended or teased, but erects the hairs of the whole body like bristles, and seems furious: it is eager after prey, and delights in rabbits or chickens, raw, but will not touch dressed meat. Its fierceness and agility gives it greatly the advantage of other animals much superior in size; for, when a fine French fox dog was put to it, in a moment it seized him by

by the loins, and would have soon terminated his existence, had not help been at hand. With the utmost ease, it could leap over the back of an ass, and was near worrying one to death, having so fastened on it that the creature was not able to disengage himself without assistance. A second of these is possessed by Mrs. Lascelles, which is equal to it in point of ferocity; whence it may be presumed that this elegant animal will never become familiar.

SPOTTED MARTIN.

THIS is about the size of a large pole-cat, and measures from the tip of the nose to the setting on of the tail eighteen inches: the tail itself being nearly of the same length. The visage is pointed in shape, and the general colour of the fur is black, marked with irregular blotches of white: the tail, in particular, has an elegant appearance, and tapers gradually to the point. It inhabits the neighbourhood of Port Jackson.

KANGUROO RAT.

THE upper jaw of this species has two cutting teeth in front, with three others on each side of them, and at a distance one false grinder, sharp at the edge, and fluted on the sides; and close to these, two true grinders: the lower jaw has two long cutting teeth formed like those of the squirrel, with three grinders, corresponding with those in the upper jaw. The general shape of the body is not very different from that of the kangaroo; but the visage being strongly similar to that of the rat, and the colour not ill resembling that animal, it has obtained the name of the kangaroo rat. This is an inhabitant of New Holland.

THE LACED LIZARD.

THIS elegant species is in length, from the nose to the end of the tail, about forty inches. It has a few weak teeth in the mouth which are rather sharp, at about a quarter of an inch distance from one another: the tongue is long and forked: the general shape is slender; and the colour of the skin, on the upper parts, a brownish or blueish black, whimsically marked with golden yellow: in some parts this colour is beautifully mottled, like some kinds of laced work; in others, striped in various directions:

the under parts are yellow, crossed with single bars of black on the chin and throat, and double clouded ones on the belly: the toes are five in number on each foot, barred across with black and yellow, as the legs, and each furnished with a crooked black claw: the tail is longer than the whole of the body; towards the base, clouded and marked as the rest; but the further half banded with black and yellow, each band being about three inches broad, the end running to a very sharp point. This lizard is not uncommon at Port Jackson, where it has the reputation of a harmless species.

BAG-THROATED BALISTES.

THIS fish is frequently found on the coast of New South Wales: as the drawing was obtained without any description, the size of it is uncertain. The erect horn or spine is placed over, and a little behind the eyes, as in *Willoughby's Ichthyologia*, attended with two shorter ones directly behind the first: the long spine is straight, sharp at the point, and deeply sawed on the back part. It has also a deep pouch-like appendage beneath the throat, in shape like a jelly-bag. This fish is pretty common on the coast of New South Wales. When skinned it is said to be pretty good eating.

A FISH OF NEW SOUTH WALES.

THE ground colour of this fish resembles that of the British mackarel, marked with several round, blue and white spots. The figure of it is represented faithfully, from a drawing by Daniel Butler, sent from New South Wales, where it is in great plenty. It is said to taste like a dolphin.

PORT JACKSON SHARK.

THE length of this specimen was two feet: and it was about five inches and a half over at the broadest part, from thence tapering to the tail: the skin was rough, and the colour brown, palest on the under parts; over the eyes on each side a long ridge appears of about three inches; under the middle of which the eyes are placed: their teeth are numerous, consisting of at least ten or eleven rows: the forward teeth are small and sharp; those behind are blunter and larger, and several rows are perfectly flat at top, forming a kind of bony palate like that of the wolf-fish:

ossed with single
roat, and double
e toes are five in
cross with black
h furnished with
s longer than the
he base, clouded
the further half
each band being
end running to a
is not uncommon
the reputation of

LISTES.

and on the coast of
iving was obtained
ze of it is uncer-
e is placed over,
s in *Willoughby's*
o shorter ones di-
g spine is straight,
sawed on the back
ch-like appendage
like a jelly-bag.
the coast of New
it is said to be

TH WALES.

this fish resembles
marked with several
The figure of it
om a drawing by
ew South Wales,
It is said to taste

SHARK.

men was two feet:
and a half over at
ce tapering to the
the colour brown,
er the eyes on each
about three inches;
ne eyes are placed:
nsisting of at least
ard teeth are small
blunter and larger,
flat at top, forming
it of the wolf-fish:
the

the under jaw is furnished much like the upper: the breathing holes are five, as is usual in the genus: on the back are two fins, and before each stands a strong spine, as in the dog-fish: it has also two pectoral, and two ventral fins; besides an anal fin, placed at a middle distance between the last and the tail: the tail itself has the appearance of being divided, the upper part being much longer than the other.

This was taken at Port Jackson, but to what size it may usually arrive cannot be determined: perhaps not to a considerable one, the teeth appearing very complete. Some sharks, of an enormous size, have however been caught thereabouts.

WATTS'S SHARK.

THIS species seems hitherto to have escaped the researches of our Ichthyologists. The length of the specimen is nineteen inches; the head broad, and angular in shape; and the body rounded, and nearly equal in its dimensions for above half the length, when it suddenly grows small, and so continues to the end of the tail: the colour of the body is brown in different shades, and there are three rows of large pale spots, of an irregular shape, most of them dark within; one row passes down the middle, the others are on each side; and there are others less conspicuous below them. The mouth is placed nearer the end of the head than in most of the genus, and furnished in the front with nine sharp crooked teeth, in three rows, with plenty of small ones on each side. The eyes project considerably above the rest of the head, and are placed on the upper part of it: at the most forward part of the head are two cartilaginous appendages, with four others, nearly similar, on each side between the first and the breathing holes: the pectoral fins are placed beneath these last; the abdominal about the middle of the body; and the anal between the last and the tail: the under part is also finned from that place to the end: on the body are two fins, placed uncommonly far back.

This fish was met with in Sydney Cove, Port Jackson, by Lieutenant Watts, and supposed to be extremely voracious, in proportion to its size. It had lain on the deck for two hours, and seemed perfectly quiet, but on Mr. Watts's dog passing by, the shark sprung upon it with astonishing ferocity, and seized it by the leg;

VOL. I. NO. LVII.

nor could the dog have disengaged himself, had not the people come to his assistance.

GREAT BROWN KINGFISHER.

THE length is from sixteen to eighteen inches: the bill about three inches and a half; the upper mandible brown; the under white, but brown at the base: the head has a sufficient quantity of feathers to form a crest, when erected; the colour whitish, and most of the feathers either tipped or crossed with black: the neck and under parts of the body are nearly the same in colour, crossed on the sides with dusky lines; over the forehead the colour is dusky brown, nearly black, passing backwards in an irregular shaped streak a considerable way behind the eye: the back and most of the wing, is black or dusky, but the middle of the wing is of a shining blue green, as well as the lower part of the back and rump: the tail is barred with pale rust colour and black, inclining to purple, and towards the end whitish: the legs of a dusky yellow, the claws black.

This species inhabits various places in the South Seas, but the specimen from which this description was taken, was sent from Port Jackson.

BLACK FLYING OPOSSUM.

THE following is supposed to be a new animal of this genus. The length from the tip of the nose, which is pointed in shape, to the root of the tail, is twenty inches; of the tail itself twenty-two inches, at the base quite light, gradually increasing to black at the end: the width across the loins sixteen inches: the ears large and erect: the fur is of a richer texture than that of the sea-otter of Cook's River: on the upper parts of the body it appears at first sight of a glossy black, but on a closer inspection, there is found a mixture of grey: the under parts are white, and on each hip a tan-coloured spot appears, almost as large as a shilling: at this part the fur is thinnest, but at the root of the tail it is so rich and close that the hide cannot be felt through it. The fur is also continued to the claws. The jaws are furnished with teeth, placed as in some others of this genus; in the upper jaw forwards are four small cutting teeth, then two canine ones, and backwards five grinders: the under jaw has two large cutting teeth, like the Vulpine Opossum, five grinders, with no

S K

inter-

intermediate canine ones. The fore legs have five toes on each foot, with a claw on each; the hinder one four toes, with claws, and a thumb without a claw, enabling the animal to use the foot as a hand.

This beautiful quadruped inhabits New South

Wales: the specimen from which this account is taken, is a male, and the property of Henry Constantine Newell, Esq. The fur of it is of so valuable a texture, that should it hereafter be found in plenty, it may probably become a very valuable article of commerce.

A Journal of the Transactions at PORT JACKSON, and NORFOLK ISLAND; with the Discoveries which have been made in NEW SOUTH WALES, and in the SOUTHERN OCEAN, since the Publication of PHILLIP'S VOYAGE. Compiled from the Journals and other Official Papers of GOVERNORS PHILLIP and KING, and LIEUTENANT BALL; and the Voyages from the sailing of the Sirius in 1787, to the Return of that Ship's Company to England in 1792. Abridged from the Historical Journal by JOHN HUNTER, Esq. Post Captain in his Majesty's Navy.

SECTION I.

The Ships destined for the Voyage rendezvous at the Mother Bank—Proceed from thence—The Convicts on board attempt an Insurrection—The Ringleaders punished—Arrival at Santa Cruz—A Convict attempts to escape—Description of Laguna, &c.—Departure from Santa Cruz—Arrive at Rio Janeiro—Description of the City of St. Sebastian.

TO remove the inconvenience which this country had suffered from the gaols being exceedingly crowded with prisoners, who had been sentenced to transportation, government made choice of a spot on the east coast of New Holland, to be formed into a settlement, for the salutary purpose of receiving such convicts. The east coast of New Holland had been discovered and explored by Captain Cook, in his first voyage round the world, and by him denominated New South Wales. Botany Bay, the place which he entered with his ship, was thought entitled to the appellation of a harbour, and recommended by him, in the narrative of his voyage, as a convenient place for a settlement: it was therefore fixed upon by government for that special purpose.

On the 25th of October, 1786, his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, then in the dock at Deptford, was commissioned, and the command of her conferred upon Arthur Phillip, Esq.: the *Supply* was also

put into commission, and Lieutenant Henry Lidgbird Hall was appointed to command her.

The *Sirius* was about 540 tons burthen, mounting twenty guns, and was a very capacious convenient vessel. The *Supply* armed tender was a brig, a strong firm roomy little vessel, mounting eight guns: the complement of the *Sirius* was one hundred and sixty men; that of the *Supply* was fifty-five. These two ships were intended, after having escorted the convicts to the place of their destination, to remain in that country to be employed in the public service, till they should be relieved by other vessels from England*.

On the 30th of January, 1787, two transports, one freighted with male, and the other with female convicts, dropt down to Long-Reach, and afterwards proceeded to Gravesend, where they were joined by the *Sirius* the next day, and advanced to the Nore: here they also anchored associating with the armed tender *Supply*. On

* On the 9th of December, the ships being ready to fall down the river, they slipped the moorings and sailed to Long-Reach, where they took in the guns and ordnance stores. The peculiar nature of the service required from the *Sirius* being considered, another officer, bearing a certain rank, was thought necessary to command the ship in the absence of Captain Phillip, whose presence, it was sup-

posed would be requisite wherever the seat of government in that country might be fixed. In consequence of which Captain John Hunter received a commission appointing him second Captain of the *Sirius*, with the rank of Post Captain, with power to command her in the absence of the principal Captain.

his account is
ty of Henry
ur of it is of
d it hereafter
bly become a

he Discoveries
the Publication
of GOVERNORS
f the Sirius—A
the Historical

ence—The Con-
Santa Cruz—A
Cruz—Arrive

utenant Henry
command her.
burthen, mount-
capacious con-
ed tender was a
vessel, mount-
of the Sirius
en; that of the
o ships were in-
e convicts to the
remain in that
ublic service, till
er vessels from

787, two trans-
e, and the other
o Long-Reach,
avesend, where
he next day, and
ey also anchored
er Supply. On

seat of government
onsequence of which
ission appointing him
rank of Post Cap-
the absence of the

the

the 4th of February they anchored in the Downs where they were detained by contrary winds till the 19th, when they put to sea, and arrived at the Mother Bank on the 21st, where the transports and store-ships were directed to rendezvous.

On the 9th of May, Captain Phillip arrived at Portsmouth, and came on board the following day to issue signals and orders to Lieutenant John Shortland, the agent for transports, to be delivered to the several masters of the ships. On the 13th they sailed from the Mother-Bank, in company with the Supply armed tender, and six transports, having on board 600 male, and 200 female convicts, together with three store-ships, containing provisions and other stores. On board the ships conveying convicts, 160 marines, with their proper officers were embarked: a surgeon, and three assistants were also embarked in the transports. The wind being easterly, they ran out at the Needles, and were accompanied by the Hyena, Captain de Coursey, who had received orders to see them a hundred leagues to the westward. They had light breezes, with pleasant weather, down the channel, but had the mortification to observe that two of their transports sailed very indifferently; one of which the Hyena towed two or three days.

They experienced variety of weather till the 21st, when Captain Phillip put his dispatches on board the Hyena; a report was soon after made from one of the transports, that a discovery had been made of an intended insurrection among the convicts in that ship; in which, if they succeeded, they were to have quitted the fleet in the night, and afterwards employ the ship as they might determine among themselves. A few days previous to this project, Captain Phillip had humanely directed that many of the male convicts should be disencumbered of some irons with which they were embarrassed, that they might more conveniently strip themselves at night, as well as be rendered more comfortable during the day. This indulgence had doubtless encouraged those, who were disposed to exert their ingenuity in so daring an attempt, to carry such a measure into execution. After the discovery of the plot upon very satisfactory evidence,

* While they lay in this road, the ships' companies as well as the convicts, were abundantly supplied with fresh provisions on the island; but vegetables and fruit were

two of the principals were brought on board the Sirius, severely punished, and sent on board another transport, laden with very heavy irons.

Intending to make the islands of Porto Sancto and Madeira, they were at a little distance from the former on the 29th in the evening; and the weather being hazy they shortened sail, that the convoy might not fall suddenly in with the land in the night. At day-light the next morning they saw the Deserters off Madeira, having passed the islands of Porto Sancto in the night. At five in the afternoon on the 1st of June, they made the Salvages. They had light airs and variable till the 23d, when the wind sprung up from the northward, and they steered for the island of Teneriffe. Some of the convoy being considerably astern, they brought to, and in the afternoon they bore away, and made the signal for the convoy to make all the sail possible, that, as they were strangers to Santa Cruz road, they might save day-light to the anchorage, which they effected, and had the whole convoy in before dark; at half after six in the evening, they anchored in fifteen fathoms water. The next morning Captain Phillip sent an officer to the governor, informing him who they were, and their business at that island; but previous to their anchoring, some officers came on board the Sirius for the very same purpose, a ceremony which is seldom neglected. The officer who had been dispatched to the governor, brought a very polite reply from him, signifying his sincere wishes of affording him every refreshment which could be procured. Captain Phillip then waited on the governor, who politely expressed a wish that Teneriffe was capable of affording every refreshment which he might have occasion for.

Two days after this visit, the governor, who was then the Marquis of Branceforte, came on board himself, attended by several officers, when the usual interrogations were again proposed and answered. A few days after this visit from the governor, Captain Phillip was invited to dine with him, and to bring with him as many of the principal officers as could be spared from the ships. A party, consisting of about twelve, readily attended, and were entertained with the greatest hospitality and politeness*.

Before

somewhat scarce. During their stay here, the watering of the ships was a material consideration, and they were often employed in this necessary business on board the transports
after

Before they were ready to put to sea, a party agreed to make a short excursion into the country; for this purpose they set out early one morning, accompanied by two merchants who were residents of this place. The name of these two worthy gentlemen were Mr. Little and Mr. Armstrong. They had previously provided horses, mules, provisions, &c. and meant to proceed towards the city of Laguna, the capital of the island. The distance was estimated at three miles from Santa Cruz, but from the badness of the roads, and other causes, it appeared to be not less than twice that distance. The party travelled through many of the streets at Laguna, which are regular, and cross each other at right angles; the buildings being in general very good. There are two parish churches, two nunneries, and three or four convents, built in a quadrangular form. A conduit in the middle of the town supplies the inhabitants with water, issuing from cavities in several parts of a hill, and conveyed down the declivity in stone-troughs.

The plain on which Laguna stands is pleasant and fertile: it being now the height of the harvest, the people were engaged in cutting down their corn, which seemed to yield abundantly: the environs seem also to be enriched with many pleasant gardens. The governor has a palace here, but generally resides at Santa Cruz; and this city, once the residence of persons in authority, seems now deserted by persons of distinction. Our navigators lamented that the time proposed for transacting their business here, would not admit of a visit to the Peak, a mountain which has employed the pen of many writers.

The bay of Santa Cruz is sheltered by several small batteries of four or five guns each, placed at certain distances round the bay; but their

after dark. A convict, one evening, while several of the crew were engaged in clearing a boat of water, contrived to slip into a small boat, and dropped away from the ship unperceived. Getting to some considerable distance, he exerted himself at his oars, and got on board a foreign East India ship then lying there, and offered himself as a seaman; but his services were refused. Expecting to be immediately missed, and sought after, he thought it expedient to quit that ship, and landed to the westward of the town, but on a place where there was much surf, and where the rocks behind him were inaccessible. The officer of the marines on board that transport, mustering the convicts as usual at setting the watch, discovered that this man was missing, and information of it was immediately conveyed

principal fort is near the landing-place, and is a very strong work.

The town of Santa Cruz is irregular, the principal street having, by its form, being almost entitled to the appellation of a square: the governor's house, situated at the upper end, has more the appearance of a country inn than the palace of a governor. The skirts of the town seem deserted, and nearly in ruins.

In the afternoon of the 9th of June, the transports having completed their watering, the signal was made from the Sirius, for all persons in the fleet to repair instantly to their respective ships; and on the 10th they put to sea with a light air of wind from the land. They steered to the south-west till they were near the meridian of the island of Sal, the northernmost of the Cape de Verde Islands, and then sailed a little to the eastward of it. At nine in the morning of the 19th they saw the island, bearing north-west by north, distant four leagues. They steered about three or four miles wide of the reef, which extends from the north-east part of Bonavista, and runs in a south-east direction three or four miles. It was about two o'clock in the afternoon when they made the island of Bonavista, and consequently they had a good opportunity of seeing the reef; from which Captain Cook says, in one of his voyages, he was in great danger, and that it lies off the south-east part of the island; in which last assertion he certainly appears to have made a mistake.

At twelve o'clock at night, they intended to anchor in Port Praya bay, in the island of St. Jago: the object for which they endeavoured to get into this bay, was a supply of fresh provisions. Fresh gales of wind, heavy showers of rain, with frequent calms, and other peculiar circumstances, very much retarded their progress. On

to Captain Phillip, who next morning sent an officer from the Sirius to the governor, requesting his assistance in recovering the deserter. Pursuant to orders issued by him for that purpose, the boat that had been taken away was perceived the next morning beating on the rocks to the westward of the town: and when the messengers were rowing to pick her up, they saw the fellow endeavouring to hide himself in the cliff of a rock, not having been able to ascend the precipice. The officer presented a musquet at him, which so far intimidated him that he consented to come down rather than be shot at. He was taken on board, punished, and carefully confined in heavy irons. He was got to sea, when he only shared the fate of the other convicts.

ace, and is a

lar, the prin-
ing almost en-
re: the gover-
end, has more
than the palace
he town seem

June, the trans-
fering, the sig-
r all persons in
their respective
t to sea with a

They steered
near the meridian
ernmost of the
en sailed a little
in the morning
bearing north-
leagues. They
les wide of the
orth-east part of
th-east direction
out two o'clock
de the island of
ney had a good
ef; from which
s voyages, he was
ies off the south-
ich last assertion
ade a mistake.

ey intended to an-
island of St. Jago;
deavoured to get
fresh provisions.
showers of rain,
r peculiar circum-
eir progress. On

ng sent an officer from
ng his assistance in re-
o orders issued by him
d been taken away was
on the rocks to the
the messengers were
fellow endeavouring to
not having been able to
resented a misquet at
that he consented to
at. He was taken to
fined in heavy iron and
ared the fate of the other

the

the 14th of July, however, in the evening, they crossed the equator in longitude $26^{\circ} 10'$ west: and with $5^{\circ} 00'$ of west variation. They did not see any thing till the 3d of August, when they made Cape Frio, and at twelve o'clock at night were right abreast of it. This Cape is an island distant about three miles from the main land: they never approached the shore nearer than five or six miles, at which distance they had thirty fathoms water over a soft bottom.

On the 6th of August a light breeze from the sea conducted them within the islands which lie off the harbour, where they anchored for the night, with the convoy, in fourteen fathoms water, the island of Raz bearing south by west two miles, and Rodondo, a low flat island, south-west by south. The next morning an officer was dispatched to the town, to inform the viceroy who they were, and their reason for having visited that port. On the 7th, with a breeze from the sea, they weighed, and, with convoy sailed into the harbour. As they passed Fort Santo Cruz, they saluted with thirteen guns, and were complimented by an equal number from the fort: they anchored off the town in seventeen fathoms water, over a good soft bottom.

The persons on board the ships had been remarkably healthy: only sixteen had been buried since their departure from England. Six only of that number had died between Teneriffe and this place. Many of those whom they had lost since they left Portsmouth, had been lingering under diseases with which they were afflicted when they embarked, and whose dissolution might naturally have been expected. On their arrival here, an inconsiderable number were labouring under fevers, or other serious complaints, except between 20 and 30, in whom symptoms of the scurvy had lately appeared.

* When our navigators had been about ten days in this harbour, they found the convicts in a much healthier state than when they left Spithead. Much pains had been taken, by some persons who were averse to the expedition, to propagate a report that, whilst lying at the Mother Bank, they were so sickly that eight or ten of them were buried every day. Among such a number of people confined in small ships, to have no sick on board can hardly be expected, but there are few country towns in England, which contain 1500 inhabitants, (the number which those ships had on board) which have not frequently as many sick as they had, when the report was circulated that they buried such numbers daily.

† The 21st of August being the anniversary of the Prince

Fresh provisions and vegetables were procured on their arrival, and served to the ships' companies, marines, and convicts. Even the convicts had a proportion of oranges with their other provisions, that fruit being remarkably cheap and plentiful. It was indeed no uncommon circumstance for those who passed in the country boats, to throw a shower of oranges among the people in the ships*.

Here the navigators received every thing that was civil and polite; and a few days after their arrival, all the officers were introduced to the viceroy, who seemed anxious to render them every service, consistent with his instructions from the court of Portugal. It is customary, when any foreign ships are in this harbour, for a guard boat to attend night and day, in order to prevent smuggling; but that ceremony was omitted in favour of our navigators, every officer being permitted to walk where he pleased, except in the forts; a liberty never granted to strangers. No sentinel was placed in any of the king's boats at landing, nor in those of the transports; a mark of civility highly gratifying to every officer in the fleet. But when the masters of the transports went on shore, a non-commissioned officer from their guards accompanied them wherever they went, and a private soldier attended their sailors†.

On the 3d of September, the watering of the convoy having been completed, and every other necessary preparation made, a signal from the Sirius required every person to repair immediately on board their respective ships; the signal for unmooring being exhibited at the same time; and on Tuesday the 4th, with a light breeze from the land, they weighed with the convoy. A singular compliment was afterwards paid: when the Sirius had got within half a mile of Fort Santa Cruz, that castle saluted them with

of Brazil's birth-day, our navigators displayed the flag of Portugal, at sun-rise, at the fore-top mast head, and that of their own nation at the main and mizen. At half an hour after ten, the viceroy received compliments upon that occasion; when most of the officers of the fleet landed, and attended in procession to pay their *devoirs*, and were received with particular attention. They were the first company admitted into the levee room; after them followed the clergy, military, and the civilians. As soon as our navigators had entered the room, a signal was made from the palace, and the fort began to fire. The commanding officer left on board the Sirius, had received orders to salute, after the fort had fired two guns, which was particularly attended to, and a salute of twenty-one guns was given.

twenty-one guns, which they answered with the same number. This was supposed to be particularly meant as a suitable return, to the attention paid by his Majesty's ship to the birth-day of the Prince of Brazil.

The harbour of Rio de Janeiro may be known by a remarkable hill at its entrance, called Pao d'Asucar, from its resemblance to a sugar loaf: another hill to the south-east, is by some named the False Sugar-loaf, but it more resembles a church with a short spire steeple. The land to the westward of the harbour is high and broken, and generally so covered with clouds that the true figure of it cannot be discovered. Right off the harbour lie several small islands, from which a few rocks project.

This harbour, which is very extensive and commodious, has many convenient bays in it, where a great number of ships may be secure from any bad weather. The town is large, populous, and well built, but standing on ground which was formerly swampy, and surrounded with hills of an immense height, its situation is supposed to be unhealthy. Some few of the

streets are wide, most of the others are very narrow. The square or parade is large, and the building round it commodious: the south side of the square is ornamented with the viceroy's palace. The churches here are noble structures, and their decorations extremely rich: they seem also to have excellent organs in them. The mechanics here carry on their business in distinct parts of the town, particularly streets being appropriated to particular trades: one street is inhabited by tailors, another with shoe-makers, a third with carpenters, &c.

As far as forts and guns can give strength to any place, the city of Saint Sebastian may be considered as strong. The island of Cobres, which overlooks it, lies close to the town, and has a strong work upon it, with a good depth of water off it. The annual exports from Rio de Janeiro are 3200 arrobes of gold, which are sent to Portugal, and of which the king has a tenth part; 6,000 cases of sugar, weighing 40 arrobes each; 5,000 cases of rice, and 1500 casks of rum, each cask containing eight almudas.

SECTION II.

Anchor in Table Bay—Refreshments—Depart from the Cape of Good Hope—Captain Phillip quits the Sirius, to proceed on the Voyage in the Supply—The Sirius arrives in Botany Bay, and finds the Supply at Anchor there—The Bussole and Astrolabe arrive—Quit Botany Bay, and anchor in Port Jackson.

FOR the two first days after leaving Rio de Janeiro, they had light and variable winds; after which it veered to the north-east and freshened. The weather then became dark and cloudy, attended with lightning and rain. On the 19th they saw several Pentada birds. On the 29th thick hazy weather during the night induced the convoy to mistake the course, and they were found at day-light scattered and to leeward. They bore down, and made the signal for closing. Nothing important, or worth relating, happened on this passage. On the 12th of October, expecting every hour to make the land, and the weather being hazy, with a strong westerly wind, at midnight they made the signal and brought to: at six the next morning they saw the land, distant ten leagues; at noon the entrance of Table Bay bore east three leagues. At the distance of about eight leagues from the land, the

Supply being ordered for the sternmost of the convoy, Lieutenant Ball took that opportunity of sounding; and at the distance before mentioned he had 115 fathoms, over a black sandy bottom; and at five leagues distance he had 90 fathoms, sand with soft stone.

On the 14th of October, at five in the evening, they anchored, with all the convoy, in Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope, and the next morning saluted the fort with thirteen guns, which was answered by an equal number.

Table Bay being the last port at which our navigators could touch for refreshment during their voyage, such articles as they required for present consumption, and for stocking the intended settlement, were applied for in such quantities, as they could find room to receive on board the different ships. Little less than ten days elapsed before they obtained from the

council the necessaries they required in sufficient quantities*.

For the first eight days they had fresh gales from the south south-east, and sometimes at south, which, with a large sea, so much distressed their cattle, that they were afraid they should lose some of them. On the 25th Captain Phillip embarked on board the Supply, to proceed singly in that vessel to the coast of New South Wales, where he expected to arrive a fortnight or three weeks before them, as some of the convoy sailed very heavy. He took with him from the Sirius, Mr. Philip Gidley King, second lieutenant, and Lieutenant Dawes of the marines: several carpenters, sawyers, and smiths were also put on board the Supply. And as a number of working people would be wanted in erecting buildings, &c. three of the best sailing transports, under the command of Lieutenant Shortland, the agent, were directed to quit the convoy, and proceed as expeditiously as they could to Botany Bay: Major Ross, the lieutenant governor, embarked in one of those transports; the remaining transports and store-ships being left under the care of the Sirius.

The next day, after parting company, the Supply was seen from the mast-head, and the three transports were about seven miles distant; but, the wind shifting to the south-east in the night of the 27th, they stood to the southward, and saw no more of them. On the 16th they saw a quantity of sea-weed, which was supposed to come from the island of St. Paul, as they were now near its meridian; and only sixty leagues

* A few days before they sailed, having completed their stock of provisions, they embarked on board the Sirius six cows with calf, two bulls, a number of sheep, goats, hogs, and poultry. On board one of the transports were put three mares, as many colts, and a young stallion. A quantity of live stock was also taken on board the store ships. The officers on board the transports, who were to compose the garrison, had each provided themselves with as much live stock as they could find room for, not only to live upon, but eventually with a view of stocking their little farms in the country to which they were going. To effect this, every person in the fleet determined to live almost wholly on salt provisions. Having completed all their business at the Cape, they made preparations for sailing on the 12th of November; and on the 13th they weighed, with the whole convoy, and stood out of the bay.

† On the 1st of January, 1788, they had a heavy gale of wind from north north-west, with violent squalls and hazy weather: the sea was very high and irregular, and broke violently upon some of the ships. Their excessive rolling greatly distressed the cattle, which were now in a

from it. Whenever hazy weather was portended, the signal to close was always made, that heavy sailing ships might not run the risk of being separated from the Sirius†.

On the 6th, in the evening, a signal was made for the convoy to close, and to drop into the Sirius's wake, under an easy sail. Though the night was dark, it was clear in the horizon, and they could see two leagues a-head. This night the aurora australes were very bright, of a beautiful crimson colour, streaked with yellow, orange, and white; these colours continually changing their situations. They continued steering in for the land, and made it on the 8th at three in the afternoon. They stood on without the Mewstone, and steered in for the south cape, which they passed at three miles distance, leaving the rocks Swilly and Eddystone without them. Swilly is a high rock; and the Eddystone has, at a distance, the appearance of a sail: these two rocks are at the opposite ends of a ledge of sunken rocks, on which the sea appeared to break very high.

They had got to the eastward of the south cape when it became dark, and were within five miles of it when it fell calm: soon after a light air sprung up from east north-east, which with a large westerly swell, hardly gave the ships steerage way. Though their situation created some anxiety, the breeze favoured them, and they had the satisfaction to weather those rocks which seemed inimical to their purpose‡.

On the night of the 8th it blew very strong from north north-east, accompanied with thunder, lightning and rain: on the 10th they had

weakly state, and their condition much aggravated by their being frequently thrown with much violence off their legs, and exceedingly bruised. The sea now appeared to be covered with luminous spots, resembling lanterns, floating on its surface: the vessels were also attended by many sea-birds; such as albatrosses and gulls; a large black bird was also observed, which, in the motion of its wings, was not unlike a crow; but its neck and wings were longer than those of that bird.

‡ In the morning, at day-light, they bore west south-west three leagues. Here several animals were seen, playing alongside, which were at first supposed to be seals, but they appeared to be different from the animals so called which are met with on the coast of America and Newfoundland; they having a short round head, and these creatures had long heads, and tapered to the nose; they had long whiskers, and frequently rose so high that half the length of the body was out of the water, to enable them to look about them: from these circumstances they were imagined to be of the sea-otter kind.

two violent squalls from the north-west, with lightning, thunder, and rain. At noon on the 19th, they were abreast of Red-point, which is well determined by Captain Cook. About three leagues to the southward of Botany Bay, a range of whitish coloured cliffs appear on the coasts, which extend some distance farther south, and over these cliffs the land is moderately high and level. As soon as they had brought the entrance of the bay to bear north north-west, they brought to, and made their signal for the convoy to pass successively under the Sirius's stern; when they were informed that the entrance of the harbour bore north north-west seven or eight miles; which it was supposed they could not have seen before dark. The next morning being fair, with a south-east wind, they made sail for this opening, and, by signal, ordered the ships into the Sirius's wake. When the bay was perfectly open, they saw the Supply, and the three transports at an anchor; the former having arrived the 18th, and the latter the 19th. At eight in the morning of the 20th, they anchored, with the whole of the convoy, in Botany Bay, in eight fathoms water.

While the ships were sailing in, many of the natives assembled on the south shore, and assumed menacing postures; pointing their spears, and often repeating the words wara, wara. The Supply had not gained more than forty hours of them, and the three transports twenty. Soon after their arrival, the governor was attended by several of the officers to examine the south shore, in order to fix upon a spot for erecting some buildings. Very little fresh water could, however, be discovered, and no eligible spot presented itself for their purpose: the natives were found too shy to give them any necessary information. During the time they lay here, they sounded the bay, and found a considerable extent of anchorage in four, five, six, and seven fathoms water, but entirely exposed to easterly winds, and no shelter from those winds could possibly be procured in any part of the anchorage. They anchored on the north shore, off a sandy bay,

* The day after their arrival, the governor, with two other officers, embarked in three boats, and proceeded along the coast to the northward, intending to reach what Captain Cook has called Broken Bay, hoping to discover a better harbour, as well as a better country; for nothing seemed to recommend Botany Bay as a proper place on which to form an infant settlement. In this examination, a large opening about three leagues and a half to the northward of Cape Banks, was the first that attracted their notice. Though it had rather an unpromising appearance

which seemed to be as good a birth as any which the place afforded; Cape Banks bore east south-east, and Point Solander south south-east*.

Previous orders having been given from Captain Phillip to prepare for sea, the signal was made for the transports to get under way on the 26th. Two large ships were perceived this morning in the offing, standing in for the bay, under French colours: these ships had been observed two days before, but as the wind blew fresh from north-west, they could not get in with the land. A boat, with an officer, was sent to assist them in, and about an hour after, a breeze springing up from the south-east, they were safely anchored in the bay. Our navigators then got under way, and with the transports worked out of the bay, and anchored the whole convoy in Port Jackson the same evening.

The two strange ships were found to be the Bussolle and Astrolabe, which had sailed from Brest in June 1785, upon discoveries, and were commanded by Mons. de la Prouse. Mons. de l'Angole, who commanded one of these ships when they left France, had been lately murdered, with several other officers, by the natives at the Islands of navigators; though they had, till that unfortunate day, always appeared friendly and inoffensive. This accident happened when their launches were on shore filling water, on the day before their intended departure from those islands. Whilst they were employed in filling their water-casks, confiding in the friendly disposition of the inhabitants, the sailors had been inattentive to the keeping the boats afloat; a misunderstanding happened between the seamen and some of the natives, and a quarrel ensued: and the impossibility of moving the boats, exposed the officers and crews to the rage of the multitude, who attacked them with clubs and showers of stones; and would probably have killed every man among them, had there not been a small boat at hand, which picked up those whose had recourse to swimming for the preservation of their lives. Many of the na-

when they entered it, they had not gone far in before they discovered a large branch extending to the southward: into this they went, and found themselves perfectly land locked, with a good depth of water. They proceeded up for two days, carefully surveying every cove, or other place, which they found capable of receiving ships; the country was also particularly noticed, and found infinitely superior to that of Botany Bay. Approving the eligibility of this situation, the governor determined on fixing his residence here, and returned immediately to the ships.

tives were slain in this affray: and the loss said to be sustained by the ships was supposed to have been fourteen persons killed, including Captain de l'Angle, and some other officers; many others were wounded, and the boats were entirely de-

stroyed. But this statement of the transaction was only collected from loose hints dropped in conversation; as the French navigators did not appear disposed to speak upon that subject, it probably may not be accurate.

SECTION III.

Repeated Interviews with the Natives—Their Weapons, Ornaments, Persons, Manners, and Habitations—Animals—Departure of the Bussola and Astrolabe—A Gold Mine pretended to be discovered—The Fraud detected.

A FEW days after the arrival of Captain Hunter, with the transports in Port Jackson, he set off with a six-oared boat, and a small boat, to take a survey of the harbour. He took with him Mr. Bradley, the first lieutenant, Mr. Keltie, the master, and a young gentleman of the quarter-deck. While they were employed on this service, they had frequent meetings with different parties of the natives. The narrator of the voyage of the Endeavour mentions, that "at Botany Bay they had seen very few of the natives, and that they appeared a very stupid race of people, who were void of curiosity." But in the Voyage to New South Wales, it is declared that they were seen in considerable numbers, "and they appeared to be a very lively inquisitive race; they are a straight, thin, but well-made people, small in their limbs, but very active." They examined the covering of the Europeans with the greatest attention, and expressed the utmost astonishment at the sight of it, considering their apparel as several different skins, and the hat as forming a part of the head. They were much gratified with a few trifles that were given them, and always appeared cheerful and in good humour, dancing, and endeavouring to imitate the words and motions of our navigators.

They were generally armed with a lance, and had a short stick to assist them in throwing it. Their lances are usually about ten feet long; a shell at one end of the throwing stick, is intended for sharpening the point of it, and for various other purposes. It seems possible that a man upon his guard may easily parry, or avoid these lances, though it must certainly be acknowledged that they fly with wonderful velocity.

While they were employed on the survey of

the harbour, and going to land in the upper part of it, in order to ascertain a few angles, they were astonished to find the natives much more numerous than they had ever noticed before in any other place: they conjectured, from their numbers, that they might possibly be those who inhabited the coves in the lower part of the harbour, and who, on their arrival, had been so much alarmed at their appearance, that they thought it necessary to retire farther up. They appeared very hostile, and a great many armed men were upon the shore when they approached it, seeming by their motions to indicate vengeance against them if they should rashly presume to land. Finding their numbers still increasing; and their whole number, after leaving one man in each boat, amounted only to ten seamen, and four officers, with only three musquets, they contented themselves with making signs of friendship, and returned to the ship.

About two days after they appeared again in the same place, more completely armed for such an interview. They saw not so many of the natives as they had done before, though it is probable they were in the wood at no great distance; but having occasion to put on shore to cook some provisions for the boats' crew, a projecting point of land was chosen for that purpose, which the party could have defended against some hundreds of such people. Hearing some of the natives at an inconsiderable distance on the opposite shore, they called to them, and invited them, by a display of trifling presents, to come over to them, the distance not exceeding one hundred yards across. Shortly after, seven men embarked in canoes: they landed and advanced towards the Europeans without their lances. Their Captain then approached them, holding up both his hands,

8 M to

to convince them that he was unarmed: two officers also advanced in the same manner. They met them and shook hands; they were alarmed at beholding five marines, who were under arms near the boats; but they were ordered to ground their arms and stay by them. The natives then cheerfully seated themselves among the navigators by their fire, who invited them to partake of the repast, but they did not relish any of the food.

The captain was one day on shore, in another part of the harbour, cultivating friendship with a party of natives, when their numbers rapidly increased to about ninety men, all armed with a lance and a throwing stick, and many with the addition of a shield. On examining the shields, it appeared that some of them had been pierced quite through in several places: they also set up another shield at a small distance, and threw a spear at it which did not go through. One of the gentlemen then pulled out a pistol from his pocket loaded with ball, and fired through the thickest part of the shield, which astonished them exceedingly. The natives were very noisy, but did not seem disposed to be quarrelsome; several little presents were given them, which were gladly received, but, like the children, they were only pleased for the moment, for they were often found dispersed carelessly upon the beach.

* The women in general are not quite so thin as the men, though smaller limbed. When they were ordered to approach the navigators, about twenty men, who had not before made their appearance, sallied from the wood, equipped with lance and shield: they were painted with streaks of red and white all over the face and body, to give them a terrific appearance: some of them were painted with a tolerable degree of taste; others had circles of white round their eyes, and several had a horizontal streak across the forehead. The bodies of the men are much scarified, particularly on their breasts and shoulders: these scarifications are not in any regular form, but they are considerably raised above the skin, and are certainly considered as ornamental. The men, thus armed and decorated, drew themselves up in a line upon the beach, each having a green bough in his hand, as a symbol of friendship. Their disposition was as regular as that of any well disciplined troops could have been; and this party seemed wholly devoted to the service of the women, whenever any insult should be offered them. Two very stout armed men were also placed upon a rock, nor far from where the boat lay, as centinels. After a visit of about four hours this interview terminated, both parties appearing to be well satisfied with what had passed.

The general stature of the men, is from about five feet six inches, to five feet nine inches: they are thin, straight, and proportionably made, are very active, and walk erect.

While our navigators were engaged with this party, a number of women were observed, peeping from their concealments in the woods, but would not venture to gratify their curiosity by coming among them. It was intimated to the men, that if the women would come forward some presents would be made them. They desired to be the bearers of such presents to the women; but the trinkets were peremptorily refused, unless they came in person to receive them. At length an elderly man, who seemed invested with the principal authority, directed the women to advance, which they did immediately, and with all the good humour imaginable; and while the Europeans were decorating their heads with beads, linen rags, and some other trifles, they laughed immoderately, though at the same time trembling with the apprehension of danger*.

The remarkable softness of the rocks which encompass the sea coast here, is providentially rendered salutary. Whenever rocks are seen in this country, as well in the interior parts as on the shore, they are all found to be of the soft sandy kind, and contain plenty of such cavities or hollows.

In the woods, where the country is not very rocky, a piece of the bark of a tree is often observed, bent in the middle, and set upon the ends,

The women are not so tall, or thin, but they are, in general well made, their colour is a rusty black, resembling that of soot; but, some of the women are almost as white as a mulatto. Some few of the natives, of both sexes, have tolerably good features; but they have generally broad noses, large wide mouths, and thick lips. Their countenance altogether is far from prepossessing; and they are filthy in the extreme: they never clean their skin, but delight in smearing it with the fat of such animals as they destroy, and afterwards heighten it with mud or dirt. They are never washed, but when accident, or want of food obliges them to go into the water. Many of the men wear a piece of wood or bone, forced through the septum of the nose, which widens the nostril, and greatly spreads the lower part. Most of them had parted with the two foremost teeth on the right side of the upper jaw; and many of the women with the two lower joints of the little finger of the left hand. They have good teeth in general. Their hair is short, strong, and curly; and, having no method of cleaning or combing it, it always appears matted and filthy. The men wear their beards, which are short and curly. The men, women, and children, go entirely naked, and seemed to have no fixed place of residence, taking their rest wherever night overtakes them: sometimes they repose in such cavities in the rocks on the sea-shore which are capable of defending them from the rain, and not unfrequently make a good fire in them before they take absolute possession.

with

with
wind
habiti
Thes
tion
in h
anim
most
at the
and o
run i
fore,
in the
tree,
distan
an ou
mains
other
openin
deavo
down
death
Ou
the m
togeth
fixed
from t
the dif
of fod
of any
people
cept
then
In all
act un
All
appea
* W
have an
stars of
animals
the bo
saw, w
what th
remove
peared
ashes w
been
injured
They
grave
inches

red with this
erved, peep-
woods, but
curiosity by
nated to the
me forward
n. They de-
esents to the
emptorily re-
n to receive
who seemed
rity, directed
y did immedi-
r imaginable:
corating their
d some other
y, though at
pprehension of

rocks which
providentially
cks are seen in
or parts as on
be of the soft
f such cavities

try is not very
ee is often ob-
upon the ends,

ey are, in general
resembling that of
ost as white as a
both sexes, have
e generally broad
s. Their counte-
ing; and they are
their skin, but de-
h animals as they
ith mud or dirt.
ident, or want of
Many of the men
rough the septum of
greatly spreads the
with the two fore-
er jaw; and many
of the little finger
in general. Their
having no method
appears matted and
hich are short and
go entirely naked,
vidence, taking their
ometimes they repose
shore which are ca-
nd not unfrequently
absolute possession
with

with a piece set up against that end on which the wind blows. This hut supplies the place of a habitation, and will contain a whole family. These bark huts, (if they deserve that appellation) are intended for those who are employed in hunting the kangaroo, opossum, or any other animals which are to be found in the woods. As most of the large trees are hollow, and rotten at the heart, the opossum, kangaroo rat, squirrel, and other creatures when they are pursued, usually run into the hollow of a tree. In order, therefore, to make sure of them, when they find them in the tree, one man easily climbs even the tallest tree, by means of notches made at convenient distances: when he is arrived at the top, or where an outlet may be found for the animal, he remains there with a stick in his hand while another person below applies fire to the lower opening: the creature is now compelled to endeavour to make his escape, either upwards or downwards, but whichever choice he make, death is almost inevitable.

Our Europeans were induced to believe, that the natives associate in tribes of many families together; and it now appeared that they have no fixed residence, and that the tribe takes its name from the place of their general abode; for though the different families take different routs in search of food, they can be speedily assembled in case of any dispute with a neighbouring tribe. These people are not remarkable for their bravery, except when they are influenced by passion, and then they act, as all savages do, like madmen. In all their quarrels, however, they generally act under the tuition of a chief.

All the human race, which were observed here, appear to exist chiefly on what the sea affords,

* With respect to religion, it does not appear that they have any object of adoration: neither the sun, moon, nor stars occupy more of their attention than that of other animals. It is certain that they burn their dead: some of the boats' crew, when a survey was taking of Port Jackson, saw, when on shore, on a rising ground near the water-side, what they supposed to be a fresh grave. The earth being removed, a quantity of white ashes was found, which appeared to have been lately deposited there. Among the ashes were found part of a human jaw bone, and a small piece of the skull; both of which appeared to have been partly consumed by fire, but was not so much injured as to prevent its being perfectly recognized. They put these remains together again, and covered the grave up as before. The earth was not more than six inches under the surface of the ground, but what appeared on

and consequently the sea-coast is fuller of inhabitants than the interior part of the country. The men fish with a spear, or fish-gig, in the use of which they seem extremely dexterous. Our navigators relate that they have sometimes, in fine weather seen a man lying across a canoe, with his face in the water, and his fish-gig immersed, ready for darting: lying motionless in this manner, and having his face a little under the surface, he can distinctly observe the fish; which he could not do if his eyes were above, as the tremulous motion of the surface, occasioned by every light air of wind, would mislead his sight: in this mode they strike at the fish with so much certainty, that they seldom miss their aim. The women are generally employed in the canoes, with lines and hooks. Their lines seem to be manufactured from the bark of various trees. Their hooks are usually made from the mother of pearl of different shells, or the talons of birds. The men also dive for shell-fish, which they take from the rocks under water. Whatever they procure they throw on shore, where a person attends to receive it, and has a fire ready kindled for cooking. They had no other method of dressing their food than that of broiling, having not the least conception of boiling*.

The animal called the kangaroo, described in the voyage of the Endeavour, were found in great numbers: one of these was lately shot, which weighed 140 pounds; its tail was forty inches long, and 17 in circumference at the root: the flesh of it was thought as good as mutton. This animal has wonderful strength in its hind quarters, and in his endeavours to escape when surprized, springs from his hind legs, which are remarkable long, and leaps about six or eight

the top was raised to the usual height of the graves in England.

In the months of March and April the natives were much less numerous than they had been; but they were not, for that reason, supposed to have retired back into the interior parts of the country; for in all the excursions that had been made inland, very few had ever been seen. Perhaps they were gone farther to the northward, according to custom, as the cold weather approached, to seek a warmer climate by following the sun. In this practice they have another very powerful incitement, as well as the cheering warmth of the sun, which is, that the fish inclines to the northward when the cold weather comes on. This conjecture may account for Captain Cook's having seen so few natives while he lay in Botany Bay, as it was in April or May that he was there.

yards

yards at each bound, but his fore-feet are so very short that they never touch the ground in running. They have astonishing strength in their tail, which assists them greatly when they are attacked. In hunting one of these creatures, as soon as the hound seizes him, he turns, and catching hold with the nails of his fore-paws, he springs upon, and strikes at the dog with the claws of his hind feet, which are wonderfully strong, and tears him in such a manner, that the dog is obliged to be carried home from the severity of his wounds.

The opossum, which is found here in great abundance, differs from the American opossum, and partakes of the kangaroo in the strength of its tail, and the form of its fore-legs, which are extremely short in proportion to the hind ones: like that animal, it has the pouch or false belly, for the protection of its young; and its colour is nearly the same, but the fur is both thicker and finer.

With respect to the feathered tribe, the parrot seems most to prevail: birds are often met with here, with the head, neck, and bill of a parrot, and with the same variety of beautiful plumage on those parts for which that bird is here distinguished, and a tail and body of a different form and colour. Birds are also seen here with the legs and feet of a parrot, though the head and neck resembled a common sea-gull, and the wings and tail were like those of a hawk.

Besides those of the parrot tribe in this country, there are a very great variety; as the macaw, lory, cockatoo, and parroquets of different kinds and sizes, and clothed with the most gaudy plumage. The crow is common here, though it croaks in a manner different from those that are to be found in Europe: hawks of various sizes and colours are numerous here; and here are likewise pigeons and quails: but, among a great variety of smaller, hardly one of them was so accomplished as to have a pleasing note.

Of insects here are as great a variety as of birds, among which are the scorpion, centipede, spider, and ant; the ants are of various sizes, from the smallest known in Europe, to about an inch in length: some are black, others white, and others of a reddish colour; the bite of the latter is attended with a most acute pain for some time after the wound is inflicted. The spider spins its web in the woods between trees, and generally

spins them so remarkably strong, that it requires considerable force to break them. Upon bushes, where the web has been found hanging in clusters, a thin shell is seen, like that wherein the silkworm prepares its silk; and on opening it, a quantity of silk has been found within, in which a spider was also wrapped up.

Among the reptiles, there are snakes from the smallest size known in England, to the length of about eleven feet: they are also as thick as a man's wrist. Lizards, of different sizes, are also plenty.

The natives are sometimes accompanied by dogs, which appear to be domesticated like those of Europe. They are of the wolf kind, and of a reddish colour.

Many beautiful plants and flowers are to be found in this country, which may probably afford hereafter much entertainment to the curious in the science of botany. Our Europeans sometimes met with parsley, sorrel, and spinach, but not in sufficient quantities to afford relief to those who are afflicted with scorbutic complaints.

Our navigators were now in the middle of a wood, in which trees abounded, from the size of a man's arm, to twenty-eight feet in circumference; but they were so crooked, rent, or rotten, that hardly one in a dozen could be found serviceable; and it was an additional misfortune, that not a piece of timber had been then found that would float in water. The wood was so remarkably heavy, that when they found it necessary to cut down a large tree, in order to clear a certain piece of ground, it was found extremely troublesome to dispose of it, or remove it from place to place.

When our navigators arrived in this country, at nearly the end of January, in 1788, the weather was fine, though warm, and the sea and land breezes pretty regular. In February the air was sultry, with lightning, thunder, and heavy rain: this kind of weather continued about a fortnight, with a few short intervals of fair weather; a flash of lightning one night struck a tree by which a centinel stood, who received great injury; the tree was greatly rent, and some pigs and sheep in a pen at the foot of it, were all killed.

About the middle of the month, Lieutenant King of the Sirius, a master's mate, and a surgeon's mate, with four other persons from the ship, with a few men and women convicts embarked

barked on both
them for Norfolk
fell in with a
been discovered
the lieutenant
After having
on Norfolk
stores, Mr. B
called to exam
anchorage on
was coral rock
a reef, he came
upon a sandy
were also found
little accustomed
men were enabled
wanted of them

In March the
rines were this
and begin to
winter: the co
ploy certain he
for themselves.

The editor then from Mar turns back as to which time, a mentioned were their commande de la Perouse before sailed round long-boat, according remained two of they were hoisted 'The Bussola at Bay the 11th of

In the neigh-
that part of t
Phillip has fix
spots of tolera
of small exte
soil is rather s
wards the hea
extent of tole
may be cultivat
cleared of wood

• Shortly after a little distance up the trail, two men were found making their way to look after what business they could without receiving

barked on board the Supply, and she sailed with them for Norfolk Island. In their passage they fell in with a small island, which had not before been discovered; it lies in latitude $31^{\circ} 36'$ south: the lieutenant named it Lord Howe's Island. After having landed a party intended to remain on Norfolk Island, with their provisions and stores, Mr. Ball, in his return to Port Jackson, called to examine it more particularly. He found anchorage on the west side of it, but the bottom was coral rock. Landing, with his boat, within a reef, he caught a number of excellent turtle upon a sandy beach. A great variety of birds were also found on the island, which were so little accustomed to be disturbed, that the seamen were enabled to knock down as many as they wanted of them with their sticks.

In March the weather was variable: the marines were this month ordered to clear ground, and begin to build huts and barracks for the winter: the convicts were also directed to employ certain hours in the same necessary business for themselves.

The editor then gives an account of the weather from March to December inclusive; and returns back as far as the beginning of March, at which time, as the two French ships already mentioned were preparing to leave the coast, their commander was determined to visit Mons. de la Perouse before his departure. He therefore sailed round to Botany Bay, in the Sirius's long-boat, accompanied by a few officers. They remained two days on board the Bussolo, where they were hospitably and politely entertained. The Bussolo and Astrolabe sailed from Botany Bay the 11th of March.

In the neighbourhood of Sidney Cove, which is that part of this harbour in which Governor Phillip has fixed his residence, there are some spots of tolerably good land, but they are only of small extent: exclusive of these spots, the soil is rather steril, and full of stones; but towards the head of the harbour, a considerable extent of tolerable land presents itself, which may be cultivated without waiting for its being cleared of wood, as the trees stand wide of each

other, and have no underwood. The woods on the spot now mentioned, resemble those on a deer-park, as much as if they had really been intended for such a purpose; but the soil seems sandy and shallow, and will require much manure to improve it. The grass on it is about three feet high, very close and thick.

On the 6th of May, three of the transports, which were chartered by the East-India Company to load tea at China, sailed from this port; the Supply armed tender also sailed for Lord Howe's Island.

The carpenter of the Sirius, and his crew, had been regularly employed on shore since their arrival in this country, assisting in the erection of store-houses and other buildings. The ship's company were also variously occupied out of the ship upon the business of the settlement.

The scurvy having lately appeared more among the seamen, marines, and convicts, than when they were on board the ships, created some surprise, as they had enjoyed the advantage of being much upon the land, and of eating many vegetable productions; but the gentlemen of the faculty say this is no uncommon thing, when people are obliged to continue the same salt diet. About the middle of this month a convalescent, who had been sent from the hospital to gather wild spinach, or other plants, was murdered by two of the natives; one of them escaped, but was wounded: some of his cloaths being found, which were bloody, and had been pierced by a spear, it was supposed he had been killed.

Whether any of the natives of this country are cannibals, is a subject on which our navigators could not venture to speak positively; but the following circumstance may incline persons to believe, that, if the natives in general do not eat human flesh, that such a horrid custom is sometimes practised. One of the officers was present when two native children were interrogated respecting the quarrels of their countrymen: being asked how the chiefs disposed of those they killed, they mentioned some who burned and buried the slain, but they particularly named one who ate those he killed *.

* Shortly after two convicts, who had been employed a little distance up the harbour, in cutting rushes for thatching were found murdered by the natives. The officer, who went to look after those unfortunate men, and observe what business they had done, after hailing for some time, without receiving any reply, dispatched his boat's crew

upon the search, and at length perceived the two men, lying in different places, both dead; the brains of one having been beat out with a club or stone, and the other had many wounds, in one of which a part of a spear remained. Their tent, provisions, and cloaths remained, but most of the tools had been taken away.

The 4th of June being the birth-day of his Majesty, it was celebrated with every possible demonstration of loyalty*.

Large fires were often seen in this season on some of the hills; but for what purpose our Europeans could not for a long time conjecture. Several of the officers, observing one of these large fires on a hill at no considerable distance, they agreed to visit it, expecting they might probably be gratified with some funeral ceremony: taking their guns, they advanced towards the solemn scene, but, on their arrival, not a person was to be seen; still three or four acres of ground were perfectly in a blaze. They were then of opinion that these fires were made for the purpose of clearing the ground of the shrubs and underwood, that they might the more easily get at those roots, which constitute the chief of their subsistence during the winter. They usually took the advantage of windy weather for making such fires, that they may be spread the more extensively.

Proper officers were now directed by the governor, to ascertain, as near as possible, the number of canoes and natives within the harbour of Port Jackson: in the lower, or north part of the harbour, a considerable number of canoes were employed in catching fish: but, seeing they were observed, they quitted their work and fled, a circumstance which convinced our navigators that the persons thus employed were women, as they had always shewn a desire of avoiding them. The Europeans made every signal of friendship they could devise to gain the confidence of these females, but to no purpose: though there were many men upon the shore, who spoke to them in their usual familiar manner, and earnestly invited them to come on shore.

* In July our scorbutic patients were rather worse: the want of a little fresh food for the sick was much to be lamented, and fish were then remarkably scarce; and many of the natives were almost starving on account of that scarcity. They eagerly watched every opportunity of providing any kind of aliment for their present subsistence. If a bird was shot, and given to them, they instantly plucked off its feathers, put it on the fire without taking out the intestines, and ate the whole. Of small birds, they even devoured the bones and feathers.

† A report prevailed in the settlement that one Dailey, a convict, had discovered a piece of ground, in which a quantity of yellow ore was perceived, which, on inspection, appeared to have a certain proportion of gold in it. The gover-

Whilst the party were thus in conversation with them, some of them ventured within about twenty yards of the shore, and lying upon their oars, they observed one of the savages place his lance upon the throwing-stick, not supposing he had any idea of directing it among them, after having received so friendly an invitation to land; but they were now convinced that they only wanted them within their reach, as they did not appear to have any fire-arms. But, when they thought they could throw the lance with effect, it was discharged, and went about six feet over the heads of the Europeans. The commander instantly snatched up his gun, which he was resolved to discharge among them, but it missed fire: Mr. Johnston then discharged his into the bushes to which they repaired for shelter; but as it was only loaded with small shot, it could hardly have done any very serious injury. What could have been their provocation to engage in so treacherous a business! for nothing hostile or mischievous appeared in the conduct of our navigators.

On a comparison of the accounts, taken according to the directions of the governor, it appeared that they had seen 67 canoes, 94 men, 34 women, and 9 children; which is far from being an accurate account of the numbers; for more persons had been afterwards seen at one time, in only one part of the harbour.

On the 27th the Supply tender arrived from Norfolk Island, where she had been with stores and provisions for that settlement; she brought the unpleasant intelligence of the loss of Mr. James Cunningham, and four others, who were drowned in the surf, the boat being overset in landing the stores from the Supply†.

SECT.

nor happened to be then absent on a short excursion into the country; and the report being made to the Lieutenant-governor, he naturally examined the man who had made the discovery, and had related the story with much plausibility. Dailey being interrogated respecting the place, refused to give any explicit account of it till the return of the governor, to whom he would explain the particulars of the discovery, on receiving a reasonable compensation for so valuable an acquisition. Some ships being then on the point of sailing, the reward he expected was his own; and a certain woman convict's engagement, and a passage in one of the ships to England: a particular sum of money was also required. The lieutenant-governor declared, that, as he had already mentioned the discovery, he should also dis-

SECTION IV.

The Sirius leaves Port Jackson—Sails for the Cape of Good Hope—Falls in with large Islands of Ice—Casts Anchor at Robin's Island.

IN the month of September Governor Phillip expressed his intention to dispatch the *Sirius* very soon to the Cape of Good Hope, to purchase such a quantity of provisions as she might be capable of taking on board. To lighten her as much as possible, he desired the commander of her to land eight or ten of her guns and carriages, with any other articles which the ship could spare for the time she might be absent, for the purpose of making room. In consequence of which eight guns, twenty half barrels of powder, a spare anchor, and several other particulars, were put on shore at Sidney Cove.

On the 30th of September, the captain received his final orders from the governor, and on the first of October unmoored the ship: the governor and his family dined on board, and the wind being easterly, they got under weigh and worked down to the lower anchorage, where they came to, intending to take advantage of the land wind in the morning, to put so sea. The *Golden Grove* store-ship also anchored below, having provisions and stores on board for Norfolk Island, with a number of men and women convicts on board; together with six marines, and three seamen from the *Sirius*. In the evening the governor and his party took their leave.

They were no sooner clear of the harbour than the wind veered to the southward, and began to

blow strong, with thick hazy weather; the carpenter now reported, that, though the ship had hitherto been tight, it now made water. When this voyage, upon which the captain had now entered, was the subject of conversation, in company with the governor, he always spoke in favour of the passage round Van Diemen's land, and to the westward; but when he expressed a wish to be directed by what route he should endeavour to perform the voyage, he declined that, alledging that he should be governed by circumstances. After duly considering this business, and the advantages and disadvantages attendant on either choice, and judging from the experience of those who had before made the eastern passage, the commander determined to pass to the southward of New Zealand, and round Cape Horn.

They stood off to the eastward, determined as expeditiously as possible to get an offing of fifty or sixty leagues: the wind continued southward, with hazy and squally weather, till the 5th, when it shifted to south-south-east. On the 9th they were almost as far to the southward as Van Diemen's Land, or South Cape of New Holland; and the wind seeming settled in the south-west quarter they steered a course for the South Cape of New Zealand; on the 12th they passed that cape, and met with a vast number of birds of

close what part of the country it was in, or he might expect punishment for daring to impose on those officers to whom he had related this business. Induced by the fear of punishment, he proposed to the lieutenant-governor, that an officer should be sent down the harbour with him, for the mine, which he said was in the lower part of the harbour, and he would shew the place to the officer. A corporal, and two or three privates, were then sent under the command of an officer, to attend him to the place he pointed out; they landed as the convict directed, who declared the walk would be but short. They entered the wood in their way to the mine; and when they were among the bushes, Dailey craved permission to retire a few moments on some necessary occasion. This indulgence having been granted, the officer continued there several hours without seeing their informant again, who immediately pushed off for the camp by land, as he knew the road extremely well, and had cunning enough to persuade the officer to send the boat away as soon as they had landed. The convict arrived in camp pretty early in the afternoon, and informed the lieutenant-

governor that he had left the officer in full possession of the gold mine. He then took a few things out of his own tent, and disappeared. The party, after searching through the woods for the cheat, quitted their stations and marched round to the camp, where they arrived at dusk, tired and chagrined at the trick the villain had played them. The want of provision soon afterwards induced him to make his appearance, and a severe punishment was the necessary consequence of this imposition. Still, however, he insisted on having made the discovery, and that he quitted the officer that he might give information to the governor himself. When the governor returned, another officer was sent with him on this business, who declared he would shoot him if he attempted to run three yards from him: the cheat was then so thoroughly intimidated, that he acknowledged he knew of no gold mine: he further confessed that he had filed down part of a yellow metal buckle, mixed with it some gold filed off a guinea, and had blended the whole with some earth. The inventor, however, received an adequate punishment for his ingenuity.

various

SECT.

short excursion into the mine, the lieutenant-governor, who had made every thing with much plausibility respecting the place, reflecting till the return of the particulars of the compensation for so long being then on the mind was his own, and sent, and a passage in the star sum of money was not declared, that, as the convict, he should also die.

cl: 10

various kinds, chiefly aquatic, such as albatrosses, divers, petrels, penguins, birds, and a variety of gulls, some of which were very large, and of a mouse colour; and another smaller sort, with a white body, dark wings, and the head of a light blue colour.

About the middle of October they frequently heard the divers in the night, and often saw them in the day. It was astonishing how these birds could get from or to the land, at such an immense distance from it as from eight hundred to a thousand miles; for they certainly lay their eggs and hatch them on shore.

On the 2d of November, by lunar observations, they were in longitude $210^{\circ} 27'$ east. From the 7th till the 17th, the weather was very variable, and the wind unsettled. On the 18th the wind shifted to west, with a moderate breeze*.

For several days before they made the land, and every day after they left it, till the 7th, they fell in with a great many very high ice-islands: and saw plenty of divers and seals. From the 27th of November till the 13th of December, they had a wind constantly in the north-east-quarter, which is said to be uncommon near Cape Horn for so long a time; as ships bound into the south sea often find it rather tedious getting the westward round the cape†.

On the 16th the wind shifted suddenly to the north-west quarter, and blew a steady gale. On the 19th it blew very strong from west-north-west, with hazy weather, and frequent showers of rain; which again changed the wind to the south-west quarter, and the weather became fair and pleasant. They now appeared to have got out from among the ice-islands, with which part of this

* They frequently fell in with high islands of ice: on the 24th they had fresh gales, with hazy cold weather; they met ice-islands so frequently, that they were obliged to alter their course to avoid them. In the evening of the 26th, they set the extremes of Terra del Fuego from north by west, to west north-west, distant about ten leagues. They continued their course north-east, and expressed their conviction, that there is no island so situated from Cape Horn as this Diego Ramirez is said to be.

† The ship's company now manifested strong symptoms of the scurvy, which was the more distressing as they had nothing, with which they could hope to check its progress, except a little essence of malt, which they continued to administer. This appearance of the scurvy among the company of the *Siri* is could not excite surprise, as it was more extraordinary that it had not shewn itself sooner, when it was considered how they had lived since they had left the

ocean seems, at this season of the year, to be over-spread. Our navigators had, in the whole, been twenty-eight days among the ice, and sailed a distance of eight hundred leagues. They had passed through a lane, or street, if it may be so called, of ice-islands the whole of that distance. They were, in general, from the size of a country church, to the magnitude of one, two, or three miles in circumference, and of a proportionable height. At this season of the year, however, in such high latitudes, the nights are so very short, that hardly an hour can be called dark; or it would be attended with great danger to run in the night, the ice-islands were so very numerous.

Our navigators carried on strong westerly winds with them, which compensated for the northerly and easterly gales which detained them so long between Cape Horn and South Georgia; and it was exceedingly fortunate that the winds were so favourable, as the ship's company were now strongly attacked by the scurvy.

Having, on the 25th of December, arrived on the meridian of Greenwich, from which they had sailed in an easterly direction, and completed 360° of east longitude, and consequently gained twenty-four hours, their commander dropt 360° , and repeated Thursday 25th of December. On the 30th died John Shine, a seaman; and on the 31st died Joseph Caldwell, a seaman; both taken off by the scurvy. At day-light they saw the land; the nearest was distant about four leagues, and the Table mountain bore south by east about ten leagues. The wind coming from the sea, they stood along shore to the southward, and in the afternoon they were a-breast of Robin's Island. The weakly condition of the

cape outward bound; for during that time, which was upwards of thirteen months, they had not tasted a morsel of fresh provisions, nor touched a single blade of vegetables.

They now began to be subject to hazy moist weather, with very frequent fogs; the weather was extremely cold, and mountainous islands of ice were beheld in every quarter: for fourteen days after getting to the eastward of Cape Horn, they were beating to the north-east, anxious to proceed so far to the northward as to feel the influence of the summer sun, hoping their scorbutic patients might obtain some relief from it. They observed many large whales, going in droves of from five to twenty-five, spouting within a cable's length of the ship, and sometimes nearer. On the 13th, in the morning, they passed one of the largest ice islands they had seen, which they supposed to be three miles in length, and the perpendicular height about 300 feet.

of the ship's company, who were capable of doing duty upon deck, and the dejected state of many others, induced the captain to endeavour to bring the ship to an anchor before night; as the idea of being in port exhilarates the spirits of those who are reduced low by the scurvy; which was

the case with many of their ship's company. After striving in vain to weather the reef off the south end of the island, the captain bore away, and ran round the north end, and anchored within, in nine fathoms water.

SECTION V.

Quit Robin's Island, and anchor in Table Bay—The Sick are sent on Shore—The Alexander Transport arrives—Provisions obtained for the Settlement at Port Jackson—Departure of the Sirius—A violent Tempest—Arrive at Port Jackson.

WHEN the ship was anchored, a boat was sent with the first lieutenant on shore to the island, to procure such intelligence from Europe, as the commanding officer was able to communicate. Our commander also wished to be informed whether Governor Van de Graef was still at the Cape, and if Colonel Gordon continued commander in chief of the troops in garrison there. The lieutenant was very politely received by the commanding officer on shore, who gave him every information in his power, but unfortunately he knew not a word of the English language, and the other was equally ignorant of the Dutch. It was observed, however, that he wore a large orange cockade in his hat; and though he could not converse, he informed the officer, by expressions of half English and Dutch, that the English and Dutch were friends, and that the French had no connection with Holland. On hearing what a long voyage they had come, the officer generously sent a basket of such fruit as his garden afforded, which was immediately divided among the sick.

In the morning of the 2d of January, with a fine breeze, they got under way, sailed up to Table Bay, and anchored there in seven and a half fathoms. The ship being secured, the commander sent an officer to the governor, to inform him of the business he was come upon; who very politely assured him that great abundance of every thing was to be had, and that he had only to signify in writing the quantity of each article that was wanted, and the necessary directions would be immediately given. His excellency also condescended to inform him, that

Vol. I. No. LIX.

he should in a few days send a ship for Amsterdam; and that, if he had any dispatches to forward, and would send them to his house, they should be safely delivered into the custody of the British ambassador at the Hague.

On their arrival here, the commander directed that quarters should be provided for the sick, which was accordingly done, and forty invalids were landed, under the care of Mr. Worgan, the surgeon of the ship. When they arrived in this bay, they had just twelve men in each watch, and half that number, from scorbutic contractions, were unable to go aloft.

On the 5th a Dutch India ship arrived here from Rio de Janeiro: by this ship information was received of the arrival at that place of two vessels from the east coast of New Holland; that they arrived singly and in great distress, from sickness, and the death of many of their people. From a variety of circumstances no doubt could be entertained that one of these ships was the Prince of Wales, being one of their transports, and the other was the Borrowdale store-ship. The officers of this India ship also observed, that they were so weak, that had they not been boarded by boats without the harbour, they could not have brought their vessels into safety. These ships had probably parted company with Lieutenant Shortland, soon after sailing from Port Jackson, and had then determined to proceed to the eastward by Cape Horn.

On the 19th a Dutch frigate arrived here from Batavia, from which information was received that Lieutenant Shortland had arrived at that port, with a single ship, in the beginning of December,

ember, in a very distressed condition; that he had buried the greatest part of the ship's company, and was assisted by the company of the above frigate to secure his vessel, which he could not have done without assistance; and that he had been obliged, some time before his arrival, to sink the other vessel that was in company with him, for the purpose of manning one out of the two ships' companies, or he could not have reached Batavia with either: for, when he arrived there, only four men, out of the two crews, were capable of standing on the deck.

On the 18th of February Mr. Shortland arrived in the *Alexander* transport, much to the satisfaction of our commander, as he was preparing to sail the following day. He was going off from the shore, when he perceived the ship coming round Green Point: he bowed instantly on board, and his people were rejoiced to see their old friends in Table Bay, that they cheered them as they came alongside. He now received from Mr. Shortland a confirmation of the intelligence he had collected from the officers of the Dutch frigate.

On 20th of February our commander sailed from Table Bay, having first taken on board twelve months provisions for the ship's company, and six months flour for the whole settlement, with various stores for the colony, &c. While they lay at Table Bay, many civilities, and marks of attention were received from Governor Van de Graef, Colonel Gordon, and other officers of this settlement.

After they quitted the Cape of Good Hope, they had, for three weeks, strong gales from the southward, with squally weather. On the 20th of March, having sprung the trussle-trees of the main-top mast, they struck and unrigged them, and fitted new ones: on the 22d they had a very heavy gale of wind, and a prodigious high broken sea; it continued to blow very hard all night, and they shipped much water, but the ship having a flush deck, no water could lay on it, and the only danger was that of filling the boats: to prevent which, after the gale, they were ordered to be turned bottom up. On the 16th of April they were in latitude $44^{\circ} 45'$ south, and in longitude $135^{\circ} 30'$ east. At night they observed the sea spread over with luminous spots, resembling lanthorns floating on its surface. On the 20th they had a strong gale from the west-

north-west, which moderated in the night, and veered to the westward, with a light air at south-west, and encouraged them to make all the sail possible; but they had no sooner got every thing set, than the wind veered round to the southward, and began to blow; in a few hours it increased to a violent gale: as they drew near the meridian of the south cape, the gale increased to an absolute tempest, with thick hazy weather, and a most astonishing high sea. At day-light on the 21st, the fore, main, and mizzen stay-sails were all split by the violence of the wind: which reduced them to the reefed fore-sail and balanced mizzen. They now found themselves embayed, the gale not in the least likely to abate, and the sea running mountains high, with very thick weather, a long dark night coming on, and an unknown coast close under their lee; nothing remained to be done but to carry every yard of canvas the ship was capable of bearing, and for every person on board to constantly keep the deck, and look out attentively under the lee for the land. They knew not what bay, or part of the coast they were upon, nor what ledges of rocks might be detached some distance from the shore; and they had every moment reason to apprehend that the next night, by the ship's striking, would launch the whole of them into eternity. Their situation was such that not a man of them could have escaped to relate the particulars of the calamity. Whatever might have been the private feelings of each individual, the orders were executed with the greatest alacrity and precision. Fortunately, at this instant, the wind favoured them near two points, and the ship lay better upon this tack, than the course on the other had promised: still, however, the weather was so thick, the sea so high, and the gale so strong, and so dead upon the shore, that little hope remained of their weathering the land. At two in the afternoon, as the commander was looking from the quarter deck very anxiously to leeward, he observed the looming of a very steep point of rocky land, and the sea foaming with terrible violence against it. Though he did not mention this circumstance, it was that instant discovered by the sailors stationed forward, who called out, "Land close under our lee." He replied, that he had seen it some time, and that it was now upon their beam. The vessel was, at this time, half buried in the sea by the press of

sail, since she was going through it at the rate of four knots. They soon shot past this head, and from the course they had made, they knew it was Tasman's Head, being the eastern point of a bay, of which the south cape is the western, which Tasman had named Storm Bay.

After passing Tasman's Head, they kept their wind still, and carried sail, in order, if possible, to weather Maria's Islands, which lay six leagues to the north east. At eight the next morning they passed to the windward of Maria's Islands, which the haziness of the weather prevented them from seeing till they were upon the lee-quarter. A more wonderful escape than that which they experienced, can hardly be conceived. Every thing which depended upon the crew, was certainly performed, but it would be ingratitude to divine Providence, to attribute their restoration wholly to their best endeavours.

After having weathered Maria's Islands, they continued to stand on with a press of sail to the eastward, anxious to gain an offing from the coast, the ship being very much disabled. All the rails of the head, round-houses, and figure of the head were entirely washed away; and the rails of the bumpkins were so weakened as to require to be grappled down to the knee of the head.

As soon as they were to the eastward of Maria's Islands, the wind shifted to south-east, and east-south-east. On the 26th, the wind set in from the northward, and blew fresh, and often attended with the most violent squalls: it continued northerly till the 2d of May, when it inclined to the southward, and afterwards to the eastward. The winds now, after twenty-four hours' calm, inclined again to the southward, and they kept plying to windward with all the sail they could carry. Right off Cape Three Points, at six leagues from the shore, they sounded in seventy-five fathoms, over a bottom of grey sand. On the 8th a light air from the northward, carried them by day-light the next morning in sight of the entrance of Port Jackson; and in the evening of the 9th, they entered between the heads of the harbour, and worked up to Sydney Cove, where they anchored in the evening, after an absence of 219 days; 51 of which they lay in Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope; so that, though they had fairly gone round the world during this voyage, they had only been 168 days in describing the circle. They found in the cove the Supply armed tender.

SECTION VI.

The Small Pox appears among the Natives—Its fatal Effects—A Criminal Court held—Six Marines tried and convicted—Governor Phillip visits Broken Bay—Explores its Inlets—Returns to Port Jackson—Survey of Broken Bay—Two Natives brought to the Settlement, and kindly treated—One of them escapes.

THE ship being secured, the commander went on shore to wait for the governor, whom he found in good health, drinking tea with a few friends; among whom he noticed a man of this country who was decently clothed, and seemed to be as easy and familiar at the tea-table as any person there; he handled his cup and saucer with as much address as if he had been long accustomed to such entertainment. This man was forcibly taken from his friends by Lieutenant Ball of the Supply, and Lieutenant Johnson of the marines, who were dispatched down the harbour, with two boats for that purpose; the governor, having found that no encouragement would induce them to visit the settlement of their

own accord, he had therefore resolved upon this method to get one man into his possession, who, by tender and judicious treatment, might dispose his countrymen to place more confidence in the Europeans. The name of this man was *Ara-ba-noo*, and he was taken by force, as already stated, and in the following manner. After he had been a short time conversing with some of the gentlemen, one of the seamen, who had received previous instructions, threw a rope round his neck, and dragged him precipitately to the boat: his cries drew a number of his friends into the skirts of the wood, from whence they threw many lances, but without effect. The terror this poor wretch endured, can better

be conceived than expressed, he expected to have been immediately murdered; but, when the officers came into the boat, they removed the rope from his neck to his leg, and treated him with so much tenderness that he became more cheerful. For some time after his arrival at the governor's house, he was ornamented with an iron shackle on one of his legs, to prevent his effecting his escape. This he was taught to consider as a decoration, and bestowed on him as a compliment. He soon, however, became reconciled to his situation, from the indulgent attention of every person about him; and intimating some uneasiness from the iron, it was taken off, and he was permitted to go where he pleased. He soon acquired the names of the gentlemen who took notice of him. At length he procured that of the commander, which he never forgot, but expressed his desire to come on board his *nowce*; an expression signifying a boat or vessel. The day after the Captain came in, the governor and his family did him the honour to dine on board, when he was also favoured with the company of *Ara-ba-noo*, whom he found to be a very sociable good natured well-looking fellow, of about thirty years of age*.

Before the *Sirius* sailed from Port Jackson, the governor had formed a resolution of sending a detachment of the marines, with a number of convicts, for the purpose of clearing and preparing a tract of land at the head of this harbour, in order to sow corn. When they returned from their voyage, great progress appeared to have been made at this farm, which had been named Rose Hill: it much exceeded expectations; the quantity of ground prepared for receiving the grain at the proper time, was very considerable; many huts were built, the gardens were in tolerable order, and a prospect presented itself of a very extensive farm in due time; and if there were people enough to la-

* Expressing his surprise at the governors, that he had not seen a single native on the shore, or a canoe as they came up to the ship, he was informed that the small-pox had made its appearance, a few months ago, among these wretched creatures, and that it was truly shocking to visit the coves of this harbour, formerly so much frequented by the natives; where, in the caves of the rocks, which afforded shelter to whole families in bad weather, nothing was now to be seen but men, women, and children, lying dead. It seems probable, from variety of circumstances, that these people were hitherto unacquainted with this disease, and were consequently strangers to any method of treating it. It may therefore be supposed, that when any

bour, they knew it might be carried twenty miles to the westward; and every foot of the ground appeared as good as that on which they were now employed in cultivating. But though the land was tolerable, they found an insurmountable difficulty in establishing an extensive farm, chiefly on account of the deficiency of water. At Rose-Hill, in dry-seasons, they had but very little water, and what they had was very indifferent. Several attempts have been made by the gentlemen here, who had little farms in the neighbourhood of Sydney Cove, to raise grain of different kinds for feeding pigs, goats, or poultry; but, though the corn shot up very quickly, it no sooner formed into ear, than the rats, or other vermin, destroyed the whole of their prospect: it is necessary to remark, however, that even such of the corn as had escaped the vermin, turned out most miserable empty straws.

On the 6th of June the captain was engaged in a party with the governor, on a visit to Broken Bay, to examine some part of that harbour which had not been noticed in his last visit to that place: two boats were dispatched under the care of Mr. Keltie, master of the *Sirius*, with provisions, &c. And the party, which consisted of the Governor, the Judge Advocate, Captain Johnson of the marines, Mr. White, principal surgeon of the settlement, and some others, with two men, all armed with musquets, &c. They landed on the north part of Port Jackson, and proceeded along the coast to the northward; in the course of the march they had several long sandy beaches to cross, which were found very fatiguing: when they ascended the hills, they had frequently thick woods to pass through; but as they often met with paths, which the natives had trod down, they were not only more commodious for passing, but were found advantageous, as they frequently conducted them to the spots they were searching for. They left Port

of them taken ill, and the malady assumes the appearance of the small-pox, they are instantly deserted by their friends, and left to perish for want of care and sustenance. Five or six days after our commander's arrival, poor *Ara-ba-noo* was seized with the small-pox, and though every possible means were used for his recovery, he lived only till the crisis of his disease. The loss of this man was much lamented by every person in the settlement.

Many people had been lost in the woods, and had either been killed by the natives, or perished there. Six marines had been tried by a criminal court, and found guilty of robbing the public stores: they were sentenced to death, and executed accordingly.

Jack-

and twenty miles of the ground which they were but though the an insurmount- extensive farm, ency of water. y had but very was very indif- en made by the e farms in the to raise grain of ats, or poultry; y quickly, it no e rats, or other their prospect: r, that even such vermin, turned

h was engaged in visit to Broken of that harbour his last visit toatched under the the Sirius, with y, which consist- Advocate, Cap- r. White, princi- and some others, th musquets, &c. of Port Jackson, to the northward; y had several long a were found very ed the hills, they pass through; but which the natives ot only more com- ere found advanta- ducted them to the r. They left Port

dy assumes the appear- tantly deserted by their of care and sustenance er's arrival, poor Ara- pos, and though every rovery, he lived only ill of this man was much tlement. e woods, and had either ished there Six marines rt, and found guilty of e sentenced to death, and

Jackson

Jackson at six in the morning, and arrived at the south branch of Broken Bay, at three in the afternoon, after a warm and tedious journey: loaded as they were with provisions for several days, water, and ammunition. Arriving at the water side, they found their boats, which had left Port Jackson at midnight, were safely arrived. It being now too late in the day to enter upon the business they had come upon, they pitched their tents, and hauled the seine for fish. Having some success with the seine, they sat down to regale themselves on fish and salt beef; and rested the remainder of the day. In the course of these excursions, the boats' crews discovered, this afternoon, a native woman, endeavouring to conceal herself from their sight, in the long grass, which was then extremely wet, and consequently uncomfortable to a poor naked creature. She had, before the arrival of the boats at this beach, been employed, with some of her friends, in fishing for their daily food; but, being alarmed, they all made their escape, except this miserable girl, who had just recovered from the small pox, and was extremely weak, having a swelling in one of her knees; and being incapable of moving to any considerable distance. She therefore crept off as well as she could, and concealed herself among the grass, within twenty yards of the spot where they had erected their tents. She was discovered by a person who had shot at a hawk from a tree right over her. She was so terrified at the report of the musquet, that she screamed out, and discovered herself. When the governor went to take a view of this unhappy girl, she appeared to be about seventeen or eighteen years of age, and had covered her naked and debilitated body, with grass, as before expressed. She was much

* The following day was employed in going up the south branch, which the governor named Pitt-Water: when much of the day was spent in examining it, they returned to the place where they had passed the preceding night, and encamped on the same spot. Their tents were no sooner up than they repeated their visit to their young female friend, whom they found in a bark hut upon the beach: this was the very place in which she and her friends were enjoying themselves, when the arrival of the boat alarmed them. She was not alone, as before, but had with her a beautiful female infant, about two years of age; and upon their approach (the night being cold and rainy) she was lying with her elbows and knees on the ground, covering the child from their sight with her body. On their speaking to her, she raised herself up, and sat on the ground, with her

frightened on their approaching her, wept piteously, and made dreadful lamentations. They endeavoured to console her as much as they could, and with the assistance of a few expressions, collected from poor Ara-ba-noo when he was living, she seemed a little comforted. The sailors were ordered to bring her some fire, and they pulled grass, dried it carefully, and spread round her to keep her warm. Hawks, crows, and gulls were shot and broiled, of which she partook, as well as of some fish. They afterwards gave her some water, of which she seemed to be very much in want. After their utmost endeavours to procure a comfortable night's repose, they visited her early the next morning, when they found her much recovered of her fears, frequently calling aloud to her friends, who had left her, and who they knew could be at no great distance from her. All her endeavours, however, to bring them back, were ineffectual, while the party remained with her; but they had no sooner quitted the beach, than they saw some of them come out of the wood; and there being two canoes on the shore belonging to this party, they launched one into the water, and went away*.

After giving her more fish, and placing a quantity of fire-wood and water within her reach, they took their leave. They embarked in the boats, and sailed across the bay to the north branch. They proceeded but a small distance, before they landed on the west shore and refreshed themselves; after this they advanced till they came to its head, which was very narrow, shallow, full of shoals, and ended in a large bason. When they returned from this branch, they pitched their tents on the west shore for the night, and early in the morning advanced to the

knees up to her chin, making the most misorable spectacle in the human form that perhaps ever was beheld: the little infant could not be prevailed on to look up, but lay with its face upon the ground, with one hand covering its eyes. They supplied the woman, as before, with birds, fish, and fuel, and made her bed comfortable: her miserable hut was also sufficiently fortified to keep out the weather. She was now become so reconciled to their frequent visits, convinced that they had only her comfort in view, that when she wanted fish, she would ask for them, and she was immediately and plentifully supplied. Visiting her again the next day the child seemed to have so far got the better of its fears, that it would permit them to take hold of its little hand; when it was perceived that, young as it was, it had lost the two first joints of its little finger, of the left hand.

8 P

north-

northward: in this route they met with many shoals of considerable extent; and, rowing six or seven miles up, they arrived at the head of it, which divides into two large bays. They returned from hence to a point, near the entrance of this north harbour, where they passed the night: here they perceived about eighteen or twenty natives, a few of whom approached and conversed with them. Across the mouth of this north harbour, a bar of sand extends from the sandy beach, almost over to the eastern shore, and on which the sea broke prodigiously from side to side: they were, on that account, obliged to remain there till it was more than two-thirds flood, when, in the deepest part of the channel, they pushed out, and pulled over for the south-west arm, up which they went. Here they encamped for the night, and successfully hauled the seine, which produced a vast quantity of excellent mullet, and other fish. Grateful for so liberal a supply of these fish, the place was not improperly called Mullet Island.

The next morning they struck their tents, and proceeded to examine a point of high land, which had the appearance of an island, and which they afterwards found to be really entitled to that appellation. In examining this they were led into a branch which had not before been discovered: they continued their course upwards, still finding considerable depth of water, and strong tides; both which were considered as indications of a considerable river. They continued going up till the evening; when, finding it impossible to make any farther discovery, and their provisions being nearly expended, they gave up their pursuit. Though the tide was now high, the water was perfectly fresh, and the general depth of this river was from three to seven fathoms; and its breadth was from one hundred to three hundred fathoms. When it became almost dark, they could not perceive a spot on which they could erect a tent, so very deep were the shores, except where they were marshy: at length they put a-shore on a parcel of rocks, which was indeed the only spot near, where they could find room for their tents, and here they passed the night. The next morning they returned down the river, and, as the wind blew fresh, in the afternoon they arrived in the south branch, at Pitt-water. At night they fixed their tents there, and caught some fish, to prevent too rapid a consumption of their other pro-

visions. They now discovered that their female friend had quitted this place.

The governor was now determined to return expeditiously to Port Jackson, and, after some necessary rest, to prosecute this useful discovery to its source. They struck the tents at night, and embarked them in the boats: the wind being northerly, it was intended they should sail at midnight; a wigwam sheltered them during the night, having a large fire before it, near which they reposed. The boats having sailed in the night, they set off early in the morning by land, and arrived at the north cove of Port Jackson by two in the afternoon, where the boats were already arrived. In their journey they passed several dead bodies, which they supposed had fallen by the small pox.

Boats were immediately ordered to be prepared, and provisions got ready for another excursion, the same party having engaged to go again, and endeavour to trace this river to its source. On the 29th of June, the wind being fair for another visit to Broken Bay, they sailed early in the morning. Besides their former party, they had an addition of five marines; and the whole number amounted to about forty, including those in the boats. They were all well armed, and capable of making a powerful resistance, if, as they advanced up the river, they should find the interior parts populous, and the natives hostile.

Instructed by their last expedition, they soon found themselves in the neighbourhood of the south branch of Broken Bay, where a boat had been ordered to meet them. They arrived at the head of Pitt-water before eleven, but no boat appeared, which obliged them to walk round all the bays, woods, and swamps till they joined the boats, by which exertion they were exceedingly fatigued; and the day was too far advanced to admit of their proceeding any farther: this being the genuine state of the case, they readily agreed to pitch their tents, and occupy the spot which they had formerly done when they were in this quarter.

On the 30th they embarked in the boats at day-break, intending to proceed as high up as possible: they passed Mullet Island, and proceeded into the river; advancing as far up as a point on which they had rested a night when they were here before, and which was within a few miles of the place where they declined the pursuit: here they reposed for the night, and at day-

that their female

ained to return
and, after some
useful discovery
tents at night,
the wind being
they should sail at
them during the
e it, near which
ng sailed in the
morning by land,
Port Jackson by
e boats were al-
y they passed se-
y supposed had

ed to be prepared,
another excursion,
to go again, and
o its source. On
being fair for an-
ey sailed early in
rmer party, they
es; and the whole
ty, including those
well armed, and
l resistance, if, as
ey should find the
ne natives hostile.

dition, they soon
ighbourhood of the
where a boat had
They arrived at
eleven, but no boat
n to walk round all
os till they joined
they were exceed-
as too far advanced
g any farther: this
e case, they readily
nd occupy the spot
ne when they were

ked in the boats at
ceed as high up as
et Island, and pro-
ucing as far up as
ested a night when
which was within a
re they declined the
or the night, and at
day.

day-light on the 1st of July they embarked; when, after advancing a little beyond their furthest discovery, they found the river divided into two branches; one leading to the north-west, and the other to the southward; they took that arm which led to the north-west, and rowing up it all the remainder of the day, they found it in general shoal water, from four to ten and twelve feet: the banks of this branch were principally perpendicular mountains of barren rock. In many places the mountains did not reach the margin of the river, and retreated a little way from it, and were joined by low marshy points, which extended from the foot of the mountains to the edge of the river. At five in the evening they put on shore, and raised their tents at the foot of one of the mountains; and in the morning of the 2d, they proceeded higher up: but this morning's progress was much retarded by many large trees having fallen from the banks; and here the river became so narrow, that it hardly deserved that respectable name: by ten o'clock they had barely room for their oars, nor had they a sufficient quantity of water to float the boats. They found it necessary, therefore, to return, and before noon they put on shore: they now judged from the estimated distances, that they were about thirty-four miles above Mullet Island.

They had now a strong ebb tide, and they rowed late, hoping to get out of the branch before they stopped for the night. About six in the evening, they entered the southern branch, and encamped there for the night. The next morning they proceeded up this arm for about seven or eight miles, when it again divided into two branches. The governor determining to go as high as the boats could find water, they passed through various windings, and met with many difficulties from the shallowness. It is probable that both this, and the last branch they examined, might extend many miles far-

ther than they with their boats could trace them; but the branch appeared to be no longer navigable for any vessel but the canoes of the natives. Having advanced as far as possible with their boats, and rowed about three miles down to a point where there was tolerable landing; they put ashore, and pitched their tents for the night*.

The banks of the river here are low, and covered with what are called the pine-trees of this country. The natives subsist principally on roots, which they dig from the ground.

At five in the evening they put ashore at the foot of the hill; and at day-light in the morning of the 5th, they embarked and proceeded up the river, in which they still found considerable depth of water. As they advanced, the river contracted very rapidly in its breadth, and the channel became shoaler, which induced them to believe that they were not far from its source. In the evening they arrived at the foot of a high mountain, which was spread over with lofty trees, and beheld a pleasing country: they ascended some distance, and erected their tents for the night. In the midst of darkness and solemnity, they heard distinctly the roaring of what they supposed to be a water-fall; a circumstance which strongly intimated to them that they could not think of advancing much farther. In the morning they walked to the top of the hill, when they found themselves within five or six miles of a long range of mountains; between which, and that where they stood, a deep valley was observed, through which a branch of this river might probably run. This range of mountains were supposed to be those which are visible from Port Jackson, and called the BLUE MOUNTAINS. The hills on each side the gap were thus named by governor Phillip:—on one side the Carmarthen, on the other the Lansdown Hills; and that on which they then stood was called Richmond Hill†.

Having

* On the 5th of July they frequently saw fires in the woods, and sometimes heard the natives; in the afternoon they saw more persons in the woods, and fires in many different places: they called to them in their own language, by frequently repeating the word *cozee*, signifying "come here." At length two men came to the water side, with much apparent ease and familiarity. From this circumstance, they supposed they had seen them before, either at Botany Bay, Port Jackson, or Broken Bay. They were

presented with a hatchet, and a wild duck; for which they threw in return a small coil of line, made of the hair of some animal: they also offered a spear which was refused.

† When they had reached half a mile higher than the foot of Richmond Hill, they met the stream setting down so strong, that they could hardly get the boats so high. Here the river again divided into two branches, from one of which the stream descended with great velocity, with a fall over a range of stones lying across its entrance: this was

Having now examined whatever they thought worth their attention, they repaired to Mullet Island, where they landed on the 10th in the evening. It blew so hard a gale of wind from the south, that they were obliged to pass two nights here. On the 12th, though very squally, they struck their tents and sailed for Pitt-water, where about noon they encamped upon a point pretty high up. On the 13th, as they intended to land well up this branch, to avoid the most tiresome part of the road to Port Jackson, they embarked, after they had breakfasted, and rowed up about two miles, when the party for walking went on shore, each having his arms and knapsack, with two days provisions: by four in the afternoon they arrived at the north part of Port Jackson, but they might as well have been fifty leagues off, for here they could have no communication either with the Sirius or the settlement, no boat having been sent to meet them. They instantly made a large fire, near which they lay all night, the weather happening to be very cold. Crossing the hills the next day, they came to the mouth of the north-west harbour, but could discover no means of passing it. At length they found a canoe upon the beach, with which they entertained hopes of getting two men across the water, who could then walk over to the cove where the Sirius lay. This flattering prospect deceived them: the first man who entered the canoe upset her, and she immediately sunk, and the adventurer was obliged to swim on shore.

After some deliberation, a proposal was made to walk round the head of the north-west harbour; but this proposal was objected to on ac-

count of the wretched condition of their shoes. Our commander now determined to go back to Broken Bay, and rejoin the boats, which he supposed he could effect in the course of that day: but thinking it probable that he might fall in with some parties of the natives in the way, he wished to have a companion. Captain Collins wished to accompany him in the intended walk, and they were on the point of setting out, when two of the people who were with them proposed swimming over the water, and to cross through the wood to the Sirius. They immediately stripped, and being fortified with a dram, they tied up in a handkerchief, a shirt, trousers, and a pair of shoes each, which was rested upon their shoulders. Thus equipped, they entered the water, and in about seven minutes landed on the opposite shore; but one of them being seized with the cramp, was under the necessity of disengaging himself from his bundle, which was lost of course. They ran through the wood, and speedily arrived on board the ship; one of them perfectly naked, and the other having on his shirt and trousers. Upon their information, a boat was sent down, which took them on board, after having experienced a very fatiguing journey.

At eight in the morning they heard the report of a gun, in consequence of which they frequently fired several together, and as often heard the report of that which they supposed had been meant to answer them*.

About the end of August, the governor having expressed a desire of having a survey made of Broken Bay, and Botany Bay, their commander offered to perform that service. The Sirius had been removed from Sydney Cove, to one more

the fall which they had heard the night before, when they were situated on the side of Richmond Hill. They were now unable to proceed any farther, on account of the deficiency of water: all expectations, therefore, of tracing this river higher up, with their boats, were now abandoned. On the banks they perceived some yams, and other roots, and evident marks appeared of the natives having frequented these parts in search of them for food. Many traps were found here for catching animals, in which were observed the feathers of several birds, particularly the quail.

They encamped on the 6th of July, in the evening, about seven miles below Richmond Hill; and early the next morning, set off on their return, encamping on the 7th, about twenty-six miles down, where they pitched their tents for the night. On the 9th they proceeded to examine some of the inferior branches; in one of which they passed the night, and saw a few natives, who came off to them in their boats with much cheerfulness and good humour: among the trifling presents bestowed upon them was a small look-

ing glass: which they took the trouble to explain the use of. When they observed their own figure in this mirror, they turned it up and looked behind it; after which they pointed to the water, signifying that they also saw their figure reflected from thence.

* After calling out, they listened attentively, and heard a very faint voice in answer; and, at last, by frequent calling, found who the person was: it proved to be Peter White, sail-maker of the Sirius, who had been four days lost: and when he quitted the ship, had not more than four ounces of biscuit with him, one ounce of which was still remaining: he was very faint, and appeared stupid and exhausted. They took him with them, and by giving him such provisions as they had, in small quantities, he seemed considerably recovered in a very few hours. But had he not been found in twenty-four hours more, he perhaps would have been incapable of making any further effort to save himself, and must have perished where he lay down.

convenient

their shoes, go back to which he supposed that day: might fall in the way, he Captain Collins attended walk, g out, when them proposed cross through immediately a dram, they trowsers, and rested upon they entered utes landed on n being seized ecessity of dis- e, which was the wood, and ; one of them having on his information, a hem on board, guing journey. d the report of they frequently n heard the re- osed had been

overnor having survey made of their commander The Sirius had e, to one more

explain the use of, n this mirror, they which they pointed aw their figure re-

ntively, and heard last, by frequent proved to be Peter had been four days not more than four of which was still appeared stupid and and by giving him antities, he seemed ours. But had he more, he perhaps any further effort to ere he lay down.

convenient

convenient on the north side of the harbour, where she might be more commodiously repaired. A survey upon the defects of this ship was ordered by Captain Phillip, when she was reported to be very weak in her upper works, and various other defects were given in. But before any thing material in the repairs was set about, a survey of Broken Bay was taken: the entrance of it lies in latitude $33^{\circ} 34'$ south, and longitude $151^{\circ} 27'$ east: the bay is large and clear: the distance from north to south head, is two miles, and the depth eight, ten, and twelve fathoms. Just within the north head of the bay is the entrance of the northern branch, which, being shallow, is only navigable for boats or small vessels. A little within the south head of the bay is the entrance of the southern branch, or Pitt-water: though this is a good harbour, the entrance is rendered rather narrow, by a shoal-bank, extending from the eastern point full two-thirds across. From the south-west arm several branches extend, most of which have good depth of water, but the chart will be the best guide.

After having rested a few days, a survey of Botany Bay was proceeded on. Two boats, with provisions, tents, &c. were got ready, and dispatched round, under the care of Mr. Keltie, the master of the Sirius. A few of the gentlemen of the settlement having expressed a wish to accompany the party; permission was readily granted, and they all agreed to walk over to the boats. When they arrived there they found their tents pitched, and soon began their operations; and in the course of about ten days the

* Towards the conclusion of October it was thought necessary to shorten the allowance of provision one-third; for, though store-ships might be expected from England by the end of January, 1790, there did not remain more than five months' provision in the settlement: the governor therefore issued an order for two-thirds allowance, to commence the first of November.

Having placed the top-riders in the Sirius by the end of October, they took their provisions on board; and on the 7th of November they moved the ship from the Careening Cove to Sidney Cove. A few days prior to this, John Mara, the gunner's mate, had been missing, and was supposed to have been lost in the woods: parties were dispatched in search of him. About the third day after he disappeared, some of the officers thought they heard the voice of a man upon the north shore, as they were going up the harbour in a boat, early in the morning; they lay upon the oars a considerable time, and listened very attentively; when they again heard the voice, and rowed towards the shore, apparently to the spot from whence the sound was

survey of the bay was finished. The anchorage in the bay is extensive, and the passage into it easy; a cluster of rocks lie south-east, about two cables length from a little bare island on the north shore, whereon the sea frequently breaks very high; but by keeping Cape Banks open they may be avoided. A little above Point Southerland another patch of rocks is to be noticed, to avoid which in turning, the land below this point must be kept open. Though the anchorage here is extensive, yet by observing the chart, it will appear a small spot for so large a piece of water. In some parts this river has good depth, and that near and within its entrance; but higher up it is all shoal water, and is only to be navigated by boats: it has two branches, in which there are several coves containing shoal water. It will easily be perceived, by looking at the draft of this bay, that it is impossible to lie land-locked with a ship in any part of it; as it will always be exposed to the large sea which tumbles in here with an easterly wind*.

The night before they left the Careening Cove, Mr. Francis Hill, one of the master's mates, obtained permission to go over to Sidney Cove, from whence he was to return early the next morning; he accordingly went over, and early the next morning was put across to the nearest part of the north shore, intending to walk round to the ship; a journey which might have been performed in about an hour and a half: in this short distance, however, Mr. Hill lost himself; and the next day parties were sent out different ways in search of him, and boats dispatched up and down the

directed: there they found the person who had been missing, sitting upon a rock: he was extremely faint, and hardly able to get into the boat; having had nothing to eat during his absence but an herb used by way of tea. Being interrogated with respect to the manner of his losing himself, he said, "that, having been sent on shore in the evening, to fill some water casks, which were landed at a run of water near the ship, and having just before drank pretty freely of grog, he felt himself, soon after he landed, much inclined to sleep: that the weather being warm, and the evening advancing, he laid down upon the hill, some distance from the run of water, and fell asleep upon the grass; that he did not wake till it was late, and the night being dark, he found himself a little confused when he awoke, and went farther into the wood instead of coming out of it, and by that means lost himself entirely." He added, that "when they found him, he was so much exhausted that he could not have walked much longer, and that he had but just reached the water-side the night before."

harbour for the same purpose; a gun was fired from the ship every two hours for the space of two whole days: and the third day many additional parties were sent out, but without effect: it was therefore supposed that he had fell in with a party of the natives, who probably had murdered him, as he took no arms with him to defend himself. The natives were very much disposed to take advantage of a single person, particularly when unarmed*.

The want of one of the people of this country, who, from being accustomed to live among them, might have prevented much of this hostile disposition in them towards the Europeans, was much to be lamented. Had poor Ara-ba-noo lived, he would have acquired enough of their language to have sufficiently understood them, and could have made them perfectly comprehend that they wished to live with them on the most friendly footing; and to promote, as much as might be in their power, their comfort and happiness. The governor was extremely anxious, to have a man or two in their possession, who might be taught enough of the English language, without the danger of losing any part of their own, to render them useful to their countrymen: a project was therefore in agitation of securing one or two such persons by force.

For this purpose, Lieutenant Bradley, with some other officers, and a party of men, were sent down the harbour in an armed boat, on the 25th of November. Proceeding to the north part of the harbour, they observed two native men walking upon one of the sandy beaches, and immediately formed a scheme for engaging them in conversation: a few large fish were held up, and they were called to, which produced the desired effect; the men cheerfully came forward, received the fish, and a conversation ensued among all the parties. Five of the people belonging to the ship were then upon the beach,

* Of this there are many instances, besides the following: a man belonging to the Sirius, who had often been employed in shooting for the officers, was, a few days previous to the supposed death of Mr. Hill, in the woods looking for game, and had been observed by a party of the natives from the skirts of a wood. As they had not been seen by him, they took the advantage of that circumstance, and threw a large stone at him, which very narrowly missed his head: had it hit him, it would probably have knocked him down, and deprived him of his senses, which would have given them an opportunity of dispatching him. Not succeeding

and the boat was lying afloat, with her stern close to the shore, and the sailors lying on their oars. Mr. Bradley was in the stern of the boat, and, observing the opportunity, gave the signal for securing them. They were immediately seized, and tumbled into the boat, followed by the persons who secured them, and the boat immediately pulled off. They called aloud to their friends as soon as they were taken hold of, and a number of them appeared in the skirt of the wood; but observing arms in the hands of those in the boat, who stood up ready to fire, they did not venture an attack. When the men were first taken into the boat, they were lashed to the thwarts of her, but when they were far enough from the shore to prevent the possibility of an escape, their hands were set at liberty, and they were secured only by one leg: but till they were so far liberated, their terror was considerable. When they were landed at Sydney Cove, they were immediately taken up to the governor's house, where they were very humanely treated; but, to prevent all possibility of escape, each had an iron shackle put upon one of his legs, to which a piece of rope was spliced, and a man was ordered for each, who became answerable for their security; wherever they went, one of these keepers accompanied them, holding one end of the rope in his hand. When these two strangers landed in Sydney Cove, curiosity prompted many people to go and see them; among these were two natives, a boy and a girl: the girl was called *A-ba-roo*, and the boy *Nan-bar-ry*, or *Bal-der-ry*. As soon as they beheld the men, with raptures of joy they addressed them both by their names: the children were also known to them.

It was soon discovered, on the arrival of these two strangers, whom the children called by name, that one of them was a chief, or distinguished person among the tribe of *Ca-di-gal*; his name was *Co-al-by*; he was a man of about thirty-five

in their attempt, however, they still stood their ground, when he fired a small charge of shot at them; from which it was supposed they felt no inconvenience, as they laughed at him, and advanced with their lances: he instantly loaded his gun again, with a heavy charge of buck-shot, and as they appeared to him to be determined on mischief, he resolved, for his own safety, to fire among them; two of them fell, and the rest made off with precipitation: but he supposed they took their dead or wounded friends with them. He continued on the spot, and loaded his gun, and then proceeded towards the ship.

years;

with her stern
lying on their
n of the boat,
ave the signal
immediately
t, followed by
d the boat in-
aloud to their
hold of, and a
e skirt of the
hands of those
o fire, they did
men were first
lashed to the
ere far enough
possibility of an
berty, and they
t till they were
as considerable.

ney Cove, they
the governor's
manely treated;
of escape, each
e of his legs, to
ed, and a man
ie answerable
vent, one of
ern, holding one
When these two
Cove, curiosity
and see them;
a boy and a girl;
nd the boy Nan-
n as they beheld
y they addressed
e children were

the arrival of these
n called by name,
or distinguished
di-gal; his name
about thirty-five

stood their ground,
at them; from which
ence, as they laughed
es: he instantly load-
of buck-shot, and as
d on mischief, he re-
among them; two of
precipitation: but he
ounded friends with
i loaded his gun, and

years;

years; and the age of the other was about twenty-five years: he had several names, as *Bu-na-lang*, *Vagle-troo-ye*, or *Vo-la-ravery*; the first was said to be his proper name; the others were given him on account of his connections. The presence of *Co-al-by* operated as a check upon the cheerful disposition of *Bu-na-lang*. When these people had been seventeen days in this situation, they appeared to be so comfortable and happy, that their keepers began to be less apprehensive of their endeavouring to attempt an escape; of which they did not fail to take notice. One evening, when their keepers were sitting within the door of their house at supper;

Bu-na-lang was within also, and amusing himself in the same manner; *Co-al-by* was sitting at the outside of the door, and pretended to be eating his supper, the end of his rope being in the hand of the keeper. Whilst those within were thus amused, *Co-al-by* drew the splice of his rope from the shackle, and in an instant was over the pailing, and out of sight. An immediate search was made for him, but without effect, for they saw him no more. They afterwards heard, however, that he had joined his friends, and will doubtless be careful to avoid European snares in future. The other man grew much more cheerful after *Co-al-by's* absence.

SECTION VII.

The Sirius and Supply sail for Norfolk Island—Land the Marines and Convicts—Wreck of the Sirius—Provisions saved—Martial Law established—Ratio of Provisions—Birds—Scarcity of Provisions—Receive a Supply from Port Jackson—Officers and Crew of the Sirius leave Norfolk Island—Description of Norfolk Island—Situation, Soil, Climate, &c.

IN February, the navigators began to think seriously of their disappointment of arrivals; they had not then more provisions than would be consumed by June, at the allowance already mentioned. The governor now saw a necessity for dividing the settlement, and intimated that such a division should speedily take place, by sending a proportional number of marines and convicts, under the command of Major Ross, the lieutenant-governor, to Norfolk Island, where he understood there were resources, which Port Jackson, and its environs, did not afford. An arrangement accordingly took place, and our commander received an order, on the 26th of February, to prepare the *Sirius* for sea, and to embark the lieutenant-governor, with a company of marines, the officers, and baggage, and 186 convicts; making 221 persons in the whole: a proportion of the remaining provisions, and other stores, was likewise allotted to them; and he was also directed to land them upon Norfolk Island: Lieutenant Ball, commander of his Majesty's armed tender *Supply*, was ordered under his command, and he also embarked a company of marines, and twenty convicts.

They sailed from Port Jackson on the 6th of March, and made Lord Howe's Island on the 9th, at four in the afternoon, distant about

eighteen leagues. A very remarkable rock lies about fourteen miles to the southward of this island, which is named Ball's pyramid. This island is about three miles and a half long, north-north-west, and south-south-east, and is very narrow across. It has anchorage on both sides, but the bottom is foul. On the 15th, at two in the morning, they made Norfolk Island: they brought to till day-light, and then, as the wind was fresh from the south-west, they knew there could be no landing in Sydney Bay, where the settlement is fixed, as the southerly winds occasion a high surf; he therefore bore away, and ran round to the north-east side of the island into Cascade-bay; where, after a few days of moderate weather, and an off-shore wind, it is possible to land on one particular spot, which is a rock projecting some distance into the sea, having deep water to it. On that rock he landed, on the afternoon of the 13th, all the marines, and a great many convicts; but being set to the eastward in the night, he did not land the remainder till the 15th, when they were also put on shore there. When these people were landed, the wind shifted, and blew so strong, that he was unable to land any part of the provisions. From the *Sirius* and *Supply*, they had put on shore 270 people, and had not sent any stores, with.

with them, and they were now driven out of the sight of the island. He knew the exhausted state of the stores there, and he was not unacquainted with the many difficulties which Lieutenant Ball had met with, which gave him much uneasiness. On the 19th, however, a slant wind from the south-east, brought our commander again in with the island. As he stood in, finding he could fetch the windward part of the island, he steered in for Sydney Bay. As he drew near, he observed the Supply lying to in the bay, and the signal upon the shore was flying, that long-boats, or any others might land, without any danger from the surf. Anxious to avail himself of this favourable signal, he steered as far as he thought safe, and brought to with the ship's head off shore, in the south-east part of the bay, hoisted out the boats, loaded them with provisions, and sent them in*.

By the time the principal part of the provisions was landed, the weather proved very unfavourable to their wishes and endeavours; the wind set in for the southward, the sea rose and occasioned a very high surf, which rendered it unsafe for any person to remain on board. Every thing, however, which could be got by the sailors on board was sent on shore.

A few days after the loss of the *Sirius*, the ship's company being all on shore, a small quantity of provisions being then on the island for so great a number of people, the lieutenant-governor assembled all the officers of the settlement; and as many of the convicts were supposed as wicked and depraved as any which Great Britain had ever produced, the most alarming crimes might reasonably be expected from them; it was therefore judged necessary, and proposed

* Without entering minutely into the particulars of the wreck of the *Sirius*, which would be found very uninteresting to any but the nautical reader, we shall briefly relate, that she struck upon a reef of coral rocks, and in a few strokes was bulged; the water flowed fast into the hold, and the commander ordered the masts to be cut away, which was immediately done. When the ship was lightened of this weight, she might be thrown so far in upon the reef, as to afford some prospect of saving the lives of those on board. All hands were employed in getting out of the hold such provisions as could be come at, that they might be at hand, should any opportunity offer of floating them on shore. In the evening the wind freshened greatly, and the surf was considerably increased; in consequence of which it was strongly recommended, by the gentlemen on shore, that every person should quit the ship. Preparations were suggested for that purpose, and the whole crew

for the general safety and good of the whole, that martial law be now established in this island, till they might be relieved from the distressing prospect now before them by a supply of provisions; or till the governor in chief of his Majesty's territory in this part of the world might think fit, either to approve or disapprove of it. By the proclamation of the law martial, it was generally consented to. But, to avoid further ceremony, the general approbation was taken by every individual passing under the king's colours, which were displayed for that purpose. They were previously informed that such ceremony would be considered as an assent; it was adopted with a considerable degree of solemnity, and was attended with apparent cheerfulness through the whole.

By this proclamation of the law martial, much mischief was prevented; hitherto, every convict, or any other person on this island, who had committed any felony, were to be sent to Port Jackson, with all the evidence, and there to be tried, which would have been attended with many inconveniences and disagreeable consequences. During the whole time of its existence, it never had been put in force but once, for, it having been held out *in terrorem* only, the fear of an immediate trial, and, if found guilty, immediate execution, kept every one tolerably honest, and attentive to his necessary duties.

The Supply tender sailed from this island on the 24th of March, which was the fifth day after the loss of the *Sirius*, and as our navigators had not then been able to get any part of the provisions from the wreck, they could not give the governor any certain account whether they should or should not be able to get any

were intended to be landed that night; but when it became dark, the hauling rope got often foul of the rocks, which might have occasioned the drowning of many.

The second day after the landing of the crew, the weather being more moderate, a few of the seamen, who were expert swimmers, were got on board by the hawser, and great exertion made to get some part of the provisions sent on shore; but it was not till the 5th day that any of it could be landed. There were now, upon this little island, 506 souls, upon half allowance of provisions. Such articles as would swim were entrusted to the chance of being thrown on shore by the surf; and every thing which arrived was placed under the care of sentinels, till claimed by the proprietor, before certain officers. Articles of provision were however considered as the first object; and though they were all dragged through the sea, the damage they received was very inconsiderable. At 11 o'clock

of the whole,
in this island,
the distressing
supply of pro-
vief of his Ma-
e world might
approve of it.
martial, it was
avoid further
n was taken by
king's colours,
urncase. They
such ceremony
it was adopted
munity, and was
ess through the

v martial, much
erto, every con-
island, who had
be sent to Port
and there to be
attended with
greeable conse-
e of its existence,
out once, for, it
m only, the fear
ound guilty, im-
one tolerably
ssary duties.
m this island on
as the fifth day
d as our naviga-
get any part of
k, they could not
account whether
able to get any

but when it became
of the rocks, which
many.
the crew, the wea-
the seamen, who were
t by the hawser, and
of the provisions sent
th day that any of it
upon this little island,
of provisions. Such
to the chance of being
very thing, which ar-
centinels, till, claimed
officers. Articles of
the first object; and
the sea, the damage
it had done

thing

thing on shore, to add to the scanty proportion which now remained in the store*.

They were now situated on an island, of only five miles in length, and three in breadth, three hundred leagues from the nearest part of New South Wales, deprived of every hope of relief by a change of situation; and they had the additional mortification of expecting a further reduction of their allowance of provisions.

In the month of April they observed that Mount Pitt, which is the highest ground in the island, was crowded with birds. This hill is as full of holes as a rabbit-warren; and in these holes, at this season, these birds burrow, take possession of a habitation, and prepare their nests. These birds are of the aquatic kind, and are in the day-time frequently at sea in search of food. When it is dark, vast quantities of them hover over the ground where their nests are; and the seamen, marines, and convicts, go out in parties to procure them for the general benefit. Arriving upon the ground soon after dusk, they light small fires, which attract the attention of the birds, and they drop from the air as fast as the people can take them up and kill them: when they are on the ground, their long wings prevent their rising till they can ascend an eminence. Nature has, however, provided them with a strong, sharp, hooked bill, and a sharp spur in their heel; with the assistance of which, and the strength of their bill, they climb the stalk of a tree sufficiently high to throw themselves upon the wing. This bird is about the size of a pigeon; but when cloathed with its feathers, appears considerably larger: they are of a rusty black colour, and web-footed; they make their holes upon the hills for breeding their young in, and lay but one egg, which is as large as a duck's egg. This bird of Providence, as it may with propriety be called, resembles the sea-bird in England, called the puffin: they had a strong fishy taste, but the

* After having been several weeks longer looking anxiously towards the sea, in expectation of the long-desired arrivals, the situation of our navigators began to wear a very alarming aspect. Reflecting on their deplorable situation, on the 14th of May, the officers composing the council, met the lieutenant-governor agreeable to appointment, and published orders purporting, "that, from the exhausted state of the provisions in this settlement, the following ratio was unanimously resolved, and ordered to take place on Saturday the 15th instant, viz.

Vol. I. No. LX.

keen appetites of the people relished them very well: the eggs were thought excellent.

At the end of May, the wreck of the ship still held together, but the beams and knees were all either broken or loose. Whenever the weather would admit, a few sailors were sent on board, to save such articles as could be got, and to convey them on shore. Their distress did not obliterate from their memory the 4th of June, the birth-day of their much loved sovereign. In the morning, the colours were displayed, and at noon three volleys of musquetry were fired.

On the 6th, a convict man, who had been in pursuit of birds, said he had been robbed of his shirt by three other convicts, who had quitted the business they had been employed at, and taken shelter in the woods: it being necessary to check an evil of so dangerous a nature as early as possible, the lieutenant-governor sent two small parties of marines, and intimated a desire of sending two parties of the seamen, who might perhaps be less suspected of any design to apprehend them. Each person was sent armed upon this duty: in the evening the culprits were brought in, pinioned. A few days after a court-martial was assembled for the trial of these convicts, and they were sentenced to receive three hundred lashes each.

The Sirius's men were now fully employed, when the weather would permit, in fishing for the settlers, and at other times in making fishing-lines and hooks. A party of marines, and all the convicts, were clearing the ground for corn and potatoes. On the 24th of July, when only twelve days' salt provisions were left, it was adjudged necessary by the lieutenant-governor and council, to stop the salt provisions entirely, while the birds were to be caught; the ratio was now three pounds of flour, and a pint of rice per week, or instead of the flour, Indian corn meal, or wheat ground, with the husks and bran in the meal. A portion of the cleared land was

"Flour—three pounds per week for every grown person.

"Beef—one pound and a half per ditto; or in lieu of the beef, 17 ounces of pork.

"Rice—one pound per ditto.

"Children exceeding twelve months old, half the above ratio. Those under twelve months old, a pound and a half of flour, and a pound of rice per week. In future all crimes, considered as not of a capital nature by three members of the council, will be punished at their discretion, by a reduction of the present allowance of provisions."

8 R

planted

planted with potatoes, as the first thing from which relief could be expected. The bodily strength of the people was now considerably reduced for want of a sufficiency of food.

On the 4th of August, a seaman, happening to cast his eyes towards the sea, saw a sail. Exulting with joy he ran back, calling out, in captures, a ship! a ship! The news instantly spread all over the settlement, and men, women, and children were hastening in different directions, to welcome the expected relief. The commander took a spy glass in his hand, and joyfully observed a ship with an English ensign flying, not more than six or seven miles off shore. Some of the officers agreed to walk across the island to receive them: they endeavoured to shew themselves to them, but they did not think proper to notice them; they observed the ship sailing before the wind, and making sail from the island.

As these officers were returning, lamenting their disappointment, and accusing the commander of wanting the common feelings of humanity in not giving them some comfort or satisfaction, it struck one of them that this ship must have been from Port Jackson, and that the commander was bound to China; and, as she had nothing on board for the island, they did not choose to lose any time. They kept a good look out, however, and, on the 7th, a ship was discovered in the offing, and towards the evening another made its appearance: the surf being low, a boat was instantly sent off to go on board the nearest. They proved to be the *Justinian* and the *Surprise*, from Port Jackson, with provisions for the island, and an addition of two hundred convicts*.

The arrival of supplies at this very critical juncture, was truly comfortable; for their great and only resource now began to fail them greatly. The Mount Pitt birds, which had long supported them, were extremely scarce: the fish also

failed them entirely. Had these supplies been detained six weeks longer by any accident or other cause, the settlement would have been reduced to the most deplorable situation.

A sail was, about this time, discovered in the offing, which was supposed to be the *Gorgon* that they had so long expected; but on her nearer approach, they discovered her to be the *Supply* armed tender. She had been, upon her return from Norfolk Island with the account of the misfortune of the *Sirius*, immediately dispatched to Batavia; where Lieutenant Ball was directed to endeavour to hire a vessel, and load her with provisions for the use of the settlement. After the return of the *Supply* to Port Jackson, she required some repairs, which having been completed, she was ordered upon the service wherein she was now found, viz. bringing a few stores from Norfolk Island, with orders to embark the remaining officers and crew of the *Sirius*, and to return with them to Port Jackson. This information was joyfully received by our commander, as his situation had now become exceedingly irksome, and he had endured very oppressive feelings. On the 11th of February he embarked with the officers and ship's company, on board the *Supply*, having taken his leave of a place which had occasioned him so much vexation and distress. They had fine weather during their passage to Port Jackson, where they arrived on the 27th, and were hospitably received by all their friends there; but he was much dissatisfied with hearing from the governor, that he had contracted with the master of the *Dutch Snow*, for carrying the officers and ship's company of the *Sirius* to England. Though anxious to reach England as soon as possible, he would much rather have waited the arrival of an English ship, than to have embarked under the direction, or at the disposal of a foreigner.

* The *Justinian* and *Surprise* were cleared in about three weeks, and proceeded on their voyage to China on the 30th. As soon as these ships arrived, as well for their safety, as for the more expeditiously landing the provisions, our commander sent Lieutenant Bradley on board the one; and Mr. Donovan, a midshipman. Mr. Keltie, the master of the *Sirius*, and Mr. Brooks, attended the whole day at the landing place. The boats employed on this business were manned by the crew of the *Sirius*, and every possible at-

tention was paid to prevent danger or accident; notwithstanding which, on the 17th of August, one of the boats was overtaken by a succession of heavy surfs, which threw her on one of the reefs, and seven people were drowned. Among these were two of the boat's crew who belonged to the *Sirius*, three women convicts, and a child; and one convict man, who went off with many others to try to save the women.

SECTION VIII.

Improvement of the Country at Rose Hill—Vicissitude of the Climate—Norfolk Island remarkably healthy—Frequent Visits from the Natives—Governor Phillip wounded by the Natives—Natives again visit the Settlement—The Governor entertained with a Dance—Method of dancing and decorating themselves—Music and Singing.

GOING from Port Jackson to Rose Hill great improvements have been and are still making; a considerable town laid out, good buildings erected, and roads cut, with upwards of two hundred acres of land cleared for corn; with eighty acres to be appropriated to edifices and gardens. Rose-Hill is certainly a pretty situation, but it appears to be a poor, sandy, sterile soil, and will require much manure, much dressing, and good farmers to manage it, before good crops of any thing can be expected from it.

If government mean to persevere in establishing a settlement in this country, upon an extensive plan, a very heavy expence will be necessary. Cattle are required, if it is only for the manure they furnish; for without manure, this land will never produce any tolerable crops. Should it be resolved on to stock it sufficiently with cattle, many people would also be required to manage them properly, and to prevent them from being attacked by the natives, who are sometimes driven to great distress.

Norfolk Island is subject to sudden changes, but it is remarkably healthy. There cannot be a stronger proof of the salubrity of the climate, than the constitutions of the human race, or any other animal: they cannot be more prolific in any part of the world; two children at a birth are often seen, and women exceeding the usual period of child-bearing, have as fine healthy children as can be seen. Only one old woman, who was sickly when she came into the country, and one infant, has died of a natural disease on the island, since it has been settled.

The name of Ba-na-lang, a native man who had been in the lower part of the harbour, has already been mentioned with that of Co-al-by, who soon after made his escape. Ba-na-lang had been kept in his shackle, and had been so kindly treated, that it was supposed he might be trusted with his liberty without any fear of his absconding himself; he was therefore in April 1790,

set at liberty, and did not seem disposed to leave the governor's house; his satisfaction with his situation was so well feigned, that no person appeared to suspect him for several days: at length, however, he thought proper to depart, after having stripped himself of his very decent clothing, and left them behind. Both he and Co-al-by were frequently seen afterwards, and were so familiar as to converse with the people, who often invited them to come to Sydney (the name by which the settlement is known) but they did not seem inclined to accept of this invitation, till the governor himself should invite them, and give them his promise that they should not be detained. The governor accordingly did invite them, and promised them several articles of which they were much in want. Though these people had once been so treacherously deprived of their liberty, they found themselves inclined to depend on the governor's promise, and actually did go to Sydney: they were kindly received, visited from house to house, and saw all their old acquaintances; they received several little presents, and returned to their friends whenever they thought proper. This confidential visit from two men, soon created a more general intercourse; and the next visit from these men brought the same favour from their wives and families, whose example was followed by many others.

A short time previous to this friendly and general visiting from the natives, the governor went down the harbour himself, to see and converse with Ba-na-lang and Co-al-by, when, hearing that these two men, with several other natives, were in Collins's Cove, he went thither, accompanied by several other gentlemen, and they were all unarmed. This want of necessary caution had nearly proved fatal to the governor. A party of the natives wounded him with a spear, from which he was not perfectly recovered in less than six weeks*.

The

* This unprovoked attack was however soon forgiven, and almost forgot: so friendly and familiar was the intercourse now between them, that they frequently had a dance

among themselves at night, on the lower part of Sydney Cove, where a small house had been built by the governor's order, for their accommodation. A dance was now proposed

The dancers being ready, they were placed in a semicircle, by Ba-na-lang and Co-al-by, who seemed to have the principal direction. The dance was begun by a few young boys, and was afterwards increased by men and women, till their number amounted to about twenty-six. The dance was truly wild and savage, though with some appearances of regularity and order. In all the different figures that they performed, they generally concluded by certain numbers of their principal dancers advancing to the front, and going through that favourite part of the dance,

the quivering motion of the knees. Their music consisted of two sticks of very hard wood, one of which the musician held upon his breast in the manner of a violin, and struck it with the other in regular order. The performer, who was a stout man, and had a very strong voice, sung the whole time, and frequently applied those graces in music, the piano and forte. Signs of approbation from the audience, seemed to give them infinite satisfaction, and generally produced extraordinary exertions.

SECTION IX.

Captain Hunter leaves Port Jackson—In danger among some Islands—Isle of Pines—Stewart's Islands discovered—Bradley's Shoals—Lord Howe's Groupe—The Natives described—Anchor at the Duke of York's Island—Attempt to procure Water—Attacked by the Natives—Disperse the Natives—Reconciliation—Natives—Phillip's Islands discovered—Anchor at Hammuck Island—Refreshments procured—Visited by the Raja—A Quarrel ensues—Several of the Natives killed—Anchor at Batavia.

EVERY thing being embarked on the 27th of March, 1791, they left Sydney Cove in the *Waakamheyd* transport, and sailed down the harbour: they were accompanied by the governor, and many of the civil and military officers in the settlement. On their passing the lower point of the cove, all the marines, and the New South Wales corps, came down and cheered the people by way of taking leave. Soon after, the wind setting in from the sea, they were obliged to anchor till the next morning, when a land wind carried them clear out. The master of the ship had orders from Governor Phillip to call at Norfolk Island, to take on board the dispatches of Lieutenant-governor Ross, if it could be done without any material loss of time. There were on board this vessel 123 souls, victualled for sixteen weeks. They wished to avoid touching at Batavia, to prevent sickness among their people, which, in their then crowded state, was much to be dreaded.

posed by some of the principal people, which was readily agreed to, and the following night was appointed, when the governor, and a considerable number attended, every person being provided with arms of some denomination; a very necessary caution, however friendly appearances might then be, for experience had shewn that these people have plenty of treachery in their disposition. Preparatory to this exhibition, great attention appeared in their different modes of decorating their persons. The young women were em-

Upon making the isle of Pines, on the 23d of April, the wind blew so strong from the northward of east, that they could not weather and pass to the eastward of it. The Isle of Pines, so far from being an inconsiderable spot, is not less than fifteen miles over in a south-east and north-west direction; it is high and remarkable in the middle, being a pointed hill sloping towards the extremities, which are low; the low land having many tall pine-trees upon it.

They continued to steer to the north-westward without seeing any thing, and when they had reached the latitude of 19° 00 south, they hauled to the north-east, so as to pass between Queen Charlotte's Islands and the large track of land which had been seen by Messieurs Bougainville and Surville formerly, and lately by Lieutenant Shortland, in the *Alexander* transport, and more recently still by Lieutenant Ball in the *Supply* armed tender.

On the 10th, in the morning, they saw land employed in painting the bodies of the young men with streaks of white, according to the taste of the man himself, or that of the lady who ornamented him: no top preparing for an assembly was ever more anxious of making his person irresistably beautiful. The paint, however, could not be applied without a little moisture, and the lady was frequently obliged to spit in the face of her friend whom she was employed in adorning.

bearing

Their music
hard wood, one
on his breast in
tick it with the
performer, who
ry strong voice,
quently applied
ano and forte.
audience, seemed
d, and generally

Pines—Stewart's
ibed—Anchor at
es—Disperse the
muck Island—
Natives killed—

es, on the 23d of
from the north-
not weather and
Isle of Pines, so
spot, is not less
n-east and north-
remarkable in the
sloping towards
y; the low land
on it.

the north-west-
, and when they
00 south. they
to pass between
the large track of
essieurs Bougain-
d lately by Lieu-
xander transport,
tenant Ball in the

g, they saw land

ung men with streaks
man himself, or that
top preparing for an
aking his person ir-
ever, could not be
the lady was frequent-
and whom she was em-

bearing

bearing west-north-west, distant about seven leagues; it proved to be a cluster of small islands, five in number; well covered with trees. They steered from them directly to the northward, to see if they could discover Gower's Island. On the 12th, at nine in the morning, the man at the mast-head discovered breakers on the starboard bow, and not more than six miles distant; soon after, breakers were seen on the starboard quarter; and at eleven breakers were observed on the larboard beam; on this they brought to, and sounded with 130 fathoms of line, but had no ground. This had the appearance of a dangerous cluster of shoals, for being situated in a climate where it seldom blows so strong as to raise a large sea, a ship in the night, without a very good look out, might be in very great danger before they could be perceived.

On the 14th, at day-light, they saw land, and at sun-rise they discovered this land to be a number of islands, some of considerable extent, and many of a smaller size. Thirty-two were distinctly counted from the mast-head, and probably there might be several more. At ten o'clock six or seven canoes were seen coming off, with large triangular sails; a little after noon, one of them, with nine men in it, came up with them, though they did not shorten sail: they could not persuade them to come alongside, or touch the ship, but they threw some beads, nails, and other trifles into their boat, with which they appeared highly pleased; and in return threw some pieces of cocoa-nut on board: a fresh breeze springing up at one, they went away. The men in the boat were of a dark copper colour, stout, clean, and well made; their hair was in a knot on the back of their head, and they seemed to have some method of getting rid of their beards; but they had a kind of artificial beard, consisting of a number of figures, which were fastened on between the nose and mouth, and close under the nose; a row of teeth hung to that beard, representing a mouth lower than the natural mouth: holes run through the sides of the nose into the passage, into which, as well as through the septum, pieces of bone or reed were thrust. Their canoes were about forty feet long, but ill made, and had an outrigger. On the 18th, at eight in the morning, they saw three small islands bearing west-north-west; at eleven o'clock two more islands were in sight: at noon five islands and two rocks were to be seen; they seemed all to

VOL. I. No. LX.

be connected by a reef, which on the west side extended to some distance from them. These were supposed to be a part of Captain Carteret's nine islands.

The hills mentioned by Captain Carteret, on the coast of New Britain, by the name of the Mother and Daughters, are very remarkable; a little way in the south-easternmost quarter, a hill presents itself with a small flat top, or volcano, which, while they continued in sight of it, emitted vast columns of black smoke. The next step to be pursued was to examine the Duke of York's Island, and on the night of the 22d, they ran off the east point of it, with a light air from the westward, and brought to till daylight. On the 23d in the morning they had very little wind, and the boat was sent in shore to sound; many canoes came off, with every appearance of a friendly disposition: the boat that was sounding endeavoured to make them understand that they wanted water, and shewed a small keg, intimating that they wanted it to be filled: the people in one of the canoes went to the boat, received the keg, went on shore and filled it, and brought it back to the boat: the officer then gave them another keg, which was meant as a present, but it was instantly sent on shore by another canoe: in the mean time a breeze sprung up, the boat steered along shore and the ship followed. Those who had taken the last keg, after having filled it, followed the boat, came up with her, and delivered it. This was a certain proof of the honesty of these people, and it will the more particularly appear so, when it is considered that the keg was hooped with iron.

As they ran round the western side of the island, they observed a small bay or cove; discovering that water was to be had here, they were determined to have as much as might be necessary for their purpose. The first night there was a very strict look out kept, as well by the natives as by the Europeans; they had a regular watch-word, which they sung out in a very musical manner. The next morning they loaded a boat with empty casks, and had the other armed to lie off the shore, and cover those employed in filling water: the ship's guns were loaded; and twelve men, with small arms, attended on shore with the waterers. The watering business was now begun, and the natives saw the nature of their business there. Their numbers, however, increased very rapidly, and all

8 S

armed;

armed; they were, indeed, so very troublesome, that very little work could be done in watering. An old man, all over covered with white powder, and who seemed to possess great authority among them, encouraged them to commit acts of violence, and some stones were thrown with great force among the sailors. The consequence of this unmerited attack was, that the officer was obliged to fire, the covering boat fired, and a few shot were fired from the ship. At this time there were about thirty or forty canoes about the ship, full of people; their terror and consternation at the noise, and probably the effect of the guns was such, that many leaped from their boats overboard, and swam under water as far as they were able. Those guns were fired only to intimidate, but they occasioned a general dispersion of the natives, and the filling of the water was carried on with ease and expedition: about seven tons were received on board in the course of the afternoon.

Before the boats went on shore the next morning, they fired a few grape shot into the woods, and none of the natives were seen at the time the boats landed. They warped the ship within a cable's length of the watering-place, and secured her head and stern for covering the party on shore. The covering boat was directed to fire when any of the natives were seen in the woods over the watering party, which, during the day, had been frequently done. Many canoes entered the bay, but at an awful distance, holding up green boughs as a signal of peace and amity: to some they made signs to depart; to others, who ventured a little nearer, they manifested tokens of friendship, and signified that they drew the firing upon themselves by their sling-ing of stones among the Europeans who were watering. After these hostilities, very little interruption happened, except that the covering boat had occasion to fire a few musquets into

* After peace had been re-established on shore, the conk shell was sounded, which was the signal for great numbers to assemble, who joined in a song of friendship, which was really harmonious and very pleasing. The canoes crowded the bay from different parts of the island, and were as familiar as ever, except that they would not now venture on board, as many of them had done before the quarrel. These are said to be the only people in these seas who do not set a value upon iron work, in preference to any other thing: they were not pleased with looking-glasses, or beads, but they were fond of rags of white linen, strips of scarlet cloth, or any thing of a gay or gaudy colour.

the woods over the watering place. In the space of four days they completed their water; and on the last evening, as the sailors were coming from the shore, a great many of the natives came down to the beach with green boughs in their hands, bringing with them cocoa-nuts, plantains, yams, &c. accompanied by a song of friendship. They seemed earnestly to wish for a reconciliation, and testified their greatest concern for what had happened. Peace was now concluded, with much ceremony, and every demonstration of concern and submission was exhibited by the natives; and it is feared that they had too much reason to be sorry, for it is extremely probable that some of them must have lost their lives by the grape shot from the ship*.

The weapons used by the people of this island, were lances of different kinds; some were made of a kind of ebony, or hard wood, about ten feet long, frequently ornamented with feathers of different colours: the lance is thrown by hand, but they had not the use of the throwing-stick, like the natives of New South Wales. In their quarrels they also use the sling for throwing stones. They use in fishing a spear, small seine nets, and hooks and lines.

They have a kind of musical instrument, with which they sometimes, in their canoes alongside, endeavoured to amuse the Europeans, composed of a number of hollow reeds of different lengths. Sound was all they seemed to expect from these instruments; they did not aim at harmony or concord: their vocal music was more harmonious, but they had little variety.

When these people were inclined to be friendly, they sung out in one particular tone, in which, though there were five hundred together, the nicest ear could not discover one to differ in the tone or particular note. Immediately after this vocal salute, they all mimicked the barking of a dog: which was given as a certain proof of

The natives of the Duke of York's Island are stout and robust, and of a light copper colour: they go entirely naked. Their hair, which is woolly, is so enriched with a sort of grease or ointment, and a white or red powder with which they dress it, that it hangs like so many candle wicks; they are usually as completely powdered as a finished beau, equipped for an assembly. Some have their hair of a yellow colour, others delight in a shining red; but none of them were satisfied with the colour which nature has given them.

their

In the space
ter; and on
coming from
came down
their hands,
tains, yams,
ship. They
iliation, and
what had hap-
with much ce-
concern and
tives; and it
reason to be
that some of
the grape shot

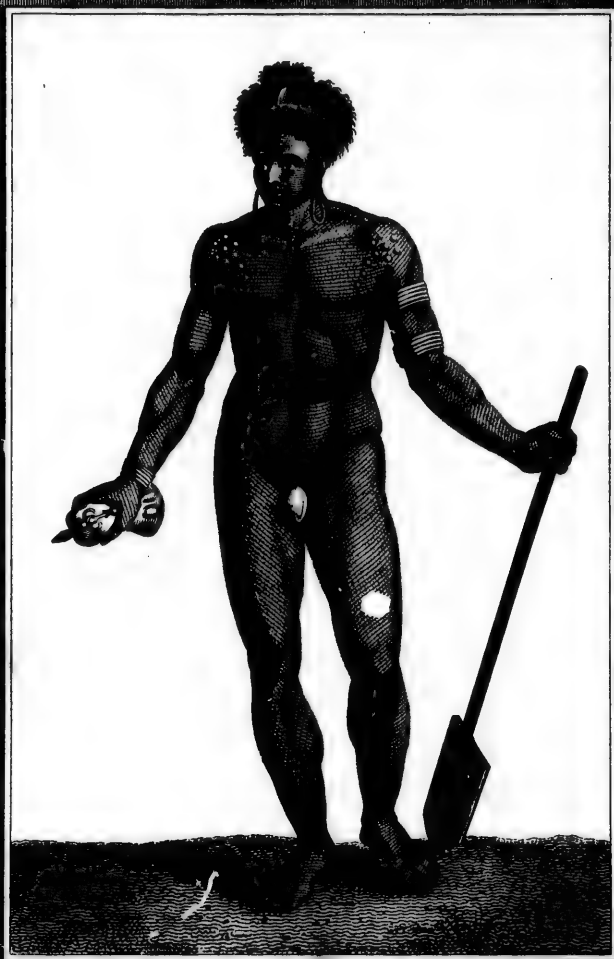
of this island,
ne were made
d, about ten
with feathers
own by hand,
rowing-stick,
es. In their
for throwing
r, small seine

strument, with
oes alongside,
na, composed
ferent lengths.
ect from these
harmony or
e harmonious,

d to be friend-
one, in which,
together, the
differ in the
ately after this
he barking of
tain proof of

and are stout and
they go entirely
so enriched with
e or red powder
ce so many candle
wdered as a finish-
e have their hair
shining red; but
our which nature

their



A. Man of the Algonquian Tribe

C. Barren sc.

their disposition; perhaps in allusion to the wonderful fidelity of that class of animals,

This island appeared to be about ten miles in length, in a south-south-west, and north-north-east direction: it is of a moderate height, and flat; but is well covered with wood. Along the sea-shore many huts of the natives were seen, which were small and neatly made; chiefly built of bamboo, and generally situated under the shade of a grove of cocoa-nut trees, with a fence or railing before them; within which the ground was well cleared and trodden. In short, from what could be observed while the Europeans remained there, they thought they could venture to pronounce the whole island a perfect garden. It produced cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains, bananas, sugar-cane, beetle-nut, bread-fruit, mangos, and guavas. There are also hogs, dogs, and fowls. The soil is extremely rich and fertile.

In the morning of the 27th of May they prepared for sailing; but before they got under way, two English pointers, male and female, which had been given to the master of the ship at Port Jackson, were taken on shore, and given to a party of the natives, who were much pleased with them: a cock and hen were also given to them. At ten o'clock they sailed out of the bay, which was named Port Hunter. They steered north-west by west, and west-north-west, and at eight in the morning saw Sandwich Island, bearing north-west. It is of a moderate height, and well covered with wood. On the north side of the island, they observed the remarkable peaked hill mentioned by Captain Carteret, with the corresponding one on the coast of New Ireland.

During the night of the 30th they had heavy dull weather, with light and variable winds, which fell only in light showers. At seven the next morning, they saw an island bearing north-west by west, and at eight saw more land from the mast-head, bearing west, which they supposed to be part of the Admiralty Islands: the wind was at south-east, and they could not weather the southernmost, on which they bore away and passed between them. Having seen much land in different directions before dark, they determined to bring to for the night: it then fell calm, and they had by the morning only drifted a little with a current to the north-west. At day-light on the 31st, they saw much land to the northward and westward. Five large canoes came off from the nearest island, with eleven

men in each: six paddled, and five stood up in the center of the boat, painted and decorated as if intended for war; but when they approached they shewed no hostile appearance; they were invited, by signs, to come on board, but they declined venturing too near the ship: they held up a variety of articles, which they seemed desirous of exchanging. They were stout well-looking people, rather darker than the natives of the Duke of York's Island: their hair, which was woolly, was knotted or tied upon the top of their head. Their canoes were from forty to fifty feet in length, neatly made, and turned up a little at the extremities: a stage, which lay across the midships of the boat, projected out some distance on one side; this stage appeared to be intended for the warriors to use their weapons upon. On the opposite side, was fitted in a different manner, an out-rigger to balance the boat: three of the rowers sat before, and three abaft the stage, so that those intended for battle were not incommoded by them.

This groupe of islands is very extensive, as well in a north and south direction as east and west. Having now got to the westward of the Admiralty Islands, they supposed themselves clear of St. George's Channel. On the 3d of June they saw land, about two points before the starboard beam, which proved to be two islands; at eight o'clock the next morning they saw another. It is probable that these islands have been seen before, as in a general chart of these seas, there are three islands laid down nearly in this situation.

On the 11th of July necessity obliged them to reduce the allowance of water; the whole allowance was to each man, for all purposes, two purser's quarts for twenty-four hours, and the weather was exceedingly sultry, which aggravated the distress. On the 13th, from the unfavourable prospect before them, it was thought prudent to call together the officers, to consult upon the most eligible plan to be pursued, for enabling them to reach some port or settlement where it might be possible to obtain some supply of provisions and water, sufficient for the relief of 121 men, the number now on board this small vessel. It was the general opinion, that it would be highly imprudent, in the present reduced state of provisions and water, any longer to attempt to reach the strait of Macassar, in the face of fresh westerly winds, and a strong easterly current:

current; and what rendered it still more necessary to abandon such an attempt was, that the master of the ship declared, in the presence of some of the officers, that he knew not of any one place in their route, short of Batavia, where any supply for their numbers could be had. The quantity of provisions now on board, at half allowance, was a supply for ten weeks, and the water, at two purser's quarts a man *per* day, was a supply for the same time, provided they had no leakage.

On the 13th they bore away to the northward, determined to attempt the strait through which the Acapulco ships pass to the port of Manilla, or to go round the north end of Luconia, and endeavour to fetch Macao in China. In the morning of the 14th, they saw land bearing north, which was found to be two islands, nearly joined together by a long sandy spit above water. The islands are dangerous to people in the night, on account of the sandy spits which project from them. These were named Phillip Islands, after Arthur Phillip, the Governor of New South Wales*.

The wind now became very variable, but chiefly from the south-west quarter; on the 2d of August it shifted to west-north-west, and they stood to the south-west. On the 4th they made the land, bearing west-south-west twelve leagues: at noon they saw it from south-west to west half south; it proved to be the north end of the island of St. John. On the 8th, in standing to the southward, they saw an island bearing south five or six leagues; which, from its situation, must have been the island of Palma.

On the 11th of August they stood in for Hummock Island, and sent a boat in shore to search for anchorage, which they soon made the signal for having found; and at noon came to in twenty-two fathoms water. A canoe came off, with

* On the 17th in the morning, they saw land from the mast-head, bearing west by south about ten leagues distant; at noon they saw it from the deck, and it appeared to be three islands. The islands lie in the latitude of $9^{\circ} 33'$ north, longitude $137^{\circ} 30'$ east, and are probably a part of the New Carolines. From the time of their making these islands to the 23d, they had light and variable winds. It afterwards became very squally and unsettled weather, with very heavy rains at times. During these heavy showers, which were comfortable in their situation, every one was employed in spreading his blanket or rug, to preserve as much water as he could for his own use; for having no means of providing a quantity

Dutch colours flying, bringing a note from the Raja to the master, written in the Malay characters, signifying that they should have what they wanted.

In the afternoon they sent a boat to look for water, which was found in great abundance near the east point of the island. They immediately began to water the ship, and very soon had a number of canoes from the shore on board, with a variety of refreshments, which they much wanted. A brisk trade was carried on for poultry, goats, and fruit of various kinds. This day the Raja, according to previous information, came on board in a large boat, and did our navigators the honour of a visit, he was attended by a person next in authority, and a considerable number of people; and was, on his arrival, saluted with five guns. On this occasion it was thought necessary to have a party of ten men armed, on the top of the round house abaft, where they continued during the Raja's visit†.

In the evening they weighed from the road, and put to sea: one unfortunate Javanese seaman was accidentally left on shore, yet as he spoke a language which most of these people understand, that may probably be the means of saving his life; but as their rage, when once roused, does not expeditiously subside, the consequence may therefore be fatal to that innocent man. This unlucky affair deprived the seamen of an opportunity of completing their water, or of cutting their wood. They had, however, filled as much water as would prevent their being distressed for some time, and the sailors had been indulged with many refreshments. Hummock Island is exceedingly fertile, producing most of the tropical fruit. They found here rice, sugar-cane, pine-apple, mango, sour oranges, limes, plantains, cocoa-nut, sago, sweet potatoes, tobacco, Indian corn, dogs, goats, fowls, parrots, &c.

for the general good, every one did the best he could for himself.

† When the Raja left them, he promised to be on board the next day, and said he would bring with him the articles they wanted. The next day, in the afternoon, the Raja came again on board, but, instead of the expected supply, he produced only four small baskets of sago powder, and one bag of paddy, which would hardly have supported two men for a week. Hence a misunderstanding arose between the Raja and the British navigators, originating principally from the contending parties not comprehending each other. Several lives were lost before the termination of this ridiculous dispute.

But

te from the
Malay cha-
have what

to look for
abundance
They imme-
very soon
re on board,
n they much
ried on for
kinds. This
information,
did our na-
was attended
a consider-
n his arrival,
casion it was
y of ten men
house abaft,
ja's visit†.
om the road,
avanese sea-
e, yet as he
these people
the means of
e, when once
ide, the con-
that innocent
d the seamen
their water, or
ad, however,
n their being
lors had been
Hummock
ncing most of
e rice, sugar-
ranges, limes,
potatoes, to-
s, parrots, &c.

est he could for

d to be on board
him the articles
noon, the Raja
expected supply,
go powder, and
e supported two
g arose between
ating principally
iding each other.
on of this ridi-

But

But their principal article of trade with the Dutch is bees-wax, of which they have a vast quantity, and of course abundance of honey.

The natives of these islands are the same sort of people, and speak the same language as those on Mindanao; and they have much of the Malay both in appearance and disposition; they are nearly of the same size, form, and colour, and have many of their features: they generally wear jackets and trowsers; but the lower classes seldom wear any thing but a wrapper round the waist; with a handkerchief, or other piece of linen round the head, in the manner of a turban. In the sash or wrapper which surrounds the waist, their cress or dagger is stuck, the scabbard of which is a case of wood. Many of these people were afflicted with a disease resembling the leprosy; their skins being covered with a dry scurf, like the scales of a fish, which had a very disagreeable appearance.

Their canoes are of various sizes, the bottom being hollowed out of the trunk of a tree, and they were generally raised with an upper work of split bamboo; they had an out rigger on each side to balance them; and they had also a larger boat, on which they mounted three small pieces of brass cannon. These boats will conceal a number of men: they were usually covered with an awning of split bamboo, raised some distance above the gunwale, like the ridge of a house. Their mast is composed of three bamboos, two of which stood as a pair of sheers, and required no shrouds; the third stood forward, answering the purpose of a stay; and upon this mast they set a square sail.

When they left these islands, the wind being from the westward, they steered to the southward. At seven in the morning they saw a small island, bearing south-west; at ten they saw two

more, and by four in the afternoon of the 15th, seven islands were in sight, bearing from south-west to west-north-west. At six they saw a large island a-head, with a number of smaller ones, and some rocks of considerable height. This island, which is very high land, is that laid down in the chart by the name of Poolo Sanguy. At day-light on the 25th, they made the island of Celebes. On the 27th at noon the land of Celebes was distant about eight or nine leagues. At four in the morning of the 29th, they had a heavy squall from west north-west. On the 30th, at five in the morning, they saw the island of Borneo. On the 31st, at day-light, the land of Celebes bore east by north half north: they had a heavy squall of thunder, lightning, and rain.

On the 7th they saw two large proas in the south-west: they might have been trading vessels, but knowing that these seas are infested with piratical vessels of that description, it was necessary for them to be upon their guard.

The whole time they had been in this strait, the wind had been variable from the south-south-west, to west-north-west. On the 11th, in the forenoon, as they were standing to the westward, the water appeared suddenly of a very light colour, and on looking over the side, they perceived the ground under the ship: before they had time to heave a cast of the lead, it seemed deeper, and they had ten and twelve fathoms. From the mast-head, at the same time, a dry sand-bank appeared, bearing north-north-east six miles distant; a little way to the eastward of it, the water seemed to break. This shoal is very dangerous; but does not appear to have been regularly marked: there is a shoal, indeed, marked in the Dutch charts, nearly in the same parallel, but it is so much misplaced in its longitude, or distance from the land, that it cannot be supposed to be meant for the same shoal*.

their guns were too small to give a sufficient shock to the atmosphere; yet a good breeze of wind springing up, they were carried clear of them. They steered from Cariman Java, west, and in the evening of the 25th, they made the small islands called the Boomkins, which lie about five leagues from the coast of Java. In the morning they saw Carewang Point on Java, bearing south-south-west six or seven miles; and at five in the afternoon of the 27th, anchored in Batavia Road, after a passage from Port Jackson of twenty-six weeks.

SECTION X.

Captain Hunter attends the Governor at Batavia—Applies for a Passage to England—Purchases the Waaksampey—Quits Batavia—Passes the Keellings—Arrives at the Cape of Good Hope—Proceeds to St. Helena—Arrives at Portsmouth.

THE master of the ship acquainted his owner (the Shebander) of his arrival; and that gentleman wrote to Captain Hunter, the same night, begging he might see him early the next morning, that he might introduce him to the governor: he also informed him that it was absolutely unnecessary for him to write to the governor on any business he might have to settle with him, as such affairs might be more methodically adjusted by a personal interview. Captain Hunter landed the next morning, and went with the Sebander (who spoke English) to the governor, who resided about three miles out of town. He informed him that Governor Phillip had found it necessary, in order to forward his Majesty's service, to employ the vessel in which he was embarked, to convey to that port the officers and company of his Majesty's lost ship the *Sirius*, with a view, that, after they had procured the necessary provision and refreshment, they should be permitted to proceed in the same vessel to England: He therefore desired permission to have her refitted, and to proceed with all possible expedition.

The governor, however, not choosing that any vessel belonging to the company should be employed as a transport, obtained the permission of the council to purchase the vessel, a business that was transacted accordingly*.

On the 14th of November, Robert Henderson, seaman, died; and Edward Moore, a seaman, died on the 11th of December. On the 15th they made Cape Lagullus, and the 17th anchored in Table Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope. When they got a few leagues to sea, they found the weather quite moderate, and made sail, expecting to be able to recover the bay again. On

* A short time previous to their arrival here, the town of Batavia had been very unhealthy, and was not now in a much better state. The sailors indeed had continued to enjoy good health, till about a week before they were ready for sea, when a fever began to rage violently among them at Batavia: in some of the seamen, however, this malady was brought on by intemperance. On the 19th of

the 22d, in the evening, they fetched close round Green Point, and hoisted the signal of distress, having but one small anchor left: his Majesty's ship, *Providence*, the Assistant armed tender, and Pitt transport in the bay, repeated their signals with many guns, and sent all their boats: several English Whalers, and some Americans also sent their boats, with anchors and hausers, and they were soon got into safety. The same night they received anchors and cables from the shore, and secured the ship.

On the 13th of January, 1792, having completed their provisions for sixteen weeks, the captain directed that such of the men as were sufficiently recovered to proceed upon the voyage, might be discharged from sick-quarters and sent on board. On the 18th, with a breeze from south-south-east, they ran down to Robbin's Island, where they anchored. On the 19th, with a south-west breeze, they stretched out to sea. Five men were left at sick quarters, being too infirm to be taken on board.

On the 4th of February, at five in the afternoon, they saw the island of St. Helena, and at noon anchored off James's Valley. The captain sent an officer on shore to wait on the governor, who, in a note, politely expressed his concern for the misfortunes he had met with, and offered every refreshment the island could afford to the seamen. On the 5th he landed, and was received by the governor under the usual salute.

A letter from Captain Hunter to the Lords of the Admiralty, is here introduced in the original work, giving his opinion on the best course from New South Wales to Europe.

October died Daniel Buddle, seaman. On the 20th they left the road and sailed to the island of Onrust, where they anchored and received some stores for the use of the ship. On the 22d they sailed from Onrust, and the 26th cleared the strait of Tunda, when Terence Berne, seaman, died, and twenty-two were down with the Batavia fever.

SECTION XI.

Lieutenant King visits Monsieur de la Perouse at Botany Bay—His Reception there—His Adventures—Lieutenant King returns to Port Jackson—Sent to form a Settlement on Norfolk Island—Leaves Port Jackson—An Island discovered—Arrival at Norfolk Island—Lands the Convicts, &c.—Ground cleared—A Store-House erected—Vegetables—Distressed by Rats.

AT day-light on the 1st of February, Lieutenant King, and Lieutenant Dawes of the Marines, left Sydney Cove in a cutter, to proceed to Botany Bay and visit Monsieur de la Perouse, on the part of Governor Phillip, and to tender him any assistance he might require. They arrived on board the Boussole at ten in the morning, and were politely received by Monsieur Perouse, and the few officers he had. After Lieutenant King had delivered his message to him, he returned his thanks to Governor Phillip, adding, at the same time, that he should be in France within the space of six months, and as he had stores, &c. sufficient to serve him for three years, he should be happy to send Governor Phillip any thing that he might want. Monsieur Perouse informed Mr. King, that many of the convicts had been to him, requesting to enter on board his ships, but that he had dismissed them with threats, and had given them a day's provision to carry them back to the settlement. The wind blowing fresh from the northward, he accepted Monsieur Perouse's invitation to pass the day with him, and to return to Port Jackson the next morning.

About this time two criminal courts were assembled to try offenders, who are proceeded against in the following manner. The Judge-advocate issues his precept for three senior naval officers, and three military officers to assemble at

* In the course of their conversation the Lieutenant was informed that he had touched at and been off the following places, viz. M^{te} Mira, Teneriffe, and Santa Catharina. He had been at Kamtschatka, where he replaced the wooden inscription which had been erected to the memory of Captain Clerke, (which was nearly defaced) with a copper one. From Kamtschatka, he went to Macao, to the Philippines, the Sandwich Islands, Isles des Navigateurs, Friendly Islands, and Norfolk Island, from whence he came to Botany Bay. At the island Macouna (one of the Isles des Navigateurs) he had been so unfortunate as to lose Monsieur de Laugle, captain of the Astrolabe, with eight officers, four sailors, and one boy, all of whom were killed by the natives, besides a number who were wounded. It was also supposed that thirty of the natives were killed, this unfortunate affair. De la Perouse quitted the island imme-

diately after endeavouring to regain his long-boats, which he found the natives had destroyed. He mentions the inhabitants of these islands as a strong and handsome race of men; very few among them being less than six feet high, and well proportioned; and the women are delicately beautiful. He further observed, that the inhabitants are much more advanced in internal policy and order than any of the islands in the Pacific Ocean. He declared, that at every place he had touched at or been near, he had found all the nautical astronomical remarks of Captain Cook to be very exact and true. He concluded with saying, "Eh bien Monsieur Cook a tant fait, qu'il ne m'a rien laisse a faire, que d'admirer ses ouvrages." *In effect, Mr. Cook has done so much, that he has left me nothing to do, but to admire his labours.*

On the 6th Governor Phillip signified his intention of sending Lieutenant King to Norfolk Island, with a few people, and stock to settle it; and Lieutenant Ball was ordered to receive on board the Supply the stores and provisions for that purpose. The business engaged the whole of Mr. King's attention till the 15th, when,

diately after endeavouring to regain his long-boats, which he found the natives had destroyed. He mentions the inhabitants of these islands as a strong and handsome race of men; very few among them being less than six feet high, and well proportioned; and the women are delicately beautiful. He further observed, that the inhabitants are much more advanced in internal policy and order than any of the islands in the Pacific Ocean. He declared, that at every place he had touched at or been near, he had found all the nautical astronomical remarks of Captain Cook to be very exact and true. He concluded with saying, "Eh bien Monsieur Cook a tant fait, qu'il ne m'a rien laisse a faire, que d'admirer ses ouvrages." *In effect, Mr. Cook has done so much, that he has left me nothing to do, but to admire his labours.*

having

having received his commission and instructions from the governor, and taken the oaths of fidelity and allegiance, &c by which he was appointed superintendant and commandant of Norfolk Island, he embarked the following persons, who were appointed to go with him, viz. Mr. James Cunningham, master's mate of the *Sirius*; Mr. Thomas Jameson, surgeon's first mate of the *Sirius*; Mr. John Altree, assistant to the surgeon; Roger Morly, weaver; William Westbrook, and — Sawyer, seamen; Charles Heritage, and John Batchelor, marines; with nine male, and six female convicts; twenty-three persons in the whole.

They sailed from Sydney Cove at seven in the morning, and at eight got out of the harbour, when it blew a perfect hurricane. At two in the morning on the 16th, the wind veered round to south-by-west, and moderated. In the evening a flying fish flew on board, which in this latitude was thought extraordinary. At day-break, on the 18th, land was discovered, bearing east-south-east. Early the next morning, having neared the land considerably, they perceived a pointed rock right a-head, at some distance from the island: they hove to, and soundings were tried for with 120 fathoms of line, but they got no bottom. They had light winds and pleasant weather till the 24th, when they had very strong gales from east-south-east, with a high cross sea. Early in the morning of the 28th, the wind veered to south-west, and, supposing themselves to be about fifteen leagues to the westward of Norfolk Island, they hove to at seven in the evening. About eleven o'clock in the forenoon they made the largest of the two small islands, lying off the south-west end of Norfolk Island five leagues distant. The point of Norfolk, opposite Nepean Isle, was named Point Hunter, after Captain John Hunter of his Majesty's ship the *Sirius*.

At day-light on the 3d, Lieutenant King left the *Supply*, and went in her boat with Mr. Cunningham, to examine the south-west side of the island, which they rowed round till they opened Phillip and Nepean isles off the south point. There is only one place on this side of the island where landing is practicable, and that is in a small bay just within the west point.

As it blew very fresh all night, Lieutenant King landed the next morning abreast of the *Supply*, with the midshipman and surgeon; they

walked across the island to the bay that Mr. King had seen the day before. After ascending a very steep hill, they got to the top of the island, which they found to be a plain, but every foot of ground was covered with trees, or the large roots of trees which rose above the surface of the earth: it was impossible to walk the distance of three or four yards, without encountering an almost impenetrable net-work formed of a great variety of articles. No grass or herb grew between the roots of these trees, though the soil appeared to be extremely rich and good. The pines, which are numerous, are of incredible growth: one of them, which had been blown down, or had fallen by age, measured 140 feet in length; and several were then standing, which measured 30 feet in circumference. They grew perfectly straight, having no branches for almost eighty feet from the ground.

They found it impracticable to get into Anson's bay, though they saw down into it: the hill over it was a perpendicular cliff, with a large kind of iris growing on the sides of it. Had not the iris been sufficiently strong to have supported their weight, they must have fallen down a depth of ninety feet. They were too thankful for their mistake to attempt a second trial.

During this excursion they saw not a leaf of flax, or any herb whatever. They saw pigeons, parrots, parroquets, doves, and a great variety of birds, so perfectly tame that they might be knocked down with a stick. On hearing a report that landing in Anson's bay was very practicable, Lieutenant Ball accompanied Lieutenant King to visit and examine the place, and they found it exactly answered the master's description of it. The shore close to the beach, was covered with a long kind of iris, within which was impenetrable forests, and the soil was extremely good. Here Mr. King determined to fix, and was highly pleased that he had discovered a spot where he could begin his operations. But, as it was late in the evening, he returned on board the *Supply*, when she was soon after brought to an anchor in twenty fathoms.

At day-light on the 6th Lieutenant King left the *Supply*, with two boats, taking in them all the persons belonging to the settlement, with the tents, some provisions, and many of the most necessary tools; all which they landed, and began clearing a spot of ground, to erect the tents on: he colours were hoisted, and before sun-set,

every article was on shore, and the tents absolutely pitched. Before the colours were hauled down, Mr. King assembled his small colony under them (Lieutenant Ball, and some of his officers being present) and drank the health of his Majesty, the Queen, the Prince of Wales, and success to the settlement. And, to testify their loyalty, they gave three cheers on the occasion.

Soon after the landing of this party, they discovered a fine rivulet of water, running close at the back of the ground where the settlement was made. Trees, growing in every direction, formed an impenetrable assemblage of them, and gave the whole the appearance of an impervious forest. As Lieutenant King had only twelve men (one of whom was seventy-two years of age, and another a boy of fifteen) exclusive of the mate and surgeon, his progress for some time must consequently have been very slow. On the 8th they had strong gales and cloudy weather: at nine in the morning they hoisted the colours, as a signal that the Supply's boat might land; and at eleven they received the last of their baggage, provisions, and stores, and hauled the boat up. In the afternoon Lieutenant Ball came on shore to ask Mr. King if he had any further occasion for the Supply; and, as he had not any, he took leave and returned on board; and in the afternoon sailed for Port Jackson. Lieutenant King sent by him a journal of his proceedings to Governor Phillip*.

Wishing to make every thing as commodious as possible, he set people to work on the 17th, to clear a piece of ground a little above the garden, where he intended to move the tents, or to build houses: he set two sawyers and a car-

* Sunday, the 9th, every person in the settlement assembled in his tent, where he performed divine service; after which his commission from the governor was read, appointing him commandant of this island. He then assured every person, that he intended to forward the king's service to the utmost of his power; and, (addressing himself to the convicts) informed them that the idle or dishonest should not escape that punishment which was due to useless and destructive members of society.

In the afternoon they saw some turtle lying on a sandy beach at the east end of the bay, two of which were conveyed to the tents for general use, and issued in lieu of salt provisions. Having thus discovered that there were turtle on the island, Mr. King gave peremptory orders, that no person should go near the beach where they were seen, that they might not be frightened, or risk the loss of so valuable a resource. The turtle they had taken weighed two

penter to work in digging a saw-pit, in order to saw pine for building a store-house for provisions, &c. which were now lodged in his tent, made of the Sirius's sprit sail.

In walking about the island, the surgeon found out the flax plant, which proved to be what they had hitherto called the iris. Mr. King had no idea of its being what Captain Cook calls the flax plant of New Zealand: the cliffs and shore near the settlement were covered with it: it very much resembles the iris, except that the leaves are much thicker and larger; the flaxy part is the fibres, which extends the whole length of the leaf.

The store-house was finished on the 2d: its dimensions were twelve feet square, and nine feet high. All the provisions were now deposited in it. During the last three days the wind blew strong from the south-west, which blighted every plant which bid fair for doing well: the rats were now discovered to be very numerous; they destroyed some Indian corn which was three inches out of the ground.

Supposing the south-west winds would be frequent during the winter, Mr. King began to clear the ground on the north-east side of the hill, which he named Mount George, which would be sheltered from the south and south-west winds. The ground, which had some time been clearing to fix the tents upon, being now ready, they were moved to it on the 3d, and some of the men began to build huts; the sawyers were employed in sawing scantling, and other necessary timber to build the lieutenant a house.

The wheat which had been sown in the garden ground on the 2d, had been consumed by the rats on the 4th. Not a grain was left upon

hundred weight each. From this time till the 15th, every person was employed in cleaning and turning up the garden ground, which, when finished, was enclosed by a hedge, and sown with different kinds of seeds. This afternoon three more turtles were turned, which were brought to the settlement.

On Sunday, the 16th, Lieutenant King performed divine service. Two convicts, whom he had permitted to take an excursion the preceding day, returned this day at noon quite naked: they had several cuts or wounds in different parts of their bodies, occasioned by the entangled state of the woods, and the sharpness of the briars: they had not been long from the settlement before they lost the sight of the sun from the thickness of the woods. At length, hearing the noise of their church-bell, which was a man beating on the head of an empty cask, they speedily returned to the settlement.

the land. There were no cats, and but one dog on the premises; and these vermin were therefore become a serious nuisance: to get rid of them, however, as soon as possible, all the empty casks were ordered to be converted into traps.

On Sunday, the 6th, Lieutenant King performed divine service; and, as some irregularities had taken place, which did not merit corporal punishment, he read to them the orders for the preservation of decorum, of which the following is an abridgment*.

SECTION XII.

Regular Employment of the Convicts—Meet with a disagreeable Accident—Thefts detected—The Robbers punished—Troubled with Rats—Live Stock on the Settlement—Trees affording Food for Hogs—Some of the Settlers poisoned—Cured with sweet Oil—A Convict punished for seditious Language—Birds—Description of Arthur's Vale—The King's Birth-Day—Flourishing State of the Gardens—Arrival of the Supply—Four Persons drowned—Ball Bay described—Arrival of the Golden Grove Transport—Marines and Convicts brought.

THE settlement being now arranged in some degree of order, Lieutenant King distributed the people into regular working parties, to facilitate the different operations he was desirous of getting forward. Five men were dispatched to clear away ground on the north-east side of Mount George; two in clearing a road from the ground to the fresh-water rivulet; two sawyers were preparing timber to build him a house; two men were erecting huts; and he sent Mr. Altree, the surgeon's assistant, to proceed upon a project already mentioned.

For a considerable time the people were thus invariably employed; but the work was often retarded by severe colds; and sometimes the workmen had been blinded for four or five days together, by the white sap of a tree, which,

getting into their eyes, occasioned the most excruciating pain. The best remedy for it, however, was Florence oil, which, dropped into the eye, destroyed the acrimony of the sap †.

Though the commandant, finding the rats to be extremely numerous, had ordered the empty casks to be converted into traps, and great quantities of those vermin were caught for several successive nights; yet they soon grew too cunning to be caught in the traps, and too bold to be intimidated by the dead bodies of their associates, which had been industriously scattered about the premises. Some glass was then directed to be pounded very fine, and mixed with oatmeal, which being scattered about the garden, destroyed vast numbers of them ‡.

On the 8th of May, the two sawyers, the carpenter,

* I. No person to be absent from public worship, which will begin every Sunday morning at eleven o'clock: they are to appear clean, and behave themselves devoutly.

II. The hours of work, are to begin at day-light, and work till half past seven; at half past eight to work till half past eleven; and then at two till sun-set.

III. To encourage the cultivation of gardens, every one will have the Saturdays to themselves; but those who misapply that indulgence will be deprived of it.

IV. Seeds will be allowed to those who have cleared away garden ground, and those who raise the greatest quantity of seeds and vegetables will be rewarded.

V. The women are to sweep round the houses or tents every morning, and to cook the victuals for the men. Fish or fowls must not be cleaned in or near the houses; that business must be performed by the sea-side.

VI. Persons going near turtle-bay will be instantly and severely punished.

VII. The women are to collect the men's dirty linen every Friday, and to return it washed and mended, on the Sunday morning.

VIII. No person is to cut down or destroy any banana-tree.

IX. Exchanging or selling cloaths by the convicts is strictly forbid. Inattention to this order will be deemed a theft.

X. Great care is to be taken of all the tools.

XI. The dishonest or idle will be totally excluded from any present or future indulgences; they will be either chastised by corporal punishment on the island, or be sent to Port Jackson to be tried by a criminal court there.

† On the 17th, Mr. King detected John Batchelor, a marine, in his tent, stealing rum out of a small vessel. In the afternoon he assembled the settlement, and punished the thief with three dozen lashes; causing him to be led by a halter to the place of punishment. The deficiency of rum was also stopped out of his allowance. Though there was reason to hope that this example would have a good effect, yet on the 20th, a convict boy was detected stealing the surgeon's allowance of rum out of his tent. He was punished with a hundred lashes.

‡ Out of six ewes which the commandant brought to the island,

carpet
coating
winds
they w
sweats
medic
them
and ex
a week

On
wishm
of the
tious l
On
ber of
easily
bough
when
three
Parrot
the har
agreea
green,
of the
their
species
like ra
rear th
bill res
free fr
extrem
holes
the air

On
house
four f
The
bages
planta
turnip
cellery
choked
potato
ed by

island,
was tak
eating
the sto
two ev
three d
* On
the ma
point o

carpenter, and three convicts were poisoned, by eating some beans which much resembled the Windsor bean; in two hours after eating them, they were seized with violent retchings, and cold sweats. Fortunately some sweet oil, and other medicines administered by the surgeon, gave them relief: but they were so much weakened and exhausted that they were unable to work for a week afterwards.

On the 10th the commandant ordered a punishment of forty lashes to be inflicted on one of the convicts, for using threatening and seditious language.

On their first landing they found a great number of pigeons, which were so tame as to be easily taken; but they had lately quitted the low boughs, and harboured about the tops of pines; when plucked and drawn, they weigh from about three quarters of a pound to a pound each. Parrots here are very numerous and very ugly; the harshness of their note is also extremely disagreeable to the ear. The parroquets are entirely green, except a red tuft on their head. Several of the small birds have a melodious note, and their plumage is beautiful. There are also a species of birds which burrow in the ground like rabbits, where they hatch their eggs, and rear their young: they are web-footed, and their bill resembles that of the sea fowl; but they are free from any fishy taste, their flesh being deemed extremely fine. These birds never quit their holes till sun-set, from which time till midnight the air swarms with them.

On the 18th the shell of the commandant's house was finished: its dimensions were twenty-four feet long by twelve wide.

They planted upwards of one thousand cabbages on the 23d, and every vegetable at the plantation was in a thriving state: they had turnips, carrots, lettuces, onions, leeks, parsley, cellery, five different sorts of cabbages, artichokes, and beet in great forwardness; but the potatoes and yams appeared to be almost destroyed by the grub-worm*.

On the island, five died with the scab, though every possible care was taken of them; and one of the sows was poisoned by eating something noxious in the woods. The remainder of the stock, which appeared to be doing well, consisted of two ewes, three sows, two boars, four hens, one cock, three ducks, a drake, and a goat.

* On the 6th, the commander ordered Mr. Cunningham, the mate, into the boat, with four men, to lie within the point of the reef, in order to assist the Supply's boat, should

On the 7th the commandant was obliged to punish a convict with thirty-six lashes, for stealing a hatch of eggs from under a hen in the act of incubation.

About this time Governor Phillip sent seventeen queries to Lieutenant King, respecting the appearances of things, and the probable consequences that might ensue, respecting their different operations. These queries are amply stated in the original work, accompanied with the commandant's judicious answers.

At sun-rise on the 12th of August, colours were hoisted, in observance of the Prince of Wales's birth-day,

Frequent accidents having happened to boats here, induced the commandant to search for a better landing place, or a place where landing might be practicable, when the surf ran too high to land in Sydney Bay; and Lieutenant Ball having mentioned one in Cascade Bay, on the north side of the island, the commandant set out at day-light in the morning, taking three men with him, in search of it, proposing also to examine Ball Bay in his road. He left the surgeon commanding officer at the settlement, where his steadiness and general knowledge made him a valuable associate. After climbing and descending a number of steep hills, they arrived at a gully to the westward of Bali Bay, about eleven o'clock, from whence they walked round to the bay by the sea-shore, it being low water.

The landing place mentioned by Lieutenant Ball, is on a rock, a little detached from the island, and has communication with it at half tide: there is no objection to this being a very good landing place, were it not for the almost total impossibility of getting provisions or stores further than the rock, which is about three hundred yards from the valley that leads down to it. At day-light on the 19th, they set out on their return to Sydney Bay, where they arrived at four in the afternoon, with hardly a rag to cover themselves, the cloaths being torn off their

any misfortune happen to her: unfortunately their boat was swept away to the westward by the tide, and whilst they were striving to get under the point of the reef again, a heavy surf broke on her broadside, and overset her. This shocking accident gave him infinite concern. Small as their numbers were before, they were now decreased by the loss of Mr. Cunningham, an amiable young man, the sawyer, and one of the best of the convicts: a seaman, belonging to the Supply: was also drowned.

backs

backs by the briars. In the morning of the 25th, the surgeon, with six men, went to Ball Bay, to make a commencement on the creek, taking with them four tents, and a week's provisions.

Early in the month of October, they found a sensible alteration in the weather: it being very warm, except in the mornings and evenings, which are still extremely cold. On the 13th at day-light, the Golden Grove was observed lying at an anchor in the road; and soon afterwards, Mr. Donovan, a midshipman belonging to the Sirius, came on shore to deliver the governor's letters. This gentleman also delivered a letter

from Mr. Blackburn, the master of the Supply, informing the commandant that he sailed from Port Jackson the 24th of September, being ordered by Governor Phillip to conduct the transport to this island.

In the course of the 15th were received on shore the party of marines, and all the convicts; together with stores and provisions. The next day they landed 50 casks of flour, 18 casks of salt provisions, and a quantity of stores. This day a turtle was turned, which weighed 200 pounds.

SECTION XIII.

Provisions received by the Golden Grove—Timber sent to Port Jackson—Observations on the Navigation near Norfolk Island—Number of Persons on the Settlement—Nepean and Phillip Islands described—Corn reaped—A Party sent to Ball Bay—Task-work of the Convicts—The Free People exercised—Plot to seize the Island—Orders for the Preservation of Regularity—Provisions and Stores examined.

HAVING received instructions from Governor Phillip to send what timber he could to Port Jackson, the commandant set the men to work in cutting spars and sawing boards for that purpose. At day-light on the 17th of October, the Golden Grove stood into the road and anchored. By the 21st of October the whole of the stores and provisions were received from the Golden Grove; besides two sows and fourteen young pigs, belonging to the crown; and a she-goat, which was the property of Mr. Collins, the judge-advocate*.

But, previous to the departure of the Golden Grove, a letter was dispatched to Mr. Blackburn, the master of her, requesting him to communicate his remarks on the navigation round these islands, which he very obligingly complied with, and his observations are found very just and accurate: they are inserted at large in the large Quarto Edition, page 337, &c.

* Provisions for about seventeen months were received at the following ratio: for one man for a week, flour, seven pounds: beef three pounds and a half, pork, two pounds: butter, six ounces; peas, three pints. For one woman for a week, flour, four pounds and a half; beef, two pounds and a quarter; pork, one pound and a quarter; butter, four ounces, peas, two pints. The above ratio was full avoirdupoise weight, without any deduction whatever.

† To encourage the convicts who came by the Golden

As Lieutenant King had much occasion for a carpenter, a man who had been discharged from the Sirius, and was on board the Golden Grove as a sailor, made application to him for a birth, but he said he was so circumstanced that he could make no agreement with him, but informed him that if he chose to remain he must take it on himself: this he, with great readiness, consented to, and the commandant found him a great acquisition:

The Golden Grove sailed for Port Jackson on the 29th †.

The settlement now consisted of the following persons, viz.

Mr. Stephen Eunnavan, midshipman of the Sirius	- 1
Mr. Thomas Jamaison, surgeons' first mate of ditto	- 1
M. John Altree, assistant-surgeon	- 1
Roger Morley, Robert Webb, Thomas Webb, seamen belonging to ditto	- 3

Grove, Mr. King gave them from the time of their landing till the 30th, to build houses for themselves, and to clear a small portion of garden ground. The little mansions were expeditiously erected, being composed of logs, and thatched with bull-rushes, and flags, which made them very comfortable. Some of the convicts who had the best characters, had permission to build their houses in the vale, and to clear away a proper quantity of land to be appropriated to culinary purposes.

John

	Brought over	6
John Livingston, carpenter, late belong-	ing to ditto	- 1
Serjeant, corporal, six private marines		8 16 free
Male convicts	- - -	29
Female convicts	- - -	17

Total number, besides two children, 62 *

On the 14th the commandant planted thirty rod of ground with Indian corn: some which had been planted in September was now five feet high, and the wheat grew so extremely rank that it was found necessary to crop it. He went out in the coble on the 22d, and sounded between Point Hunter and Nepean Isle: there is a good channel, and not less than four fathoms close to Point Hunter. On the north side of Nepean Isle, in mid-channel, there are eight fathoms water.

The weather now becoming very hot, the commandant changed the working hours, and, to avoid the heat of the sun, gave the labourers from half past ten till half past twelve; they were employed in clearing ground, making shingles, and cutting a road from the settlement to Ball Bay †.

The 25th, being Christmas day, was observed as a holy-day: the colours were hoisted at sunrise, and the commandant performed divine service; the officers dined with him, and each of the convicts had a pint of rum, and a double allowance of beef: the evening concluded with bonfires.

On taking a comparative view of the work performed by convicts, the commandant adopted

* After the departure of the Golden Grove, the commandant made public an extract from Governor Phillip's letter to him, to the following effect.—“ You will return any marine, convict, or other person, whose conduct you disapprove: and you may permit those whose good behaviour merits the indulgence, to work one day in the week on lots of land, one or two acres to a convict, to be pointed out by you for that purpose, and which may be considered as their own property while they behave well. When the time for which they are sentenced shall expire, lands will be granted them, if they wish to remain as settlers, and you are at liberty to give them such a part of the public stock to breed from as you may judge proper, forbidding any person on the island to sell any fowl, hog, or other animal, without your permission; and you are not to permit the killing of any live stock, till you have a sufficient quantity on the island for your support, except in cases of sickness.

† On the 8th the commandant housed all the barley that

VOL. I. NO. LXI.

the plan of tasking them, and proposed an arrangement in which they all acquiesced. Six men were to cut the timber down on an acre of ground in one week: six men were to clear away and turn up an acre of ground fit to receive seed in twenty-eight days: two sawyers were to perform one hundred feet of sawing each day †.

Thomas Watts, a convict, received twenty-four lashes on the 19th, for contemptuously refusing to work, and abusing the corporal of marines for properly reprimanding him.

Some irregularities having occurred, the commandant found it necessary to assemble all the free people on the 23d, to read the articles of war. The next day Robert Webb, a seaman belonging to the Sirius, but who was employed as a gardener on the island, expressed a desire to speak to him in private: the request being complied with, he informed him, that a plan had been concerted among the convicts to surprise him; with the rest of the officers, &c. and to possess themselves of the public stores. On his being interrogated, he said, that Elizabeth Anderson, a female convict, had informed him of the particulars. Thinking it necessary to substantiate this information, the commandant caused Robert Webb and Elizabeth Anderson to be kept apart, and took their depositions separately, on oath. They agreed in every particular, and were in substance as follow.

That, on the 22d, between nine in the morning and noon, Elizabeth Anderson sighed, when William Francis, who stood near her, asked her why she sighed? she answered, that she was very low. William Francis then asked her, if she could get

had been raised on an acre of ground, and was sown in June and July. At first it had a most promising appearance; but when the ear was shot and nearly filled, some heavy rains in September laid a considerable part of it down, and the quantity destroyed by rats and quails was incredible: though there was a prospect of getting at least fifty bushels of grain, the whole, when gleaned, did not exceed ten bushels. The barley was extremely fine, 116 ears having been produced from one grain. Garden vegetables also flourished; cabbages were cut which weighed twenty-six pounds each.

† On the 8th, a male child was brought forth, and being the first born on the island, he received the name of Norfolk. On the 15th, at noon, parties were sent in pursuit of the cockswain of the coble, who had lost himself in the woods, as he was returning from Ball Bay: he was found on the 18th, naked and almost exhausted, and could not, without difficulty, be conveyed to the settlement.

8 X

her

her liberty whether she would leave Webb. On her saying yes, he said, the first ship that comes here, except the *Sirius*, every one of us will have our liberty, to which we were all sworn last Saturday; and we (the convicts) would have had it already, if the *Sirius* was not the first ship expected; and the day that Watts was flogged was intended to have been the day for making Mr. King, and the free people prisoners.

The taking Webb and Anderson's depositions, and interrogating them consumed about two hours; and, it being Saturday, many of the convicts were out getting cabbages. As there was a possibility that the accusation against William Francis might be an invention; yet, having received that information, it became necessary to use every precaution against a surprize. The commandant therefore ordered a constant guard of three privates, to be conducted by Mr. Dunavan, the serjeant, and corporal; and a guard-house was built, in which the provisions and stores were deposited.

John Bryant, a convict, was interrogated on this business, and a pardon promised him if he would discover all he knew. He was brought before the commandant, and sworn on the cross, being a Catholic; the substance of which was as follows. That in going out to work on the 14th, with all the convicts, Samuel Picket remarked how easy it would be to take the island, by making the commandant prisoner, when going to, or returning from Arthur's Vale; after which, coming in and seizing the arms, and making prisoners of the marines and other free people. The remainder of Bryant's deposition agreed in every particular with the testimony of Elizabeth Anderson and Robert Webb*.

The commandant ordered Samuel Picket and William Francis to wear irons, and the next day (being Sunday) after prayers he addressed the convicts, and pointed out the absurdity, as well as the villainy of their plan; assured them that nothing but industry was necessary to insure them a happy and comfortable support: he exhorted them, by their future conduct to efface the me-

* It was now clear to the commandant that a scheme had been entered into, in which most of the convicts were concerned, and their succeeding in it so far as regarded the taking of himself and the officers prisoners was not to be doubted. Had they succeeded in the first part of their plan,

memory of this criminal attempt; promising to distinguish and encourage those whose conduct was meritorious. Having finished his address to the convicts, he caused the following additional orders to be read.

The commandant orders that no officer, soldier, free person, or convict, shall ever absent themselves from the camp or town for ten minutes together, without leave from the officer charged with the guard.

Every person returning from that leave, shall acquaint such officer of their return.

Every convict, who is observed going over the hill to the farm, without leave, will be fired at by the sentinel.

The convicts, and not more than three together, may build houses for themselves, at their leisure hours, in such places as shall be pointed out.

No person shall, in future, be suffered to live out of the camp.

John Thompson and Samuel Picket are dispossessed of their garden ground; on account of their ill behaviour. So outrageous an attempt having been made, the commandant thought himself justified in administering the oaths of allegiance and fidelity to the officers, marines, and free people individually, in the presence of the convicts. The theft of some Indian corn being fully proved, the offender, William Thompson, was sentenced to be punished with fifty lashes. Thomas Jones, another convict, received thirty-six lashes, for his insolence and abuse of Messieurs Jamieson and Dunavan. All the convicts were now employed in cutting down trees, and clearing the ground near the houses.

Joseph Long, a convict, endured twelve lashes on the 28th, for quitting his work, and absenting himself without leave.

On the 15th the commandant forgave Samuel Picket and William Francis, for their ill behaviour respecting the plot; but he expressed his determination to send Francis to Port Jackson the first opportunity, conceiving him to be a troublesome and worthless villain.

the destruction of the provisions and stores would have followed. It is difficult to say what fatal consequences would have ensued, from the drunken state they would have been in whilst the rum lasted.

SECTION

SECTION XIV.

A great Hurricane at Norfolk Island—Arrival of the Supply—Convicts sent from Port Jackson—Provisions and Stores—Departure of the Supply—Robberies—Employment of the Convicts—A Store-House erected—Arrival of a Party of Marines—Thefts committed—A Female Convict punished—Gardens plundered—Wheat destroyed by Parroquets—Number of Inhabitants.

THE interval of fine weather, which enabled them to examine the state of their provisions, was succeeded by a tremendous hurricane. In the morning of the 25th, they had light winds from the north-east, and very dismal cloudy weather: towards noon the wind blew a heavy gale, and its violence continued to increase. At midnight it blew with great fury, attended with deluges of rain. At four the next morning, several large pines were blown up by the roots; one of which fell on a hog-stye, and killed a sow and seven pigs; a similar accident befel a sow and two boars belonging to the crown*.

On the 2d of March, at day-light, the Supply was seen in the road: on which the commandant sent Mr. Dunavan on board her: he soon returned bringing letters to Mr. King from Governor Phillip; who had also sent twenty-one men, and six women convicts, with three children in the Supply, to be landed on this island. Having full confidence in the few free persons who were with him, the commandant did not hesitate a moment in receiving the additional number of convicts who were now arrived, though some of them had very infamous characters.

The commandant now ordered the surgeon to examine all the convicts who had lately arrived,

* From four in the morning till noon, the wind increased to a severe hurricane, and the heaviest rain that imagination can conceive. Pines and oak-trees of the largest size, were thrown by the violence of the tempest to a considerable distance from the place where they grew. To add to the horror of this scene, a large tree fell across the granary, and dashed it to pieces, staving a number of flour casks that were in it; but, by the general activity of the persons in the settlement, the only loss sustained was a few pounds of flour and a few stores that were blown away. The gale now raged with the most violent fury: while forests seemed, as it were, swept away by the roots. The violence of the wind blew up cabbages, turnips, and other vegetables forcibly from the earth. At three the wind veered round to south, and moderated, and at sun-set the weather was very pleasant. There was no appearance, on any part of the island, of such a storm having ever happened before: fortunately, however, only one man was

to discover if any of them were infected with disease, but they were all found to be healthy.

The convicts, who were now just arrived, were permitted by the commandant, to work on habitations for themselves till the 18th: the others were employed at task-work.

Officers, Marines, and Free-men,	16
Male convicts	50
Female convicts	23
Children	5

Total 94†.

On Sunday the 5th, after divine service, Thomas Jones, a convict, acquainted the commandant that the term of his transportation expired that day. He had been informed by Governor Phillip, that the different terms for which the convicts were sentenced was not known, as the masters of the transports had left the papers necessary with their owners; but that he had wrote to England for them, yet till their arrival no steps could be taken, as the convicts' words were not satisfactory. He therefore informed Thomas Jones that he might work for whom he pleased, and if he chose to work for the public good, he would be used the same as others were, till he received further orders concerning them.

On the 8th, Noah Mortimer, a convict, re-

hurt; he received a violent contusion on his right side, by the branch of a tree falling on him.

† Thomas Watson, a convict, was detected in another convict's house, on the 23d, stealing a bag of flour. The commandant, after examining witnesses, and fully proving the theft, ordered him into confinement, with an intention of sending him to Port Jackson to take his trial. To prevent these depredations as much as possible in future, he gave orders for the convicts to be mustered in their huts three times every night, and the hour of muster to be constantly changed: this was in some degree salutary, but robberies continued to be committed.

James Davis, a convict, received twenty-four lashes, on the 25th, for using seditious expressions, and contemptuously throwing away some fish which had been issued.

On the 30th, some incorrigible wretch stabbed one of the hogs belonging to the crown, which occasioned its death.

ceived

ceived sixty lashes for refusing to work. The 10th, being Good Friday, divine service was performed; but no work was done at the settlement.

On the 26th, John Williams, a marine, quitted his guard, and raised a quarrel in a convict's house: when a battle arose between himself and another marine; the former was punished with the chastisement of twenty-four lashes*.

At day-light on the 13th, his Majesty's armed tender the Supply, was perceived in the road: the surf at that time ran very high in Sydney Bay, and there being but little easterly wind, with a strong flood tide, she could not get to Ball Bay before three in the afternoon; when the commandant received his letters from governor Phillip, informing him, that he had sent Lieutenant John Creswell, of the marines, with fourteen privates, to the island; that Mr. Creswell was to put himself under his command; and that in case of his death or absence, the government of the island was to devolve on him. He had the pleasing gratification to find that his conduct was approved of by Governor Phillip.

The surf ran very high on the 14th till three in the afternoon, when Lieutenant Creswell landed, with his detachment and part of their baggage; but nothing else could be received on shore till the 17th, when part of the provisions and stores were landed.

The sea ran so high that no boat could land till the 21st, when they received the remainder of the provisions and stores.

* The 4th of June, being the anniversary of his Majesty's birth-day, it was observed as a holiday. The colours were hoisted, the marines and free people drew up under arms, in front of the commandant's house. The male convicts were drawn up on the right, and the females on the left. In consideration of the good behaviour of the convicts on the day of the hurricane, they were permitted to partake of the general festivity of the day: half a pint of rum being ordered for each man, and a pint of wine for each woman. When every person was assembled, and before the firing began, Thomas Watson, who was in confinement for a theft, was forgiven in consideration of the day.

+ I. All persons are regularly to attend muster, and divine service, unless prevented by sickness: the penalty for disobedience is extra work incurred, or by a stoppage of provisions: if repeated, corporal punishment will be inflicted.

II. No person shall be absent from their quarters, without leave, either by night or day. If they are seen lurk-

On the 28th of July, a tree fell on John Bryant, a convict, which bruised his head so extremely that he died about two hours afterwards. This man was one of the very few honest convicts which the commandant had on this island. Edward Gaff, a convict, received a hundred lashes on the 6th, for stealing three quarts of wheat. That thefts in so small a society should so often happen was truly astonishing; but when it is considered, that the principal part of that society were notorious for their depravity, it would almost be wonderful if they acted with integrity.

Most of the marines, who came to the island with Lieutenant Creswell, were now in possession of comfortable huts and good gardens.

The 12th of August, being the anniversary of the Prince of Wales's birth-day, was observed as a holiday, but no liquor was given to the convicts on that occasion, their recent thefts having excluded them from that indulgence.

The carpenters' having finished the shell of Lieutenant Creswell's house, the commandant employed them in making an addition to the back part of his habitation, being apprehensive it was in danger of being blown down by the prevailing violent south-west winds.

After divine service, on Sunday the 16th, the following orders were read, for preserving regularity and good order among the inhabitants†.

His Majesty's justices of the peace for this island, viz. the Commandant and Lieutenant John

ing about after the watch is set, they will be fired at by the centinel.

III. The working hours shall be duly attended to, and those who are absent from their work after the drum beats for that purpose, will lose a portion of the time they may save from their tasks. A second offence will be severely punished.

IV. The tasks to be continued as usual, and the time saved by the gangs to be at their own disposal. Those who distinguish themselves by cleaning the ground and cultivating their gardens, shall meet with suitable encouragement.

V. If any one belonging to a gang shall be justly accused of idleness, he shall receive adequate punishment.

VI. Those who from indolence or obstinacy neglect to build themselves warm huts, or who cut themselves through carelessness, shall have part of their provisions stopped, till they are able to go to work again.

VII. The tools and utensils to be returned every night to the store-house, when the retreat beats: any person who shall be found secreting any tools, or any article of the

John Cresswell, have appointed Roger Morley, and John Altree, to hold the office of constables; and every person is required to assist them in the execution of their office.

On the 29th, Ann Coombs, a female convict, received fifty lashes for defrauding Thomas Jones of some provisions: but this punishment did not deter her from committing similar crimes the next day, she being then detected stealing two check shirts from Francis Mew, a marine: for the latter crime she received the chastisement of one hundred lashes,

The gardens suffered extremely from the destructive effects of the grub-worm. The surgeon, who with great perseverance, had improved his spot of ground, and every thing in it was in great forwardness, had all his plants and vegetables nearly destroyed by those vermin; and many of the other gardens partook of the same fate. The depredations of these reptiles and the convicts, rendered the cultivation of gardens very discouraging to individuals. The corporal of marines, an industrious young man, had planted a piece of ground, and by attention and assiduity, had raised a quantity of vegetables, among which there was a very fine crop of potatoes, which was expected to produce at least five bushels; but, on the evening of the 5th, between sun-set and the time of the watch being set, some villains dug up the whole of the potatoes, and destroyed a quantity of other vegetables. Though the convicts were mustered in their huts at sun-set, and three times more in the course of the night, the theft was not discovered till the next morning; when strict search was made to discover the offender, but to no purpose. The potatoes were (in the cant phrase) *all planted*; viz. buried in the ground, to be taken out as they were wanted. Such acts as these were daily committed by these atrocious wretches.

Catherine Johnson, a female convict, received fifty lashes on the 7th, for abusing the store-keeper, and accusing him wrongfully of theft.

the King's stores, or commits any other robbery, shall be punished as his Majesty's justices of the peace shall direct, or be sent to Port Jackson to be tried by the criminal court, as the commandant may judge proper.

VIII. Every person is cautioned to take care of his cloathing: if any person, whether free or convict, shall buy or sell any article of sloop cloathing, he shall be prosecuted for buying or selling the king's stores.

IX. When a complaint is thought necessary, the person

As it would be convenient to have a path to the west side of the island, the commandant employed six men to cut a road from the settlement to Mou Pitt, and from thence to Anson Bay, which was completed by the 21st.

On the 27th of October fifteen acres of wheat were in ear, and had a good appearance. Seven acres of Indian corn also appeared in a thriving state, though much thinned by the grub-worm. The paroquets, of which they had myriads, were constantly destroying the wheat, and the garden productions, though a number of persons were employed in beating them away with long poles. The carpenters completed the barn on the 9th of November: its dimensions were thirty feet long, and sixteen wide, and it had a loft over it. It was a complete building, and conveniently situated in the center of the cultivated grounds in Arthur's Vale.

Lieutenant Cresswell, on the 13th, turned a turtle in a small bay to the westward of the settlement. He distributed it among the free persons, and others, as far as it would go.

Robert Webb, a seaman belonging to the Sirius, went to the valley above Cascade Bay on the 15th; having obtained the commandant's consent to become a settler, should Governor Phillip have no objection to it.

On the 3d of December, at day-light, the Supply arrived in the road, and soon afterwards the commandant received his letters from Governor Phillip. Six men, and eight women convicts were landed, with provisions and stores for the settlement. By an order from Governor Phillip, all persons on the island were put to two-thirds allowance of provisions, to commence on the 5th: the settlement at Port Jackson were put to this allowance in November.

At sun-rise on the 25th, the colours were hoisted, in observance of Christmas-day. Divine service was performed, two hogs ordered to be killed, belonging to the crown, and issued to the free people and convicts, at the rate of one pound and a half to each person. The crop of

complaining shall mention it to the corporal of the guard, who shall report it; when the commandant (or in his absence, Lieutenant John Cresswell) will hear and decide upon it.

X. Disobedience of orders, insolence to officers or overseers, or other improper behaviour, tending to disturb the peace, or to be injurious to the king's service, shall be severely punished, and honesty and regularity meet with due encouragement and reward.

wheat turning out tolerably well, two pounds of flour were also ordered to each man, and one pound to each woman, to celebrate the festival. Those few among the convicts who were found industrious, were now rewarded for it.

Richard Phillimore, a convict, had informed the commandant that the term of his transportation expired on the 16th of January, and having taken the oath administered on that occasion, he expressed a wish of becoming a settler. Being a sober industrious man, the commandant in-

dulged him with time to look out for a situation agreeable to his wishes: at length he fixed on a spot in the island, where he thought proper to reside; on which the commandant sent some labourers to build him a house, and to clear away a little ground for a commencement. He also gave him a sow with young, and some poultry. He seemed clearly of opinion, that in about a year or two at the farthest, he should be able to support himself, without requiring any assistance from the settlement.

SECTION XV.

The Arrival of the Sirius and Supply at Norfolk Island—The Loss of the Sirius—Captain Hunter and the Crew saved—General Meeting of the Officers—Regulations adopted—Martial Law proclaimed—Lieutenant-Governor Ross takes the Command—Lieutenant King leaves Norfolk Island—Description of the Country—State of the Cultivation—General Behaviour of the Convicts—Lieutenant King arrives at Port Jackson—Finds the Country much improved—Manners and Customs of the Natives.

HEARING a tumultuous noise of huzzaing and rejoicing, intelligence from England was anticipated; and, on enquiry into the cause, it appeared that two vessels were seen in the offing. As the wind blew strong, and a great sea was running into the bay; these vessels, which were found to be the *Sirius* and *Supply*, bore up for Ball Bay, to which place the commandant repaired, and received from Lieutenant Ball his letters from Governor Phillip. Our expectations were again disappointed, for, instead of those pleasing hopes being realized which had been excited by the appearance of the vessels in the morning, they were informed that no relief had arrived, nor had any intelligence been received from England. The commandant was also directed to furnish Lieutenant-Governor Ross with copies of all such orders as he had received from the Governor, which had not yet been carried into execution; and to leave him such rules and regulations as he had established for preserving order and regularity among the convicts. He was farther directed to embark on board the *Sirius*, whose commander had orders to receive him on board, with all such petty officers, seamen, and marines, belonging to that ship, who were not desirous of becoming settlers; directions having been given to the Lieutenant-Governor

to that effect. Lieutenant-Governor Ross brought with him one captain, five subalterns, a great many non-commissioned officers and privates, and the colours: with them also were brought a number of male and female convicts, and children; with their proportion of cloaths, provisions, and stores. The two vessels went round to Cascade Bay, where part of the marines, and some of the convicts were landed; and on the following morning, the remainder of the marines and convicts, with a considerable part of their baggage were landed, and they marched to the settlement. The Lieutenant-Governor arrived at the settlement at noon. In the orders of the night, he desired the commandant would continue the command of the island till his departure.

On the 15th the remains of the provisions and stores on the island were surveyed by Captain Johnson, and Lieutenants Creswell and Clark; after which Lieutenant King got the receipts from Mr. Roger Morley, to whom he had given an order to act as store-keeper, with the approbation of Governor Phillip. This day Jeremiah Leary, a convict, ran the gantlet among the convicts for theft, and was severely punished. The two vessels were working up for the island; and at one in the afternoon the *Supply* came into the road,

road, landed a quantity of baggage, some stock, and thirteen casks of provisions*.

At ten in the morning of the 21st, Lieutenant-Governor Ross, Captain Hunter, all the commissioned officers of the marines, and of the *Sirius*, and Lieutenant King, assembled in the government house; with a view of establishing martial law till farther orders, there being no law in force on the island by which criminals might be punished with death for capital offences. It was therefore unanimously agreed, that in all cases where sentence of death was pronounced, five persons out of seven should concur in opinion. It was also resolved, that all private stock, Indian corn, and potatoes, should be delivered to the store-keeper, and appropriated for the use of the public; and that every person should be limited to half allowance of provisions till it should be known what quantity could be saved from the wreck; and that three locks should be put on the store house and barn; one key of which to be possessed by Captain Hunter, another in the possession of a person to be named by the Lieutenant-Governor, and the third by a person to be named by the convicts. These resolutions were agreed to, and signed by the parties assembled.

At eight in the morning of the 22d, all persons on the island were assembled near the lower flag-shaft, on which the union was hoisted. The marines were drawn up in two lines; the colours of the detachment unfurled: the *Sirius*'s crew were drawn up on the right and the convicts on the left; the officers being then in the center. The proclamation was then read, declaring that the island was to be governed by martial law.

* No landing could be attempted on the 18th: on the 19th the wind grew more moderate, and at day-light the *Supply* came into the road, and the *Sirius* was at some distance to the southward, standing in for the island. There being very fine landing, Lieutenant King made the signal that large boats could land safely, and by ten o'clock every thing was received from the *Supply*: soon afterwards, the *Sirius* hove to, in order to hoist her boats out, which, being accomplished, she made sail; but the tide of flood still ran very strong, and she could not weather the outer rock of the reef which runs off point Ross; unfortunately the wind shifted to the south-east, and forced her near the island: she was now hove on stays, but having fresh stern-way, she tailed on the reef and struck. The masts were instantly cut away, and only two boats' load of provisions could be got out. At five o'clock the surgeon's mate came on shore by the grating, being hauled through a very great surf: he brought a note from Captain Hunter,

In the afternoon John Brannagin and William Dring (two convicts) offered their services to go on board the wreck, to heave the live stock over; and, having obtained permission, sent a number of pigs and some poultry on shore, but they continued on board: at the dusk of the evening, a light was observed in the after part of the ship; on which a volley of small arms were fired, to oblige them to quit the deck, or put the light out; which not being done, a three pounder shot was fired into the wreck, but without effect. In consequence of this John Arscot, a convict carpenter, offered to go off; and though it was very dark, and the surf ran very high, he got on board, and obliged the other two convicts to quit the wreck by the hawser. Arscot hailed the shore, but they could not perfectly understand him. Brannagin, one of the convicts was drunk when he came on shore.

On the 23d, the master of the *Sirius*, with eight men, went on board the wreck by the hawser, and a triangle was erected on the reef, to keep the bight of the hawser from the ground; which would greatly facilitate the landing any article from the wreck. The master informed Captain Hunter, by a note, that Brannagin and Dring, the two convicts, had set fire to the wreck, which had burnt through the gun deck; but had fortunately been extinguished by Arscot, who went on board to send them out of the ship. On this information they were ordered into confinement, previous to their being tried for setting fire to the wreck.

The weather being moderate and pleasant in the morning of the 24th, Lieutenant King went on board the *Supply*, with Lieutenants Water-

desiring to know if the commandant thought it would be safe for the sailors to abide by the wreck all night. He made a signal for the wreck to be quitted, and by the time it grew dark, the captain and most of the sailors were on shore, being dragged through a very heavy surf. Captain Hunter and Mr. Waterhouse were got on shore together, the former being so much exhausted that he had nearly quitted his hold: the first and second Lieutenant, with some of the sailors, remained on board all night.

When the ship struck, Lieutenant Governor Ross ordered the drums to assemble the marines and convicts: martial law was then proclaimed; the officers and marines were ordered to wear their side-arms; guards were set over the barn and store-houses; and some other necessary regulations enforced by the Lieutenant-Governor. On the 20th, by four o'clock, every person was got out of the wreck, without any other accident than receiving a few bruises.

house

house and Fowell, and twenty-two of the crew, belonging to the late Sirius.

Cursory Remarks on Norfolk Island, extracted from Lieutenant King's narrative. This island is a long square, containing about fourteen thousand acres: it is six miles in length, and four in breadth. It is hilly, but there are some extensive plains on the summits of those hills. Mount Pitt is very remarkable, being about two hundred fathoms high. The whole island is covered with a very thick forest, choaked up with underwood.

It is supplied with several streams of very fine water, some of which are sufficiently large to turn a number of mills. On a hill, near the middle of the island, there is a pond of fresh water of about half an acre, with no rivulet near it, nor any spring to be perceived; yet it is always full in the greatest drought, and has a very good taste. All the streams abound with fine eels.

As a proof of the salubrity of the air of this island, the commandant asserted that there had hardly been any sickness since he landed in it; nor had his people any illness, except a few colds.

There are only five sorts of trees on the island that are entitled to the appellation of timber; viz. the pine, a wood resembling the live oak; a yellow wood; a hard black wood; and a wood resembling the English beech. The pine-trees are from one hundred and eighty to two hundred and twenty feet high. The turpentine, which exudes freely from the bark, is of a white glutinous substance, but it is remarkable that there is none in the timber. There are a variety of small trees upon the island; but as they are not useful, they are not more particularly described. The flax-plant of New Zealand grows

* From the goodness of the soil of Norfolk Island, Mr. King supposes it capable of maintaining at least one hun-

spontaneously, and in great quantities in many parts of the island, but chiefly on the coasts, and in the vallies near the sea.

The coasts abound with excellent fish, which are principally the snapper, and weigh from four to eight pounds each.

The spring is very visible in August, but the trees on many parts of the island are in a constant succession of flowering and seeding the whole year round. The summer is extremely hot. From the 23d of September, 1789, to the 22d of February, 1790, not a drop of rain fell, excepting on two days in December. From February to August may be called the rainy season; though there is not any regular time of rain during these months, the weather being sometimes very fine for a fortnight together; but when the rain does fall, it pours in torrents. The winter, which may be said to begin in April, and end in July, is very pleasant: there is never any frost; but when the south-west winds blow, which are frequent and violent in these months, the air is raw and cold. The south-east and east winds are very parching and dry, as no dew falls during the prevalence of these winds. The south-east wind blows during the summer with very little variation, and sometimes very strong*.

The number of inhabitants left on Norfolk Island, when Lieutenant King quitted it, were as follow:

Civil, military, and free	-	90
Belonging to the Sirius	-	80
Male convicts	- -	191
Female Convicts	- -	100
Children	- - -	37
Total		498

dred families, allowing to each a hundred acres of ground, and reserving two thousand acres for fuel.

SECTION XVI.

Lieutenant King sails for Batavia—Meets with a dangerous Shoal—Tench's Island—Account of the Inhabitants—Prince William Henry's Island—Touches at Kercolang—Description of the Inhabitants—Streights of Salayer—Arrival at Batavia—Interview with the Governor—Description of Batavia—Manners and Customs—Departure from Batavia—Mortality among the Sailors—Arrival at the Isle of France—Arrival in the English Channel.

HAVING received from governor Phillip the dispatches for his Majesty's principal secretary of state, and for the secretary of the Admiralty, together with the governor's order to go on board the Supply, and to proceed in her to Batavia, and from thence to England with the above dispatches; and Lieutenant Ball, having also received his orders, Lieutenant King took his leave of the governor, and at noon on the 17th of April they set sail. From this time till the 22d, they had variable weather. Lieutenant Ball was directed to call at Norfolk Island, if it could be effected without the loss of much time; but as the winds were hanging to the eastward, he thought proper to proceed on the voyage, and accordingly bore up to go to the westward of the shoal seen by the Golden Grove.

At noon on the 3d of May, they were drawing near the situation in which Lieutenant Shortland had discovered land, and being surrounded by birds, and a number of trees floating about the vessel, they were induced to suppose themselves not very distant from it.

On the 4th they sounded, but got no ground with 150 fathoms of line; at noon it appeared like a small island, covered with trees; the weather was hot and sultry, with dark heavy clouds all round the horizon: they had a great deal of thunder and lightning, attended with heavy rain. In the afternoon of the 6th they perceived two small islands, appearing to trend north-north-east, and south-south-west; the main land lying a little to the westward of them.

In the morning of the 19th, they saw an island bearing west by north, six or seven leagues dis-

tant: as it lay directly in their course, they soon perceived that it was inhabited, and beheld a number of people standing on the south point, and observed several canoes coming off to meet them: but as the vessel approached them, they paddled towards the shore; still, however, they seemed inclined to be sociable, and the vessel being hove to, they speedily came near them; but no invitation or intreaty could prevail on them to come along-side. In length, two of the canoes, with seven men in each, and two others, with two men each, came close under the stern, but not a man of them would venture on board: it was not without great difficulty that they were prevailed on to come near enough to receive a string of beads, which were let down over the stern; after which they all paddled hastily towards the land. While these canoes were near the vessel, the beach on the island was covered with natives; and on the south point of the island, a man stood alone, with a long pole in his hand, with something annexed to it, which operated as a signal to those in the canoes. The largest of these canoes appeared to be about twenty-eight feet in length. Each had a long out-rigger, to prevent them from over-setting*.

At sun-set they saw another island, bearing west by north: it appeared to be about seventy miles in circumference. This island is surrounded by a sandy beach, on which the surf beats with violence: plenty of canoes were lying near the beach, and some parts of the shore were covered with the natives; but none of them attempted to come off. Several houses were observed among the trees, which appeared to be large and well

* The natives in the canoes were the stoutest and healthiest that our navigators had ever before seen; their skin appeared perfectly smooth, and free from any disorder, and they were entirely naked. They were of a copper colour, and their hair resembled that of the New Hollanders: some of their beards extended to the navel, and much art seemed to have been used in forming them into ringlets; the prevailing fashion on this island appearing to be that of keeping the beard well combed, curled, and oiled. The strength and healthy appearance of these people

greatly excited the admiration of the Europeans, who were astonished that so small a spot should support the vast number of inhabitants they saw on the island, all of whom appeared as strong and handsome as those they had observed in the canoes; one thousand inhabitants are supposed to exist upon this island, which Lieutenant Ball named *Tench's Island*, from Captain Watkin Tench of the marines. After lying to near an hour, and perceiving they could have no farther intercourse with the natives, they bore up and kept on their course, steering west by north.

constructed; and the island had a luxuriant and picturesque appearance. It obtained the name of Prince William Henry's Island, in honour of his Royal Highness the Duke of Clarence.

At day-light on the 5th of June, they saw an island bearing north-west, and at eight in the morning of the 6th, being close under the east side of Kercolang, they saw a canoe with a matt sail coming towards them: the natives instantly appeared under the stern without any signs of fear. This canoe contained twelve Malays, who were all clothed. The out-riggers of the canoe, which were long and slight, would not permit them to come along-side; but a jacket and hatchet being given them, and intimations being made to them to go on shore and bring something to eat, they quitted the vessel, and went towards the shore, where they were followed. Before they landed, a larger canoe, with fifteen Malays in it went to the canoe which had left them; and, as they were not more than two miles from the shore, Lieutenants King and Ball went in the jolly-boat, and joined the two canoes: on this two of the Malays jumped out of the canoes into their boat, and went immediately to the oars. Such a step could not be misunderstood: it was absolutely saying, "we put ourselves entirely in your power without any precaution." When they approached the beach, and observed the surf breaking on it, they made signs for the canoes to go on shore, and bring some cocoa-nuts and plantains, as they perceived vast quantities on the trees.

Several canoes appeared soon after, which were laden with cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains sweet potatoes, rice, and several other articles, all which were purchased by axes, and other barter: soon after which they returned on board, and were followed by upwards of a hundred canoes. The island of Kercolang is about ninety miles in circumference, and is in general of a very convenient height. These Malays wore no offensive weapons among them, excepting two which were on the beach, who had something resembling halberds in their hands; and they knew not whether these were formed of wood or iron. The houses, which seemed to be

erected on posts, were well built and neatly thatched: and their fishing-hooks and lines are chiefly European. The natives are apparently a mild and quiet people; and the confidence that was placed in them sufficiently proved that strangers were not unwelcome guests among them. Their cloathing was a coarse kind of calico, though some of them wore silk: and many of them had a kind of turban round their heads: a Chinese pointed hat was also worn by several of them.

From the 6th to the 10th of June, they had fresh gales of wind at west, with heavy squalls, and much rain, which often obliged them to claw all up. On the 10th Lieutenant Ball declined his plan of going through the straits of Macasser, and adopted that of making the passage between *Celebes* and *Gilola*, through the *Moluccas* and the straits of *Salayer*.

At noon on the 14th, *Gigola* bore from south by west half west, to east by north. On the 16th they were directly opposite three remarkable conical hills: at midnight they had a perfect deluge of rain, attended with fierce lightning and loud thunder which continued two hours, after which the weather became serene and pleasant. At day-light on the 28th, the island of *Salayer* bore from south 40° west to north 80° east, and the entrance of the straits north 70° west. The island of *Salayer* appears to be well inhabited, and cultivated to advantage. The houses appeared to be very good ones.

At half past three in the morning of the 5th, a small island was seen bearing west half south, not more than a mile and a half from the ship: on this they hauled their wind to the southward, and tacked occasionally till day-light. This island is named in the charts *Pulo Packit*, it is very low and covered with trees. Ships bound to the westward, or to *Batavia* from *Crimon Java*, should steer west half north, or to west by north, to avoid the shoal to the northward of *Pulo Packit* *.

The next morning Lieutenant King waited on the general at the request of Lieutenant Ball, to settle the salute, which took place at five in the evening; when the *Supply* saluted the fort with

* Seeing a brig at anchor under the land, Lieutenant King and Ball went on board her, where they learned that the point of *Pamonakan* bore south south-west from them, on which they returned on board the *Supply*, and made sail;

and in the afternoon of the 6th, they anchored in *Batavia* road. Upwards of thirty Dutch ships were seen lying there, besides a considerable number of *snows* and *Chinese Junks*.

nine guns, which were returned by an equivalent number*.

After a competent investigation of this business, no other answer could be got than, that the council were to be requested to permit Lieutenant Ball to purchase whatever he wanted, and to engage a vessel to carry what he might want to Port Jackson: this being adjusted, they took their leave. The Shebender drew up a request, which Lieutenant Ball signed, and the following day it was presented to the council, at which the director-general presided (the general being then indisposed.) Every thing was granted; but they refused to interfere in taking up a vessel, or in purchasing provisions, alledging that those matters were to be conducted by Lieutenant Ball. As every vessel here either belonged to the company, or was not capable of such a voyage, it was for a short time doubtful whether any one could be procured. At length, the Shebender, hearing that a snow of about 250 tons lay at a port called *Samarre*, he offered her to Lieutenant Ball; saying he would purchase her and fit her out completely, if Mr. Ball would engage to pay eighty-six rix dollars a ton for the voyage: the Shebender to take all risks upon himself, with respect to the loss of the vessel. As the necessity for provisions was urgent, and as no other vessel was to be procured, Lieutenant Ball thought proper to enter into the agreement, and the Snow was sent for. Provisions were easily purchased, and at a reasonable rate: very excellent beef and pork were brought at six-pence per pound. Of flour, little could be procured, as all the people here eat rice, whether they are Europeans or natives.

As Batavia has been amply described in Captain Cook's first voyage, an elaborate account of this splendid place might be thought superfluous; but as these pages may probably fall into the hands of some who have read no other ac-

count, our editor subjoins such remarks as occurred to him during his residence there.

From the best accounts it appears, that the city and its environs cover a space of about eighty square miles: it is situated half a mile from the sea-shore, and has a communication with it by a canal, which will admit vessels of eight feet draught of water. The city is erected on a flat, extending forty leagues to the foot of the nearest mountains. Two large rivers, divided into a number of canals, pass through the principal streets, and on both sides of the different roads: these canals are navigable for large boats, and are planted with trees on each side, cut in the form of a fan. The streets are well drawn at right angles, and are generally wide and well paved: a double row of trees are planted along the sides, which impedes the circulation of air, and contributes to the unhealthiness of the place. Many of the buildings are magnificent, and the houses are finished with elegance and neatness. The inhabitants are particularly attentive to the preservation of cleanliness, which tends to meliorate the intense heat of the place.

No European can appear without a carriage, the paint of which, and his other equipage, identify the rank of the owner; to whom proper respect must be paid by inferiors, under certain penalties. The town is not well defended, the fortifications being irregular and extensive: the walls, which are painted, are very low: it is surrounded with a wide and deep canal; but the best defence of this settlement is its insalubrity. The citadel, or castle, is situated on the right of the city; in which are deposited a vast quantity of cannon, and other implements of war: the governor-general, and the rest of the company's servants, have apartments; and here the governor and council assemble twice a week to transact all public business†.

The roads, or beautiful avenues, leading from the

* On the 8th, Lieutenant Ball waited on the general, accompanied by the Shebender and Lieutenant King. As the general could not speak any other language than Dutch, and the Shebender knew too little English to explain himself sufficiently, Lieutenant King was obliged to interpret between Lieutenant Ball and the Shebender. And here it may be necessary to remark, that, during this conversation, which was in the general's office, they were not asked to sit down. Had the general been polite enough to have made the offer, there was not a second chair in the apartment.

† The suburbs are inhabited by the Chinese and Portuguese: the houses of the former are numerous, but they are low and dirty. The number of Chinese in Batavia, in 1788, was two hundred thousand. They carry on every trade or occupation; many of them are extremely rich, but they are subject to great exactions from the company, or their servants. They are permitted to farm the duties of exportation and importation, for which they pay the company twelve thousand rix dollars in silver money per month. Goods belonging to the company are exempt from duties, but those of every other person pay eight per cent.

the different gates of the city, are lined with buildings; which nature and art have contributed to render commodious: every house has a large garden, where elegance and convenience are alike consulted. These houses are occupied by the most respectable people of Batavia.

The government of this island, and indeed of all the Dutch possessions in India, is lodged in the governor-general, assisted by a number of counsellors, called "Counsellors of India." The number is not fixed; but twelve of them must reside at Batavia. At this time, there is one who governs at each of the following places, viz. Cochin, Ceylon, Macassar, and at the emperor's court at *Jamarre*, or Java, where, it is said, 400 European cavalry are kept, to do honour to the emperor.

The council meet every Tuesday and Friday in the council-room at the castle. Every thing relating to the civil and military government, commerce, and every other concern of the company, is transacted by this council; but the governor-general has a plenary power to put in execution any measure he may judge necessary, for the good of the company*.

The deference paid to rank is not confined to carriages, but extend to individuals: no person under the rank of an *edle heeren* is permitted to wear velvet.

When Lieutenant King was at Batavia, there were only five European women on the island of Java, the rest being born of Malay or Creole mothers: it is indeed distressing to see how much they affect the manners of their Malay slaves in chewing beetle, and other disagreeable practices. The ladies wear a loose white or flowered muslin

The Chinese burying-ground is about three quarters of a mile from the city, and consists of fifteen or twenty acres: for the annual rent of this ground, they pay ten thousand rix dollars; and, at the expiration of every ten years, they repurchase it for a very considerable sum, as regulated by the governor and council. A person of consequence assured Lieutenant King that the Chinese pay twenty thousand rix dollars a year, for the privilege of wearing their hair queued. These industrious people are also subject to many other impositions. It is remarkable, that the Chinese are the only strangers which are not affected by the unhealthiness of the place, but much may be said in favour of their temperance and regular manner of living.

* The present governor-general, whose name is William Arnold Alting, has been resident more than thirty years at Batavia; eleven of which he has been governor-general: his private character is said to be amiable and respectable: but how any man possessed of common feelings, can suffer such humiliations from those around him, it is difficult to

robe, which is open and large, extending to the wrists and neck: much time, however, is employed in the arrangement of their hair, which is generally long, black, and thick: it is gathered into a knot on the back part of the head, and is so nicely combed that not a single hair is out of its place: round this a wreath of diamonds is displayed, which is more or less valuable, according to the circumstances of the wearer. In the evenings, a wreath of jessamine is placed round the hair, which gives it an agreeable perfume†.

On the 21st of July, the *Snelheid*, a packet of 140 tons, belonging to the company, arrived at Onrust, and Lieutenant King applied to the governor and council for a passage to Europe in that vessel. On this occasion, the captain of the packet was ordered to receive him, for which he paid 190 rix dollars into the company's chest. The order to the captain specified, that in consideration of that sum being paid, he was to have a passage to Europe in the *Snelheid*, and to be accommodated and victualled as a sailor. He was therefore obliged to make a further agreement with the captain for the use of half of his cabin, for which he was to pay him 300 rix-dollars, and his proportion of what provisions were laid in by him, above what the company allowed.

The captain of the packet having received his final orders. They sailed from Onrust on the 4th of August, and in the evening of the 5th, were clear of the straits of Sunda.

Now the pestiferous air of Batavia began to shew itself, for the vessel had not been five days at sea before six men were attacked with the

conceive. When any person approaches the general to speak to him, his behaviour and address must be the most abject imaginable; and the respect and profound submission which every servant of the company, and every inhabitant must assume on these occasions, are little short of adoration paid to the divinity: this homage is carried to so extravagant a height, that when the general enters the church, though the congregation may be at prayers, yet every person is obliged to get up and face him till he is seated in his pew, bowing as he passes.

† Onrust is a very small island, about a quarter of a mile in circumference, situated about two leagues and a half from Batavia. It is surrounded by guns, and there is a kind of citadel on it. Onrust is supposed to be more healthy than Batavia; but when it is admitted that twenty men are constantly employed in making coffins for those who die on the island, it cannot be thought a very safe situation.

putrid fever: and very soon afterwards, the captain, his two mates, and all the sailors, except four, were unable to get out of their beds. It was an aggravation to the horror of this situation, that the surgeon, who indeed knew very little of his profession, was so ill that he could not even help himself. In this dilemma, Lieutenant King found it necessary to use every means for self-preservation; and having obtained the consent of the captain (who was not yet delirious) and the chief mate, he spoke to the only four men who were well, and represented to them, that going below would subject them to the infection: he assured them that he would not go below himself, except on extraordinary occasions, when he would use every precaution against the infection: and he further observed that the preservation of their lives and the vessel, with the recovery of those who were sick, depended upon their conforming to his orders; and that he hoped, with God's assistance, not only to preserve them in health, but to conduct the vessel into a port. They promised him implicit obedience, and he began to make a tent on the after part of the quarter deck, for them to lie under. He found much difficulty to prevail on them to relinquish the drams of new arrack, of which they got ten a-day, but he succeeded; and in lieu of it, he gave each man three large wine glasses of port wine, with two tea-spoons full of bark in each glass. Three of the sick men soon died of the putrid fever, their faces being covered with purple spots. He ordered them to be lashed up in their hammocks, and hove overboard with their cloaths; making those who performed that office, wash themselves freely with vinegar, and fill their noses with tobacco. The captain was now delirious, as were most of those who were sick.

On the 12th, Lieutenant King obtained the captain and chief mate's consent to bear up for the Isle of France, when they should get into the latitude of it. The chief mate's complaint terminating in an intermitting fever, he prevailed on him to lie under the tent; and by a plentiful administration of bark and port wine, he became able to keep a day watch.

On the 14th his particular companion, Mr. Miller, was taken ill, and the captain and most

of the sailors were dying, not having had any medicine administered to them during their illness: three or four among them, who were of a strong constitution, were in a state of raving madness, uttering dreadful imprecations against the doctor: he was therefore obliged to order them to be lashed in their hammocks, and they died a few days afterwards. Between the 12th and the 27th, five men died; and on the 28th Mr. Miller departed this life: the whole were taken off by a most malignant putrid fever.

On the 29th they made the island of Mauritius, and anchored the same day at the entrance of the north-west harbour. The captain and three sailors died, as the people were carrying them on shore*.

The general object of cultivation on this island is the indigo, from which four or five crops a-year are procured. Attempts have been made here to rear cochineal; the island abounding with the plant on which the insects lie, but which are destroyed by a small bird. At the distance of three leagues from the port, the King has a garden, which is kept with the utmost care, where the gardener lives at the king's expence, who rears the plants, and distributes them gratis to the colonists. It should be observed that 550 of the nutmeg trees were reserved for *Cayenne, Saint Domingo, Martinico, and the Seychilles.*

Here Lieutenant King was importuned by Messieurs de Conway, Mc Namarra, Rossilly, and all the respectable people, to take his passage in *La Nymphé* frigate. Monsieur de Fourneaux politely offered him half his cabin; and no inducement was wanting to make him accept it. This packet being thoroughly cleansed, and a fresh crew entered, composed of all nations, they sailed on the 21st of September, having only four sailors on board out of twenty-six, which came from Batavia, the rest being all dead, or left at the hospital with little hopes of recovery. They arrived at the Cape of Good Hope on the 9th of October. And here Lieutenant King found Lieutenant Riou waiting for orders from England. As he understood that all vessels belonging to the Dutch Company were strictly forbid stopping at any port, or having communication with any vessels during their passage from the Cape to Amsterdam, he wrote a letter to Mr. Van

* The town of Port Louis is large, and covers a great deal of ground, but most of the houses are paltry buildings. Here are large stores, and every thing necessary for the

equipment of fleets. The number of inhabitants on the island, exclusive of the military, is about eight thousand; and of blacks twelve thousand.

de Graff, the Dutch governor, stating that he was charged with dispatches, and requesting that the captain might be permitted to heave the vessel to, off the most convenient port in the English channel, in order to land him with the dispatches. This request he readily granted, giving the captain an order for that purpose, and the lieutenant a copy of it. On the 20th of October, La Nympe arrived here from the Isle of France, and the same day the packet sailed. On the 2d, of November they passed the island of St. Helena, and on the 7th they saw the island of Ascension. After a pleasant voyage of two months from the Cape of Good Hope, Lieutenant King arrived in England on the 20th of December, having been absent on the public service, in various stations, and in different places, in the southern hemisphere, three years and seven months.

Here ends Lieutenant King's Journal, giving an account of the first settlement of a new colony in a very distant region, which cannot fail to be interesting to those who delight in tracing the origin of nations.

By the XVIIth section we are informed of the arrival of the Lady Juliana Transport, which sailed from England in September, 1789, arrived at Port Jackson on the 3d of June, 1790; bringing supplies from England, and dispatches from the Guardian at the Cape of Good Hope, which sailed from England in August, and unhappily struck on an island of ice, on the 23d of December, 1789. By the loss of the Guardian the colony was deprived of liberal supplies which had been sent from England, the want of which greatly impeded the progress of the settlement.

By a general return of male convicts, with their respective employments on the 23d of July 1790, at Sydney there were 729—At Rose-Hill, 179.

By the XVIIIth section, we are informed of an excursion into the country, and of an interview of the natives. About this time one of them threw a spear with great violence, and struck it against Governor Phillip's collar bone. It was Governor Phillip's intention as soon as he should be able to go out, to endeavour to have the man given up who wounded him, not with a view of inflicting any punishment, but of detaining one or more of these people till they understood each other's language. Nothing very interesting appears in the remaining part of the section.

Section XIX. is wholly occupied in describing the fruits in season, and the manners of the natives.

Section XX. dwells principally upon the depredations committed by the natives, with some memoirs of the life of Bannelong; his attendance at Governor Phillip's house. The appearance of a prodigious number of bats is particularly mentioned. "Governor Phillip saw one which measured upwards of four feet from the tip of each wing. Some were taken alive, and would eat boiled rice, and in a few days were as domestic as if they had been bred in the house: the governor had one, a female, that would hang by one leg a whole day, without changing its position; and in that pendant situation, with its breast neatly covered with one of its wings, it ate whatever was offered to it, lapping out of the hand like a cat. Their smell is stronger than that of a fox; they are very fat, and are reckoned by the natives excellent food. From the numbers which fell into the brook at Rose-Hill, the water was tainted for several days, and it was supposed that more than twenty thousand of them were seen within the space of one mile." A further description of the manners and customs of the natives terminate this section.

Section XXI. relates an excursion into the country, and points out the wonderful dexterity of the natives in climbing trees.

Section XXII. relates principally a second excursion into the country; concluding with a list of the first settlers.

Section XXIII. mentions the arrival of the Gorgon and several transports at Port Jackson. As well as the arrival of the Albemarle transport. Lieutenant R. P. Young, agent. The convicts on board the Albemarle, during the passage, attempted to seize on the ship, and the ring-leader having knocked down a sentinel, and seized his sword, got on the quarter-deck, and was attempting to kill the seaman at the helm; but the master of the ship, hearing a noise, took up a loaded blunderbuss, and discharged it at the villain, who, finding himself wounded, dropped the sword, and ran away. Many of the convicts had got their irons off, and were rushing aft for the quarter-deck; but, on their seeing their leader wounded, they ran forward and hid themselves, so that the whole business was finished in a few seconds. After a short conversation among the officers, two of the ring-leaders

leaders were hanged, and two seaman, who had furnished the convicts with knives, and who were to have conducted the ship to America, after all the officers and ship's company, with the soldiers, had been put to death, were landed at Madeira, that they might be sent to England: they were both of them Americans, and one of them had a superficial knowledge of navigation.

This section also mentions the arrival of the

* Of the convicts who were received by the last ships, there were great numbers of the worst of characters, particularly among those who came from Ireland, and whose great ignorance led them into schemes more destructive to themselves than they were likely to be to the settlement. Some of these people had formed an idea that they could go along the coast, and subsist on oysters, and other shell fish, till they reached some of the Chinese settlements: others had heard that there were a copper-coloured people, only one hundred and fifty miles to the northward, where they would be free. Full of these notions, three parties set off: but, after straggling about for many days, several

Barrington, which brought out a captain, three non-commissioned officers, and twenty-four privates of the New South Wales corps, with 264 male convicts: four women came out with their husbands, who were convicts, and two children.

Section XXIV. relates that the Supply left Port Jackson on the 26th of November, 1791.—doubled Cape Horn, and anchored at Rio Janeiro; from whence they proceeded towards England*.

of them were taken, and others returned to the settlement. Some of these wretches were so prepossessed with the idea of being able to live in the woods, and on the sea-coast till they could reach a settlement, or find a people who would maintain them without labour, that several who were brought in when almost famished, and carried to the hospital, went away again as soon as they were judged able to return to their labour: and though what would be called a day's work in England is very seldom done by any convict in the settlement, yet some of them declared they would sooner perish in the woods than be obliged to work.

END OF GOVERNOR PHILLIP'S VOYAGE.

TRAVELS IN INDIA.

DURING

The Years 1780, 1781, 1782, and 1783.

BY WILLIAM HODGES, R. A.

IN a sensible preface to this interesting publication, Mr. Hodges says the following pages "consist of a few plain representations of what I observed on the spot, expressed in the simple garb of truth, without the smallest embellishment from fiction, or from fancy—it was owing entirely to the influence and persuasion of my most justly esteemed friend, Henry James Pye, Esq. Poet Laureat, that these observations have been submitted to a tribunal, which I have ever regarded with awful respect—the Public."

He then modestly claims a candid allowance, on the part of his readers, for any imperfections they may perceive in the course of his performance; judiciously observing, that "the studies absolutely requisite to any degree of proficiency

in a liberal art, and the practice of that art afterwards as a profession, can leave but little leisure for the cultivation of literature." He also declares that a long circumnavigation, and the professional labour required in completing the works for Captain Cook's second voyage, occupied him for several years; and that a voyage to India, with his different excursions into that country, engaged no inconsiderable portion of his time and attention. He concludes with observing, that the embellishments were engraved from his drawings, which were made upon the spot to the utmost of his ability; and politely returns thanks to the artists for the skill and attention that they have displayed upon them.

SECTION I.

Appearance of the Coast of Coromandel—Madras—Boats—Reception of Strangers—Sensations on entering the Country—War with Hyder Ally—Sketch of the Country, Buildings, &c. —Hindoo Temple.

THE coast of Coromandel is an even low sandy country, and the land rises so gradually from the sea, as to be almost imperceptible, but from the appearance of different objects, which present themselves upon the shore. The English town, rising from within Fort St. George, presents a beautiful prospect from the sea, the houses being covered with chunam, a kind of stucco, as fine as marble, and bears as high a polish as that elegant material. The stile of the buildings is generally handsome, consisting of long colonades, with open porticoes,

and flat roofs; exhibiting to the eye an appearance of what might be conceived of a Grecian city in the age of Alexander.

When the ship approaches her anchoring ground, she is hailed by the boats of the country, filled with people of business, who come on board in crowds. At this moment the European feels the great distinction between Asia and his own country; and when he ascends upon the deck, he sees, with some degree of astonishment, the long muslin dresses*, and black faces, decorated with large gold ear-rings and white

* This dress is usually worn both by Hindoes and Mahomedans, and is called Jammah; whence the dress gene-

rally worn by the children in England, is usually called a Jam.

ice of that art
leave but little
literature." He
navigation, and
d in completing
second voyage,
rs; and that a
ferent excursions
so inconsiderable
n. He concludes
bellishments were
which were made
f his ability; and
rtists for the skill
displayed upon

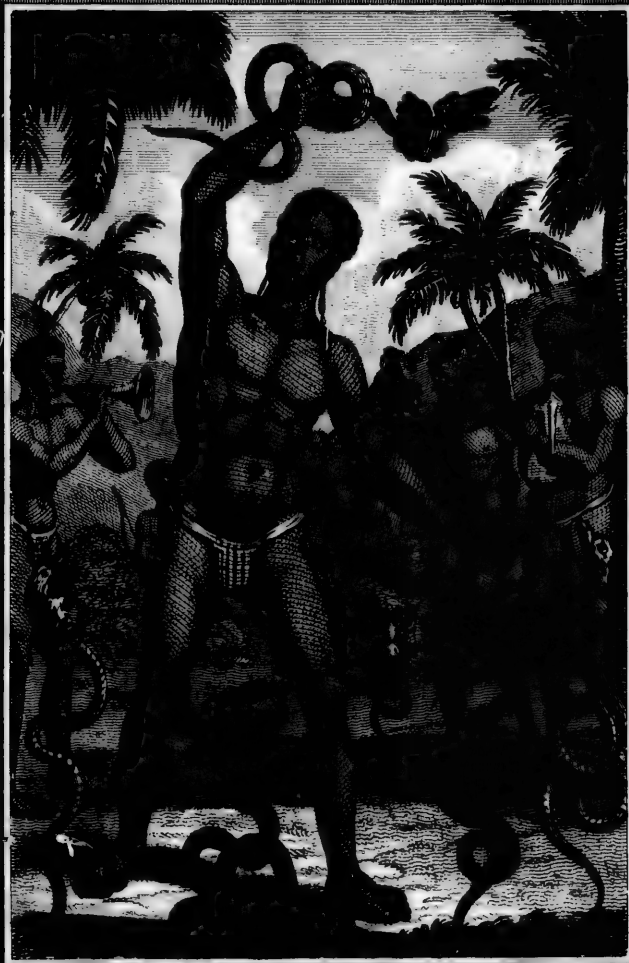
ingers—Sensations
, Buildings, &c.

the eye an appear-
sived of a Grecian

es her anchoring
boats of the coun-
business, who come
is moment the Eu-
ction between Asia
en he ascends upon
degree of astonish-
*, and black faces,
ear-rings and white

gland, is usually called

turbans.



*C. Mithras Conjures
evolving Dancing Serpents*

W. H. H. H.

turbans. The first salutations the European receives from these strangers, is by bending their bodies very low, touching the deck with the back of the hand, and the forehead three times.

The natives first seen in India by European travellers, are Hindoos, the original inhabitants of the peninsula. In this part of India they are delicately framed, and their hands have more the appearance of those of tender females. Correspondent to this delicacy of appearance, their manners are mild, tranquil, and attentive. They are very remarkable for never presuming to interrupt any person when he is speaking, but wait patiently till he has concluded, and then answer with the utmost composure and respect.

From the ship a stranger is conveyed on shore in a boat called a Massoolah boat; a vehicle well calculated to elude the violent shocks of the surf, that breaks here with great violence: they are very light, and dexterously managed by the natives; they are usually attended by two Katamarans, paddled by one man each, and so constructed, that should the boat be overset by the violence of the surf, the adventurers in it may be preserved.

The natives make a motley appearance; some are entirely naked, others wholly clothed, except the face and neck. Women are seen carried on men's shoulders on pallankeens, and men riding on horseback clothed like women in linen dresses. The whole excited the strongest emotions of surprise!

Our traveller was preparing eagerly for a tour through the country, but that great enemy to the arts, war, descended like a torrent over that quarter; driving the husbandman from his plough, and the manufacturer from his loom. On the 18th of July, 1780, Mr. Hodges was a living melancholy witness to its effects; multitudes arrived from all quarters at Madras as a place of refuge, laden with the small remains of their little property, mothers with infants at their breasts, and fathers leading their horses burthened with their young families. Confusion and dismay appeared depicted in every countenance; and, within the space of about three days, not less than two hundred thousand of the country people were received within the

black town of Madras. Our government behaved on this melancholy occasion with their usual liberality; and public and private relief was instantly afforded them to a very considerable amount. Mr. Smith, who was at the head of the government of Madras, with the solicitous attention of his lady, to procure shelter for many English families within the walls of the fort, will ever be gratefully remembered.

The country houses of the English, within a mile of the fort, were stripped of their furniture, by the owners, even to the doors and window blinds: a necessary precaution, as the enemy extended their depredations even to the walls of Madras.

The troops being collected from different quarters, the vanquished spirits of the people appeared to revive; and the reyot was again beheld in the act of cultivating his rice field, or gathering in his fruits. Nothing less was expected, as soon as the army took the field, but that Hyder Ally would soon be escorted by them into Fort St. George, and there make a public atonement for the miseries he had occasioned*. But this vision soon vanished, on the unhappy fate of Colonel Baillie's detachment, and the return of the army from a three week's campaign, much reduced and dispirited. But the arrival of Sir Eyre Coote from Bengal, with money and other supplies in September, with the active measures pursued by that gallant officer, restored confidence to the troops; and the most sanguine hopes of the inhabitants were entertained from his exertions.

The opportunities presented to a painter are few, in a country over-run by an active enemy. Our traveller, however, made a drawing of Marmalong bridge, a modern work built at the expence of an Armenian merchant. It is over a small river, which the sea receives at a little distance from the village of St. Thoma, four miles to the southward of Madras. The Portuguese had once a settlement here, and the church, with a few houses yet remain. The legendary tale of the Roman Catholic church is, that St. Thomas the apostle, in his mission to India, suffered martyrdom on the spot where the church is erected.

* Adjoining the glacis of Fort St. George, to the northward, a large town usually called the Black town, is situated.

The settlement of Madras was formed by the English about the middle of the last century, and was only of importance for its trade, till the war so ably conducted by General Lawrence, from 1748 to 1752; from which period the English may be considered as sovereigns. In the school of this able officer the late Lord Clive received his military education.

Fort St. George is a place of considerable strength, planned by the ingenious Mr. Robins, who was eminent for his philosophical and mathematical knowledge. Since his time, however, many additions have been made to the works. It has several spacious streets, consisting of elegant houses, enriched with the marble-like stucco. The interior apartments, indeed, present to the eye only white walls, but they exhibit a freshness highly grateful in so hot a country. Ceilings are very uncommon in the rooms, as none are to be found able to resist the ravages of that destructive insect the white ant. These animals are formidable for the immensity of their numbers, which are able to destroy, in one night's time, a ceiling of any dimensions. "I saw an instance," says Mr. Hodges, "in the ceiling to the portico of the Admiralty, or Governor's house, which fell in flakes of twenty feet square. It is the wood work which serves

for the basis of the ceilings, such as laths, beams, &c. that these insects attack; and this will sufficiently explain the circumstance I have just mentioned."

Mr. Hodges was much delighted with the beautiful pieces of architecture in Choultry plain: on going to visit a family in one of these houses, in the cool of the evening, after a very hot day, the moon shone in its fullest lustre, and every house on the plain was illuminated. Each family, surrounded by their respective friends, were in the open *particoes*, enjoying the breeze. Such a scene operated on our European like enchantment*.

The country near Madras is a perfect flat, on which is erected, at a small distance from the fort, a Choultry. These are public buildings very common in Hindostan, and are of Hindoo origin: they are analogous to those structures called *caravanserais*, well known through Asia. They have been built and endowed by the liberality of princes, or the benevolence and piety of individuals. A Bramin generally attends them to administer relief and consolation to the poor and distressed, who are frequently supplied with a mat to lie on. Tanks, or reservoirs of water, or wells, are usually near the spot.

SECTION II.

Voyage to Bengal—Description of Calcutta—Route from Calcutta to the Plains of Plassey—Description—The Author's Progress through the Country—Ruins of Zananah—Cataract of Mootejerna—Happiness of India—Description of Bauglepoor—Town and Fort of Monheir—Indian Mode of travelling—Voyage back to Calcutta on the Ganges—Temples—Females bathing—Singular Appearance by Night.

AFTER residing about a year in Madras, and no opportunity presenting itself to our author of seeing and making drawings of the interior part of the country, he resolved to pursue his voyage to Bengal: and, perceiving his health to be on the decline, he entertained thoughts of returning to Europe by the fol-

lowing season. He embarked in February, 1781, and arrived in the Ganges in March; and had the happiness to find, on his arrival in Bengal, that the change of air, and a sea-voyage, had perfectly re-established his health.

The appearance of the country was rather unfavourable at the entrance of the Ganges†; a

* Few objects are to be met with here which illustrate the history of the original inhabitants of India; but our traveller saw a beautiful Hindoo temple, or Pagoda, about two miles south of Madras. It is lofty and of considerable magnitude. Adjoining to the temple is a large tank, with steps descending to the bottom, filled with water. The whole is of stone, and the masonry well executed. On the

surface of the temple many basso relievos appear, but our author knew not whether they were connected with the rites and worship of Brama or not, but he avers that some of them are of the most indecent kind.

† This is also called Houghly River, it being only a branch of the great Ganges.

such as laths,
back; and this
instance I have

nted with the
in Choultry
n one of these
g, after a very
fullest lustre,
as illuminated,
their respective
eoes, enjoying
ed on our Eu-

a perfect flat,
istance from the
ublic buildings
are of Hindoo
those structures
through Asia.
wed by the libe-
lence and piety
enerally attends
onsolation to the
quently supplied
or reservoirs of
ur the spot.

ins of Plassey—
mah—Cataract of
rt of Monheir—
Females bathing

in February, 1781,
March; and had
arrival in Bengal,
a sea-voyage, had
alth.

country was rather
of the Ganges†; a

elievos appear, but our
ere connected with the
but he avers that some
ind.
River, it being only a

few

few bushes at the water's edge, barely marking the distinction between sky and water. As the ship approaches Calcutta the river becomes narrower. A spot denominated Garden Reach, presents a view of handsome buildings, on a flat surrounded by gardens: these structures are the villas of the opulent inhabitants of Calcutta. After gaining another reach of the river, the whole city of Calcutta bursts at once upon the eye. This capital of the British possessions in the East, is defended by a considerable fortress on the south side of the river, superior in strength and correctness of design to any one in India.

The city of Calcutta extends about four miles and a half along the banks of the river: the breadth, in many parts, is inconsiderable. The streets are broad: and the line of buildings surrounding two sides of the esplanade of the fort, is magnificent: their being detached from each other, and insulated, renders them additionally superb. The buildings are all on a large scale, that a free circulation of air may be admitted; a very necessary consideration in a climate the heat of which is extreme. Our author very emphatically says, "Every house may be considered as a temple dedicated to hospitality."

Calcutta, from an inconsiderable fort, which yet remains (and in which the black-hole so fatal to many of our countrymen in 1756) and a few warehouses, soon became a great and opulent city, when the government of the kingdom of Bengal fell into the hands of the English. For its magnificence, however, it is solely indebted to the spirit and taste of the late governor-general Mr. Hastings.

It is curious to observe the mixture of European and Asiatic manners which are exhibited at Calcutta. Coaches, phaetons, chaises, palankeens and hackeries*—the passing ceremonies of the Hindoos—and the different appearances of the fakers form a sight more novel and extraordinary than any other city in the world can present to a stranger.

Soon after our author's arrival in Bengal, an opportunity offered itself, which he readily embraced, of making drawings of part of the country, high as Moughain on the Ganges, a distance of three hundred miles. He proceeded on this

* A hackery is a small covered carriage upon two wheels, drawn by bullocks, principally used by the female

journey in a palankeen. From the apparent state of the country a just estimate might be formed of the happiness or misery of the people. Throughout the kingdom of Bengal, tillage was in a flourishing state, and cattle were numerous in all quarters: the villages were neat and clean, and the houses swarmed with inhabitants.

Few objects occur to claim the attention of the curious traveller from Calcutta, till he reaches the plains of Plassey, where Lord Clive displayed great abilities both as a general and a politician; and on that plain was laid the foundation of an extensive empire in India. At Plassey a house presents itself, which was once a hunting-seat of the Nabob of Bengal: it is about seventy miles from Calcutta, and thirty from Moorshedabad. In the last mentioned place are seen the remains of Cutterah, formerly a seminary for men of learning among the Mussulmans: this building was erected by Jaffir Cawn, the Nabob of Bengal in the early part of the present century; who from his mildness, his love of learning, and his inflexible justice, was the most popular nobleman who ever held that office in Bengal, under the Mogul government.

The road proceeds from Moorshedabad through Jungapoor and Sooty, to Oodooanullah. This road is crossed by several small streams, some of which have ferry boats stationed at them, to accommodate the traveller. At Oodooanullah is a bridge, built by Sultan Sujah one hundred and thirty years ago; which is one of the most elegant specimens in architecture of those times: and it has become famous in ours by the victory obtained over the troops of Meer Cossim in 1764, by the late Major Adams. This situation is thought unhealthy, from the forests in its neighbourhood. It was the seat of the government of Bengal, under Sultan Sujah: there yet remains a part of the palace, supported by vast octangular piers, raised from the edge of the river. This palace, when inhabited by Sultan Sujah was nearly consumed by fire: the zazannah, a part occupied only by the females of the family, was totally destroyed. A tradition prevails in this part of the country. That upwards of three hundred women fell a sacrifice to modesty on this occasion;

casion;



4.5
3.6
2.8
2.5
2.2
2.0
1.8

11
01

casion; none of them attempting to preserve themselves, from the apprehension of being seen by the men*.

Our adventurer was escorted to the falls of Mootejarna by a party of seapoys, sent by his revered friend Augustus Cleveland, Esq. about eight miles inland from the river. The path is through the woods, and the noise of the cataract is distinctly heard at the distance of about two miles. It consists of two falls, which taken together, the perpendicular height is one hundred and five feet. The water, falling over immense masses of rocks, is received in a basin below, and continues running through different fragments of the rock, rent from above, till it is lost in the Ganges. This spot is held in superstitious veneration by the common people of the country.

Returning to Sieri Gully, our author continued his route across the pass of Terriagully, where a beautiful scene presented itself. The meandering of the river Ganges through a delightful flat country, and glittering through a well-cultivated immense plain, as far as the extent of the horizon, the eye being almost incapable of discriminating the commencement or termination of sky or land. From the pass to Terriagully the road continues, by the side of the river, opening in extensive glades. After this the road skirts the woods, abounding with great trees, and swarming with a variety of birds of beautiful colours; many of them appearing to be of the parrot tribe. Peacocks were seen in all quarters, sitting on the vast horizontal branches, and exposing their varied plumage to the sun. In this route several inferior rivers are passed, which are tributary to the great Ganges.

Proceeding on his journey, our author reached the village of Sultungunge, opposite to which,

* It may not be improper here to remark, that when the Mogul government was in the plenitude of its power, the Omrahs, or great lords of the court, were accustomed to hold captive in their zanaahs even some hundreds of females, collected from all quarters, and particularly from Cashmira, a country famous for beautiful women. From Rajamahel the road continues by the side of the river to the pass of Sieri Gully, whence it enters the province of Bahar. This pass, as it commands the entrance from Bahar into the kingdom of Bengal, was formerly fortified with a strong wall and gate, the ruins of which are still visible. On the top of the hill is a ruined tomb of a Mussulman saint.

† The situation of the resident's house is on a very ele-

in the river, the island of Janqueral appeared in sight. This island is principally a rock, with a few trees growing from its interstices, and a small hermitage, near the summit of the rock, is inhabited by a Hindoo monk. The holy father has shewn his taste and judgment in the choice of his place of abode; as, from the top, he commands an extensive prospect of the country and river, and is guarded against the sultry summer heats. This rock is deemed sacred by the Hindoos, and on many parts of it are pieces of sculpture relative to their mythology, but Mr. Hodges expresses some concern that he cannot bestow on them any high compliments.

Our author proceeded from Sultungunge to Bauglepoor, and at the entrance of the last mentioned place, he made a drawing of a Banyan, which is certainly one of those curious productions in nature which cannot fail to excite the attention of the traveller. The branches of this tree having shoots depending from them, and taking root again produce, and become the parent of others. In many instances, these trees cover such an extent of ground, that hundreds may take shelter under one of them from the scorching rays of the sun†.

Moughair is a large Indian town, and has an old fort. One side of the fort is flanked by the Ganges, and that to the land by a deep ditch. There are three principal gates; one on the east, another on the south, and one on the side next the river. The walls are flanked with square towers, like old castles. This fort was built in the middle of the last century, by Sultan Sujah; but the place has been a military station many centuries ago. On this spot was found, a few years ago, a brass plate, with an inscription of a grant, as early as the first century of Christianity. The area within the walls of the fort is large, and is generally made

vated spot, on the banks of the Nullah, forming an island bounded by the Ganges on one side, and the Nullah encircling the other. From Bauglepoor to Moughair is about thirty-five miles: the roads are good, the villages neat, and the country highly cultivated. The burial places of the Mussulmans are on the sides of the road; for, in imitation of the Greeks, they always bury near the highways: the lower classes have mounds of earth, covering the whole length of the body; those of superior rank have mausoleums, decorated according to their wealth or dignity. It is usual with the women of the family to attend these tombs of their friends, after sun-set, carrying lamps in their hands, which they place at the head of the tomb; the effect is beautiful, and the sentiment is delightful.

a station

appeared
with
the rock
a holy fa-
nt in the
the top,
the coun-
the sultry
sacred by
are pieces
ology, but
at he can-
ents.
ngunge to
e last men-
a Banyan,
us produc-
cite the at-
hes of this
them, and
ome the pa-
these trees
at hundreds
in from the

and has an
anked by the
deep ditch.
one on the
e on the side
lanked with
his fort was
ury, by Sul-
n a military
his spot was
late, with an
the first cer-
within the
generally made

forming an island
the Nullah en-
to Mougheir is
ood, the villages
The burial places
he road; for, in
ry near the high-
earth, covering
erior rank have
r wealth or dig-
family to attend
carrying lamps
ead of the tomb;
delightful.

a station

a station for a part of the English army. A house for the commanding officer is situated on the premises, built by the late general Goddard. From Calcutta to Mongheir, a variety of country appears, and the soil is rich: from Rajmahal it assumes a different character, and in many parts contains hills and mountains, with immense forests of timber. The heat here in the months of March, April, and May, is immoderate; and till it becomes tempered by the rains which fall in June and July, the bearers of the pallankeens find it difficult to travel in the middle of the day, the dust and heat are then so intolerable: frequently are they obliged to put down their burthens, and shelter themselves in the shade of the banyan trees; many of which are observed upon the road, particularly near the wells, or some little choultry on the borders of a tank. Their rural accommodations for travellers reflect infinite credit on the care of the old Hindoo and Moorish governments. Though the emperor Shere Shah was an usurper, and guilty of many atrocities, he paid the most humane attention to the comfort and conveniences of his people. He caused wells to be dug at the distance of every two miles, and trees to be planted on the road side. They are from ten to fourteen feet in diameter, lined with stone, and raised from the surface of the ground by a wall about two feet high*.

Sometimes whole families may be seen travelling up and down the country, forming picturesque groupes; sometimes with loaded camels; and some of the party riding on bullocks, and the females in hackeries: the younger part of the company on small horses, chiefly pyebald, brought from the mountains on the eastern side of Bengal.

The lodgings for travellers in India are the se-

* It is curious to observe the variety of travellers on the road: in one part the native soldiers may be seen, their half-pikes sticking by their side: in another, perhaps, a company of merchants attract your notice, wholly occupied in their calculations: devotees, in the act of social worship, draw your attention to another quarter; and in another, the common Hindoo pallankeen bearers baking their bread. This operation is performed by making a hole in the earth about a foot in diameter, in which they light a fire; on the top of which they place a flat iron plate, which they never travel without, and which they support with stones. They next mix their flour with a little water, and bake their cakes, which are soon dressed, and are both wholesome and palatable.

† Small Hindoo temples are often seen on the banks of the

Vol. I. No. LXIII.

rais, or caravanserais. Many of these are found on the great roads, and have been erected by private munificence, or at the public expence. A noble structure of this kind is now remaining at Rajmahal, built by Sultan Sujah, when Subah of Bengal. Attendant on these serais are poor persons, who furnish a bedstead for the traveller to sleep on, for which he receives a small gratuity. The Mahomedan, on these occasions, is usually more generous than the Hindoo.

From Mougheir our author embarked, and returned by water to Calcutta, where he had an opportunity of observing a series of scenery entirely new; the boats of the country, and the interesting shores of the Ganges. This immense stream suggests the idea of an ocean rather than a river, the general breadth being from about two to five miles. "The rivers I have seen in Europe," says Mr. Hodges, "appear as rivulets in comparison with this enormous mass of water. I do not know a more pleasant amusement than sailing down the Ganges in the warm season; the air, passing over the great reaches many miles in length, is so tempered as to feel delightfully refreshing†."

The Hindoos are remarkable for their cleanliness: the streets of their villages are generally swept and watered, and sand is frequently seen strewn before the doors of the houses. The simplicity and modest demeanour of the Hindoo women cannot but arrest the attention of a stranger. With downcast eye, and tranquil step, they proceed along, without turning to the right or left to observe any single circumstance or occurrence, however singular it may appear. The men are as exemplary in their hospitality, being constantly attentive to accommodate the traveller upon all occasions. In perfect opposition is the Mussulman character;

river, with passages and flights of steps to the river. Soon after sun-rise the women bathe in the rivers and the younger part of them continue sporting and playing a long time in the water like Naiads. Our adventurer soon afterwards, adverting to his profession observes that, "To a painter's mind, the fine antique figures never fail to present themselves, when he observes a beautiful female form ascending these steps from the river, with wet drapery, which perfectly displays the whole person, and with vases on their heads, carrying water to the temples. A sight no less novel or extraordinary, is the Bramins at their orations; perfectly abstracted, for the time, to every passing object, however attractive. These devotees are generally naked, except a small piece of drapery round the middle."

haughty, irritable, and ferocious. Such is really the portrait of the lower classes; but a Moorish gentleman is a perfect model of a well-bred man. The Hindoos are principally husbandmen, merchants, and manufacturers; if we except the Rajapoots, who are military; and the Bramins, who are ecclesiastics. The Mussulmans may be said to be entirely military, few of them exercising any other employment, except that of collecting the revenues, the Moorish governments having always appropriated a military force for that duty.

At this season of the year a small black cloud is often seen rising in the eastern part of the horizon, and afterwards spreading itself to the north-west. This phenomenon is always attended with storms of wind, vivid lightning,

and heavy thunder; and followed by rain. These storms continue to rage for half an hour or more, and then disperse, having greatly freshened the air, and left the sky of a deep transparent blue.

Passing the city of Moorshedabad, on the evening of a Mussulman holiday, our author was much surprised at seeing the river covered with innumerable lights, just floating above the surface of the water. Unable to account for so uncommon an appearance, he found, upon enquiry, that, on these occasions, a number of small lamps are fabricated, which they illuminate and set afloat on the river: the stream continually running, they are conveyed to a considerable distance, and afford amusement for many hours.

SECTION III.

Embark in the Governor-General's Train—Boats described—Views on the River—Dutch, French, and Danish Settlements—Sir Eyre Cote's Seat—Sir John D'Oyleys—Patna—Reception of the Governor—Mosque of Moonhies—Arrive at Buxar—Curious Ruins—Benares—Arrest of the Rajah—Insurrection at Benares—Events of the War—Flight from Benares—Return thither.

THE Bengal government having thought it expedient for the public utility, that the governor-general should visit a certain part of the country, Mr. Hastings, at our author's request, permitted him to accompany him. On the 25th of June 1781, our adventurer therefore embarked in a budgerow for this expedition. The periodical rains had commenced, and every natural object exhibited a freshness of verdure, accompanied with vigour and fullness of foliage. A great number of gentlemen necessarily attending the governor-general, the fleet was considerable; consisting of every variety of the boats, except those which are called burs.

The boats used by the natives, as well as by Europeans for travelling, are the budgerows, which both sail and row: they have usually from twelve to twenty oars, varying in their size according to the condition of their owners; some are sixty feet in length, with very high sterns. They are all very ill calculated to go near the wind, and are really dangerous from their great weight abaft: they are, however, very commodious, having in the centre an open portico, leading by a door into a handsome room, with a range of windows on each side. This may be called the sitting room, within

4

which is a convenient bed-chamber. Besides this boat, a gentleman has generally two others to attend him, viz. a pulwah for culinary purposes; and a smaller boat, called a paunchway, to convey him occasionally on shore, and back again, the budgerows not being so convenient to facilitate a landing from them.

Another boat of this country, which is of curious construction, is called a Moor-punky: these are remarkably long and narrow, extending about a hundred feet in length, and not exceeding eight in breadth: they are paddled sometimes by about forty men, and steered by a large paddle from the stern, usually rising in the shape of a peacock, or a snake.

At a small distance above Calcutta is the Danish settlement of Serampoor, containing a handsome town, which carries on a considerable trade. Both sides of the river are decorated with handsome houses belonging to English gentlemen. At Ghiretty, about twenty miles from Calcutta, a very fine seat was inhabited by the family of the late Sir Eyre Cote in 1781, when that general was fighting the battles of his country on the plains of the Carnatic, where his health and life fell a sacrifice to his great exertions. With an army which never exceeded

seven

ain. These
ur or more,
eshened the
rent blue.
ad, on the
our author
ver covered
g above the
count for so
d, upon en-
number of
they illumi-
stream con-
to a conse-
sement for

ch, French,
ception of the
rrest of the
a thither.

ber. Besides
ly two others
culinary pur-
paunchway,
re, and back
convenient to

which is of
Moor-punky:
row, extend-
, and not ex-
are paddled
d steered by a
y rising in the

alcutta is the
containing a
a considerable
are decorated
o English gen-
ties miles from
habited by the
in 1781, when
es of his coun-
tic, where his
his great ex-
never exceeded
SEVEN

seven thousand effective men this judicious and spirited leader kept the whole power of Hyder Ally at bay, and was always superior in action to the multitudes of the enemy, though they were supported by a most formidable train of artillery, and immense bodies of cavalry.

A little farther up is the French settlement of Chandernagore, which the ruins of the fort pronounce to have been very considerable. The fort was destroyed in 1758 by Commodore Watson, in a very severe action. Near this is situated the town of Chinsurah, a Dutch settlement. It contains a church, several good houses, and has a little mole projecting into the river. From this place the fleet passed by Culna and Nuddea, two considerable towns in the way to Cutwa: and after passing Plassy, which has been already mentioned, they arrived at Burhampoor, a great military station in Bengal, where there are barracks for ten thousand men. A little above is the island of Cossimbuzar, in which the English East India Company have a factory. On each side of the river collections of villages were continually presenting themselves, and the country appeared to be in high cultivation.

When the fleet arrived at Patna the shores were lined with people: the banks of the rivers, the windows of the houses, and even the tops of the buildings were crowded when the governor-general went on shore; so great was the multitude which pressed on every side to greet him. They were all struck with the elegant simplicity of his appearance, and his constant attention to prevent injury to any of the numerous spectators. They contrasted this conduct and appearance with that of their nabobs, who had always appeared mounted on lofty elephants, glittering in splendor with their train followed by the soldiery*.

The cause of disagreement between the British government, it is not the editor's business to dwell upon. Mr. Hodges, however, declares, that, during his residence in India, he never heard the perfidy of Cheyt Sing once called in question. It appeared indeed that he was in the interest of the enemy; and it was notorious to

* This city is the principal seat of the government of Bahar, and has been celebrated for ages. Patna also contains a fort, in which were confined the prisoners taken by Meer Cossim, in the war of 1761, by whose order they

every person, that he only wanted an opportunity to withdraw his allegiance from the company.

Several letters and messages having passed between Cheyt Sing and the governor-general, the resident, Mr. Markham, received orders to put the rajah under arrest at his house at Sewalla Gaut; to which he submitted without opposition. This happened in the morning; and, about one in the afternoon, a body of the rajah's people surrounded the house. A note was at the same time received by Mr. Markham, from Lieutenant Stalker, who had been left with two companies of grenadier seapoys as a guard, declaring the people began to be troublesome, requesting an immediate supply of ammunition: it soon appeared that such delicacy had been observed towards the rajah, that the seapoys' muskets were not loaded. To this unfortunate circumstance may be attributed the unhappy fate of Lieutenants Stalker, Scott, and Sims, and two companies of grenadier seapoys, not more than twenty of them escaping with their lives.

Major Popham, who was then at Benares, set off immediately from his camp to lead the remainder of his people to the assistance of their fellow soldiers; but they only arrived in time to be the melancholy spectators of this horrid slaughter, without the power of revenging it, as the rebels had dispersed, and the rajah made his escape. Fortunately the rebels were satisfied with having effected the liberation of the rajah, and the massacre of the seapoys; for had they attacked the governor-general in his then defenceless situation, every person with him must have fallen a sacrifice to their fury.

On the following day every Englishman attended the funeral of the three lieutenants, and a monument was afterwards erected over their remains. The gloom that succeeded was truly melancholy; the city was deserted by many of the inhabitants, and business appeared to be totally abandoned. From this situation they were roused by the folly and ambition of Captain Mayaffer, who commanded a part of Major Popham's detachment at Mirzapoor. This of-

were massacred. Meer Cossim became afterwards an outcast from society, and is said to have been starved under the walls of Delhi.

ficer,

feer, regardless of positive orders to the contrary, led the troops to the attack of Ramnagar; a fort and town on the opposite side of the river. The streets of this town being narrow, and the houses built of stone, they soon became a fortification, being filled with the Rajah's people.

This rash conduct occasioned the loss of Captain Mayaffer, Captain Doxat, thirty-three of the corps of chasseurs, and one hundred and three men of different denominations. It was now thought advisable to leave this place of insecurity and repair to Chunar, at the distance of about twenty miles. This measure was resolved on about seven o'clock in the evening, and the whole party had quitted the town by eight. The party, including servants, troops, &c. amounting to about four hundred men, safely arrived opposite Chunar about seven in the morning. The resolution was so suddenly taken, that our author was obliged to leave behind him the whole of his baggage, except his drawings, and a few changes of linen, which he had thrown into his pаланкен, and which he had lost sight of in the night.

The war was now evidently commenced, to the apparent disadvantage of the English: their number, which was very inconsiderable, were almost destitute of provision; and no money remained to pay the few troops, who were already considerably in arrears, occasioned by the misconduct of the Rajah, who had now fixed his standard on the fort of Lutteefpoor, and who was recruiting his army. One of the Hircarrahs*, however, reached Lieutenant Polhill, then at Allahabad, who immediately marched with three hundred and eighty men, and reached the opposite shore of Chunar on the 27th.

In the mean time, a person in the service of Cheyt Sing, at Jionpoor, had collected two thousand matchlock-men, and had taken post at Seker, on the opposite side of the river to Chunar. Lieutenant Polhill received orders to attack this man the following morning, which he executed successfully, drove the enemy away, and took possession of the fort, in which was deposited a considerable quantity of grain.

* Hircarrahs are servants employed in carrying orders or messages.

† The sanguinary disposition of Cheyt Sing was manifested by a singular act of atrocity, during his residence at Lutteefpoor. Some wounded prisoners had been left at Mirzapoor, after the unhappy affair of Captain Mayaffer,

Major Popham had detached a party under Captain Blair, to break up the camp of the enemy formed under the walls of Pateeta, which was carried into execution with great gallantry, though attended with considerable loss.

Intelligence of the insurrection having spread to a considerable distance, a force was detached from Cawnpore and Lucknow, to the assistance of the governor-general, under Majors Crab and Roberts. Effective measures were instantly taken to put a period to the war, by attacking vigorously the forts of Pateeta and Lutteefpoor; and both attacks were successful on the same day, the Rajah flying from Lutteefpoor to take sanctuary in his strong hold of Bidjegur†.

The fort of Chunar is situated on the Ganges, about twenty miles from Benares: it is built on a rock, and well fortified. It is said to be of the highest antiquity, and was originally built by the Hindoos. A black marble slab forms an altar in the citadel, on which the tutelary deity of the place is supposed to be always seated, except from sun-rise till nine in the morning, during which time he is at Benares. This has always been considered as a post of much consequence upon the Ganges, from its insular situation and considerable height. It was besieged by the English in the years 1764 and 1765, and gallantly defended by an Abyssinian in the service of Meer Cossim.

The first attempt of the English against Chunar was unsuccessful; but, on the fall of Allahabad, the commandant, perceiving that his master's affairs were desperate, thought it useless to contend any longer, and, in February, 1765, surrendered the fort to Major Stibbert: it was afterwards restored to the Nabob; and in 1772, formally ceded by him to the English East India Company in exchange for Allahabad. The war being now concluded, except obtaining possession of Bidjegur, the whole party returned with the Governor-general to Benares, and arrived there on the 28th of September; after which Mr. Hodges had leisure for his particular and professional pursuits.

and were afterwards conveyed to Lutteefpoor: but upon hearing of the success of Captain Blair's party, the Rajah ordered the unhappy men to be bound, carried into the woods, and massacred in cold blood; one poor mangled creature, however, found means to make his escape and repaired to Chunar.

SECTION IV.

Description of Benares—Elegant Facade—Observations on the Hindoo, Moorish, and Gothic Architecture.

THE city of Benares is the capital of a large district, and the seat of the Bramin learning. From universal report it appears to be one of the most ancient of the Hindoo cities: if the accounts of their own antiquity may be relied on, it is perhaps the oldest in the world. Major Rennel, however, thinks differently on this subject, from its not having been mentioned by the Syrian ambassadors soon after the time of Alexander, and also from its being unnoticed by Pliny.

From Benares to Calcutta, by the nearest road, is 460 miles; and by water the distance is much greater. This city was anciently named Kasi, but the page of history is silent respecting the cause or the period of its having received its present name. It is situated on the north side of the river, which is here remarkably broad; and as the banks are very high, the appearance from the water is beautiful. The great variety of the buildings has a pleasing effect, and the whole view is rendered more interesting by innumerable flights of stone steps, which form the avenues into the several temples or to the houses. Many elegant Hindoo temples embellish the

banks of the river, and a multitude of other public and private buildings contribute to the general magnificence.

Not far from the centre of the city is a Mahomedan Mosque, with two minarets; the height from the water to the top of the minarets being 232 feet. This building was erected by the emperor Aurungzebe, who destroyed a magnificent temple of the Hindoos on this spot, of the same extent and height.

The streets are narrow, and the houses are very high: but the more wealthy Hindoos live in detached houses, with open courts, surrounded by a wall. The heat of this city is thought very considerable in the hot months, as well from its natural situation, and the narrowness of the streets, as from the houses being built of freestone.

A dissertation on the Hindoo, Moorish, and Gothic architecture, occupies the remainder of this section; but as the editor of this work apprehends it would be improper to follow the author in a long digression from the avowed purpose of the original work, he ventures to proceed to Section V.

SECTION V.

Ceremony of Widows devoting themselves to the Funeral Piles of their Husbands—The Particulars of that horrid Sacrifice—Journey to Bidjgur—Description of the Fort—Arrival at Banglepoor—The Author accompanies Mr. Cleland on an Excursion—Mr. Cleland's Method of civilizing the Mountaineers—Curious Sacrifice

BEFORE relating the particulars of a very inhuman practice in India, our author gives us the following observations of Mr. Holwell on such extraordinary practices. "At the demise of the Hindoo great law-giver and prophet, Bramah, his wives were so inconsolable for his loss, that they resolved not to survive him, and offered themselves voluntary victims on his funeral pile. The wives of the chief Rajahs, who were the first officers of the state, unwilling to be thought deficient in fidelity and affection

followed the example of the wives of Bramah. The Bramins, a tribe then newly established by their great legislator, pronounced and declared that the spirits of those heroines had ceased from their transigrations: hence it followed that their wives claimed a right of making the same sacrifice of their mortal forms to God, and the names of their deceased husbands. The wives of every Hindoo caught the same pious flame; and thus the heroic acts of a few brought about a general custom. The Bramins had given it

9 D

the

the stamp of religion, and instituted the ceremonies that were to accompany the sacrifice, subject to restriction, which leaves it a voluntary act of glory, piety, and fortitude*.

The person our author saw was of the merchant tribe or cast, a class of people which might be supposed exempt from the high and impetuous pride of rank, and in whom the natural desire of preserving life might be expected to predominate. On our author's repairing to the spot, on the margin of the river, where the solemn ceremony was to take place, he saw the body of a man on a bier, and covered with linen, lying at the edge of the river. At that time, which was about ten in the morning, only a few people were assembled, who seemed perfectly indifferent respecting the catastrophe that was on the point of taking place. After some time the wife appeared, attended by the Bramins and music, with a few relations. The procession was slow, and the victim moved with apparent composure of countenance till she approached the body of her husband, after which the procession halted for some time. The lady then addressed those who were near her, without trepidation or change of countenance, holding in her left hand a cocoa-nut, containing a liquid mixture of a red colour: in this she dipped the fore-finger of her right hand, and marked those about her to whom she wished to shew any particular attention. As our author stood close to her, she observed him attentively, and with the colour marked him on the forehead. She appeared to be about twenty-five years of age, a time of life when the bloom of beauty has generally deserted the cheek in India; but a sufficient portion of it still remained to prove that she had been

* Mr. Holwell then expressly declares that he has been present at many of these sacrifices, and particularly describes one which happened on the 4th of February, 1743, near Cossimbuzar, of a young widow not quite eighteen, leaving three children; two boys, and a girl, the eldest not being four years of age. This infatuated woman was earnestly requested to live for the future care of her infants: but with a calm and determined countenance, she put one of her fingers into the fire, and held it there a considerable time. She then employed one hand in putting fire into the palm of the other, sprinkled incense on it, and fumigated the Bramins. It was then intimated to her that she would not be permitted to burn herself, at which she appeared exceedingly afflicted for some time. After which she resolutely replied that death was in her own power, and that if she was not suffered to burn, according to the principles of her cast, she was determined to starve

handsome: her figure was small, but elegantly turned; and her hands and arms were particularly beautiful. A loose robe of white flowing drapery, extended from her head to the feet. The place of sacrifice was higher up on the bank of the river, about a hundred yards distant from the spot on which they then stood. The pile was composed of dried branches, leaves, and rushes, having a door on one side, and being arched and covered at the top; and at the side of the door stood a man with a lighted brand.

From the time of the first appearance of the woman, to the taking up of the body to convey it to the pile, occupied about half an hour, which was employed in prayer with the Bramins, and in conversation with her relations and friends. When the body was taken up, she followed close to it, attended by the chief Bramin; and when it was deposited on the pile, she bowed to all around her, and entered without uttering a word. In a moment after her entrance the door was closed, the fire applied to the combustibles, which were instantly in a flame, and immense quantities of dried wood, and other inflammatory articles, were thrown upon it. This part of the ceremony was accompanied with the shouts of the multitude, who were now become numerous†.

The war which had commenced here in August, was not completely finished till October, though the Rahjah had left the country, and joined the army of Mahrattas under Madajee Scindia. The strong fortress of Bidjegur still held out against the troops commanded by Major Popham, and our author was happy to receive the commands of Mr. Hastings to proceed to Bidjegur to make drawings of that, and of

herself. Her friends finding her thus resolute in her purpose, were at last obliged to consent to the dreadful sacrifice of this young lady, who was of very high rank.

† In the Carnatic, and other parts of India, this ceremony is attended with circumstances of greater horror. It is asserted that they dig a pit, in which a large quantity of combustible matter is deposited, which is set on fire; and the body being let down, the victim throws herself into the flaming mass. In other places a very high pile is raised, and the body with the wife is placed upon it, and the whole is set on fire. Were not these circumstances well known, and well authenticated, they could hardly obtain credit. "I cannot but confess," says Mr. Hodges, that "some degree of incredulity was mingled with my curiosity on this occasion; and the desire of ascertaining so extraordinary a fact was my greatest inducement to be a spectator."

all, but elegantly
rums were particu-
e of white flowing
head to the feet.
higher up on the
ndred yards distant
then stood. The
branches, leaves,
one side, and being
; and at the side
a lighted brand.
appearance of the
the body to convey
out half an hour,
er with the Bramins,
relations and friends.
she followed close
Bramin; and when
she bowed to all
out uttering a word.
rance the door was
the combustibles,
flame, and immense
d other inflammatory
it. This part of the
with the shouts of
now become nume-

commenced here in
finished till October,
eft the country, and
attas under Madajee
ess of Bidjegur still
ops commanded by
author was happy to
r. Hastings to proceed
vings of that, and of

thus resolute in her pur-
sistent to the dreadful sacri-
s of very high rank.
r parts of India, this cere-
nces of greater horror. It
n which a large quantity of
h, which is set on fire; and
tim throws herself into the
a very high pile is raised,
aced upon it, and the whole
circumstances well known,
could hardly obtain credit.
Mr. Hodges, that "some
ed with my curiosity on this
scertaining so extraordinary
ent to be a spectator."

the

the fort Lutteefpoor upon the road. After passing the open country, the traveller enters the woods which surround the fort of Lutteefpoor. The walls of the fort are flanked with round towers. Bidjegur is fifty miles from Benares, and the fort is seated on the top of a high mountain covered with wood. From the station the walls were battered, and after a practicable breach was made, the garrison thought proper to surrender. In the garrison were found the mother, and other female relatives of Chayt Sing, to whom every due attention was paid.

Soon after the taking of Bidjegur, preparations were made for the departure of the party in the train of the Governor-General; and towards the conclusion of December they sailed, and reached Bauglepoor early in January, 1782. Intending to remain here for some time, however, our author took his leave for the present of the gentlemen who had been of his party.

Soon after their departure, Mr. Cleveland asked Mr. Hodges to accompany him through a part of the district into the hills, to which he readily acceded; and in the beginning of February they set out on a tour through a part of the Jungle Terry, to the westward of Bauglepoor. The appearance of this part of the country is very singular, having prodigious masses of stone piled one upon another, from the interstices of which grew large timber trees. On some of the highest of these hills, durgaws, or burial places were observed, with small chapels annexed, belonging to the Mussulmans.

In the course of their journey Mr. Cleveland was invited by some principal hill chiefs, to the ceremony of an annual sacrifice, which invitation he accepted. The people by whom Mr. Cleveland had been invited, reside in a range of hills which lie south-west of Bauglepoor, extending south to the back of Rejemahel. These people are by some supposed to be the aboriginal natives of the country. Their manners are certainly different from the Hindoos, as they are neither divided into casts nor tribes, and eat of every species of provision, which the followers of Bramah cannot. They have formed themselves into Society, and taking post in the mountainous parts, have occasionally issued to commit depredations on the defenceless inhabitants of the plains. Troops have therefore been stationed by the Hindoos, Moorish, and

English government, to check their inroads. Like all other savages, their incursions have been predatory, and what they sieze is generally by surprise. Being armed only with bows and arrows, and a sabre, they cannot attack or withstand regular troops with fire-arms.

They could never be induced to reform from their infamous practices, by the most vigilant exertions of the military against them, till Mr. Cleveland was placed at the head of the district, whose judgment suggested a plan which has happily succeeded. The humanity of this gentleman, added to the desire of improving the revenue of his district for the company's benefit, stimulated him to venture among the hills, alone, and unarmed, where he had the address to convene some of the principal chiefs; and, after assuring them of his peaceable intentions, and expressing a desire to render them his best services, invited them to visit his residence at Bauglepoor. By placing so much confidence in their honour, as not to be alarmed for his personal safety, effectually gained their esteem, and shortly after a deputation of their chiefs waited on him. By a variety of attentions, presents, and acts of kindness, he so far subdued their ferocious spirits, that they promised to discontinue their usual depredations; and the whole body became earnest to be personally introduced to this benevolent stranger.

Mr. Cleveland brought forward his well-digested plan by degrees, and whatever he proposed they instantly agreed to. He sent considerable presents to their wives, caressed the children; and to the chiefs presented medals, as a mark of his esteem and amity. At length, perceiving they were prepared for the accomplishment of his plan, he ordered a kind of uniform to be made for a few, furnished them with fire-locks, and caused them to be regularly drilled. In consequence of this, many others petitioned for the same distinction. Thus, at their own desire, a battalion was formed for the preservation of good order; and, in the space of two years, they formed a fine corps, being embodied for the express purpose of preserving from injury that very country, which for centuries before had been the scene of their depredations.

At length, proceeding on the journey, Mr. Cleveland arrived at the village on the hill, where the ceremony of the annual sacrifice was to take place.

place. Here that gentleman was received with every mark of respect and affection by the assembled chiefs; and even the women and children contended who should be the most forward in manifesting their regard. They had built a small open hut solely for his reception, and every person in the neighbourhood was summoned to be present the next morning at the annual sacrifice.

The ceremony began about nine o'clock, before a small hut, and about six feet from the ground an altar was raised consisting of bamboos. The sacrifice was preceded by the decolation of a kid and a cock, the heads of which were thrown upon the altar. This part of the ceremony was, however, little attended to. About an hour afterwards notice was given that the principal rite would speedily be performed*.

The day after the performance of this ceremony, Mr. Cleveland, and our author, proceeded on their journey back to Bauglepoor, and the following day arrived at the village of Deo-

gur, a place much resorted to by the Hindoo pilgrims, this being a sacred spot. There are five padogas here, of very old construction; they have each a small chamber in the centre, of twelve feet square, hanging over a Lingham. At Deogur multitudes of pilgrims are seen, who carry the water of the Ganges to the western side of the peninsula of India. It is conveyed in large flasks, containing about five quarts each, suspended at each end of a bamboo, which rests upon the shoulders. The price of this holy water is regulated by the distance of the river from the place it is sold at.

Their return was so nearly in the direction they came, that no opportunity was afforded them for observations. In the great famine, which raged through Hindostan in 1770, the Jungleterry is said to have suffered considerably: the population was before estimated at eighteen thousand people; but it is now reduced to a few hundreds, many having been cut off by famine, and others have migrated in search of food.

SECTION VI.

The Author returns to Calcutta—Seized with a severe Illness—Recovery—Proceeds on another Tour—Route from Calcutta to Allahabad—Cawnpore—Description of Lucknow—Palace of the Nabob—Journey to Fyzabad and Oud—Description of Fyzabad—Palace of Sujah ul Dowlah—City of Oud, &c.

HAVING completed his business by a residence of about four months at Bauglepoor,

* The people had purchased and fattened a fine large buffalo, which they were now dragging by the horns to the spot where the kid and the cock had been immolated. The animal was with difficulty conducted to the place of sacrifice, where the chief of the village attended in a state of almost perfect nudity, having only a cloth round his middle; but he had a large shining sabre in his hand. The altar was surrounded by a crowd of people, consisting of men, women, and children; and the young men were all entirely naked. That the creature might not escape, they first ham-stringed him, and then the dreadful operation began. The chief stood on the left side of the buffalo, and with his sabre struck the upper part of the neck, which gave the poor animal excruciating torture, which he signified by writhing, bellowing, and struggling with those that held him. This horrid business continued for about a quarter of an hour before the spine of the neck was entirely cut through. When the animal fell, the operator proceeded on his business, and at length the head was perfectly separated from the body. Previous to his giving the last stroke, he paused, and an universal silence reigned. He then assumed an erect posture, and, by raising the arm

our author proceeded to Calcutta, where he arrived on the 15th of May, 1782. The extreme

which held the sabre to the utmost extension, gave the signal to the multitude, who rushed in and began scooping up the animal's blood, which had flowed copiously from him on the ground. This was greedily drank up by the spectators, mixed as it was with dust and filth, and besmeared each other with their hands. Parties of them rushed in, and rolling in confused heaps, they appeared like so many bacchanals in their frantic moments. The body was then cut to pieces and devoured: the head, however, was reserved, as well as those of the kid and cock.

After the completion of this sacrifice, they retired in parties to their several habitations, and began to devote the day to revelling and intoxication. On this occasion, our author expresses a wish, for the honour of the fair sex, that these latter excesses had been confined to the men. After the rites of Bacchus had far exceeded moderation, those who could still sustain an erect position, began to dance promiscuously, men and women together: others in parties, roared aloud in such extravagant strains of joy as might be expected from the present state of the performers; and a profound silence ensued.

by the Hindoo
spot. There are
old construction;
in the centre, of
over a Lingham.
ms are seen, who
es to the western
It is conveyed
t five quarts each,
inboo, which rests
rice of this holy
tance of the river

y in the direction
nity was afforded
the great famine,
etan in 1770, the
fered considerably:
timated at eighteen
w reduced to a few
cut off by famine,
earch of food.

*Proceeds on another
now—Palace of the
Sujah ul Dowlah—*

cutta, where he ar-
1782. The extreme

most extension, gave the
ed in and began scooping
d flowed copiously from
greedily drank up by the
dust and filth, and be-
ls. Parties of them rushed
s, they appeared like so
moments. The body was
the head, however, was
kid and cock.
sacrifice, they retired in
and began to devote the
On this occasion, our
a honour of the fair sex,
een confined to the men.
far exceeded moderation,
erect position, began to
omen together: others in
extravagant strains of joy as
nt state of the performers;

heat

heat at this season, with an assiduous applica-
tion to his profession, threw him into a violent
fever; and, after his recovery, he continued in
a weak and languid state for a long time.

In this state of debility he had it frequently
in contemplation to repair to Europe; but the
cold weather returning in the month of No-
vember, his strength and vigour returned with it.
His curiosity revived, and he again resolved to
indulge his inclination to visit other parts of
India. He mentioned to the Governor-general
his inclination to visit Agra, &c. and he had the
honour of receiving his sanction, and that of
the council. On the 10th of January, 1783, he
began his journey by land, passing once more
through Moorsheadabad, Bauglepoor, Mongheir,
and Patna, to Benares. Having rested only one
day on the road, he determined to stop at Bena-
res, finding himself considerably fatigued by a
journey of about five hundred miles in a pallan-
keen. He was happy to receive the civilities of
Mr. Markham, the resident, a gentleman much
esteemed for his liberality and accomplish-
ments.

Having remained four days at Benares, he
pursued his journey, and arrived at Allahabad
on the second day after. This is the point of
confluence of the two great rivers Jumna and
Ganges. The fort of Allahabad, built entirely
of stone, by the great emperor Acbar, is at the
point of the fort, commanding from its situa-
tion, the navigation of both rivers. It is built
in the old style of fortification, and covers a
considerable space of ground. This was one
of the many fortresses that extended nearly from
Lapore to Chunar Gur on the Ganges; all of
which were erected by Acbar, and must have
secured the empire from the confines of Persia
to the borders of Bengal. This place is now
in the possession of Asoph ul Dowlah, Nabob
of Oud. It was once the residence of the
present great Mogul, the unfortunate Shah
Allum, who, after the loss of the battles of
Geriah and Cuxar, threw himself on the pro-

* During his stay here, Mr. Hodges made several draw-
ings of the fort, and then proceeded to Cawnpore, a mili-
tary town on the Ganges. It is a cantonment for a brigade,
amounting, on the war establishment, to ten thousand
men, who all live with their families in huts instead of
tents.

+ In Fyzabad, there are many handsome brick build-
ings still remaining: that in which Mr. Hodges resided has

VOL. I. No. LXIII.

tection of the English, by whose influence Alla-
habad and Korah were allotted for his support*.

Crossing the Ganges at this place, he con-
tinued his journey towards Lucknow, where he
arrived on the 25th of January. The distance
from Calcutta to this place, by the route through
Benares, is said to be nine hundred miles; but
the estimate is supposed to be too great, as
Major Rennel declares it to be only six hun-
dred and fifty miles by the nearest road. This
city is now the capital of the province of Oud,
and the residence of Asoph ul Dowlah, the Na-
bob. It is large, but the houses are chiefly
mud walls, covered with thatch: the streets are
crooked and narrow, and the worst that our
author had seen in India. In the dry season
the dust and heat are intolerable: in the rainy
season the mire is so deep that they are hardly
passable. Elephants in abundance, belonging
to the Nabob, and the great men of his court,
are continually passing the streets, to the great
annoyance of the foot passenger.

The palace of the Nabob is on a high bank
near the river, commanding an extensive view.
A small part of it was built by the late Nabob
Sujah ul Dowlah; it has, however, been greatly
extended by the present prince. The durbar is
a range of three arcades, supported by columns
in the Moorish style: the ceiling, and the whole
of the palace is beautifully gilt, and ornamented.
The exterior of the building is not entitled to
commendation.

After some occurrences too unimportant to be
noticed, our author set out for Fyzabad, and
on his arrival there he was received by a person,
who was ordered to shew the pallankeen bearers
to a small house in a large garden, which was
allotted for his accommodation during his stay.
The city of Fyzabad is very large, and seems to
be very populous, consisting chiefly of the lower
class of the people; for the court being removed
to Lucknow, the persons of opulence and dis-
tinction followed them †.

Soon after our adventurer's arrival, he was

a large and beautiful pavilion over the principal entrance.
The ascent is by a narrow staircase, leading to three rooms,
which command the whole city on the one side, and on the
other a vast extent of country, with a view of the river
Gogra. Opposite the gate is a mosque, with three domes;
the form of which is that of an egg set on its point: the
apparent deficiency of firmness at the base, has a very un-
pleasant effect on the spectator.

9 E

visited

visited by a person from the mother of the present Nabob, with a present of dishes of various curries and pillaws for his refreshment, after the fatigue of his journey. After expressing his thanks, and having taken his repast, (which indeed was excellent) he went to take a view of the city, and the remains of the palace, built by the late Nabob Sujah ul Dowlah. This is a vast building, covering a great extent of ground, having several areas, and many separate buildings in them. Nearly adjoining Fyzabad, are the remains of the very ancient city of Oud, which is reported to have been the first imperial

city of Hindostan, and to have been built by Krishen. In Dowe's translation of Peritsha's History, it is mentioned as the capital of a great kingdom 1209 years previous to the christian era. Among the villages which our author passed through, some of them appeared comfortable, and others apparently distressed. After leaving the flourishing district of Benares, he viewed with a melancholy concern, the miserable appearance of all the territories which were under the absolute direction of Mussulman tyrants.

SECTION VII.

Journey to Etaya—Description of Etaya—Jeswontnagar—O'Krairie—Shekoabad—Fyrozabad—Etamadpoor—Shah Dara—Agra—Magnificent Ruins—Arrival at the Camp of the Nabob—A venerable Chief who had served under Kouli Khawn—Mausoleum of Acbar—Teje Machael—Fortress of Gwalior—Return to Lucknow.

ON the 10th of February Mr. Hodges set out to meet Major Brown at Etaya, according to appointment. As he travelled by a set of pallankeen bearers to the number of fifteen, and had no relief beyond their own set, his stages became short, especially as he was now encumbered with considerable baggage. On the 13th he arrived at the encampment of the Major, his tent being pitched close to the town of Etaya.

The town is large, but wretched, situated on a very high bank of the river Jumna. On the top near the river, are the remains of a fort. The town has only two tolerable houses in it. On the 15th they moved forward to Jeswontnagar, and on the 16th halted at O'Krairie, almost at the termination of the Nabob of Oud's country. On the last day's journey, they saw hardly a spot in cultivation; the villages were in ruins, and the whole presented an uninterrupted scene of desolation. They met several unfortunate people passing down into the provinces, in order actually to avoid being starved, begging their way.

On the 17th our author arrived at Shekoabad, a place which takes its name from Daro Sheko,

the most unfortunate son of the Emperor Shah Jean, who, in the contest for empire with Aurungzebe, his youngest brother, was defeated, hunted down like a wild beast, and taken; and afterwards unmercifully murdered. They continued their route to Fyrozabad*.

On the 24th Major Brown was waited on by Afrasiab Khawn, an Omrah of great rank, from the Nabob Mirza Shuffeh Khawn, who lay encamped about six miles to the north-west of Agra, and to whose camp they proceeded, crossing the Jumna, and passed through a part of the city of Agra. On the following day they pitched their tents to the eastward of the Nabob's encampments, in a garden surrounded with a wall. This was a work of Acbar for the accommodation of one of his daughters.

The camp of Mirza Shuffeh extended over a vast space of ground. This camp was said to contain forty thousand men; but probably the number was greatly exaggerated. Every soldier, tradesman, and artificer had, indeed, his family with him. In the park of artillery were forty-two pieces of cannon. The tent of the Nabob might formerly have been an imperial one, being

* Along the western bank of the river were seen the ruined palaces of the great Omrahs, built in the time of Acbar, Jahangire, and Shah Jean. A little farther the city of Agra presents itself to the eye, with the great fort and

palace; and the prospect is terminated to the south-west by that superb monument of eastern elegance, the Teje Mahel, built by the emperor Shah Jean.

been built by
of Feritsha's
ital of a great
the christian
h our author
appeared com-
tressed. After
f Benares, he
rn, the misera-
ties which were
of Mussulman

—Fyrozabad—
of the Nabob—
Teje Machael—

e Emperor Shah
empire with Au-
was defeated,
and taken; and
red. They con-

as waited on by
great rank, from
own, who lay en-
the north-west of
proceeded, cros-
rough a part of
lowing day they
ward of the Na-
surrounded with
cbar for the ac-
ghters.

extended over a
amp was said to
out probably the
l. Every soldier,
indeed, his family
illery were forty-
ent of the Nabob
perial one, being

ed to the south-west
n elegance, the Teje
m.

of crimson velvet, embroidered with gold, and lined with silk. It was, however, much torn and moth eaten; and made no very splendid appearance.

A few days after their arrival, our author attended Major Brown to the Durbar of the Nabob, where he saw the principal commanders; among whom were several old Persian chiefs, with beards extending to their girdles, and countenances of great dignity. One of them declared he had attended Nedir Shah, or Thomas Koule Khan, when he made his famous expedition into Hindostan in 1739, and had remained in India since that time. After the ceremony of reception, which was that of touching the turban with his right hand, without rising from their seats, they were desired to sit, for which purpose some antique chairs were brought; and otter and roseswater were handed round, as a mark of distinction. The Nabob Mirza Shuffah sat in the centre of a semicircle, surrounded by his chiefs, with a multitude of servants standing behind. The Major, and our author continued there about half an hour, and then retired. This was merely a visit of ceremony, Major Brown's mission not having been entered upon for several days afterwards; for, among these people, delay is considered as a settled principle of etiquette.

Whilst they lay encamped at this place, our author made daily excursions to Agra and the neighbourhood, the weather greatly favouring his pursuits. The climate, at this season, is delightful, the morning clear and very cold, frequently frosty; but in the middle of the day it was very hot. The city of Agra is situated on the south side of the Jumna. It is believed to be a place of great antiquity: the present city, however, was built by the emperor Acbar, about 1566, and named from him Acbarabad, and was the principal seat of his government. The fort, including the imperial palace, is of vast extent."

The palace of Dara Sheko, built by that

* Shah Jeau, the grandson of Acbar, displeased with the situation of Agra, from the immoderate heats to which it was exposed in the summer months, and anxious to erect a metropolis which should bear his own name, built a large city near the old one of Dehli, and named it Jehanabad: but the name, like the empire, is now almost annihilated. To people this new city, he is said to have transported thither half the people of Agra, to the amount of five hundred thousand. In the eastern front of the fort was the

prince, occupies an extent of ground not less than the square of Lincoln's-Inn Fields. It is extremely dangerous to walk among these ruins; for at every step the passenger is in danger of sinking through holes into the covered vaults, which are now the habitation of noxious reptiles. At the distance of about six miles from Agra, on the road leading to Dehli, at a place called Secundrii, stands the tomb of the emperor Acbar. This enormous building is seated in a garden, planted with forest and fruit-trees, and many flowering shrubs walled round. After viewing this monument of an emperor, whose great actions have resounded through the world, and whose liberality and humanity were his highest praise, our author became desirous of seeing that stone which contained his crumbling remains. An old Mollah attended, who had the keys of the interior of the building, and who obtains a precarious subsistence by shewing it to the curious traveller. The inside of the tomb is a capacious hall, occupying the whole space of the interior of the building, which terminates in a dome. In the centre the body is deposited in a sarcophagus of plain white marble, on which is written, in black marble inlaid the name of

ACBAR.

From the summit of the minarets a spectator's eye may range over a prodigious circuit of country, the whole of which is flat, and filled with ruins of ancient grandeur: the river Jumna is seen at some distance, and the glittering towers of Agra.

To the south-east of the city of Agra stands a beautiful monument, erected by the emperor Shah Jehan, for his beloved wife Teje Mahel, whose name it bears. This beautiful monument of Teje Mahel rises immediately from the river, founded on a base of red-free stone. On the same base are two large buildings, one on each side, and perfectly similar, each crowned with three domes of white marble. When this building is beheld from the opposite side of the river, it possesses a degree of beauty, from the

imperial residence, built of white marble, covered on the top with plates of copper gilt, which to this hour retain their pristine lustre: and near it there is a mosque, built of the same materials, with copper ornaments and gilt. It was impossible to contemplate the ruins of this superb and venerable city, without feeling the deepest impression of melancholy. The ruins extend, along the banks of the river, about fourteen English miles.

perfection

perfection of the materials and the workmanship; which is only surpassed by its grandeur, extent, and general magnificence: the whole together appears like a most perfect pearl on an azure ground. "This effect" says Mr. Hodges, "is such as, I confess, I never experienced from any work of art. The fine materials, the beautiful forms, and the symmetry of the whole, with the judicious choice of the situation, far surpasses any thing I ever beheld."—It was the intention of the royal founder to have erected on the opposite shore a similar building, for his own interment, and to have joined them by a marble bridge: but this magnificent idea was frustrated by sickness, and the subsequent disputes concerning the succession between his sons, and at last by his own imprisonment by Aurungzebe*.

The garden, in which the Teje Mahel is situated, is entered from the opposite side, through a beautiful large gate of red free-stone, whence proceeds a large flight of steps into the garden. From the top of the steps the centre part of the middle building is viewed through an avenue of cypress and other trees: the avenue is paved with stone, in the middle of which are compartments, or beds of flowers, with fountains at equal distances: four of the most magnificent of which rise from a square base of white marble. These, as well as the others, are supplied by a reservoir without the building, which is filled from the river by pumps. The centre building is in a perfect state; but those which surround it bear evident marks of decay. Several Mollahs attend the mosque here at the hours of prayer; and behave in the most orderly and decent manner: they are extremely attentive to strangers, and assiduous to shew and explain every part of it. The inside of the great building is of white marble, with many ornaments of flowers beautifully carved. The tomb is in a chamber below, and the body of Teje Mahel lies in a sarcophagus of white marble, under the centre of the building. Near it is a similar one, containing the body of her husband. These sarcophagi are perfectly similar to those in the tomb of Acbar.

On the 3d of March the Nabob's camp moved close to Secundrui, where they remained till the 15th, when they removed to Gogaut. Our author found the heat excessive about this time,

* Tavernier declares that he was witness to the beginning and the finishing of this building, which employed twenty

and it was soon after much increased by the setting in of the hot winds from the westward.

Our author was much entertained, during the several marches, by the variety of characters he saw; and the adroitness displayed in the management of their horses. He was also much pleased with the majestic movements of the elephants: not only of those which carried the great men, but of those with the heavy baggage. The appearance, indeed, of the whole army, with the camels, artillery, and baggage-cattle, formed a scene highly gratifying to the mind, and entirely new to an European.

The town of Futtypoor Sieri is considerable, and the country near it in tolerable cultivation. On the highest hill is a large mosque, built by Acbar, in a high style of monkish architecture. At the foot of the hill on which the mosque is situated, are the remains of the palace, totally in ruins; not a single apartment remaining.

They remained at Futtypoor Sieri till the 26th, when the camp moved to Siedpoor, about seven miles distant. Here they found the face of the country very different; they marched through a territory in many parts well cultivated. To the south-west of the village it was extremely beautiful, being varied with hills, the vallies and plains between which were in fine cultivation. The village itself had, only a few months before, been plundered and burnt, and all the inhabitants massacred by Mahommed Beg Kawn, one of the chiefs who disputed for the sovereignty under the Great Mogul, on the death of Nudjif Khawn; and who, soon after, assassinated with his own hand, in a friendly meeting, the chief of his army, Mirza Shuffy Khawn. For these, and other similar crimes, however, he suffered death, by the order of Madajee Scindia, the Mahratta chief.

They experienced great inconvenience, about this time, from the hot winds. The great quantities of sand, also raised by the wind, hindered them from seeing the sun set for many days, the atmosphere above the horizon being totally obscured by the floating masses of sand. During our author's stay at Siedpoor, there were several storms of wind: the country people call them aundeas, and typhawns; but while they rage they are well entitled to the name of hurricanes,

thousand men constantly for twenty-two years.

sed by the
westward.
during the
characters be
the manage-
much pleased
elephants:
great men,
e. The ap-
ay, with the
e, formed a
and entirely

considerable,
e cultivation.
ue, built by
architecture.
e mosque
a palace, totally
aining.
till the 26th,
about seven
e face of the
ed through a
ted. To the
tremely beau-
e vallies and
e cultivation.
months before,
the inhabitants
awn, one of
ereignty under
th of Nudjif
assinated with
ing, the chief
n. For these,
er, he suffered
e Scindia, the

enience, about
the great quan-
wind, hindered
many days, the
ing totally ob-
sand. During
re were several
e call them
hile they rage
of hurricanes,
years.

de-

destroying every thing in their course, and being accompanied with such immense quantities of dust, as to have the appearance of a moving cavern, approaching to overwhelm the terrified spectators. In one of these storms, not a single tent in the whole camp was left standing.

The dust raised by the storm approaches with a wave-like motion, and affords a clear idea of those tempests which are said to happen on the plains of Arabia, and in Africa: they are admirably described by Lucan, and after him by Mr. Addison:

Sudden th' impetuous hurricanes descend,
Wheel through the air, in circling eddies play,
Toss up the sands, and sweep whole plains away.
The helpless traveller with wild surprise,
Sees the dry desert all around him rise,
And, smother'd in the dusty whirlwind, dies.

Our author's intentions of visiting Dehli were frustrated by the movements of the army under Mirza Shuffy Khawn; and as there seemed no probability of his reaching that capital under the sanction of Major Brown's embassy, and the country being over-run by two hostile armies, prudence dictated to him to direct his course towards Gwalior. He therefore sent off all his baggage under the escort of a party of seapoys, and took his leave of Major Brown on the 28th of April.

The country through which our author had lately passed was most dreary and desolate; not a blade of verdure to be any where seen; and the sun most intensely hot. On the first of May he arrived at Nurabad, and on the following day at Gwalior. Throughout the whole of the above country, which our author had passed

in his way from Dohlpoor, not the smallest trace of cultivation was to be seen, nor even a single hut. Let it, however, be remembered that this is the bordering country, lying between the fine province of Malwah, and that country yet remaining under the dominion of the great Mogul; and it has constantly been, ever since the establishment of the Mahratta power, the scene of perpetual wars*.

During the time of the Mogul government this place was the state prison, where the obnoxious branches of the royal family were always confined. They were allowed, for their amusement, a large menagerie of beasts, such as lions, tigers, &c.

On the dismemberment of the Mogul empire, Gwalior fell to the lot of a Rajah of the Jaut tribe of Hindoos, who assumed the government of the district in which it is immediately situated, under the title of Rana of Gohud or Gohd. Since that time it has changed masters more than once: the Mahrattas, whose dominions extend to the neighbourhood of it, having sometimes possessed it, and, at other times, the Rana; but the means of transfer were always by famine or treachery.

From the fatigue our author had undergone, and from the violent heats and exposure to the sun in making his drawings, he found himself in a very indifferent state of health; nor was he able to stir abroad for many days after his arrival at Gwalior. After remaining there ten days he therefore determined to pursue his journey immediately to Lucknow; and accordingly proceeded by dawk bearers, and left his servants, with his baggage to follow at leisure.

SECTION VIII.

Departure from Lucknow—Voyage down the River Goomty—Danger from Banditti—Jionpoor—Mausoleum—Sasaram—Mausoleum of Shere Shah—Death of Mr. Cleveland—Arrival at Calcutta.

DETERMINING to return towards Calcutta, our adventurer chose to pass by water down the river Goomty. He left Lucknow on

* The fort of Gwalior is situated on a rock, on every side perpendicular, either by nature or art. At the north-west end is the citadel and a palace, and a chain of seven

the 16th of July, and, from the various windings of the river, he did not enter the Ganges (into which the river falls) till the first of Au-

gates leading to the town at the foot of the mountain. This palace has generally been considered, by Europeans, as the Gibraltar of the east. The town is large.

gust. The banks of the river are very beautiful; and there are many villages on its banks between Lucknow and the town of Jionpoor. It is dangerous to proceed down this stream without an escort of the military for protection: near the village of Sultanpoor, a body of about fifty horse appeared, belonging to a well-known merauder, Rah Sing. His party watched Mr. Hodges' boats the whole of one night, within fifty yards of them; but the clearness of the Seapays prevented any attack, and at day-break the party marched off.

Not far from where this city enters the Ganges, stands the fort of Jionpoor, a building of considerable extent. The stone bridge crossing the Goomty at this place is in tolerable repair, and consists of sixteen pointed arches. The inundations have frequently risen over the bridge: in the year 1774, a whole brigade of the British forces passed over it in boats.

Our author now resolved to make a journey to Sasseram, twenty coss inland, the birth place of the emperor Shero Shab, to visit the mausoleum of that emperor, and to make drawings of it. He was greatly struck with the grandeur of this monument; rising from the centre of a large square lake. A great part of the building is now covered with shrubs and trees, which have taken root within the stones, and promise a speedy decay of this grand pile. The tomb of the emperor is still remaining in the centre, with several others surrounding it, which are of his children.

On our author's return to Buxar, he proceeded to Banglepoor, where he found Mr. Cleveland on the bed of sickness, which in less than

three months deprived the world of his valuable life; a loss irretrievable to his friends, and most sincerely regretted by the public. An incessant application to public business, without sufficient care of a very delicate frame, terminated the mortal existence of this inestimable man, who died on board a ship at the mouth of the Ganges, in which he had embarked for the Cape of Good Hope. His remains were brought back, and deposited at Banglepoor; where a handsome monument has been erected to his memory.

Mr. Hodges arrived at Calcutta on the 24th of September, after a journey of nine months and fourteen days, through a country that had once been subject to the Moguls; the greatest and the richest empire, perhaps of which the human annals can produce an instance. The author terminates his work with reflections on the state of the arts in India, and advice to artists travelling in that country. He concludes with the following remarks: "Many other tours in that interesting country might be taken by the enterprising artist. We know that the whole coast of Malabar possesses picturesque beauty equal to any country on earth; and how valuable would be the representation of that scenery, whether as a natural object, or as connected with the history of the country, and the manners of the people. Pictures are collected from their value as specimens of human excellence and genius exercised in a fine art; and justly are they so; but I cannot help thinking, that they would rise higher in estimation, were they connected with the history of the various countries, and did they faithfully represent the manners of mankind."

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

I N D E X.

VOL. I.

A.

ABOUKIR, in Egypt, 21.
 Abyssinia, journey to, 49.
 Acacia, gum, where found, and its description, 64.
 Achar, mausoleum of, 761.
 Acootan, isle of, 253.
 Admiralty Islet, 384, 389.
 — Islands, 715.
 Africa, travels to the interior of, 73;—state of its inhabitants, near the Gambia, 77;—general observations on the climate, the seasons, winds, vegetable productions, population, &c. 121.
 African story, 79.
 Agra, city of, 781.
 Agriculture in Upper Egypt, 62.
 Allen's Island, 677.
 Alexandria in Egypt, 8;—population, language, and disposition of the inhabitants, 9;—antiquities, 10;—the French factory, 12;—Mahometan mosque, 11;—commerce, 13;—fish found on its coasts, 15.
 Ali, king of Ludamar, 94;—his tyranny, and cruelty towards Mr. Parke, 95, 104.
 Allahabad, fort, 759.
 Almami, king of Boudou, visited by Mr. Parke, 84.
 America, discovery of the North-West coast of, 229;—description of the country near New Albion, 230;—the inhabitants, 231, 377, 431, 464.
 American transportation, origin of, 612.
 Amsterdam Island, 577.
 Anderson, Mr. his excursion up the country near the Cape of Good Hope, 149;—his death and character, 254.
 Annamooka, island of, visited by captain Cook, 168;—propensity of the natives to theft, and the punishment inflicted for it, 169.
 Apollonia, in Upper Egypt, ruins of, 62; n.
 Aqueduct, near Memphis, 50.
 Arabian MSS. used by the Mahometan negroes, 150.
 Asses, refractory, singular method of correcting, 85.
 Atlé, an animal peculiar to Egypt, 24.
 Attooi, or Attowai, isle of, discovered, 219;—astonishment of the natives at the European vessels, 220;—their reception of captain Cook, 221;—a moral, 222;—human sacrifices prevalent, *ib.* n.—its extent, situation, and produce, 225;—persons and dispositions of the natives, 226;—manufactures, tools, agriculture, 227;—chiefs, &c. 228.—See also 288.—Visited by captain Vancouver, 275.
 Ava, see Kava.
 Vol. I. No. 130.

B.

Babelthoup, isle of, 550.
 Balnear, baths of, 2.
 Bambera, kingdom of, 109.
 Banana-tree, cultivated in Egypt, 24.
 Banks Point, discovered, 247.
 Barbadoes islands, 6.
 Barbary, deserts of, 78.
 Barbacks, earthen vessels for cooling water, in Egypt, 52.
 Barnabas, Cape, 250.
 Barra, in Africa, 73.
 Barren Isles, the, discovered, 247.
 Barter, method of, in Africa, 78, n.
 Batavia, island of, 579;—extent, 735;—pernicious effects of its climate, 580, n.—customs of the inhabitants, 582, 735.
 Bauglepoor, 744, 751.
 Bear hunting, 320.
 Beauty, criterion of, among the African Moors, 102, n.
 Bede, Cape, 247, n.
 Bedouin Arabs, 39, 42;—a camp of, 30;—Sonni's encounter with a band of, 34;—instances of magnanimity and generosity in, 35, 39.
 Beer of Africa, 82.
 Benares, city of, 749.
 Bengal, 742;—various views of the country, 746.
 Besborough Island, the natives, produce, &c. 261.
 Birch bay, 389.
 Birds in the Northern hemisphere, 229.
 Blue Mountains, in New South Wales, 702.
 Bolabola, isle of, visited by captain Cook, for the recovery of M. de Bougainville's anchor, 212;—description of the island and its harbour, *ib.*—bravery of its inhabitants, *ib.*—animals left there, 213.
 Bondou, in Africa, 84;—the court, *ib.*—the king's haram, 85;—its situation and trade, *ib.*
 Botany Bay, voyage to, 640;—the natives, 647.—See New South Wales.
 Boulai, bath at, 50.
 Brazil, original inhabitants of, 573.
 Bridal present, in Africa, 90, n.
 — procession in Lybia, 40.
 Bridge, remarkable, in Africa, 154.
 Bristol river and bay, 254.
 Broken Bay, 652, 701, 704.
 Broughton, Mr. his narrative of occurrences during his cruise in the Pacific Ocean, 358;—his account of Columbia river, 408;—his return to England, 414.
 Brown, Mr. his description of the Copts, 1.
 Buffaloes of Egypt, 24.
 Burials in Egypt, 25, n.
 Burke's Channel, 432.
 Burney's Island, 259.

A

Bute's Channel, 390.
 Butter at Embabe, 50, n.
 — tree, 111.

C.

Cairo, city of, 44;—marriages, 48.
 Calcutta, 743.
 Camaleons, 11, n.
 Canary Isles, 564, 644.
 Candia or Crete, island of, 8.
 Canopia, in Egypt, ruins of, 21.
 Canton, city of, 631.
 Cape of Good Hope, see Good Hope.
 Cape de Verd Islands, 501, 564.
 Caravans with slaves from Nubia, 48.
 Catacombs of Egypt, 11.
 Cats honoured by the Mahometans, 16.
 Cawnpoor, town of, 759.
 Cerigo, or Cetheera, isle of, 8, n.
 Certe, natural curiosities of, 1.
 Charms in much request among the Africans, 81, 116.
 Chatham Island, 359.
 — Point, 392.
 Cheslakees, a leader of a tribe of American Indians, entertains captain Vancouver, 393.
 China, Embassy to, 557.
 — description of the country, manners of the inhabitants, Mandarin, money, amusements, agriculture, women, &c. 606, 624;—funeral and nuptial processions, the palace, 608, 622;—riches, police, children, &c. 611;—the great wall, 613;—Goitres, among the peasantry, 613;—gardens of the palace, 617;—ceremonies in honour of the emperor, 609, 620;—officers of the emperor's household, how qualified, 620;—canals, 625;—manufactures, 627;—agriculture, 628;—inns, *ib.*—English trade, 630;—public revenue, and state of the sciences, 631.
 — observations on the genius, manners and customs, of the inhabitants, 638.
 Christmas Harbour, 150, n.
 — Island, discovered, 218.
 Ciotat, whimsical festival at, 1.
 Cleopatra's Needles, 10.
 Clerke, captain, his voyage of discovery with captain Cook, 115.—See Cook.—Succeeds to the command of the expedition, 281;—leaves Owhyhee, and visits Woahoo and Attooi, 288;—proceeds to the North, and arrives at Kamtschatka, 300;—dies of a consumption, 315, n.—his character, *ib.*—funeral, 317.
 Clerke's Island, 677.
 Cochinchina, 587;—manners of the inhabitants, amusements, &c. 589.
 Cocos, isle of, 482.

Coffee

Coffee of Mocha, 62, n.
Columbia river, 408.
Convents of Copts in the Lybian desert, 34.

Cook, captain James, biographical sketch of, 111;—his first voyage of discovery to the South Seas, 143;—his second ditto, 144;—his third voyage of discovery to the Pacific Ocean, and for exploring the North Seas, 145;—lands on Van Diemen's Land, 153;—visits New Zealand, 155;—discovers the islands Mangaea, 161;—Wateoo, 162;—Otakootaia, 165;—visits Hervey's Island, 166;—Palmerston's Islets, 167;—barters for provisions with the inhabitants of Komongo, 168;—arrives at Anamooka, *ib.*—visited by Feenou, a chief from Tongataboo, *ib.*—lands at Hapace, 170;—visited by Pou-laho, king of the Friendly Isles, 175;—his reception at Tongataboo, 175;—interview with Mareewagee and Toubou, 176;—visits Poulaho, 179;—is present at the solemnity called Notche, 183;—procures refreshment at the isle of Eooa, 185;—quits the Friendly Isles, 187;—arrives at Otaheite, 193;—visits a chief, 194;—has an interview with Otoo, king of the island, 195;—quits Otaheite, and anchors at Taboo, in the isle of Eimeo, 203;—visited by the chief, *ib.*—arrives at Huaheine, 205;—at Ulietea, 209;—confines the chief and his family as hostages till the return of some deserters from the ship, *ib.*—visits Bolabola, and obtains the anchor lost at Otaheite by M. de Bougainville, 212;—leaves the Society Is., *ib.*—discovers Christmas Island, 218;—discovers three islands, and lands at Attoo, 219;—visits the island of Oneehow, 223;—describes the coast of America, 229;—visited by the natives, 230;—anchors in Nootka Sound, 231;—discovers Kaye's Island, 242;—cor's along Prince William's Sound, 243, 248;—visits Ononalashka, 251;—proceeds to the Northward, 253;—returns to Ononalashka, 262;—departs to winter at the Sandwich Islands, 267;—discovers Owhyhee, 268;—received on shore with great ceremony, and seated among the idols, 271;—visited by Tereoboo, the chief, 274;—killed in a skirmish, 281, n.—recovery of parts of his body and bones, 284, 287;—their interment, 288.—Melancholy fate of his sons, 344, n.

Cook's river, explored, 249, 467.
Copts, the, described, 1.
Coptic entertainment, 56.
Corn, method of preparing for food in Africa, 75.
Coromandel, coast of, 741;—sketch of the country, buildings, customs, inhabitants, &c. 742.
Courtship by signs, 18.
Crescent Island, 521.
Crete, *see* Candia.
Crocodiles in Egypt, 66.
Crocodile, tame, *see* Guana.
Crossing the line, ceremony of, 570.
Cumberland, Cape, 151.
Curing meat in a tropical climate, 218, n.
Custard apple, cultivated in Egypt, 24.

D.

Dædalus transport, melancholy events relating to, 411—424, n.
Daisy Koorabari, king of Kaarta, receives Mr. Parke favourably, 92.
Damel, king of the Jalloffs, 135.
Dead bodies, method of preserving, among the Capuchins of Palermo, 5.
Del Fuca, Straits, 380.
Delta, the, in Lower Egypt, 14.
Demba Sego, prince of Kasson, visits Mr. Parke, and conducts him to the capital of his uncle's kingdom, 88.
Jalla, king of Kasson, admits Mr. Parke to an audience, 91.
Denbigh, Cape, 260.
Dendera, in Upper Egypt, 59, 67.
Desolation Sound, 391.
Discovery, Port, 381.
Diving for fish, as practised by the Africans, 112.
Dogs of Egypt, 16.
Doomasansa, in Africa, 79.
Doubtful Island, 352.
Douglas, Cape, 247.
Duff's Mountains, 522.
Duke of York's Island, 713;—the natives, 714.

E.

Echmimm, in Upper Egypt, 57.
Eggs hatched by artificial heat, 44.
—prohibited to be eaten by the women of the South-Sea islands, 89, n.
Egypt, travels in, 1;—origin of its population, *ib.*—its coast, 8;—animals, 15, 66;—climate, 25, 62;—diseases, 26;—antiquities, &c. 15, 42;—agriculture, 62.
Eimeo, Isle of, visited by captain Cook, 203;—the natives guilty of theft, which occasions several acts of hostility, 204;—arrival of the British missionaries, 514.
Elba, sketch of the natural history of, 3.
Elephant hunting, 129, n.
Elephants of Africa, 75.
—in China, 690.
Elizabeth, Cape, 246.
Embalming in Egypt, 25, n.—in Otaheite, 198;—in Africa, *see* Preserving.
Eooa, Isle of, 185.
Etaya, Isle of, 700.
Europeans much disliked in Upper Egypt, 63.

F.

False Bay, 343.
Fan-palm of Upper Egypt, 57, n.
Fatima, queen of Ludamar, 100;—facilitates Mr. Parke's escape from bondage, 103.
Fatteconda, *see* Bondou.
Feejee, Isle of, 187.
Feloops, a savage nation of Africa, 74, 76.
Feenou, a chief of Tongataboo, pays a visit of ceremony to captain Cook, 168.
Fistooka, or burying-place, in the Friendly Islands, 180.
Fidelity, remarkable instances of, 46, n.
Fife's Passage, 394.
Fitzhugh's Sound, 431.

Foul Weather, Cape, 220.

Foutahs, an African nation, 76;—their capital, mode of life, and trade, 85.
Friendly Islands, visited by captain Cook, 168;—description of the persons of the natives, their diseases, character, habits, ornaments, &c. 187;—employments, 189;—agriculture, method of building, furniture, canoes, tools, fishing-tackle, musical instruments, food and mode of cooking it, 90;—diversions, marriages, superstitious deities, ideas of a future state, fiatookas, or places of interment for the chiefs, government, power of their chiefs, 101;—homage to the king, precaution to avert famine, the Tamnahas, language, 192;—visited by the English Missionaries, 516.
Fright, effects of, a remarkable instance, 40, n.
Frontignan, vineyards of, 2.
Funeral processions in Lybia, 40, 41, n.
Funeral of a slave, at Sooha, in Africa, 116, n.
Furneaux, captain, massacre of his people at New Zealand, 156.
Fyrozabad, city of, 760.
Fyzabad, city of, 759.

G.

Gallam, *see* Kajaaga.
Galapagos Islands, 484.
Gambia, river, voyage up, 73;—produce of its coast, 74.
Gambier's Islands, 522.
Generosity of the Bedouin Arabs, 35, 39;—of a female Negro, 87.
George, Cape, natural history of, 152.
Gillespey's Island, 677.
Gizah, in Egypt, 50.
Gold dust, method of collecting, 128.
—mine of Wicklow, in Ireland, 128, n.
Goche, Mr. his death, 413.—*See* Hergest.
Good Hope, Cape of, 148;—excursion up the country, 149, 646.
Gore, captain, succeeds to the command of the expedition to the Pacific Ocean, 316;—sails for Japan, but proceeds to China, 332;—his reception at Canton, 336;—departs for the Cape of Good Hope, 343;—returns to England, 344.
Granaries of Egypt, 50.
Guana, or tame crocodile of Batavia, 584.
Gwalior, fortress of, 762.

H.

Haiva, a grand entertainment given by the chiefs of Tongataboo, 177.
Halibut Island, discovered, 343.
Hamoa, Isle of, 187, n.
Hapace, Island of, 170;—customs of the natives, 171;—singing and dancing, fireworks, &c. 172;—singular mode of shaving, 173;—a remarkable mount and stone, 172.
Harmatan, a wind so called in Africa, 121, n.
Heeva, a kind of theatrical entertainment at Otaheite, 198.
Henderville's Island, 676.
Heracles, ruins of, 14, n.
Hergest, lieutenant, murdered, 413, 422;—trial and execution of the assassins, 425.
Hermit, account of one, at Owhyhee, 291, n.
Hervey's

- 76;—their ca-
de, 85.
captain Cook,
persons of the
character, habits,
employments, 189;
building, furni-
ng-tackle, mu-
d mode of cook-
marriages, su-
of a future state,
erment for the
er of their chiefs,
g, precaution to
ammahas, lan-
the English Mis-
e instance, 40, n.
2.
h, 40, 41, n.
oha, in Africa,
e of his people at
73;—produce of
Arabs, 35, 39;
story of, 152.
ecting, 128.
Ireland, 128, n.
3.—See Hergest.
;—excursion up
the command of
ific Ocean, 316;
ceeds to China,
Canton, 336;—
ood Hope, 343;
44.
of Batavia, 584.
ent given by the
77.
—customs of the
and dancing, fire-
r mode of shav-
mount and stone,
alled in Africa,
entertainment at
1, 413, 422;—
e assassins, 425.
Owhyhee, 291, n.
Hervey's
Hervey's Island, its inhabitants, &c. 166.
Hindoo women, 743;—pagodas, 742,
745, n.
Hodges, W. Esq. his travels in India, 740.
Hogs, method of dressing and carving in
the Friendly Islands, 181.
Hoolaiva, Isle of, 173.
Hopper's Island, 676, n.
Houghton, major, perishes in Africa, 94.
Howe's Foreland, 151.
Howe's Islands, 671, 713.
Huaheine, Island of, 205.
Human sacrifices at Otaheite, 197.
Hummock Island, 716.
Hunter, J. Esq. his journal of transactions
at Port Jackson, &c. 682.
Hydrophobia, unknown in Egypt, 16.

I.
Ice, Islands of, 257.
Icy Bay, 473.
Inaccessible Island, 575.
India, travels in, 740—764.
Indians, American, 377—393, 431;
Itinerant singers in Africa, 83.

J.
Jackson, Port, voyage to, 640;—descrip-
tion of the country, 649;—British settle-
ment, *ib.*—the natives, 656.
Jaloofs, a nation of Africa, 76, 135.
Jallonka Wilderness, journey across, 132.
Java, Island of, 578.
Jerboa, a singular Egyptian animal, 11.
Jeswontnager, 760.
Jetta, king of Walli, in Africa, 60.
Johars, an African tribe, 92.
Johnstone's Straits, 391.
Juan Fernandez, 485.

K.
Kaarta, kingdom of, 92.
Kajaaga, or Gallam, in Africa, 86.
Kamalia, a town of Africa, 119.
Kamtschatka, voyage to, 300;—geographi-
cal description of, rivers, soil, climate,
321;—inhabitants, &c. 326.
Karakakooa Bay, in Owhyhee, description
of, 270.
Kariu Taura, an African slave dealer, re-
ceives Mr. Parke with kindness, and in-
vites him to remain with him till after the
rainy season, 119.
Kasson, kingdom of, in Africa, 88.
Kava, or Ava, disgusting method of pre-
paring, 181;—pernicious effects, 294.
Kaye's Island, discovered, 242.
Kennyetoo, a town of Africa, 119.
Kerguelen's Land, 150, 153.
King George's Sound, *see* Nootka.
King's Island, 255.
King, lieutenant, forms a British settlement at
Norfolk Island, 720.
Knights of Malta, rise and decline of the
Order of, 7.
Komango, Island of, 168.
Koojar, in Africa, 81;—surprise of the in-
habitants at seeing a white man, 82.
Kootoo, Island of, 174.
Kowries, or small shells, commonly called
Blackmoor's teeth, used as money, 78, n.
Kurile Islands, 330.

L.
Ladrone Islands, 591.
Lagana, city of, 147.
Latoolibula, king of Tongataboo, 175.
Lawsuit, a singular one, in Africa, 77.
Lefooga, Island of, 172.
Lion catchers, an African tale, 79.
Lizards near Aboukir, 23, n.
Lizards of uncommon beauty, 68.
Love potions in Upper Egypt, 55.
Lucknow, palace of the Nabob, 759.
Ludamar, a Moorish kingdom in Africa, 74,
94;—its situation, &c. 103.
Lybia, desert of, 33.

M.
Macartney, lord, his embassy to China,
557;—his voyage, 560;—reception at Ba-
tavia, 579;—at Peking, 605—614.
Macaulay's Island, 671.
Madeira, 561.
Madras, view of, 741;—settlement of the
English, 742.
Mareotis, Lake, 10.
Magic among the Africans, 81, 116.
Mahometan marriages, 48.
Makkalah, Island of, given to the English
Missionaries, 537.
Malacca, 552.
Malacotta, in Africa, its manufactures, &c.
135.
Malta, described, 5;—language and gal-
lies, 7;—rise and decline of the Order of
Knights of, 7.
Mamluke fidelity, 46, n.
Mandingoes, a nation of Africa, 75;—gov-
ernment, manners, &c. 76, 122—125.
Mangeca, Isle of, discovered, 161.
Mansong, king of Bambarra, orders Mr.
Parke to quit his dominions, 110;—
attempts to take him prisoner, 114;—his
treachery, 116.
Maquinna, a chief of the natives of Nootka,
397.
Marquesas, the, 371, n.—discovered, 411;
—visited by the English Missionaries, 524.
Marshall, Capt. his voyage from Port Jack-
son to England, 675;—discovers several
Islands, 676.
Martin D'Aguiar's river, 230.
Massafiero, Isle of, 485.
Mastich, superstition of the Egyptian phy-
sicians respecting, 63.
Matavai, ceded to the British Missionaries,
512.
Matrimonial question tried in Africa, 137.
Mayo, Isle of, 148.
Meat, method of curing, in a tropical
climate, 213, n.
Medicine, singular prescriptions of, 69.
—practice of in Upper Egypt, 53.
Memphis, in Egypt, ruins of, 50.
Missionaries, Christian, their voyage to the
South Pacific Ocean, 496;—proceedings
at the Islands, 507—536.
Modesty of the Hindoo women, 743.
Monterey Bay, 465, 478.
Montreal, city of, 3.
Moonlight, mosque of, 747.
Moors of Africa, their origin, character, &c.
94—103.
Mootjeerna, cataract of, 744.
Morai, at Otaheite, 197.
Moughier, town and fort of, 714.
Mountains of the Birds, 52.
Mowee, Isle of, discovered, 267, 422.
Mulgrave's Islands, 677.
Mulgrave, Point, 256.
Mumbo Jumbo, a ridiculous method among
the Africans of keeping their wives in sub-
jection, 81, n.

N.
Naming of children in Africa, 123.
Natron, manufacture of, in Egypt, 21.
Neguadé, in Upper Egypt, 60.
New Albion, 229, n. 378.
New Holland, South-west coast of, 352;—
voyage to, 640.—*See also* 682.
—South Wales, voyage to, 640—700;
—settlement of the British, 619.
—Zealand, 155, 254;—massacre of cap-
tain Furneaux's people, 156.
Nicholas, St. anecdote of, 4, n.
Nightingale Island, 575.
Nile, the, its mouths, 10;—rising of its
waters, 61, 70;—voyage up, 66.
Nootka, or King George's Sound, 231;
the natives, &c. 232.—*See also*, 306, 431,
475.
Norfolk Island, voyage to, 640—711.
Norton's Sound, 261.
Notche, a ceremony observed in the Friend-
ly Isles, 183.
Nuptial ceremony, in Africa, 99, n.

O.
O'Krairie, 760.
Omai, a native of Otaheite, anecdotes of,
145—208;—his death, 674.
Onecheow, Isle of, 223;—customs of the
natives, 224.
Oonalashka, Isle, visited by captain Cook,
251, 262;—natives, their manner of build-
ing, &c. 264;—repositories of the dead,
266.
Oonella, Isle of, 253.
Ouencak, Isle of, 233.
Ophthalmia of Egypt, 26.
Orchard, Port, 256.
Oreehoua, Isle of, 225.
Otaha, Isle of, its reduction by the king of
Bolabola, 212.
Otaheite, Island of, 193;—natural history
and produce, 213, 553;—manners and
customs of the natives, 197, 361;—ar-
rival of the British missionaries, 508, &c.
Otakoota, Isle of, its discovery, produce,
&c. 165.
Otoo, king of Otaheite, receives captain
Cooke, 195;—his artful conduct, 202;—
sends a present for his Britannic majesty,
ib.
Oude, city of, 760.
Owhyhee, discovered, 268;—authority of
the chiefs, 271, n.—the natives, &c. 275
—290;—ceded to Britain, 457.
Oxen of Egypt, 15.

Pagodas

P.

- Pagodas of the Hindoos, 742, 745, n.
 Palermo, description of its harbour, 3, &c. n.
 Palmerston, Islets of, 167, 516, n.
 Pantalaria, described, 5.
 Pantonicmic courtship; 18.
 Parke, Mungo, his travels into the interior districts of Africa, in 1795-7, 73;—his motives for undertaking the voyage, instructions, and departure from England, 73;—arrives in the Gambia, *ib.*—proceeds to the interior, 74;—quits the African shore, and arrives in England, 140.
 Patna, city of, 747.
 Pekin, city of, 608, 610;—occurrences there during lord Macartney's residence, 619.
 Pelew Islands, 549, 668.
 Penn's Cove, 388.
 Petrels, or birds of storm, 3.
 Peyrouse, Mons. his arrival at Botany Bay, 719.
 Phillip, Governor, his voyage to Botany Bay, &c. 640—658.
 Phillip's Islands, discovered, 716;—description of, 717.
 Physicians in Upper Egypt, 53.
 Pines, Isle of, 712.
 Plasey, plains of, 743.
 Pompey's Pillar, 10.
 Pomurrey or Pomarré, regent of Otaheite, 361, 508.
 Pork, method of curing on a long voyage, 213, n.
 Poullaho, king of the Friendly Isles, 173;—gives a splendid entertainment to captain Cook, 179.
 Present, remarkable mode of conveying one, 108.
 Preservation of the bodies of chiefs at Otaheite, 198.
 Prince Edward's Islands, 150.
 — George's Island, 480.
 — of Wales's Cape, 255.
 — William's Sound, 244;—the inhabitants, &c. *ib.*
 Procession, a singular one, 54, n.
 Pulo Condore, Isle of, 586.
 Pyramids in Egypt, 50, 51.

Q.

Queen Charlotte's Sound, 395.

R.

- Rapacity of some of the African kings, 87.
 Restoration Point, 388.
 Rhamadan, Mahometan fast of, 72, 130.
 Rheumatism, singular mode of curing, 200.
 Rio de Janeiro, 504, 570, 645.
 Rosetta, in Egypt, 14;—inhabitants, and their manners, 18;—manufacture of Natron, 21;—natural history, 24.
 Rouda, in Egypt, 50.
 Round Island, 253.

S.

- Saadi, a sect in Egypt, 26.
 Sacrifices in India, 749, 752.
 Sai, a town of Africa, besieged by the king of Bambarra, 115, n.—treachery of the besiegers, 116.

- St. Augustine, Mount, 247.
 — Elias, Mount, 473.
 — George, Fort, *see* Madras.
 — Helena, Island of, 637.
 — Hermogenes, Cape, 247, 250.
 — Jago, (Cape de Verd) 501, 508.
 — Lawrence, Bay of, 259.
 — Paul, Isle of, 578.
 — Paul's Grotto, in the Island of Malta, 6, n.
 — Peter and St. Paul, town of, 301.
 Salt, a great luxury in Africa, 125, n.
 Salt pits of Barbary, 73.
 Sand storms in India, 763.
 Sandwich Islands, 225, 290, 369;—ceded by the chiefs to the British crown, 457.
 Sansanding, a town of Bambarra, 110.
 Santa Cruz, 564;—account of its road, 146;—city of, 147;—natural history, &c. 148.
 Saphis, *see* Charms.
 Savage Islands, 167, 516.
 Scarborough Island, 677.
 Schumagin Islands, 251.
 Sea horses, description of, 257.
 Sego, capital of Bambarra, 109, n.
 Sennaar, in Upper Egypt, journey to, 55.
 Serawoolies, their manners, and trade, 86.
 Serdze Kamen, Cape, 259, n.
 Serle's Island, 523.
 Sever, capt. his voyage from Port Jackson to England, by way of the Pacific Ocean, 670.
 Shaving, singular mode of, 173.
 Shekoabad, 760.
 Shere Shah, mausoleum of, 764.
 Shortland, lieut. his voyage from New South Wales to England, 665.
 Sibidooloo, a town in Africa, 118.
 Sicilian customs, 4.
 Sicily, natural history of, 5.
 Siege, preparations in an African town, in expectation of one, 89, n.
 Singing men, in Africa, 83.
 Siout, in Egypt, 53.
 Sir Charles Middleton's Island, 545.
 Slaves, instance of generosity in, 87;—deplorable fate of a female, 132;—their apprehension of being devoured by the Europeans, 130.
 Slavery, sources of, in Africa, 125.
 Sledge Island, 255, 259.
 Smith's Inlet, 393, 677.
 Smokey Bay, 247.
 Snares, the, discovered, 356.
 Society Isles, 193;—observations on, 213.—*See* Otaheite, and Missionaries.
 Sonnini, M. his travels in Upper and Lower Egypt, 1—72.
 Stephens, Cape, 262.
 Stuart's... and discovered, 261;—description of, 713.
 Sumatra, Island of, 578.
 Sunda, Straits of, 578.
 Swine in Egypt, an object of loathing, and why, 66.
 Sydney Cove, British settlement at, 658;—climate and produce, 659.

T.

- Table Bay, 646.
 Taffara, a town of Africa, 116.

- Tahoorra, Isle of, 225.
 Tahta, in Upper Egypt, 56, 68.
 Taloo, harbour of, 203.
 Teje Mabel, monument of, 761.
 Teneriffe, Peak of, 147;—trade, &c. 147, 564, 644.
 Tentyris, in Upper Egypt, ruins of, 59.
 Termination Island, 352.
 Thebes, in Upper Egypt, ruins of, 65.
 Tomieh, in Upper Egypt, 56.
 Tongataboo, 175;—description of, 176, n.
 Toobouai, Isle of, discovered, 192.
 Tornadoes in Africa, 121.
 Touching's Island, 677.
 Tower of the Arabs, in Egypt, 8.
 Transportation of British convicts to America, origia of, 642.
 Travelling, curious mode of, 303.
 — in Egypt, 13;—in India, 745.
 Trinidad Bay, 430.
 Trinity Island, discovered, 250.
 Tristan d'Acunha, Isles of, 575.
 Troglodyte, whimsical ceremony of catching it, 1.
 Tschutski, their weapons, ornaments, &c. 255.
 Tucker's Island, 549.
 Turnagain, river, 249.

V & U.

- Valette, city of, 5.
 Valparaiso Bay, 486;—city of St. Jago, 403.
 Vancouver, captain, his voyage of discovery to the North Pacific Ocean, and round the world, 345—496.
 Van Diemen's land, 153;—inhabitants, customs, &c. 154, 354.
 Vany, kingdom of, 74.
 Vavaoo, Isle of, 187, n.
 Ulietea, Island of, 209;—the chief and his family detained by captain Clerke as hostages, for some deserters, 210.

W.

- Wall of China, 613, 639.
 Walli, an African kingdom, 80.
 War-canoe, 199.
 Watcoo, Island of, discovered, 162;—conjecture on the origin of the inhabitants, 165.
 Water of the Nile, miraculous powers attributed to it, 24.
 Whirlwinds, in Egypt, 51.
 Widows sacrificing themselves in India, 749.
 Wilson, captain James, his missionary voyage to the South Pacific Ocean, in the ship Duff, 496—545.
 Woahoo, Isle of, 225, 288;—visited by capt. Vancouver, 370;—murder of lieut. Hergent, 413, 422.
 Woodie's Island, 676.

Y.

- Yellow sea, navigation of, 592.

Z.

- Zanah, ruins of, 743.

of, 225.
 ber Egypt, 56, 68.
 r of, 203.
 monument of, 761.
 k of, 147;—trade, &c. 117
 Upper Egypt, ruins of, 59.
 land, 352.
 Upper Egypt, ruins of, 65.
 Upper Egypt, 56.
 175;—description of, 170, n.
 e of, discovered, 192.
 Africa, 121.
 land, 677.
 Arabs, in Egypt, 8.
 n of British convicts to Ame-
 n of, 642.
 urious mode of, 303.
 Egypt, 13;—in India, 745.
 , 430.
 l, discovered, 250.
 unha, Isles of, 575.
 whimsical ceremony of catch-
 heir weapons, ornaments, &c.
 nd, 540.
 iver, 240.

V & U.

of, 5.
 ay, 486;—city of St. Jago, 493.
 captain, his voyage of discovery
 th Pacific Ocean, and round the
 45 - 496.
 's land, 153;—inhabitants, cus-
 ., 154, 354.
 dom of, 74.
 e of, 187, n.
 nd of, 209;—the chief and his
 tained by captain Clerke as hos-
 r some deserters, 210.

W.

inna, 613, 639.
 African kingdom, 60.
 , 199.
 land of, discovered, 102;—con-
 n the origin of the inhabitants,
 he Nile, miraculous powers at-
 to it, 24.
 s, in Egypt, 51.
 crificing themselves in India, 749.
 captain James, his missionary
 to the South Pacific Ocean, in the
 ff, 490—545.
 Isle of, 225, 288;—visited by
 ancouver, 370;—murder of lieut.
 , 413, 422.
 Island, 670.

Y.

a, navigation of, 599.

Z.

ruins of, 743.